

# CONSOLATION

A JOURNAL OF FACT, HOPE AND COURAGE

## Earth an Eternal Home

Proof positive from the Scriptures that the earth will be man's home  
forever

---

## Something New in Mobbing

A husky Texas attorney 'goes to town' when cornered by five cowards

---

## Does God Torment in Hell?

Has the Creator of the babies, the flowers and the sunsets  
no more sense than the theologians?

---

## Religion's Guilt

Open your eyes and see the Hierarchy's fifth column in every land

---

## A Trip Through Siberia

Five Cents a Copy  
One Dollar a Year

Vol. XXIV No. 608  
January 6, 1943

\$1.25 in Canada and  
Foreign Countries

Published Every  
Other Wednesday



# Contents

The Earth as Man's Eternal Home	3
That Too Big Glacier Story	3
A Still More Incredible Tale	4
And Now the Other Home	5
To Ride a Bicycle Safely	6
Australia, New Zealand, Canada	7
Busy Women in Australia	7
Gold and Diamonds Reach Australia	7
District Attorney Dockweiler's Statement	8
Equal Protection Guaranteed	9
Something New in Mobbing	10
The New Government	
Self-Defense Would Have Been Justified	12
Common-Sense Judge in Mississippi	13
Mexico, Panama, West Indies, Iceland	14
The Pistol "Blesser" Released	14
Where the Asphalt Comes From	14
Iceland Turns the Cold Shoulder	15
"Thy Word Is Truth"	
Does God Torment in Hell?	16
How to Save Gas and Tires	18
Religion's Guilt (Part 2)	21
Catholic Fifth Column Elsewhere	23
Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"	27
"Index of Proper Names, Expressions, and Their Meanings"	27
New World Theocratic Concordance	27
A Refugee Trip Through Siberia	30

Published every other Wednesday by  
WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, INC.  
117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

Editor Clayton J. Woodworth  
Business Manager Nathan H. Knorr

Five Cents a Copy

\$1 a year in the United States  
\$1.25 to Canada and all other countries

## NOTICE TO SUBSCRIBERS

**Remittances:** For your own safety, remit by postal or express money order. When coin or currency is lost in the ordinary mails, there is no redress. Remittances from countries other than those named below may be made to the Brooklyn office, but only by International postal money order.

**Receipt** of a new or renewal subscription will be acknowledged only when requested. **Notice of Expiration** is sent with the journal one month before subscription expires. Please renew promptly to avoid loss of copies.

**Send change of address** direct to us rather than to the post office. Your request should reach us at least two weeks before the date of issue with which it is to take effect. Send your old as well as the new address. Copies will not be forwarded by the post office to your new address unless extra postage is provided by you.

Published also in Greek, Portuguese, Spanish, and Ukrainian.

## OFFICES FOR OTHER COUNTRIES

**England** 34 Craven Terrace, London, W.2  
**Australia** 7 Beresford Road, Strathfield, N.S.W.  
**South Africa** 623 Boston House, Cape Town  
**Mexico** Calzada de Melchor Ocampo 71, Mexico, D.F.  
**Brazil** Caixa Postal 1319, Rio de Janeiro  
**Argentina** Calle Honduras 5646-48, Buenos Aires  
Entered as second-class matter at Brooklyn, N. Y.,  
under the Act of March 3, 1879.

# Notanda

## Constitutional Rights Are Rights

♦ "The Constitution of the United States is a law for *rulers* and people equally in war and peace; it covers with the shield of its protection all classes of men at all times and under all circumstances. No doctrine involving more pernicious consequences was ever invented by the mind of man than that any of its provisions can be suspended during any of the great exigencies of government. Such a doctrine leads directly to anarchy and despotism. But the theory of necessity on which it is based is false, for the government within the Constitution has all the powers granted to it which are necessary to preserve its existence." So said the Supreme Court of the United States in *Ex parte Milligan*, 4 Wall. 2 (1866). —Opinion quoted in case of *Grace Trent et al.* (J. w.), in the U. S. District Court, Southern District of Indiana, Indianapolis Division, Civil No. 349.

## Reimbursing the Persecuted

♦ The North Bay (Calif.) *Labor Journal* thinks, and with good reason, that when the innocent have been dragged into court, and subjected to inconvenience, loss of income, attorney fees, public humiliation and other setbacks, the least society can do is to reimburse them for inexcusable blunders of court officials. That seems reasonable, but involves the possibility of many more expensive suits, and so is probably impractical.

## The New Fluorescent Lamps

♦ The new fluorescent lamps are made by sealing together two flat disks or plates molded in the desired shape. The inside walls of the disks are coated with a fluorescent substance, and before the plates are sealed together a small amount of mercury and a gas are admitted. When the current is turned on, the fluorescent coating glows with a uniform light.

CONSOLATION

# CONSOLATION

"And in His name shall the nations hope."—Matthew 12:21, A. R. V.

Volume XXIV

Brooklyn, N. Y., Wednesday, January 6, 1943

Number 608

## The Earth as Man's Eternal Home

That "old world", "the world of the ungodly," perished, but the earthly globe upon which the ungodly generation of men were corrupting their way remained and was cleansed of that crowd [of evil men at the time of the Flood]. "One generation passeth away, and another generation cometh: but the earth abideth for ever." (Ecclesiastes 1:4) "The earth which he hath established for ever." (Psalm 78:69) The literal earth is the creation of Him whose "work is perfect" and who pronounced the earth good. His divine mandate to fill it with righteous men and women and to beautify it forever as the footstool of his universal domination shall be fulfilled. The time of fulfillment thereof during the new world is so near that persons of good-will living today look forward eagerly to having an obedient part in that blessed privilege.—*The New World*.

NUMEROUS other scriptures, in full agreement with the above, bear testimony that "the upright shall dwell in the land, and the perfect shall remain in it" (Proverbs 2:21); that "blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth" (Matthew 5:5); and that "thou [Jehovah] hast established the earth, and it abideth".—Psalm 119:90.

So it is quite in order to discuss the subject of the earth as man's eternal home, to wonder why so many interest themselves in anything that seems to point to its eternal destruction, and to ponder somewhat on some of the changes in the earth now under way. And it will be quite in order also to think, just a little, of another everlasting dwelling-place of some, a few, 144,001, of those only that will forever participate in eternal life elsewhere after having lived for a time on this beautiful planet.

### *That Too Big Glacier Story*

The Alexandria (Va.) *Daily Town Talk*, January 8, 1942, said with some apparent fright, 'It has been said that

the level of the oceans would be raised 164 feet if all the world's ice melted. It is not a pretty thought for citizens of sea coast cities and towns (like Alexandria).'

Don't you believe a word of it. It isn't true, and reasoning on the subject will prove that it could not be true. In the first place, even horse sense suggests that the total glacial area of all the continents could hardly be more than a small fraction of the surface. The surface of the earth consists of 139,440,000 square miles of water and 57,510,000 square miles of land. Total area of the earth, 196,950,000 square miles.

Greenland has 827,000 square miles, said to be covered with ice averaging 1,000 feet thick. This may be doubted, because ice-free mountain peaks emerge here and there. It would be just as easy for a careful man to say that the ice averages 200 feet thick as it would be for a careless man to say that it averages five times that. Split the difference between the two extremes and call it 600 feet. That ought to be enough.



The continent of Antarctica is 2,500 miles across one way and 2,400 miles the other. That makes, all together, around 6,000,000 square miles of conditions that are about the same as in Greenland. Add another 173,000 square miles for glaciers elsewhere, and it comes to 7,000,000 square miles that may possibly be covered with ice 600 feet thick.

That is only one twenty-eighth part of the surface of the earth, and when 600 is divided by 28 it is apparent that the total ice coverage of the earth could be only about 21½ feet if all the ice the glaciers contain were suddenly to melt.

Considering the surface of the oceans alone, the rise in their waters, if the entire ice-mass were melted, would be at the most thirty feet; but as much of the increased water mass would be taken care of by evaporation resulting from higher temperatures, even this figure may be greatly reduced.

As showing how wild are some would-be scientists and would-be writers, take the following from Volume 2 of *The Encyclopedia Americana*, page 12:

The thickness of the ice near the [south] Pole is estimated by Croll upon theoretical grounds at from 12 to 14 miles, but off the coast of Victoria Land the ice-wall is only 10 to 20 feet high.

Probably it never occurred to Mr. Croll that there is much difference between 12 to 14 miles and 10 to 20 feet. If he wanted to pile up some glory for himself he could just as well have made the ice 120 to 140 miles thick, or ten times that. There would have been as much common sense to it.

Incidentally, there is good evidence that much of the polar ice is melting, while at the same time, comically enough, the information has been widely spread that the water is disappearing from the earth's surface at the rate of the thickness of a sheet of writing paper a day.

You can just forget about being drowned by melted-ice water. Further, you have Jehovah's own word for it that "neither shall all flesh be cut off any

more by the waters of a flood; neither shall there any more be a flood to destroy the earth".—Genesis 9:11.

### ***A Still More Incredible Tale***

A still more incredible tale, chargeable to the religionists but not in the least chargeable to God's Word, is that Almighty God purposes to destroy this earth with literal fire. The scriptures already cited prove that this could not possibly be true. Misinterpretation of prophetic and symbolic statements, fully explained in *The New World*, are the basis for the wild ideas of these religionists.

But it is not denied that strange things are going on in the earth while it is being made ready for man's everlasting habitation. There is a story from Philadelphia that, a few months ago, between 11:30 and 12:30 on a certain midday huge bumps inside the earth disturbed so many citizens that more than 400 persons called the Electrical Bureau at the city hall to try to ascertain what it meant. The Bureau was as much in the dark as anyone else. There had been no earthquake, yet in 23 minutes there had been 36 huge bumps, 10 of them tremendous, far inside the earth. You figure it out.

It probably was an earthquake that caused a tidal wave on Lake Erie some six months after the foregoing episode. Suddenly, without warning, a black wall of water swept the south shore of the lake, drowning 7 persons and injuring 12 others. Conceivably, the wave could have been caused by a heavy cliff of underwater rock falling off into the deeper bed of the lake. This shows that the earth is still in a restless state. It has not reached the poise that is coming.

It is quite easy to understand why the ocean turned red off the shores of New Jersey, tingeing the coast for twenty miles and extending far out to sea. This was no sign that the world "is coming to an end" (an expression often used by religionists and others who resist using their own brains). This was merely a

plant, Rhodophyceae, or red algae, that may have drifted in from the Gulf Stream, or may have risen from the ocean's bottom because of the detonation of guns off Sandy Hook. The thing has happened before.

There are recurrent changes in the ocean. Thus, the Humboldt current changes direction every ten to thirteen years. It recently switched farther to the west than ever before, with the result that the warm moisture-bearing Panama current is now bringing rains to the desert of Ecuador, Peru, and the Galapagos islands. See how easy it is for the Lord to turn the earth into a paradise!

### ***Changes in Air Currents***

There are numerous changes in the air currents also, as is well known to all. Thus the official explanation of the great drought in the eastern part of the United States in the autumn of 1941 is that there was a stagnant air mass which repelled the clouds. This was so serious that for a time the streams supplying the Columbus, Ohio, reservoir emptied only 3,000,000 gallons per day, although the drain on the reservoir at that same time was 50,000,000 gallons per day.

Jehovah definitely used changes in the air currents over Palestine to affect the interests of His covenant people. An instance is where, in the days of Elijah the prophet, there was no rain for three and one-half years. But when Elijah prayed for rain everybody had to run for shelter from the storm. Control of the weather in the interests of the typical Theocracy is but a small picture of what will happen for the true Theocracy after Armageddon.

Studies made over a period of fifty years seem to indicate that when barometric pressures over the East Indies are high in the fall, the chances are good for a warm winter in the northern part of the United States. When there are high pressures over the Pacific in June, July and August, there are usually warm

winters east of the Rocky mountains and north of Virginia. High pressures over the Indian Ocean in April, May and June tend to bring warmer winters for all the United States except the Rocky mountain and Pacific coast areas. High pressures in northeastern Canada and western Greenland mean cold weather for the United States west of the Mississippi. Winter pressures over northern Alaska tend to cause low temperatures the following fall in most of the eastern United States. These are some conclusions arrived at in the Weather Bureau at Washington, based upon "a stupendous number of weather observations made over the world in the past fifty years".

While equable climatic conditions in the earth are certain under Theocratic rule, yet some of the current phenomena which are quite the opposite provide something of the fascination that comes from witnessing or reading of a calamity. On January 27, 1942, a section of Newfoundland had one of the most remarkable "glitter" storms in history. As usual on such occasions, it first snowed; next came a heavy sleet; then a rising wind, and soon ice was forming everywhere. Electric and telephone wires were enshrouded in ice 5 to 6 inches in diameter. The wind freshened and poles and trees went down with the wires. Whole tracts of trees bent over until their tops touched the ground. Thick bushes and stout trees were flattened to the ground. In places where the telephone poles remained standing, crossarms were stripped off by the weight on the superladen wires. But there is nothing in this fascinating "glitter" storm to frighten anybody into thinking that Jehovah will not carry out His purpose to make this earth a paradise for all who have the sheeplike disposition.

### ***And Now the Other Home***

The Scriptures show some, 144,001, have gone or will go to heaven, i. e., their eternal home is somewhere among the



stars; so it is proper to think a little about some of the stars. There is, for instance, Canopus (which can be seen only south of Florida). Its atmosphere, it is claimed, is 1/100,000 that of the earth; it boils at a temperature of 10,000 degrees and moves in giant bubbles at speeds of several miles a second. Anyway, that is what the astronomers say. If you are one of the 144,001, it is entirely possible that you might sometime visit Canopus and thoroughly enjoy every minute of your stay.

In the Milky Way there are known to be about 100,000,000,000 individual stars and suns, many of them much larger than the giant sun which swings the earth about it as one of its planets. And then! Hold your breath! It is known that there are now about 100,000,000 "Milky Ways". That is all that can be seen just now, but more will probably be revealed when they get the new telescope ready at Mount Palomar. But 10,000,000,000,000,000,000 suns is a start. The distance across the known universe is set at about 1,000,000,000 light years.

Each light year is the distance light travels, at 186,300 miles per second, 60 seconds per minute, 60 minutes per hour, 24 hours per day, 365 days a year. That is 5,875,156,800,000 miles in a light-year, and the distance across the already known and seen universe is not less than 5,875,156,800,000,000,000 miles.

Let each fit himself for his eternal home, earthly, or, if he is one of the 144,001, heavenly, but not get the idea that the Creator cannot get along without him.

And, by the way, what do you think of this idea that any Roman Catholic priest who chooses to do so may order this Creator to come down here and be sacrificed afresh, as often as the priest pleases? "He telleth the number of the stars; he calleth them all by their names." (Psalm 147:4) Can you not see what an unspeakable blessing it is to receive everlasting life from such a Creator, and on *His* terms, and not any imaginary terms made for Him by somebody who knows not what he is talking about?

## To Ride a Bicycle Safely

**T**HE curtailment of automobiles, tires and gasoline has increased the number of bicycles in use by more than a million since 1940. A poll of forty cities just completed by the council showed bike registrations up 18 percent.

Cleveland, for example, had 44,000 bikes in 1940. Now it has 62,000. Miami, Fla., jumped from 2,000 to 14,000; Oklahoma City, from 3,000 to 10,000.

The national safety council urges every pedal pusher, tyro or veteran, to heed well the following rules:

Obey all traffic laws, signs and signals.

Ride at the extreme right of the street, with traffic—not on the left, facing it. Don't zigzag.

Ride single file—never two or more abreast.

Keep both hands on the handle bars. Don't stunt or indulge in horseplay.

Never hitch a ride on another vehicle.

Carry packages in a basket, or attached securely to the bike where they will not interfere with steering, pedaling or vision.

Never ride double or carry a passenger on the handle bars.

Keep your headlamp and rear reflector in good working order if you ride at night. A rear light is better than a reflector. And by all means, have a horn or bell on your bike—and use it.

Use arm signals when you turn.

Dismount and walk across busy corners.

Take it easy, and be even more careful than when driving an automobile. A bike is no match for a car!

Remember, your bike is subject to the same general traffic rules as an automobile. Obey them!—Altoona *Mirror*.

## Australia, New Zealand, Canada

### Busy Women in Australia

♦ Interesting stories come from Australia as to how busy the women are, now that their men are all in the war. The women do their own washing, and are proud of it. They go to town on foot and push old perambulators along in which they bring back the family eatables and the firewood with which to cook it. They submit to rationing of clothing as quietly as the men. But, indeed, when did the women of any land ever fail to show their courage and to be an inspiration in a time of stress?

Another story from Australia is of a poor little aboriginal woman named Connie. The poor creature was scratching the beach at a place in northwestern Australia, looking for cigarette butts. She came across a tube, dropped from a disabled plane, that contained \$50,000 worth of diamonds. It was part of a large consignment from the Java Bank of Commerce, sent out just as the country was falling into the hands of the Japanese. The story did not say what the poor woman received as a reward.

### Gold and Diamonds Reach Australia

♦ It is still true that in times of war gold and diamonds are in great demand because they have intrinsic value and can be quickly moved. A submarine took the gold out of Corregidor almost the last thing, and got to Australia with it. A record was made of the American currency, and it was burned, so that if the submarine had been captured the captors would not have profited by it. A few days later \$1,000,000 in diamonds was recovered from one of the last planes to get out of Java. The Japanese shot the plane down over northern Australia, killing nine passengers. The diamonds had been given up for lost, but were recovered from the wreck six weeks after the crash and are now in the vaults of one of the big Australian banks.

### Recognizing the "Higher Powers"

♦ Recognizing Hitler and his cronies as the "higher powers", and not recognizing Jehovah God and Christ Jesus as the Higher Powers, the Lutheran missionaries in New Guinea not only had radio transmitters with which to guide the Japanese to their part of the island, but had on hand hundreds of swastika flags and photographs of Hitler. They were so anxious to boost Hitler that they had even taught the native children of New Guinea to give the Nazi salute.

### Men and Women in New Zealand

♦ Reports from New Zealand are that thousands of her young men are with the Royal Air Force in England; others are manning ships; there is a large force of them in Fiji, and a still larger force in the Middle East. Veterans wounded in Greece, Crete and Libya are on the streets, but it is noticeable that there is a shortage of young men. Women run the hotels and tramways, and can do it, too, as well as the men.

### Canada Has Too Much Wheat

♦ Canada has a storage capacity for wheat of 600,000,000 bushels. Left over from last year were 400,000,000 bushels. The new harvest added 1,000,000,000 bushels. It was not expected to deliver more than 300,000,000 bushels. That leaves about 500,000,000 bushels with no place to go, and a fair presumption that much of it would have to stay on the farms and be used as stock feed.

### Why Australia Produces So Much Wool

♦ John McArthur imported a few sheep into Australia in 1796, and in ten years his flock had grown to 4,000. The government saw the possibilities of having an independent and almost limitless supply of wool, and encouraged the venture, and within a century there were 100,000,000 sheep grazing "down under".



## District Attorney Dockweiler's Statement

AS THE result of a number of conferences with District Attorney John F. Dockweiler by representatives of the American Civil Liberties Union and of Jehovah's witnesses, District Attorney John F. Dockweiler [Los Angeles, Calif.] last week issued a public statement condemning vigilantism and mob violence against members of that religious group.

### VIGILANTE VIOLENCE

The following evidence was submitted to District Attorney Dockweiler in sworn affidavits:

In one community, on April 25, a mob of local citizens attacked three members of Jehovah's witnesses on the public streets and in broad daylight, while the latter were peacefully and lawfully distributing their literature—as they had a right to do under the Constitution of the United States and the constitution of this state. Because part of the creed of this religious group includes a belief that flag saluting is a violation of the mandate of Jehovah, as set forth in the Bible—'Thou shalt not worship false images'—the Witnesses were threatened with being run out of town.

Unafraid of these lawless threats, three members of Jehovah's witnesses were assaulted and beaten. In one instance, a Witness had his arms pinned back by a mobster, while another stood in front of him and struck him in the face, until the defenseless and helpless victim, bruised and bleeding, was almost unconscious. In another, a vigilante armed with a large braided rope struck a defenseless member of this religious group over the head, severely injuring him.

### LAWLESS POLICE

This mob violence was as brutal as it was cowardly and criminal. Nonetheless, the local police authorities did nothing to apprehend or prosecute the criminals;

instead, they threatened to arrest the innocent victims.

In another community, on May 1, a Witness was threatened that if he should remain in town after dark he would be horsewhipped; once again, not the "citizen" who made the lawless threat, but the innocent victim of the threat was additionally threatened with detention in the local police station.

In a third community in this county, on April 25, a member of this religious group, peacefully offering for sale the publications of the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society, was assaulted. The person assaulted, not the assaulter, was arrested and prosecuted and charged with unlawful assault.

In the same town, on May 23, a sixteen-year-old boy, standing at respectful attention during a community flag saluting ceremony, was struck and beaten by an overzealous and misguided patriot, who attempted by force to coerce the boy into saluting the flag.

### DIST. ATTORNEY'S STATEMENT

The district attorney's statement follows:

Because of my official position as district attorney of Los Angeles county, there have come to my attention recently several serious incidents of vigilantism, or cases where citizens assumed to take the law into their own hands, meting out punishment upon their victims as they saw fit, and in most cases very cruelly. I have had called to my attention a number of serious controversies between the Jehovah's witnesses and groups of citizens, and have had cause to carefully investigate the circumstances surrounding these controversies and these incidents. What I have to say I wish to apply to all citizens, as well as peace officers, in Los Angeles county. I know such persons are good, honest, law-abiding and patriotic, but sometimes it appears that they do not fully understand their duties, and they seem to let their patriotism get the best of their better judgment.

## VIGILANTISM HIT BY WILSON

Back in 1918 President Woodrow Wilson condemned outcroppings of vigilantism, when he said:

"No man who loves America, no man who really cares for her fame and honor and character, or who is truly loyal to her institutions, can justify mob action while the courts of justice are open and the governments of the states and the nation are ready and able to do their duty.

"We proudly claim to be the champions of democracy. If we really are, in deed and in truth, let us see to it that we do not discredit our own. I say plainly that every American who takes part in the action of a mob or gives it any sort of countenance is no true son of this democracy, but its betrayer. . . ."

Even though we are at war with many enemies, and there are in our midst, according to the attorney general's own statement recently made before the Brooklyn Bar Association the early part of this year, some 1,000,000 enemy aliens, and even though the populace of this country is overstrained because of the tremendous pressure of the needs of civilian defense and the success of the program of the war effort in every respect, we must admit that to date law enforcement has not in any respect broken down or become weakened, either in the townships, cities or the county or the state in which we live.

## EQUAL PROTECTION GUARANTEED

I charge you that it is your duty to protect the rights of every citizen; white or black, foreign- or American-born. The Constitution of the United States gives every citizen, regardless of his color or race, regardless of his religion, the same protection. Even though you do not agree with some of the teachings of some of the religions in this country, you must follow the precept of equal protection under the law, because we all believe in a democracy. In the case of the Jehovah's witnesses, the Supreme Court has held that this is an accepted and legal religion.

In certain federal districts the situation has grown more intense and the violations of

constitutional rights have become more frequent than in our own county and community, to such an extent that the attorney general of the United States directed his United States district attorney for the northern and northwestern part of Texas to deliver a series of radio speeches to the people in his district on the subject of the rights and liberties and protection of religious and racial groupings, with emphasis on the religious group known as Jehovah's witnesses. So far as the federal government is concerned, it has ample and complete criminal statutory provisions condemning the acts and conduct of vigilantes. So far as the state of California is concerned, we have ample and complete specific provisions to cover violations of the same character, and it is the duty of the chief of the law-enforcing agency, the district attorney's office, to see to it that persons are prosecuted who violate the provisions of the Penal Code under any circumstances.

What I have said thus far has been more or less general, but, specifically in the case of the Jehovah's witnesses, I wish to say that they have a right to speak on the streets of any city in the state of California, on the sidewalks, in churches. They have a right to do this unmolested by any chief of police, sheriff, deputy sheriff or any other peace officer, and, it goes without saying, by any citizen or group of citizens. They have a right to pass out their literature unmolested. So long as they conduct themselves according to the laws of this land and the Constitution of the United States they will receive, at the hands of their government, full protection. I know it is not necessary for me to say these things to the chiefs of police, to the peace officers, to the sheriffs or their deputies, or to the members of patriotic organizations, but sometimes we forget our obligations when our patriotism gets the best of our better judgment.

Assurance has been received by the A.C.L.U. from Mr. Dockweiler that maximum publicity will be given to the statement.—*The Open Forum*, Los Angeles, July 4, 1942.



## Something New in Mobbing

**R**ECENTLY down Texas way a week of legal battles ensued as a result of the Supreme Court decision of June 8, 1942, upholding as constitutional the license-tax laws voiding the first amendment to the United States constitution, and likened by the chief justice to the odious "Stamp Taxes" of American Revolutionary fame. In the thick of the fight were Jehovah's witnesses. They desired to preach the gospel in Paris, Texas; they desired not to pay for the privilege of exercising this inalienable right. So they contested the applicability of this sales tax ordinance to Jehovah's witnesses in their gospel-preaching.

In a futile attempt to prove the 'commercial' aspects of the witnesses' activity the prosecuting attorney drew the following contrast as a basis for protecting the clergy from charge of "selling" while convicting Jehovah's witnesses, which actually exposed the "bare cupboard" condition of the religious pantry. It was, in substance, this: 'The people go to church on Sunday; they contribute their money to the parson. And what do they receive in return for their contribution? Nothing, *absolutely nothing!* That's not selling! But take the case of these Jehovah's witnesses, and what do we find? They call upon the people and receive a contribution of 25c. And what do the people get? They get this great big book (holding aloft the bound book)! That's commercialism! Selling!'

Was the judge impressed? Being a religionist and also a clergyman, he was, and forthwith found the witnesses guilty. It isn't preaching the gospel, but commercialism, if you tell the people of God's kingdom and accept voluntary contributions to carry on the work and leave a valuable Bible help in the hands of the contributor. But if a parson has the people come to him, duns them for their last penny, and admittedly gives them 'absolutely nothing' in return there-

for other than sleep-provoking harangues from his pulpit, that, according to the astute Paris judge, is preaching the gospel. The witnesses appealed from such reasoning.

Now for the anticlimax of this story. During the week of this battle to preserve one of the "four freedoms" the Watchtower Society's attorney was assisted by Mr. Tom S. Williams, a stockily-built, red-haired attorney from Sulphur Springs, Texas. The name of Mr. Williams was publicized along with the cases in Paris, and also in Dallas, and before his return to Sulphur Springs the folks back home knew he had been active in the defense of Jehovah's witnesses. Here's the reception accorded him, as shown by the following letter he subsequently sent to the Society's attorney:

November 16, 1942

Hayden Covington  
117 Adams Street  
Brooklyn, N. Y.

Dear Hayden:

When things start happening here there seems to be no end to the way it stacks up. The climax came when I returned home from Dallas, to be attacked and assaulted by a gang of Nazi ruffians, who, according to their true colors, acted the part of a friend up until the first blow was delivered. It all came about in this way:

I arrived in my office about 11:00 p. m. and spent about thirty minutes reading my mail. I decided to eat before going home and drove around to Bill Chamberlin's Café on Main Street for that purpose. When I entered the café I found that Bill no longer owned it, but had that night sold to Leroy Pogue and Bill Payne, "my friends."

Leroy was behind the counter. He invited me in, informed me of his purchase and stated he was glad to see me. I ordered my supper and while I was eating he offered me a drink of liquor. I declined. There were four other men in the café whom I did not

know and they and Pogue went into the kitchen. When I finished my meal I paid my bill and started to leave. Pogue called me back. He asked me to come into the kitchen as he wanted to show me some changes he was going to make and wanted to see what I thought about it. So at his request I went into the kitchen with him.

Before I entered the kitchen door I observed that the other four men were following, but I had absolutely no suspicion of their intentions. It developed that the front door was locked and I could not have gotten out had I suspected foul play. By the time I was in the kitchen I was surrounded by the five of them and Pogue faced me and said: "You have been representing these d—— Jehovah's witnesses and you are one of the —— yourself and we are going to beat the —— out of you." By the time he had finished this oration he had struck and missed and I contacted him and he fell to the floor, but was on his feet again shortly. In the meantime I had floored one of the others and maneuvered away from the other three, who were trying to rush me from the back. By that time Pogue was advancing upon me again with an open knife in his hand and holloing at the top of his voice. That time I really let him have it right on the nose and he floated through the back screen door, which was also locked. That was the last of him, except for a lot of racket.

After that I was rushed from behind and pulled to the floor, and from then on I do not know what happened until I was standing outside the front door trying to get back into the place. Someone came by and saw what had happened and led me to my car and I went home.

It developed that Pogue and one of the others got a broken nose, and, aside from having to have their noses fixed, they also had to have several stitches over their eyes to keep the eyelids from falling off. To be sure, I did not come out unsinged. My tail feathers were scorched also, but nothing serious.

I am indeed thankful to Almighty God for the strength He gave me to handle the situation and for delivering me from that pack

of demonized wolves. Be sure they received a severe trouncing along with the surprise of their life, and for this wonderful accomplishment all credit goes to the Most High.

Let me hear from you often, and may God's great blessing be with you always.

Your brother in the  
battle for the New World,  
Tom.

This attorney used to have a lucrative practice. Now he has lost that; but he has gained far more. He is serving the poor, Jehovah's witnesses, and Jehovah God.

This is not the first time Mr. Williams has been in the spotlight of Sulphur Springs. His little girl refused to salute the flag. A typical small-town stew followed. The school principal threatened to lick the girl; her 18-year-old brother threatened to lick the principal. The little burg buzzed over this.

Shortly thereafter the boy was going to a school banquet with a girl. Upon arrival at her house, her father met him at the door and said that in view of the fact that his father defended the witnesses in court, and that his sister didn't salute the flag, his daughter couldn't go to the banquet with him. Mr. Williams fought for that flag, was a private in the World War, fought in Germany in the front lines, and remained with the occupation army some months after the war's end. This girl's pop was in some kind of exempt grouping when the war started, and after its ending joined a reserve corps and later became a captain. The boy went to the banquet alone. The next day the girl tried to smooth things over with the boy. He waved it aside as nothing, remarking that her dad was a peacetime captain while his was a wartime private. This boomeranged on the super-patriot and the town buzzed again, at his expense.

Now once more, as a result of the mobbing described in the foregoing letter, the town is talking about Tom Williams. And what are they saying? That five men mobbed him? No; but that he mobbed five men!



### Self-Defense Would Have Been Justified

◆ About 4:30 in the afternoon of February 25, 1942, George Bogue, 44 years of age, and his son William, 21, who live at 348 West Sixth South street, Salt Lake City, Utah, called at the home of George Watson, 65 years of age, and one of Jehovah's witnesses, who lives at 357 West Fifth South street. The Bogues, who are both big, husky men, were under the influence of liquor.

Young Bogue, who was in the lead, and a total stranger to Watson, walked into the house without the usual formality of knocking, and proceeded to beat up Watson, while his father looked on. When leaving the house the younger was heard to say, "I know a Nazi when I see one."

As soon as the gangsters had left, Junior Jensen, a young Jonadab, and the only other eyewitness to the dastardly crime, ran a block to the nearest telephone and called the police. In a few moments two officers in their scout car were at the door. They took Watson, whose face was covered with blood from a number of cuts and bruises (some of his ribs were badly bruised and one fractured) to the emergency hospital, had his wounds dressed and brought him back to his home.

Then they started to hunt for the two outlaws. It was only a few minutes until they found them sitting in a car in front of another man's house. The older one tried to get away, but was caught. The officers soon had them behind the bars, where they belong. These wretches seem to have been offended because some of their family had attended meetings of Jehovah's witnesses. Mr. Watson would have been within his legal rights to have

shot and killed them both when they entered his home and attacked him, but the way he chose was the better one and brings less reproach upon the truth.

### Martins Ferry Benevolent Police

◆ It is a great thing for a town to have a police force that is opposed to truth and righteousness but is kindly and benevolent toward evildoers. Martins Ferry, Ohio, shines and desires to shine in the latter class. The papers tell about it. Jehovah's witnesses came there to preach the gospel by offering Kingdom literature to those that might possibly want a place in the Kingdom. A "big crowd", "quite angry," had considerable "trouble as they were trying to drive the party away", and so the police were called. "Police gave the party several opportunities to leave town without getting themselves in trouble, but they refused." They did this because "the crowd was threatening". Brave (?), courageous (?), benevolent (?) custodians of public order in Martins Ferry. The name of the inciting priest is unknown. The net result was that "a 15-year-old girl who refused to give her name was placed in the women's department over night". "She is a cripple with braces on both legs." Seven others were arrested. The magistrate dismissed all cases. It was not this occasion that made monkeys out of the Martins Ferry police. They were that already.

### "Mustn't Make Tots Jehovah Witnesses"

◆ That's the headline, the way it appeared in the Vancouver (B.C.) *Sun*, May 27, 1942. How does that match up with Jehovah's own statement to His own people, "Ye are my witnesses, saith Jehovah, that I am God"? A "learned judge" of Vancouver was considering the taking of two children away from their mother and giving them to their father, and said he would do so immediately if he learned that the children were being taught any of the tenets of Jehovah's witnesses.





"Out here in Hollywood, Calif., center of the world movie industry, where one can wear bright-red polka-dot pajamas or a skin-tight sun suit at any public place without suffering humiliation or reproach; where one can walk down Hollywood Boulevard leading a pet bear; Jehovah's witnesses quietly and in an orderly manner present the gospel of the Kingdom to whosoever will hear; and we find some hearing ears, too, as in the case of the lady in the white coat."

### Common-Sense Judge in Mississippi

◆ John W. Crisler, circuit court judge in Mississippi, had before him A. J. Powell, indicted for circulating *God and the State*, (*End of Axis Powers*) *Comfort All That Mourn*, and *Conspiracy Against Democracy*, which some wild-eyed, half-baked fanatics with no education, no common sense and no brains had said were seditious. Judge Crisler examined them with care and his opinion was:

These several pamphlets, consisting in all

of several hundred pages, discuss various sub-topics, such as heaven, truth, immortality, resurrection, salvation, and hell. Out of these hundreds of pages not a word, line or paragraph is pointed out in the indictment as being seditious. Nor is the substantial meaning, which might give a cue to the nature of the charge, alleged in the indictment. The indictment simply charges that the pamphlets are seditious. The court, not alone the defendant, is left wholly in the dark as to what the state will rely on to convict the defendant.

(To be continued)

## Mexico, Panama, West Indies, Iceland

### The Pistol "Blessed" Released

◆ Before he shot and killed president-elect of Mexico Alvaro Obregon, Jose de Leon Toral went to the "Reverend Father" Jose Aurelio Jimenez and got his pistol "blessed". The priest received a 20-year sentence for being an accessory before the fact, but the "Church's" influence in Mexico is rising again and he has now been released, on the ground that in Mexico it is so customary to "bless" firearms that, being a priest, he was not guilty after all. Obregon remains dead, however.

### 160,000 Acres of Ramie

◆ There seems not much doubt that ramie is the coming fabric. Suits made from it show no wear after six years of constant use. A single plantation in the state of Tabasco, Mexico, now has 160,000 acres planted to this famous Egyptian textile growth. Quantity production is anticipated in the near future, and inasmuch as new and greatly improved methods have been discovered for freeing the fibers from waste, it appears that the long-anticipated day of ramie is about to dawn.

### More Locks for Panama

◆ With the knowledge that World War II, if it continues, will be a titanic fight for the control of the Panama Canal, as one of the major objectives, the United States Government is building an additional set of locks, so that if bombs put one set out of commission the ships can still get through.

The new Gatun locks at Panama will be one and a half miles long, will consume more than 125,000,000 pounds of metal, 2,800,000 barrels of cement, and 4,500,000 tons of sand and gravel, and construction will cost \$4,570,500. The new locks will pass larger ships than those now in use, and are to be completed within three years.

### Suez and Panama Canals

◆ The tolls for passing through Suez Canal are about twice as high as for passing through Panama, yet the former is much cheaper to operate, as it is a sea level canal, and its cost of construction was only a fraction of that of Panama. In peacetimes Suez Canal paid eighty percent dividends, much of which went to the two hundred families that are the curse of France.

### Where the Asphalt Comes From

◆ Marveling at the thousands of miles of asphalt paves, the inquirer into the subject learns that four-fifths of it is obtained from crude oil or petroleum. There are deposits in Switzerland, France, Italy, Texas, Kentucky, and Utah, a big deposit in Lake Bermudez, in Venezuela, and a great lake of it in Trinidad which, it is estimated, still contains 6,000,000 tons of this material.

Over Pitch Lake, Trinidad, one may drive a wagon if he keeps on driving, but if left in one place the outfit will gradually sink out of sight. Men may walk on it, too, but the risk is ever present. When chunks are cut out, to be taken away, the holes gradually refill from the "pitch springs" below the hard surface. Maybe the roof of your house is made of asphalt shingles. They are good shingles, too. So far as known, they never wear out. And they may be had in gay colors. The Lord must like gay colors: He made so many flowers.

### Eleven Months Finding a Home

◆ Eighty-six Jewish refugees left France for America in January, 1941. At Dakar, Africa, they were imprisoned until their Argentinian visas had expired; an act of pure cussedness. When they got to Argentina they were not received. Paraguay offered to receive them and Argentina objected; some more pure cussedness. Uruguay refused to receive them.

Brazil did the same. At last a Jewish Congressman got them into Curacao, one of the Dutch West Indies, and there they are. They were eleven months making the trip, persecuted at every step because they are Jews.

### **Smoke Screen Saved the Ship**

◆ In the Caribbean a submarine fired a torpedo into the hull of a United States merchantman, cutting its speed to 3½ knots an hour. The skipper ordered a lot of oil thrown into the fires, so that the ship was hidden by a black pall of smoke. He then skillfully maneuvered the ship in an area studded with reefs, and finally got away from the submarine in safety, after having been chased by it for an hour.

### **Fascism in Puerto Rico**

◆ *Friday* magazine claims that in Puerto Rico, where tens of thousands earn only about \$200 a year, constitutional democracy does not exist. The governor is a dictator. Washington is 1,500 miles away, and the actual power is in the hands of "a ruthless and pro-Fascist chief of police". If that be true, it would seem that it might readily be possible to get a new head to the police department, or a better governor.

### **Tin Can Saved 18 at Sea**

◆ Eighteen survivors of two merchantmen torpedoed in the Caribbean finally arrived in New York and explained that they had been saved by a tin can. They had lived for 19 days on two rafts lashed together, on a diet of raw potatoes, raw onions and raw fish. An American merchantman appeared on the horizon. A tin can was hoisted on an oar and flashed in the sun, and the ship came to the rescue.

### **Iceland Turns the Cold Shoulder**

◆ General Marston, of the United States Marines, back from Iceland after eight months, says the Icelanders are inde-

pendent, and don't wish Iceland protected or invaded by either British or American troops, and least of all by the Germans. He also says that when they have a gale in Iceland it is a real one. On one occasion the men were forced to crawl from their huts to the mess hall in a wind blowing, so it was said, 125 miles an hour.

Some reporter on that story must have stretched something. Wind forces are calculated as follows: Miles per hour: light air, 10; light breeze, 15; gentle breeze, 20; moderate breeze, 25; fresh breeze, 30; strong breeze, 36; moderate gale, 44; fresh gale, 52; strong gale, 60; whole gale, 69; storm, 80; and hurricane, over 80. At 80 miles an hour a wind exerts a pressure of 19.2 pounds per square foot and would be almost if not quite sufficient to lift a 200-pound man off the ground.

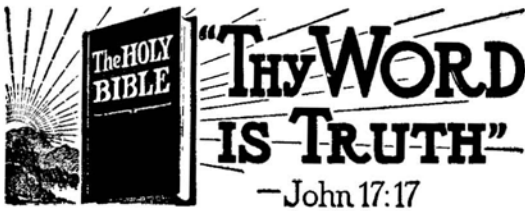
### **Major House's Shoes**

◆ Major William House, Springfield, Mass., and for the present residing in Iceland, as part of Uncle Sam's forces, has feet that take the big size 13, not the little size 13. He wanted some shoes, so he sent an order to a mail-order house in New York. After an interval of approximately four months he received, via Bermuda and London, a pair of ladies' shoes, size 8. Such language is awful! Stop it!

---

### **Uncle Sam Gets Stung**

◆ In "Washington Merry-Go-Round" Drew Pearson and Robert S. Allen furnished the more or less cheerful information that an agent of Germany, George Sylvester Vierick, under the pen name of James Burr Hamilton, wrote a speech for Senator Ernest Lundeen, had copies of it sent free through the mails, and then had it issued in book form under the title "Lord Lothian vs. Lord Lothian", and published by a company registered as a German agent.



## Does God Torment in Hell?

SINCE the Dark Ages religious men of "Christendom" have taught that the punishment for the wicked, those who disobey God Almighty, is everlasting torment or torture in a hell burning with unquenchable fire and brimstone. Because of this religious doctrine myriads have been frightened away from studying the sacred Bible. Because of it reasoning men have refused to believe in God and the Lord Jesus, not knowing it is a doctrine of the fiendish Satan, the Devil, used to blind the people and turn them away from the just and loving God. That doctrine of eternal torment in hell can not be true, for at least four separate and distinct reasons: (1) because it is unreasonable; (2) because it is repugnant to justice; (3) because it is contrary to the principle of love; and (4) because it is entirely unscriptural.

It seems strange that men with reasoning faculties should ever reach the conclusion that the all-wise Creator would eternally torment any of His creatures. What could be the purpose of such torment? Could it accomplish any good? Would it result to God's glory?

There could be no eternal torment of any of God's creatures except by His will. A reasonable, loving God could not torment any of His creatures, because He cannot deny His own attributes. A Creator that would put in operation a system of endless torment would be a fiend, and not a reasonable God. Man is not perfect, yet man has some love. God is perfect, and He is love. (1 John 4: 16) A man or a child of sound mind would not torture his horse, his dog, or his cat. Suppose we have a dog that becomes

mad and tries to bite everyone in the neighborhood. It must be killed; but we would not torment the poor brute by putting it into a slow fire. We would kill it in the easiest way, so that it would not suffer much pain. Why would a sane person do this? Because his sense of justice and love would deter him from doing anything else. Man has not as much love as God. Everything that God does for man He does for the good of obedient and faithful man.

The torment doctrine is unreasonable, because no one could be eternally tormented unless that one were eternally conscious. The Bible texts quoted in the previous issue of this magazine showed that the dead are not conscious. Furthermore, there could be no eternal torment of the human soul unless that soul were immortal, indestructible. And those Bible texts showed that man is not immortal. Those and all other scriptures bearing upon the subject show that none from among men are granted immortality except those who undergo a change from human to spirit in the resurrection and who receive immortality as a reward for right-doing and who are made joint-heirs with Christ Jesus in His glorious kingdom. (1 Corinthians 15: 42-54) It is easy to see, then, that torment after death is a doctrine of Satan; and the two religious doctrines of human inherent immortality and eternal torture must stand or fall together. Since they are both false, they must both fall.

The doctrine of eternal torture is unjust, because God is just. Justice is the foundation of His throne. God plainly told the first man on earth that if he sinned he would die. (Genesis 2: 17) If after telling this penalty God put man into eternal torment, then God increased the penalty after man had violated the law, and this *ex post facto* procedure is contrary to every principle of justice. All of fallen Adam's children were born imperfect, so that Psalm 14: 3 says: "There is none that doeth good, no, not one." Every child is born imperfect. It



would be very unjust for Jehovah God to permit such a one to be born, under conditions over which he had no control, and then, because he could not obey perfectly, to put him into eternal torture. Man's sense of justice is shocked at the thought of the torture of any creature, unless his sense is numbed by religion. The justice that man possesses is a God-given quality. The more Godlike a man is the more just he is. We should all know, then, that God deals justly with all creatures.

The doctrine of eternal torment is devoid of the attribute of love. Every good father loves his children and children love their father. The mother loves the children and the children love the mother. When the children are disobedient, it becomes necessary for the father or the mother to discipline them; and sometimes by using the rod. But no loving parent would for a moment think of torturing his or her child. Just punishment is always for the purpose of doing ultimate good, and where the parents are compelled to punish or discipline their children they do it because they love them. The apostle Paul, discussing the discipline by earthly parents and that by God, said: "We have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness." (Hebrews 12:9, 10) How could eternal torment produce holiness in the unfortunate creature thus dealt with? Only a wicked fiend would want to torment anybody, because loving darkness and wicked things.

Our great God Jehovah is love. (1 John 4:8) "God is light, and in him is no darkness at all." (1 John 1:5) Everything that He does is good. The doctrine of eternal torment is a libel upon the great and loving name of God, and Satan is responsible for it. But in

God's due time He will make it clear to all that He is love, and that all His dealings are for good of obedient creatures.

The eternal torment teaching is not supported by any text in the Bible. There are some texts that are written in symbolic phrase, in parables, such as that of the rich man and the beggar Lazarus, and in dark sayings; yet these were written to illustrate other great truths, but with no reference to the eternal punishment of the human race. Our space does not permit us to consider such texts here and now. *Hell* in the King James Version Bible does not mean torment. "The wicked shall be turned into hell" as a punishment (Psalm 9:17), but punishment does not mean torment after death.

There is a wide distinction between everlasting punishment and everlasting torment. Everlasting punishment is a punishment that lasts. Everlasting torment would be a torment that never ends, but one would be consciously suffering all the time. The laws of the land punish the wicked who violate the law, and the duration of the punishment is short or long in proportion to the enormity of the crime committed. One who takes his neighbor's life deliberately is punished by the full penalty of the law, and his punishment is lasting. Death is the highest penalty inflicted by the law. It is also the greatest punishment inflicted by Jehovah. Therefore eternal or everlasting death, with no hope of a resurrection, would be an everlasting punishment. But it would not be an everlasting conscious torment. God plainly declares "The wages of sin is death", not eternal torture.—Romans 6:23.

Nothing more grotesque could possibly be believed in an insane asylum or in a home for the feeble-minded than that an infinitely loving God deliberately purposed thousands of years ago to roast practically the entire human family in the strangling fumes of burning sulphur throughout all eternity for something that somebody else did 6,000 years ago.

## Motoring

### How to Save Gas and Tires

◆ With the present need of the government for rubber and gasoline it would be well for Jehovah's witnesses to learn how to save on these things so necessary for the witness work.

Recently, my brother and I traveled about three thousand miles from Akron, Ohio, to the state of Washington in the pioneer work, and we tried some of the things we had learned from here and there to see if they would help preserve the life of our tires, and if the car would use any less gas. They certainly did help a lot, so I am passing them on to you for the benefit of the Lord's people who are doing His work in the earth at this time.

Have the motor in your car "tuned" at least every five thousand miles. If your carburetor is not properly adjusted your gasoline mixture will be too rich or too lean, and this can result in a ten-percent waste alone.

Set the spark two degrees below the motor's weak knocking-point. There will be a very slight loss of power, but a gallon of gas will stretch a mile farther.

Clean and adjust the spark plugs frequently, at least every thousand miles. This will cut your fuel bill ten percent, and the Lord's people can use this extra money to reach the "other sheep".

Don't start your car moving as though it were a race horse, and avoid racing pickups in second gear. The engine is not able to burn all the gasoline it's getting. Also, rushing madly up to stop lines, then slamming on the brakes, is a waste of gasoline.

Keep your tires properly inflated by checking them every day about noon. By checking them at this time you will allow for contracting and expansion, in the hot sun and the cool of the night. This will make your tires last longer, too, as a tire improperly filled is subject to a lot of extra scuffing, and wear.

Park in the shade. Gasoline vaporizes

easily, and a surprising amount of gasoline will evaporate through the tiny air hole of the gas cap during hot weather.

Keep the battery well charged for quick starts. The fuel pump is pumping gasoline away during those long, grinding starts before the engine fires. Also, avoid unnecessary choking.

Clean the air filter often. When it is dirty and clogged the carburetor may not get enough air, the gasoline mixture gets too rich, and mileage falls.

Finally, drive at moderate speeds at all times. Not only is it safer, but it takes a fourth less gasoline to go a mile at 40 miles per hour than at 60. And even less at thirty. However, gas consumption goes up if you go slower than this.

Concerning tires: Every time a car driver fails to inflate his tires properly, takes curves too fast, drives for a long time at high speeds, spins his tires in quick starts or skids them to a sudden stop, he is destroying rubber and wearing out his tires before their time.

Change the tires to different wheels every five thousand miles, to insure even wear. Do not take corners at high speeds, because all four tires are scraped side-wise and scuffed.

Have the wheel alignments checked regularly, both front and rear wheels. Do not bump into curbs, because no tire can stand much of this abuse. Don't drive too fast on hot dry roads. This heats up the tires and causes them to deteriorate quicker.

When the tires are not properly inflated according to the required pressure they go through the same thing as a rope that is being hit with a hammer on concrete.

Each motorist would do well to make it a habit to check the tires on his car each day, shift the tires on the wheels several times a year, and have the wheels aligned at the same time.

Following these rules will give the car owner rich dividends in the form of tire

and gasoline savings and put these things to the use for which the Creator made them.—Paul Walter Arnold, Washington.

### **Comment by the Owner of a Dozen Cars**

◆ Reply to your letter of the 22d, I certainly must agree that the advice given in Paul W. Arnold's letter which I read as requested, if carried out, will save the readers who operate cars many dollars, as well as headaches and inconveniences that always accompany the spending of such dollars. The information therein, if practiced by the American motoring public, would save them several hundred million dollars each year, not to speak of the lives.

If you feel you can spare a little space in *Consolation* to caution the readers to be just a little more careful with their possessions under this emergency, on account of things' being hard to replace, in fact, in some cases, impossible, it would be doing them a real favor at this time. The old saying is: "We never miss the water till the well goes dry." It may be that some of the friends do not realize the necessity of being careful with what they have in order to continue to use them for the Kingdom work. A little friendly advice at this time may help some of us six or twelve months from now from wishing we had taken better care of "Lizzie", or that brown suit or pair of black shoes. If any of the readers have any bicycles it will be well to keep them; for they may come in handy. Bicycling beats walking any day.—K. W. Hessler, Pennsylvania.

### **Cotton Sandals for Worn Tires**

◆ The United States Rubber Company advertises a new cotton sandal for worn tires which, when treated with an asphalt emulsion, is expected to run for 3,000 miles. Months of development were passed in experimenting with an asphalt liquid that would prevent skidding on slippery highways.

### **The No-Wheel Trailers**

◆ The ingenuity of the trailer builders passes the comprehension of the imagination. They make one set of tires do for five trailers. When the new home on wheels is delivered to the war industry worker, and is placed on location near his factory, the trailer is propped up on wood blocks or timbers, the tires are removed, and the wheels go back to the trailer manufacturer for use on another rig.

### **A 280-Pound Automobile**

◆ An Italian boy of 18 invented an automobile that weighs but 280 pounds. It is capable of traveling 137 miles on one gallon of gasoline and of attaining a top speed of 37.5 miles an hour. The machine is so light that when it runs out of gasoline it can be driven by its pedals, and the body is so elastic that no springs are needed.

### **Honest Judge in Nashville**

◆ At Nashville, Tenn., Judge Brown Taylor swore out a warrant for his own arrest on a charge of driving without a new state license, and fined himself \$5 and costs. Then he went after 150 other violators of the same law, and they did not get nearly as much fun out of it when it came their turn as they did when the procession started.

### **Plastic Stronger than Steel**

◆ The new plastic panels for automobiles are only  $\frac{1}{4}$  inch thick, but have an impact strength ten times as great as steel. An ax blow that pierces steel mars the plastic scarcely at all. The plastic cars will be of every color of the rainbow and every mixture of colors imaginable.

### **Refrigerated Trailers**

◆ Fish caught in the Atlantic ocean off Boston on Tuesday is eaten in Fort Dodge, Iowa, 1,300 miles away, on Friday. The refrigerated trailers operating between the two cities make this possible; and such lines now crisscross the country.

### **The Saving of Gasoline**

◆ There seems to be considerable saving of gasoline by sundry and divers statesmen such as national chairman Edward J. Flynn and Secretary Ickes. Amplifying this remark somewhat the charges have been flying around that Flynn had his belongings carted around New York city over a period of years by city cars driven by city employees, while Ickes used government cars to take to market the eggs he raised on his farm in Maryland. Thou seest, therefore, O simple one, how these two great men paid naught for their gasoline, and so much was saved for Flynn and Ickes.

### **Motorists' Mileage Reduced**

◆ American motorists are reducing their mileage, and need to do so. It is calculated that by the end of 1942 the number of passenger cars in use will be cut one-fifth, and within six months thereafter by as much as two-thirds. A general disposition to save tires is manifest. It is expected to produce 200,000 tons of synthetic rubber by January, 1943, and another 200,000 tons within six months thereafter. About ten plants will be needed to produce this rubber, and six of them were under construction within sixty days after Pearl Harbor.

### **Not Wanting to Be Stung**

◆ In Brooklyn a bee sailed gaily into an automobile and alighted on the right forearm of the lady driver. The lady did not wish to be stung, so she took a swat at the bee and missed him. Meantime the car jumped the curb, hit an electric light pole, and turned over. All the lady got out of it was a fractured skull, a broken nose and some minor injuries. She didn't get stung.

### **At Almost Airplane Speed**

◆ On Harper Dry Lake, California, a 1940 Willys set a record of 2,048 miles in 24 hours. This figures out at 85.33 miles per hour average, which was the speed of an airplane not so long ago.

### **The Buyer of Little White Pills**

◆ At a filling station in Queens, New York, along comes a motorist, drives up, and asks for water. He orders the water put into his gas tank, pops in a white pellet, and drives off. Another motorist catches the bright idea, chases the first man and begs him to sell him five pills so he also can make water into gasoline. For \$2 the deal is done. The buyer drives happily off, uses his car till the gas runs out, and then fills his tank with water. One pill does nothing, two pills do half as much as the first one, and so on to pill number 5. The motorist has lost his \$2, lost his pills and lost his temper.

### **An Interesting Optical Illusion**

◆ Near Bear Mountain, New York, there is a curious place on the highway where a car actually rolling down hill seems to the occupants, looking out at either side of the road, to be moving backward. This curious illusion is due to a peculiar bank on one side of the road and a deep cut on the other side, and for months led many honest people to suppose that mysterious magnetic forces drew their automobiles uphill and backward though they were driving down hill and forward.

### **The Thiokol Non-Rubber Dip**

◆ After experimenting with all types of rubber and rubber substitutes the Ford Motor Company offered to the government a rubber substitute, called "thiokol", which it has found makes old tires last indefinitely. Two pounds of the substance makes a set of old tires good for 4,000 to 5,000 miles of moderate driving, is the claim. Not an ounce of rubber goes into the making of the thiokol.

### **Plywood Wheels May Be Practical**

◆ Near Rochester, N. Y., an inventor built up a 62-pound wooden wheel of plywood, which seemed not to have suffered injury after 125 miles of driving and is apparently good for 10,000 miles. There may be something to this idea in the present rubber emergency.



## Religion's Guilt (In Two Parts—Part 2)

[The first part of this article notes that American eyes are upon the war, that passions are high and thought is low; that Jehovah's long-promised Kingdom is here but disregarded, and that religion is to blame for this; that of all vices religion is the most seductive. The point is raised that the claims

of religion should be evaluated before it is too late. Then it is established that religion is well-supported by Satan, whereas the rule as stated by the Son of God is that all Christians would be persecuted, but that this has not been the case with religion, neither in America nor in Spain, Italy, France or Germany.]

HAS any reader ever seen a criticism of the Roman Catholic organization in the press, even though it is well known that they are consorting with America's enemies, both in Europe and in Japan? Are not all church "functions" "solemnly impressive", "awesome," "majestic," "harmonious blending" (said of chants), "deeply inspiring," and often accompanied by a half-page "spread" of pictures of "most reverends", "his eminences," "cardinals," "pontificals," "high masses," "holy, holy" and exceptionally "holy"?

Has the reader ever seen eucharistic gatherings or other Catholic church events pictured as "ridiculous"? "Hypocritical"? "Idolatrous"? "Hocus-pocus"? No, and you are not likely to until Jehovah exposes the crimes of secret commission which the Hierarchy has buried behind "a refuge of lies".—Isaiah 28.

The few who attempted to maintain their integrity against the aggressions of Rome immediately suffered the bludgeon of boycott and intimidation. No concerted effort to fight this pressure, by exposure, was made; so the honest editor often found himself out on a limb, without backing and without friends. He was thus faced with the unhappy decision of losing his livelihood or relinquishing free speech and press. The only ones upon earth who have been able to endure, under similar tests and even the venom of the unleashed mob, have been Jehovah's witnesses, the "Job" class, which name means "hated", and this they have been by every nation under the sun. (Matthew 24) They alone, as a class, have continued to expose the religious betrayers of the people.

Except for Jehovah's witnesses the Hierarchy has practically squelched all outcry. She has successfully converted the press to her own use for the dissemination of misinformation and LIES. Now the public, instead of hearing unbiased news, receives the propaganda that Rome, and often Berlin, wants one to hear. Coming from a supposedly reliable source, that is, from the so-called "free press", which well knows the American repugnance to prejudice and partiality, the deception carries unlimited effectiveness. The recent Supreme Court decision, so tardily decried by the editorial writers, which effectively abridges freedom both of religion and of the press, could scarcely have been maneuvered if the Papacy had not first shackled free publication. Newspapermen realize too late that when the Supreme Court permits municipalities to place unlimited taxes upon a small and "hated" minority such a decision puts an end to freedom for everybody. They allowed the Lord's people to be trampled without protest (with a few notable exceptions); now no mercy may be expected when their own interests fall beneath the heel of Rome!

It will thus be seen that the Hierarchy has practically destroyed the freedoms for which America's forefathers gave their blood!

Summarizing now the relationship between Hitler and the Catholic Church. Hitler was baptized a Catholic; and that he was also molded by Jesuit and convent training is evident upon the most casual examination of his autobiography (*Mein Kampf*). Seeking to realize the demoniacal purposes fully revealed in his book,

he found a willing ally in the "Church", which had in fact fostered and instilled these purposes into his mind through Jesuit priests. Some authorities say that a Catholic priest wrote *Mein Kampf*. Hitler, therefore, was the tool rather than the master of the Roman Catholic Church, and this relation has not changed. He does the bidding of the pope, even as he followed the plans of Pacelli before he became the present pope, and while he was yet Papal nuncio to Germany. After assisting Hitler to power by the dissolution of the Catholic Center Party, which was virtually the only strong political opponent to the Nazis, Pacelli arranged for the Concordat of 1933, which admittedly has never been revoked.\* The persecution stories, advertised by a press servile to Rome, are nothing but a smoke-screen to fool Americans. Therefore the ire of the world should be directed not alone upon Hitler, but also upon master conspirators of Vatican City, whose black-frocked minions reach to the uttermost parts of the earth. Religion is therefore responsible for the war. Behind religion, and the father of it, is Satan, who maneuvers the Papacy and her dictator sons in an effort to destroy the earth. "Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time." (Revelation 12: 12) The peace which the Papacy will shortly bring in will be short-lived, because it is now time for the "vengeance of our God". (Isaiah 61: 2) Armageddon will end all traitors and murderers.—Revelation 21: 8.

\* The same Ernest R. Pope who aids the Hierarchy's deception by the "picture proof of persecution" in the *Look* magazine referred to in Part 1 of this article quotes the supposedly focal point of the attack, namely, Cardinal Faulhaber, as follows: "The greatest part of three years of reconstruction will crash in ruins, if the Concordat is torn up by the State alone. It would be a severe shock to foreign nations now attempting to find confidence in the new Germany."—*Munich Playground* (published in 1941), page 75.

What about Papal relations with the enemy Japan? Here again one finds the Vatican in full sympathy with the backstabbers of the "Rising Sun". Though claiming the Catholic religion has the sole right to teach, she has, for the sake of expediency, permitted Japanese Catholics to worship at the Shinto shrines, so that in that country Catholicism and Shintoism can scarcely be distinguished one from the other. She has courted Japan as the most useful enemy against the Protestant United States.

Long before the conquest of the Philippines the Jesuits conducted a campaign to belittle the United States, advocating a corporate government like that of Portugal; that is, a dictatorship. In advance of the Japanese, and in the same characteristic manner employed by the priests before the terrible Hitler invasions, fifth-column activities were rampant. A previous issue of *Consolation* (No. 567, June 11, 1941, page 8) calls attention to a Catholic priest, "Father" Luis Bogel, who was arrested for espionage near the former United States naval base at Subic. (St. Louis *Globe-Democrat*, extra final edition January 13, 1941) Note this United Press dispatch from Manila, on December 11, just four days after the treacherous assault on Pearl Harbor:

The Bulletin reported today that two Catholic priests had been arrested at San Fernando, in Pampanga province, for asserted fifth-column activities in the zone of Japanese invasion attempts.

The Bulletin asserted that in Manila a signal line between Nichols Flying Field and an air raid tower was cut, supposedly by fifth columnists, and delayed the alarm when the Japs raided the Manila Bay area yesterday.

Does one find that the Papacy repri-manded the Japanese for their definitely un-Christian onslaught on the neutral United States? Not before, but since this assault, the Vatican entered into diplomatic relations with Japan. General Ken Harada, "Japanese Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary to the

Holy See" (and who has a mug like a carnivorous animal), according to the official Vatican newspaper, *Osservatore Romano*, possesses "the most appreciated personal qualities". To this step the British and American governments protested in vain. (Note *Chicago Daily News* dispatch from Paul Ghali, in Berne, Switzerland, March 27, 1942; Wm. H. Stoneman, of London, in the *New York Post* of March 31; and "Papal Tie with Japan Draws British Rap", A. P. dispatch of June 10, 1942.)

By August this relationship between those of similar designs had gained headway. The *San Diego Tribune Sun* of August 3 contains the following:

For the first time since diplomatic relations were established between Japan and the Vatican, the correspondent of the Tokyo newspaper *Nichi Nichi* was received in audience by Pope Pius XII, it was announced today.

The correspondent reported that "the spiritual new order in the world will be formed from the collaboration between the traditional spirit of the humanity of Japan and the Roman Catholics".

Since Pearl Harbor and Dunkirk, fresh examples of what that "traditional spirit" is pour in from Europe and Asia every day. One of the reasons for this close unity is disclosed by the *New York Times* of March 28, 1942:

It was remarked at the Vatican [in regard to the establishment of relations with Japan] that there are eighteen million Catholics in the territories of the Orient at present within Japan's political sphere, including eleven million in the Philippines.

The Vatican is therefore the first to recognize the Japanese conquest of the Philippines!

Had America guarded its borders by the exclusion of the priesthood, as advocated by Abraham Lincoln, she might have avoided such insults from the pope and the mikado!

### **Catholic Fifth Column Elsewhere**

Even a brief survey should call attention to enemy activities of the Romanists

directed particularly against the United States in other countries. Monsignor Pucci, maestro of the Vatican press releases, now by means of the Nazi newscasts leads a campaign in South America to show that the United States is atheistic, encourages birth control, has no family life outside the Catholic church, and has closed its doors to Europe; the intention of which is to arouse hostility, especially among South American Catholics, to this government. (*The Converted Catholic*, April, 1942)

A plain admission of the charges contained herein is the formation of the Catholic Axis, consisting of Vichy France, Spain, and Portugal. Its purpose is "to capitalize on the pro-Fascism of strongly Catholic circles in Latin America, with the purpose of recapturing Latin America". (Allen Haden, in the *New York Post*, February 13, 1942)

*La Prensa*, Spanish-language newspaper of New York, had the courage to publish a United Press report of July, from Havana, Cuba, which gives a hint of the pope's plans for America:

Three Spanish Dominican priests who arrived last week on the Spanish boat *Marques de Comillas* were taken into custody and turned over to a special court when the police discovered a quantity of documents and photographs of Hitler and Franco in their baggage, it was revealed officially today.

Among the effects there were pamphlets that declared that if Germany wins the war, Spain will recover various American territories, including Cuba, the police reveal.

Other passengers who also arrived on board the same boat told the police that during the voyage the Dominican priests wore sport shirts displaying the emblem of the Falange. When the passengers protested to the captain about it, they were told that the boat was Spanish territory.

The priests in custody are: Manuel Garcia, Manuel Meruelo, and Angel Fernandez.

Note that these priests disguised themselves as laymen in order to carry on their Fascist activities. This usually enables the church to appear uninvolved in Fascist plots.

The New York Times and other large dailies suppressed this United Press dispatch.

The press recently had much to say about the conviction in Detroit of Max Stephan for aiding Nazi flier lieutenant Hans Krug to escape. What they did not report was the German aviator's own testimony that he was further assisted by a Canadian Catholic priest. Says the *Seranton Times* of July 1, 1942:

Through the Toronto priest Krug said he obtained a railroad ticket to Detroit and made his way to Windsor.

It would be interesting to know what were his connections with the Royal Oak priest, who had been shouting for the Nazis until the Department of Justice banned his *Social Justice*. It would also be interesting to know how Canada's flying priest, "Father" Schulte, also crossed the same frontier at Detroit when he was recently pursued by the Royal Northwest Mounted Police, after it was discovered that while ostensibly engaged in missionary work with the Eskimos he had mapped most of northern Canada, and laid caches of gasoline along the Hudson Bay route to Greenland for a possible invasion by the Nazis. (*Toronto Globe and Mail*, September 26, 1940; published in *Consolation* No. 556, January 8, 1941, page 6)

Do Americans too foolishly conclude that Coughlin has now given up since the tap on the wrist, banning his propaganda sheet? Have not comparatively few arrests been made compared to the thousands of howling subverts who offended American ears a so little while ago with the rabble cries for Hitler and Franco? Who but the Catholic Church could prevent Coughlin's arrest as a traitor? *The Converted Catholic* is the authority for the statement that a charge of sedition against him and David I.

\* Hear these cries in the record (Part 6) of Judge Rutherford's famous speech "Government and Peace", delivered in Madison Square Garden, June, 1939, even though a howling and booing mob of Coughlinites had gathered there to wreck the assembly. The word "Franco" can be distinctly heard above the booing.

Walsh was squelched in Washington. (October, 1942, page 207)

What do the lip loyalties such as the recent pledge of the priests to support the president amount to? Are not such declarations worse than silence, since they put the people off guard? Meanwhile the Jesuit magazine *America* asks the question: "In reality is [democracy] worth fighting for?" (May 17, 1942) And Cardinal Villeneuve, of Catholic Quebec, even while Canada fights for freedom abroad, orders the burning of all "New Testaments" by his flock. The same influence caused a Quebec vote of three to one against Canadian conscription of men for overseas duty.\*

One other quotation from *The Converted Catholic*, April, 1942, to which this article is deeply indebted, discloses the reason for the bloody Russian campaign:

Bitter jealousy has existed between the Hierarchies of the Roman Catholic and the Greek Orthodox [of which the Russian is a branch] churches since the eleventh century, when the great schism occurred between Constantinople and Rome. Victory of Hitler's armies over Russia would also open up the way for the Vatican's victory over what remains of the Russian Orthodox church there. No wonder the Nazis declare this "a holy war"!

This brings to an end the consideration of the Hierarchy in a few parts of the world. It is the most infinitesimal part of their misdeeds. Fifteen hundred years of intrigue and bloodshed have gone by. The above is offered merely to prove that her methods and purposes remain unchanged. Even the atrocities of the war, the wholesale destruction of an entire village, such as Lidice, and the murdering of hostages in reprisal, are of Jesuit origin. It can therefore be said that the miseries of this war, the camp

\* The Catholic French Canadians chanted: "L'Angleterre est en guerre, Ce n'est pas de nos affaires." (Meaning) "England is at war, and that's none of our business." (*The Converted Catholic*, June, 1942, page 153)



followers of starvation, pestilence, and cold, the millions dead and the bitterly sorrowing mourners, are the result of religion's atrocious greed. The monster Rome cares nothing for the cost even to her own population. She has determined to follow Satan's leading to "rule or ruin".

This is but a glimpse of Rome's infamy, for time would fail any author to recount even the crimes of the last decade.

The United States is committed to win a war started by Rome. While American soldiers die on the battlefields in an effort to stop the onslaught of the Hierarchy's Hitler and his Shinto allies, at home the gestapo of priests works unhampered. Jehovah's witnesses, who render a patriotic service by exposing this iniquitous conspiracy, continue to be mobbed without official protest. In September, 1942, while assembled in nationwide convention, their cars were overturned, and men, women and children were beaten and shot, in Oregon, Illinois, and Arkansas.

This American Inquisition has been under way for several years now. Behind it, as usual, is the religious clergy, particularly the Romanist, whose venom is aroused, not by the otherwise unexceptional and law-abiding Americans called "Jehovah's witnesses", but by the piercing truth of God's Word! "For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart." (Hebrews 4:12) They are "cut to the heart", and resort to violence, just as in the days of the apostles.—Acts 5:33; 7:54.

In brief, the record of religion is one of multiplied crimes, and the witness exposing them is almost complete. Her wickedness is far worse than that of her prototype, unfaithful Israel, whose condemnation resulted from similar practices. "Thy eyes and thy heart are directed on nothing but upon thy own

gain, and upon innocent blood to shed it, and upon oppression, and upon extortion, to practise them."—Jeremiah 22:17, *Leeser*.

There is little time before the execution of "the judgments written", that is, before Armageddon. (Psalm 149:9) Rome is in the saddle and will ride with the Devil and share his doom.—Revelation 20:10, 15; Matthew 25:41.

This article is particularly addressed to the people who have unwittingly supported their greatest enemy, RELIGION. To them these words of JEHOVAH apply: "Come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you."—2 Corinthians 6:17; Revelation 18:4.

It is impossible for man to stop the invisible hordes of Satan, and his religious cutthroats, who overwhelm Europe and Asia, and dictate to Americans through the hireling press. But there is one thing all honest men will desire to do: cease supporting iniquity and learn of God's way to life.

The institution which claims the sole right to save souls has, in truth, been guilty of the death of millions of souls, which it can no more redeem than it can escape God's vengeance. "They that trust in their wealth, and boast themselves in the multitude of their riches; none of them can by any means redeem his brother, nor give to God a ransom for him." (Psalm 49:6, 7) There are many roads to death, but only one way to life.—Matthew 7:13; John 14:6.

The Bible outlines the course of the future. The Hierarchy shortly will resurrect the League of Nations and dominate a peace conference, in which she will assume the leading role; successful in this, she will attempt to exterminate her most hated enemies, God's witnesses; then the Lord will put it in the hearts of her allies, the political and military, who have long known of her extreme hypocrisy, to destroy every vestige of the vaunted religious structure and life. (See *Peace—Can It Last?*)

Every statement herein is fully documented and there is not a newspaper in America that can successfully refute the charge that the Papacy not only supports Hitler but also backs the avowedly heathen Japanese. The many appeals to the pope show that he could stop this war by forbidding Catholics to engage in it.\* A decree from the pope caused a hundred thousand Irish Catholics to desert the Union army.†

Again the people of good-will are addressed: To remain in this organization involves you (to the extent of support donated) in the acts of the institution over which you have no control. Above all else, her greatest offense is fighting against God, who will have none of HER "New Order", but will give the obedient life, under The Theocracy. Why continue with a sinking ship, righteously condemned by the infallible JEHOVAH? If you prefer to remain loyal to an organization that knows no loyalty, you, or even billions of supporters, can in no wise avert God's judgments. No man can now deliver the Roman Catholic world organization; for it has 'fallen into the hands of the living God'. (Hebrews 10:31; Deuteronomy 32:29) "Her sins have reached unto heaven."—Revelation 18:5.

But individuals are invited by Jehovah to escape death by quitting the support

\* "A Vatican stand against Nazism, Continental observers said, would have reverberations among Catholics from Lisbon to the fighting front in Russia." (Associated Press dispatch, in Los Angeles *Examiner*, September 21, 1942)

† A very revealing article entitled "Rome's Responsibility for the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln", by Thomas M. Harris, Late Brigadier General U.S.V., and Major General by Brevet, published in Pittsburgh, Pa., by the Williams Publishing Co., in 1897, and now found only in the Library of Congress, shows that of the 5 percent of the soldiers who deserted from the Union army, 45 percent were Catholics. Of 144,000 Irishmen enlisted, 104,000 deserted after the pope recognized the Confederacy. The general's quotation is from the Pension Department at Washington, D. C. For corroboration of the Papal guilt in Lincoln's assassination, see article "Jesuit Destroyers", in *Consolation* Nos. 579 and 580.

of, and even affiliation with, the object of His wrath. (Revelation 18:4) He mercifully warns the people who have been deceived, so that they may get out of the path of His terrible Executioner. —Zephaniah 2:2,3; Matthew 24:14-16.

If you have been a member of the Roman Catholic church perhaps these disclosures have been shocking indeed. But is it not often true that the cure of a disease is unpleasant, even painful? (Hebrews 12:11) Such will not deter a courageous man from pursuing the course that brings the greatest good though he suffers in the journey. Rely on Jehovah; seek His way and live. The best assistants you can have in learning the right way are the commissioned servants of Jehovah, who will gladly aid you in Bible studies. There is yet time. But it is fleeting! Hasten now, and you shall have the desire of your heart! "Delight thyself also in the LORD; and he shall give thee the desires of thine heart." —Psalm 37:4.—Elton Groves.

### Dies Is Five Years Too Late

◆ According to Federated Press January 16, Martin Dies announces he will now investigate Fascist activities in America. Dies made the same announcement four years ago. In four years he spread lies and falsehood (according to President Roosevelt), undermined democracy (according to Wendell Willkie), and devoted himself chiefly to undermining labor unions (according to resolutions of CIO convention). He also slandered non-profitmaking organizations, co-operatives, and organizations which exposed the corruption of William Randolph Hearst, until recently America's No. 1 Fascist. Dies refused to investigate the Nazi Bund (except perfunctorily) or the Japanese spies off Lower California or Mussolini's agents; he refused to investigate the Coughlinite Christian Fronters (whose Boston offices have just been raided by FBI).—*In Fact*, January 26, 1942.

## Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"

THE WATCHTOWER edition Bible, released at the New World Theocratic Assembly, is a real boon to the witnesses who so joyfully received it at that time. It is the popular King James Version of the Scriptures, but is more than just another Bible. Following the Holy Writ itself there appear three special, Theocratic features: "Index of Proper Names, Expressions, and Their Meanings," "Concordance of Bible Words and Expressions," and "God's Word on Vital Subjects". These provisions will greatly aid all who desire to study and to understand God's Word; they are invaluable to the minister who would fulfill his commission to "root out, and to pull down, and to destroy, and to throw down, to build, and to plant".—Jeremiah 1:10.

### *"Index of Proper Names, Expressions, and Their Meanings"*

When one looks up a scripture he may find a proper name or expression the meaning of which he does not know or cannot remember. By looking it up in this index one can quickly find out its meaning, and if it has previously been discussed in connection with a prophetic picture God has caused to be recorded, the meaning given may be sufficient to remind one of what it pictures.

When there are two or more possible meanings for a word this index gives the correct meaning, the one the Lord purposed it to have when He had it recorded. For example, "Mordecai": In Bible dictionaries and concordances its meaning is stated to be "little man", a pet name for "Merodach", "dedicated to Mars," "a worshiper of Mars," or "pure myrrh". Now which of these is correct? The index gives the correct one, "like pure myrrh or bruised myrrh." The other definitions are of heathen-religion origin, and are not Scriptural. Then, there are other names which are not properly

defined at all in Bible dictionaries and concordances; such as "Esther". It is usually defined as "star" or "the planet Venus", but only in this New World index is it properly defined as "fresh myrtle", as explained in the book *Preservation*.

In studying the daily text one will often find therein a proper name. The index is conveniently bound together with your Bible; look up the name; many times its meaning will throw light on the entire text. In like manner use this index when studying *The Watchtower* and other Bible helps published by the Society. At back-calls a question may arise concerning a Bible character or place mentioned in the Scriptures. By looking up the word in the index its correct meaning can be given, and this meaning may even indicate what it typified or foreshadowed, thus enabling the minister of God's Word to answer the question completely.

One other point relative to this index: When the meaning of the word has been ascertained, and the explanation has been determined, to be discussed it must be pronounced. The index will aid even in this, although no diacritical marks are used. This rule may usually be followed: If the accented syllable ends in a vowel, the vowel is long, as *ā, ē, ī, ō, ū*. If the accented syllable ends in a consonant, the vowel is not long. For example, *A'bel* and *Ab'don*.

### *New World Theocratic Concordance*

The heading under which this subject is shown in the new Bible is, "Concordance of Bible Words and Expressions." A concordance is an alphabetical, verbal index showing the places in a textbook where each principal word may be found, and sometimes with its immediate context. That definition completely describes the concordance from its first word, "Aaron," to its last word, "Zion's." It is

a concordance of the principal words in the Bible, showing where in the Bible they may be found.

This concordance, tied in as it is with, and a part of, the WATCHTOWER edition of the Bible, the "sword of the spirit", is arranged for 'hand-to-hand fighting' which the Lord's people encounter in the 'front-line trenches'. It is so arranged that it can be taken into the field and on back-calls for use at a moment's notice. If this concordance is properly understood and used it will help to meet all emergencies with the point of the "sword", either in the offensive or in the defensive, by enabling one to locate the texts pertaining to the issue involved.

How may one most effectively use the concordance for this purpose? First, only principal words are listed. Some texts are given containing the word and its immediate context, enabling the searcher to determine instantly if that is the text he has in mind, without

referring to the body of the Bible to check further. Other texts containing the word are shown by the Bible book, chapter and verse, without any context. In such cases the student must look up the scripture in the Bible itself to determine if that is the one he is seeking. So through the list of references given till the desired text is located. This is necessarily slower than when some of the immediate context is given; but since it is necessary to have this concordance compact and always available for immediate use it is impossible to give the context of the word in each text cited.

What words are considered as principal words, words that we may reasonably expect to find in this Theocratic concordance? This is important to determine, so that time will not be wasted trying to locate a text by words that do not appear in the concordance. While this loss of time cannot always be avoided, it may be greatly minimized.

## 1943 CALENDAR COMPLETED

HAVE YOU ORDERED YOURS?

YEARETEXT:

"MORE THAN CONQUERORS THROUGH HIM THAT LOVED US."—Rom. 8: 37.

This text heads a descriptive three-color picture portraying the symbolic scarlet-colored beast of Revelation 17 coming up out of the pit to fight against the visible representatives of the Lamb of God. Through the Lamb, Christ Jesus, God's servants are more than conquerors. To Christians this picture will be a source of encouragement the whole year long. To add to its beauty, the picture is mounted on a silver-spangled green background, beside a neat calendar pad that sets forth the special Testimony Periods for the year, plus special service suggestions from the Scriptures for the intervening months.

You need this calendar in your home to help you arrange your affairs in harmony with the planned activities of Jehovah's servants throughout the earth for the coming year. The supply is limited; so order without delay. The calendar may be had on a contribution of 25c each, or \$1.00 for five mailed to one address.

WATCHTOWER

117 Adams St.

Brooklyn, N. Y.

Please send me ..... of the 1943 Calendar. Herewith is my contribution of .....  
(25c each, or 5 for \$1.00)

Name ..... Street .....

City ..... State .....



There is no inflexible rule that can be followed, but a suggestion is here offered: Keep in mind always that this is a "new world" Theocratic concordance. That is your measuring rod. The principal words shown in the concordance are not determined by their usage by religionists, nor are the principal words determined because of their relationship to "character development" or creature exaltation. The principal words are determined by their relationship to the New World Theocracy, their relationship to Jehovah; words that have to do with Jehovah, the things He is going to accomplish, His purposes, His judgments against the enemy or His blessings for His people. Therefore, in determining principal words, keep this point in mind: The principal words are those specially relating to the great Theocrat, His King, or His kingdom. So doing, you will not have great difficulty finding the word you seek in the concordance.

In selecting the scriptures to be listed in this concordance the endeavor was to show the comparative usages of the word, where such exist. For example, "earth." Under that word Ecclesiastes 1:4, "the earth abideth for ever," is cited. That refers to the literal mundane sphere. Isaiah 65:17, "I create new heavens and a new earth," shows its usage as the rule by the princes under The Theocracy. Isaiah 60:2 is listed: "darkness shall cover the earth." Here the reference to the "earth" is to the present rule of imperfect men under demon influence. Or, take the word "wine". The concordance lists Judges 9:13, Jeremiah 25:15, Joel 3:18, 1 Timothy 5:23, and Revelation 18:3. In each of these texts the word "wine" is used in a different sense, sometimes the literal, in others to symbolize different things. While not all texts containing the word "wine" appear in the concordance, those showing its different usages are listed. This feature was given consideration throughout the concordance when it was in preparation, and will be of use to the

student and the publisher alike. At back-calls, for example, it is often necessary to show the literal and symbolic uses of words, and this can be readily demonstrated through this Theocratic concordance.

Listed also in this concordance are some Biblical phrases often used by ordained ministers. Many scriptures might contain one of the several words of the phrase, but few would use the entire phrase. This greatly narrows the field of texts to be checked and facilitates finding these often-used expressions. Some of them are: "Appeal unto Caesar," "body of Christ," "king of the north," "kingdom of God," "principal of the flock," "second death," and "thousand years".

Then, too, there is a special Theocratic feature of showing such words as "Theocracy", "Vindicator," and "vindication". While these words do not occur in the text of the King James Version Bible, this concordance cites other translations that do use them, or shows texts where the original root words are used and from which the word listed in the concordance is drawn. Thus the concordance may be properly called a "new world Theocratic concordance".

The third feature in the back of the Watchtower edition Bible, "God's Word on Vital Subjects," will be considered in the next article of this series.

---

### Plain Talk by Gannett

◆ Frank Gannett, prominent New York newspaper publisher, in an address at Pittsburgh to the Pennsylvania League of Women voters, went after Congress and the Supreme Court with some pretty plain talk when he said: "Countless boards, bureaus and commissions created by Congress have assumed power that Congress never intended they should have. And a supine, weak and cheapened supreme court is upholding their actions. A change just as alarming has come over Congress."

## A Refugee Trip Through Siberia

A BRITISH subscriber writes at length of his trip as a refugee from Latvia all the way across Russia and Siberia to Vladivostok, where he was put aboard a boat for Australia. A special train, chartered by the British ambassador, took 180 of his countrymen on the eleven-day journey by rail, and this was followed by a four-week ocean trip before the journey was completed.

The refugees were allowed to bring away with them but very limited amounts of money. They might bring a gold watch, but not a gold chain. Food en route was moderately good to poor. Sleeping accommodations were provided. Passengers were not allowed to stray beyond the station platforms. At every station there were either statues or framed photographs of both Lenin and Stalin. Extracts from the story of the trip follow:

At Perm, we entered that part of Russia made notorious by the sufferings of prisoners and their families exiled to Siberia in czarist times. The exiles had to make the greater part of the journey on foot and there were stopping places for the night at certain points, and clearing stations at others. Many thousands of hopeless exiles have passed through the places past which our train was now taking us: Perm, Yekaterineburg (now called Sverdlovsk), Tuimen, Omsk, Tomsk, and others. It was at Yekaterineburg that the late czar's family was murdered.

The majority of the exiles had committed no criminal act, but were suspect on account of their known liberal views and desire for a less rigorous form of administration. Such persons were required to take up their residence in Siberia at some place indicated to them. If the prisoner had a wife and children, these were permitted to accompany him into exile, and many did so. Often the exiles had come from comfortable homes and the hardships of the march, the lack of medical attention (this was available only at certain clearing stations and frequently these were sepa-

rated by a march taking two weeks), the cold, the fetid atmosphere at the shelters during the night, and the complete lack of sanitary arrangements, took a heavy toll of life, especially among the women and children. The official records of the clearing station at Tuimen show that for several years the death rate varied from between 220 and 430 per thousand, almost incredible figures. No one ever visited Siberia with the object of investigating the conditions of the exiles, without being arrested by the police, notwithstanding official permissions and other documents with which he may have armed himself before undertaking the journey. Exiles are still sent to Siberia; we saw only one party, about 150 men under armed guard, as we were approaching Krasnoyarsk; they were probably working there in the mines.

The nature of the country in this part of Siberia from the Urals and for hundreds of miles is steppe, a treeless waste. No cattle or sheep were seen, and the only form of life visible appeared to be magpies. This steppe is broken here and there by towns, but they are few, large and far between. These towns are old and had their origin in bygone days when the Russian czars were extending their dominions eastward. They began as military stations and were designed to keep in check the hordes of Tartars from the East. Our train was more than two days crossing this steppe, which ultimately gave place to more mountainous country where there are valuable mines which yield a good-quality coal. The center of this mining area is Krasnoyarsk on the Yenisei River; the Bolsheviks have renamed the town Nova-Sibirsk (New Siberia). This place was reached early Friday afternoon November 1.

At Krasnoyarsk a rather pathetic incident occurred. One of the passengers had a wife and child living there, who were on the platform to see him; they were able to spend about half an hour together. The man, although a British subject, had been born in Russia and spoke only the Russian language. Some years earlier he had been sent out of

the country by the Bolsheviks because he was a foreigner. His wife, a Russian subject, he had had to leave behind. For some years he had been living in Estonia, and, now that that country had been absorbed by the Bolsheviks, he was again on the move. It is seldom that the Bolsheviks will grant an exit visa to a Russian woman married to a foreigner when her husband, merely because he is a foreigner, is forced to leave the country.

A run of a little more than an hour from Irkutsk brought us to the shores of Lake Baikal, which has an area of 13,000 square miles; in places it reaches a depth of 4,500 feet, more than four-fifths of a mile. This lake abounds in fish, but is too far away for these ever to appear in European markets. One variety is considered by some to be more palatable than salmon; it was served several times to us on the train while we were in this vicinity.

Lake Baikal is surrounded by great and lofty mountains and the railway winds snake-like round its shore and continues some distance along the eastern side, until a gap in the mountains is reached through which it continues its way to the east. When the Trans-Siberian railway was first built, a break occurred at Lake Baikal, and the western and eastern sections were connected by a train ferry across the lake. Besides loss of time, the ferry necessitated the use in winter of powerful icebreakers, which had to be kept constantly at work in order to keep a passage open across the water. The extension of the railway round part of the lake was a feat of great engineering skill; for the track had to be blasted out of the solid rock for the whole of the distance. There are nearly sixty tunnels in this section; the work was completed only a few years ago.

Each coach is heated separately. At one end a coal fire is kept burning which connects with the steam or hot water system which warms the whole coach. There are two conductors to each coach, who take duty alternately. They sweep up and keep the coach tidy, attend to fires and see that a comfortable temperature is maintained. At all Russian stations ample supplies of hot water are available to passengers. At certain points a

light engine came alongside the train and pumped hot water into the tanks at each coach. This was a great convenience, for there were only two small hand basins at which to wash in each coach.

The towns in Siberia are mostly built of wood, although brick and stone are used for factories and other important buildings. Paint is so seldom used that one could be well excused for thinking it non-existent. The houses are mostly of one story; consequently a place of any size covers a considerable area. These vast conglomerations of unpainted dirty wooden houses give the appearance of being the most unattractive and uninviting places imaginable in which to live. Added to this is the knowledge that the people have no liberty whatever, and no money, and there is nothing they could buy with it should they have any. They are underfed, and must stand in queues to get their rations. To further harass them their ears are constantly assailed, in most public places, by the raucous blare of loudspeakers, churning out propaganda tripe, telling them what a happy lot is theirs, and how the workers of other lands envy them. Interspersed between the talks, dance and other music is played. The quality of Russian radio apparatus is poor, and so is the music that comes through it. The music and dances are played loudly, the talks screamed as in all totalitarian countries, the idea of the propaganda directors evidently being that the louder the music is played, the happier the people will be, and that the louder the talk is screamed, the more convincing the argument, if any. When one sees how the people are harassed, it is little wonder that an official should say to a passenger, "When you get out, you will surely tell the world how hard it is for us to live."

---

### Buying Up Debts in Georgia

◆ The Supreme Court has justly decided that slavery and peonage may not be surreptitiously practiced, as it has been done in Georgia under the contract labor law, which permitted employers, plantation owners and others to buy up debts, usually of Negroes, and to work them until the debts are satisfied.

Announcing

# 1943 YEARBOOK OF JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES

now released!

EAGERLY you have awaited the opportunity to read the report of the activities of Jehovah's witnesses throughout the earth during the fiscal year 1942. Doubtless you have wondered what effect the sudden spread of warfare around the globe has had upon the activities of these faithful Christians. What has been the fate of the faithful witnesses in the Philippines? in Burma? in Malaya? in the East Indies and the islands of the sea? What is going on inside the Nazi-patrolled European continent in the way of preaching the gospel of the Kingdom? How has it been possible that a *world-wide* report of the witness work of the perilous 1942 is prepared and released? What has actually been required to carry on the work in all parts of the earth? Can Jehovah's witnesses be prevented from doing their God-given work?

These and many other questions are answered in the 1943 *Yearbook of Jehovah's witnesses*. You will thrill at the evidences of Jehovah God's leading as His faithful witnesses fought with all their might to overcome the many obstacles and hardships along the way of Kingdom service, and how they have maintained their integrity, some even unto death. Their faithfulness will encourage you to good works now.

Besides the year's report, and very important too, the *Yearbook* contains the yeartext, with comment thereon, and a text (with comments from the *Watchtower* magazine on each text) for every day in the year. You will want to have this and start every day right by considering the daily text.

Order your copy now. The *Yearbook* contains 416 pages, is bound in navy-blue cloth, gold-embossed. It is available at 50c contribution per copy for this limited edition.

---

## WATCHTOWER, 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y.

Please send me ..... copies of the 1943 *Yearbook of Jehovah's witnesses*. I enclose a contribution of ..... to aid in cost of publishing more Kingdom literature.

Name ..... Street .....

City ..... State .....



# CONSOLATION

A JOURNAL OF FACT, HOPE AND COURAGE

## Northwest Africa Front

The Barbary states and the Sahara. Mohammed and the Koran

---

## When Religion Rides Again

Also, see "Christendom's" new baby girl

---

## The Forgotten Name

Religionists dare to ignore God's hallowed name

---

## The Rights of the People

Americans have an absolute right to think and speak

---

## Consecration vs. Cannibalism

Five Cents a Copy  
One Dollar a Year

January 20, 1943  
Vol. XXIV No. 609

\* Foreign Countries  
\$1.25 in Canada and

Published Every  
Other Wednesday

# Contents

The Northwest Africa Front	3
French North Africa	4
The Atlas Mountains	5
Radio Penetrates the Saharas	6
Sahara's Future Blessings	7
Mohammed Possessed by Demons	8
The Koran	9
New Jersey—"The Boss Is on the Run," Mean Thieves of May's Landing, etc.	11
The New Government	12
Desecrating the Sabbath (?)	12
Partially Rewarded by a Parking Ticket	12
Witnessing to an Honest Official	12
When Religion Rides Again	13
Bringing the "Past" Up to Date	14
"Christendom's" New Baby	15
Aims of the Soviets and the "Church" Now One	16
"Thy Word Is Truth"	17
The Forgotten Name	19
The Rights of the American People	19
And Maybe We'll Learn Something Too	20
Yes, There's a Risk	21
Free Speech—Now	22
Let's Discuss the War—and the Peace	23
Consecration vs. Cannibalism	25
Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"	29
"God's Word on Vital Subjects"	29
Defeat of Persecution in Odessa	31

Published every other Wednesday by  
WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, INC.  
117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

Editor Clayton J. Woodworth  
Business Manager Nathan H. Knorr

Five Cents a Copy  
\$1 a year in the United States  
\$1.25 to Canada and all other countries

## NOTICE TO SUBSCRIBERS

**Remittances:** For your own safety, remit by postal or express money order. When coin or currency is lost in the ordinary mails, there is no redress. Remittances from countries other than those named below may be made to the Brooklyn office, but only by international postal money order.

**Receipt of a new or renewal subscription** will be acknowledged only when requested. **Notice of Expiration** is sent with the journal one month before subscription expires. Please renew promptly to avoid loss of copies.

**Send change of address** direct to us rather than to the post office. Your request should reach us at least two weeks before the date of issue with which it is to take effect. Send your old as well as the new address. Copies will not be forwarded by the post office to your new address unless extra postage is provided by you.

Published also in Greek, Portuguese, Spanish, and Ukrainian.

## OFFICES FOR OTHER COUNTRIES

**England** 34 Craven Terrace, London, W.2  
**Australia** 7 Beresford Road, Strathfield, N.S.W.  
**South Africa** 623 Boston House, Cape Town  
**Mexico** Calzada de Melchor Ocampo 71, Mexico, D.F.  
**Brazil** Caixa Postal 1319, Rio de Janeiro  
**Argentina** Calle Honduras 5646-48, Buenos Aires  
Entered as second-class matter at Brooklyn, N. Y.,  
under the Act of March 3, 1879.

## Notanda

### The Too-Fresh Judge Cook

♦ A while back Municipal Judge J. D. Cook, Jr., of Texarkana, Arkansas, made great newspaper name and fame for himself by sentencing one of Jehovah's witnesses to a fine of \$100 and thirty days in jail for circulating literature which the United States Supreme Court has officially decided he has a perfect right to circulate. In enlarging himself in the public eye Judge Cook went to the trouble of referring to the Department of Justice and the Federal Bureau of Investigation as Washington Wheel Chair Artists' Having thus put himself on official record as a bench jackass, it is a pleasure to note that, by request of the city attorney, the case in connection with which he gained his notoriety has been dismissed. And thus one more vicious newspaper hero comes to nought.

### A Curious Jersey Headline

♦ The *Hudson News* has an interesting headline about the progress of religion in the vicinity of Palisades Amusement Park, opposite 125th Street ferry, New York city. It says,

HUGE BINGO GAME HAS HUDSON COUNTY  
CHURCHMEN UP IN ARMS FOR ROBBING ITS  
CHURCHES OF THEIR TAKE FROM ILLEGAL  
GAMES

Upon reading the account, it seems that the Amusement Park has so many gambling games going that the local churches' games seem tame and cold and don't draw either crowds or cash. Awful!

### Sawdust and Shavings for Insulation

♦ Dry sawdust and shavings for insulation are encouraged by Canadian authorities. These materials, when put in the walls, do not make breeding-places for vermin, insects or rodents, nor do they encourage the decay of timber. It has been proved that when properly packed these materials provide a good fire-stop. Certainly their use makes a house warm in winter and cool in summer.

CONSOLATION

# CONSOLATION

"And in His name shall the nations hope."—Matthew 12:21, A. R. V.

Volume XXIV

Brooklyn, N. Y., Wednesday, January 20, 1943

Number 609

## The Northwest Africa Front

WITH the struggle for world domination raging throughout the earth, all humanity was and is intensely interested in the quite unexpected news that the long-looked-for "second front" was opened in Northwest Africa on Saturday, November 7, 1942.

Along with other thinking people, the readers of this magazine are interested. Many of their loved ones are involved. Thus, for example, the mother of Lieut. Gen. Dwight D. Eisenhower (in command of the expedition) is one of Jehovah's witnesses. Incidentally, had she exercised her privilege of attending the Christian assemblies at Little Rock, Arkansas, Springfield, Illinois, or Klamath Falls, Oregon, she would have stood a good chance of being killed by the un-American mobs that in those three shameless cities, September 18, 19 and 20, 1942, undertook to destroy all of the four freedoms for which Lieut. Gen. Eisenhower and all the American boys with him are risking their lives.

It is not the office of this magazine to offer military advice, of which the newspapers have been nauseatingly full for more than three years. Nor would this periodical undertake to keep its readers posted on the march of events which, as in this instance, changes the face of the world overnight, and amazes mankind.

### *The People Have a Right*

But the people have a right to know something about what northern Africa is like, what kind of people live there, the manner of their life, the climate, the crops and other possibilities the govern-

ments, the religion, and something of the early history.

At the moment the struggle is on for Tunisia, and, oddly enough, it is between the Axis powers ("the king of the north") and the United Nations ("the king of the south"); and on this particular front "the king of the north" is in the north, and "the king of the south" is in the south.

The city of Tunis is in the war news. It was near here that Phoenicians founded one of the most famous cities of antiquity, Carthage, the capital of a rich and powerful commercial republic. The city was founded about eight and a half centuries before Christ, and seven hundred years later had a population of about a million and was in the enjoyment of extraordinary prosperity. Recent excavations show that the streets crossed each other regularly at right angles. The long streets ran parallel to the quays and were distant from each other about 150 feet. A great commercial metropolis.

No foreign traders were allowed at any of the Carthaginian western colonies, which extended to Madeira, the Canary Islands and along the West African coast. Only the port of Carthage was open to foreigners. Traders found elsewhere were drowned. Carthaginian sailors concealed the routes which they followed, and one sea captain sank his vessel rather than reveal its course when pursued by a Roman galley. Carthage claimed the monopoly of Mediterranean waters and seized every foreign ship found between Gibraltar and the island of Sardinia, off the west coast of Italy.

### ***A Fight with "the King of the North"***

It was inevitable that Carthage would sooner or later come into collision with the growing power of Rome, in which market, in times of peace, the Carthaginians sold the slaves, ivory, metals, precious stones and all the products of central Africa and Spain, which came to them either by caravan or by ship. The district around Carthage, with its amazing fertility, was the granary of the city, as it was later that of Rome.

The first wars with Rome were fought by Carthage for the defense of her possessions in Sicily, and ended in a partial Roman triumph, causing great bitterness between the two cities. And here enters the story of Hannibal.

When Hannibal was nine years old his father made him swear on the altar eternal hatred for the Romans. A second war broke out and Rome sent ambassadors to Carthage demanding that Hannibal be delivered up. Hannibal started for Rome, but not the way the Romans had expected him to come, and not as a prospective prisoner. He came via Spain with forty elephants, 12,000 horsemen, and 90,000 foot soldiers. This was considered a large army in those days back there, 218 B.C.

In midwinter, and with what was then considered incredible rapidity, Hannibal's army crossed southern France and came over the Alps by the Little St. Bernard pass, and by midsummer had conquered most of Italy, down to within sight of Rome itself. The Carthaginian senate withheld all further support, but Hannibal held his ground in Italy for sixteen years. The Romans, seeing that he could not move, raised an army and attacked Carthage. Hannibal returned to Africa to defend the city, but was defeated, and committed suicide rather than return as a prisoner to Rome to torture and death.

A peace was patched up, but, after another half-century, Rome, now the master of the world, determined finally to *destroy* Carthage. In the year 146

B.C., after a three-year fight, this city, which at one time had grasped at the supremacy of the world, perished, leaving no historians to tell the tale. Given the job of plundering and burning the city, the Roman troops reduced it to a bed of cinders, blackened stones, broken glass, fragments of metal twisted by fire, and half-burned bones, still found to a depth of from thirteen to sixteen feet, which bear grim witness to the terrible fate which overtook the city. Everything was leveled to the ground and the ruins were sowed with salt. The site of the city was dedicated to the demons with solemn curses, and all human habitation throughout the vast ruined area was expressly forbidden. These ruins lie about ten miles to the northwest of Tunis today.

The population of the city of Tunis, the capital and largest city in Tunisia, in the year 1926, consisted of 185,996, of whom there were 106,800 Moslems, 24,131 Jews, 27,922 French, 24,076 Italians, and others.

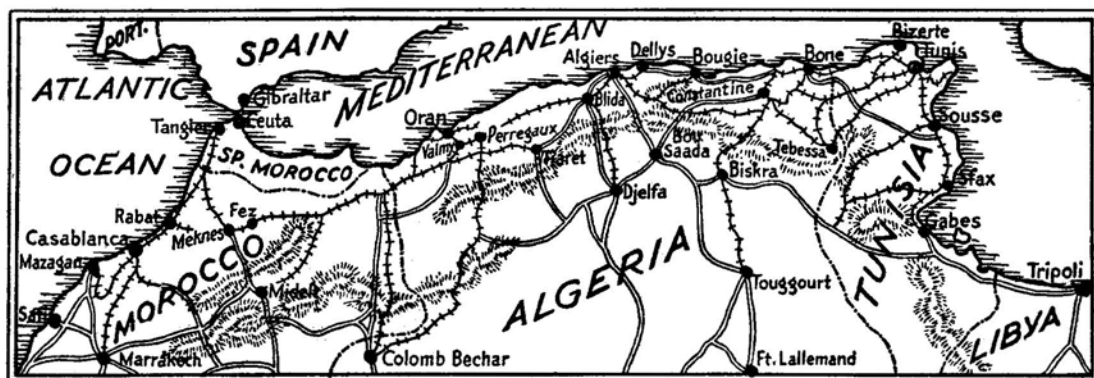
### ***French North Africa***

Take a map of the United States. Draw a line from Montreal, through Pittsburgh, to Atlanta, Georgia; thence another line to Jacksonville, Florida; connect that with Portland, Maine, and thence back to Montreal, and you have an excellent idea of the size and possibilities of the large and fertile area which goes to make up Morocco, Algeria and Tunisia. These are the countries that go to make up French North Africa.

This picture is a very apt one, except that the Atlas mountains, running (as do the Appalachians) from southwest to northeast, have their rivers flowing north and west into the Atlantic and Mediterranean, while the rivers of the states on the Atlantic coast of the United States flow to the south and east.

Illustrations of the African rivers are the Muluya, Sebu, Um er Rabia, Dra'a and Ziz. Concerning the first of these *The Encyclopædia Britannica* says:





Its course is largely unexplored save by native French officials. About  $34^{\circ} 20'$  N. General Colville found it some 200 yards wide, but quite shallow; about 25 miles east of its source, where it is crossed by the route to Ziz, it is already a powerful stream with a deep bed cut in the granite rock, and shortly afterwards it is joined by the W Sgimmel, a still larger affluent.

A shallow river 600 feet wide is quite a river and would answer very well the description of the Susquehanna, which drains a large part of New York and Pennsylvania, and which, at Harrisburg, is so shallow at times, in the summer season, that one could almost walk across it. Yet it may, at other times, become a flood that in its upper reaches will turn the district around Wilkes-Barre into a huge lake and endanger homes and other property in a dozen other cities and towns.

Don't think anything of it if you have never heard much about these African rivers. The French have been in there only a relatively short time, and before that nobody could get in except Moslems unless they were ready to be turned into frankfurters when they were discovered to be not of the faithful of that particular sect.

### ***The Atlas Mountains***

Maybe you have never heard of the peaks in the Atlas mountains. Two of these are the Jebel Ayashim (14,600 feet) and Tamjurt (14,500 feet). They

are there all right, and there are many more. Concerning these mountains the same authority says:

While the snow remains on the higher peaks during the greater part of the year, no peak has a perpetual cover of snow. The whole area is 500,000 square miles, including a great variety of surface, mountains, valleys and extensive plains. The valleys are very fertile, are nearly all under cultivation and compare most favorably with other Mediterranean regions.

You have probably heard of Mount Mitchell, in the Appalachians in North Carolina. It is the highest peak in that great chain extending from northern Alabama to northern New York. It is 6,711 feet high. Or you have certainly heard of Mount Washington, in New Hampshire, which towers to 6,233 feet. It thus appears that the Atlas range peaks are considerably more than twice the height of the highest peak in the Appalachians.

Moreover, Jebel Ayashim, in the Atlas mountains, is 466 feet higher than Pike's peak, Colorado, or any other of the forty peaks in that state that are over 14,000 feet in height. From these facts it is to be seen that the Atlas mountains are of considerable height, covered with snow most of the year, and are therefore sources of streams running in all directions. The valleys, approximately as long as the valley of the Connecticut, Hudson, Delaware, Susquehanna, Potomac, James or Savannah river (and one of

them much longer than any of these), are fertile throughout their length, where the rivers run north and west into the Atlantic and Mediterranean; but their course is short and troubled where they run to the south and east. On this point *The Encyclopedia Americana* says:

The southern slope of the Atlas reaches the great desert, from which it is separated by a region of sand hills, shifting with every strong wind, and gradually making encroachments on the fertile lands at the foot of the mountains.

### ***The Sahara Desert***

That brings one to the Sahara desert, which latter is a strip of territory reaching from the Atlantic to the Nile. Roughly, this is a territory about 600 miles wide for the whole distance of some 3,500 miles. But don't get the idea that the Sahara is nothing but sand. To be sure, there are sand and rocks aplenty, with mountains reaching 8,000 feet, even in the midst of the desert, which is higher than anything in the Appalachian system.

In the first place, there are 2,000,000 people living in the French Sahara desert, and they would not be living there unless they were able to make a living. Here is how they live. The encyclopedia, after mentioning that the sand dunes and rocky surfaces are interspersed with oases, declares that the date palm flourishes on these green spots; also the olive tree. Apples, peaches, oranges, grapes, etc., grow, and wheat, barley, rice, durra and other tropical crops are raised, and there is a considerable variety of flora. Then there are domestic animals, such as camels, asses, black cattle, etc., of fifteen species; also jerboas, foxes, jackals, baboons, hyenas, mountain sheep, etc.; about eighty species of birds, among which is the ostrich. There are also tortoises, lizards, and chameleons. The edible frog, and fish, also occur. There is an important trade in silk tissues and mixed goods, ivory, ostrich feathers,

gums, spices, musk, hides, gold dust, indigo, cotton, palm oil, kola nuts, silver, dates, salt, and alum. Many thousands of tons of phosphate are extracted.

### ***Radio Penetrates the Saharas***

It is the discovery of radio that has really made the Sahara penetrable. Here and there, all through the Sahara, are the oases, the locations of which in bygone years were exactly known only to the Arabs. Now others know where they are, too. By wireless, every one of them can keep in touch with governmental headquarters, and, if need be, in an hour, or two or three, any needed assistance can be sent by airplane. The Arab, with his "ship of the desert", the camel, is no longer in control. And besides the radio and the airplane, there is the automobile. In recent years some wonderful trips have been made by trucks and even light cars to various parts of the Libyan and Saharan deserts, and these have all helped to break down the former isolation.

The development of the Sahara region would, of course, be greatly aided by the construction of several railroads across it, similar to the three lines that cross Arizona, the three that cross Nevada, and the three that cross Idaho. Many and fast trains cross the Great American Desert day and night, constantly. The projected French railroad across the Sahara would be only 1,050 miles long, and American engineers would not consider its construction a difficult problem.

The French government and private individuals have experienced success in their efforts to care for traffic by specially designed motorcars. Regular routes are maintained to Timbuktu, and elsewhere, as will be shown in the next issue. Timbuktu, it should be observed, is clear across the Sahara. Other lines go only part way, shuttling back and forth. What is wrong with that? Nothing at all. It is done elsewhere too.

The United States has an excellent

mail service to every point, but it has some long shuttle lines with the mails. Thus the mailman goes from Craig, Colo., 106 miles to Willow Springs Ranch, Utah. Then he cannot go any farther, and turns around and goes back to where he started. The mail from Winnemucca, Nev., to Denio, Idaho, goes in the same manner 110 miles. That from Ingomar, Mont., to Jasper, Mont., 114 miles; from Bernalillo, N. Mex., to Tapicitoes, N. Mex., 123 miles; from Thompsons, Utah, to Bluff, Utah, 141 miles; from Kemmerer, Wyo., to Bondurant, Wyo., 148 miles; and from Flagstaff, Ariz., to Kayenta, Ariz., 160 miles. A few years ago the routes were much longer, some of them, but gradually they are being connected one with another, until the inaccessible spots in the desert are few and far between.

### ***Sahara's Future Blessings***

As the Great American Desert, by vast human irrigation projects, is rapidly being turned into a paradise, so the time will come when the Sahara desert will, by divine 'irrigation projects', "rejoice, and blossom as the rose." Moreover, all that is needed in the dry zones of North Africa and North America is rain, of which the Lord has great quantities stored up in adjacent oceans and seas, and the Lord could make more if He wished to do so. It is easy for Him. He did it before; all He would have to do would be to blend together sufficient quantities of the two gases oxygen and hydrogen that make the bulk of all the seas.

Meantime restless, ambitious, and energetic man never ceases to explore every possibility of bringing every part of the earth into greater productivity. Thus, although the Sahara desert is 350 miles south of the shores of the Mediterranean throughout Morocco, Algiers and Tunisia, it comes right up to the Mediterranean at some places in Lybia and Egypt, and, in some of those places, the

floor of the desert is below the level of the Mediterranean. One of these depressions, Qattara, Egypt, is often in the news. America has such a depression in the Imperial Valley, California.

Noticing these depressions, a famous engineer some years ago made the proposition in all seriousness that the nations should unite to dam the strait of Gibraltar, the rising waters of the Mediterranean to flood these depressions. The evaporation from the inland lakes so formed would, he calculated, produce rain clouds which would water a vast area. The rainlessness of the Sahara, it is explained, is due to the direction of certain winds, which are deprived of their moisture before reaching these lands.

Considerable attention foregoing has been devoted to the Sahara because so relatively little is known of the great rich belt north of it, 350 miles wide and 1500 miles from east to west, which covers an area of about the size of New Hampshire, Vermont, Massachusetts, Rhode Island, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, District of Columbia, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia.

How is transportation conducted throughout this vast area stretching from Casablanca in the west to Tunis in the east? Well, how do the people of Portland, Maine, get to Jacksonville, Fla.? They can go four ways. They can take a train, with one or more changes of cars en route, or they can take a steamer, if they can get one in these days of submarines, or they can go by airplane, or they can go by automobile. The same is the case in northern Africa. There are railroads connecting all the important points (see the map on page 5), as there are in the eastern part of the United States. Within the last century the French have been doing in northern Africa what Americans have been doing in the United States.

### ***The Barbary States***

The four Barbary states, Morocco, Algeria and Tunisia, all of which are under French control, and Libya, which is under Italian control, have a total population of about 18,500,000, most of whom are Berbers, i. e., to the Romans they were *barbarians*. The Berbers are a fine people, thin, strong, robust, with beautifully formed bodies, and brown complexion. They often have light hair, and sometimes blue eyes. Mohammedans in religion, they are said to be generally straight and honest in their dealings, comparing favorably with the Arabs, and of high intelligence. They are of Semitic stock, remarkably industrious.

For centuries the Barbary states were a thorn in the side of the rest of the world. When all the rest of the world went Roman Catholic, northern Africa remained independent. When the Saracens overran the Barbary states they put all Christians to the edge of the sword, and then these countries became solidly Mohammedan.

It is important for those who would know something about the Barbary states to have considerable information about Mohammed, how he came to be a teacher, what he taught, and why today there are more Mohammedans in the world than there are Roman Catholics in Europe, Asia and Africa, and why there are more Mohammedans in the world, by 70,000,000 people, than there are of all the Protestants and Jews in the whole world put together. The *New York World Almanac* gives the Mohammedan population of the earth for 1942 as 220,978,848. This is 30 percent more than the total population of North America regardless of what the people believe. What is it that holds these people together?

When Mohammed was born (A.D. 570) the people of Arabia worshiped the stars and the demons, with this result, as explained in M'Clintock and Strong's *Cyclopædia*:

These deities, with many other images of

the personified powers of nature, rudely represented by idols of every variety and shape, were principally gathered 'round the ancient Kaaba—the pantheon of Arabian idolatry; and their worship was accompanied, not only with the most horrible rites and shocking ceremonies of a degraded paganism, but even with human sacrifices and cruelties of every description. Even children were immolated by some of the ruder clans to the idols, while others, as Kendites, buried their daughters alive.

The so-called "Christians" of that time, divided into Nestorians, Jacobites, Marcionites, and Manicheans, were as far from the spirit of true Christianity as one can well imagine. Deifying the mother of Jesus, many adored her as the third person in the "Trinity", which probably gave rise to the "Christian" tritheism so often dwelt on by Mohammed. (The Roman Hierarchy virtually deifies Mary to this day.)

### ***Mohammed Possessed by Demons***

Mohammed was so unfortunate as to have as a mother one who herself had the supreme misfortune of being demonized. He was by descent a member of the aristocracy of Mecca, but the branch of which he was an offspring was poor. Aminah, his mother, possessed a peculiarly nervous temperament, and used to fancy, while between sleeping and waking, that she was visited by spirits. Mohammed himself, according to the oldest and most trustworthy accounts, was an epileptic. He was believed to be possessed of evil spirits and at first he himself believed this. Gradually, however, he came to the conclusion, assisted by his friends, that the demons had no power over so pure and pious a man as he was, and he decided that he was not controlled by evil spirits, but by good spirits, angels. These he believed he saw in dreams or even while awake. He was inclined to hallucinations of vision and audition, and afflicted with a morbid state of both body and mind. What seemed to him remarkable after such

CONSOLATION



epileptic attacks he accepted as revelation, and at least in the early stages of his career he firmly believed in them. This gave him the courage and endurance he required to brave the difficulties which he had to face and overcome.

At first Mohammed tried to bring the Jews over to his stand that he was the promised Deliverer or Messiah. But when the Jews ridiculed him and angered him with their constant taunts, he changed his tune and became their bitterest enemy, seeking a closer alliance with the heathen Arabs. These he sought to please by adopting practices to their liking.

Although at first Mohammed insisted upon liberty of conscience and opposed religious violence, he came to hold that Islam (his teaching that Allah was God, and himself God's prophet) should, if necessary, be defended and propagated by the sword. He said:

The sword is the key of heaven and hell: a drop of blood shed in the cause of God, or a night spent in arms, is of more avail than two months of fasting and prayer; whoever falls in battle, his sins are forgiven him, and at the day of judgment the loss of his limbs shall be supplied by the wings of cherubim.

Before long Mohammed sanctioned plunder and robbery, and that even in the so-called "sacred months". Many an assassination was instigated by the prophet himself. In all these things he did not differ materially from the leaders of the Catholic religion of the day and since.

### *The Koran*

Each of the 114 suras, or chapters, of Mohammed's small book (about the size of the "New Testament" Scriptures) starts out with the words "In the name of God". The book was actually dictated by one or more demons posing as Almighty God. One of the leading propositions in the book is the teaching of the Devil himself, namely, the 'immortality of the soul', as taught by him to mother Eve and in every theological seminary

since. This, of course, made it necessary to manufacture a "hell".

The Koran has a hell of seven stories, some places very hot and some places very cold. The lightest punishment on any of the seven floors, reserved for the hated infidel, is to be shod with shoes of fire, which shoes make up so much steam that they cause the skull to boil as a caldron. Eventually all Moslems get out of this place, but the most pious of them must stay there at least nine hundred years, while the worst ones have to stay there for seven thousand years. When these poor suckers are let out, the soot on their bodies is washed off in the River of Life, and then they are admitted into paradise. This scheme is referred to the Roman Catholic Hierarchy for further development of their "Purgatory".

Mohammed's own teaching on "purgatory" was that the dead are received in their graves by an angel announcing the coming of two examiners. These examiners, whose names are Monker and Nakir, put questions to the corpse respecting his belief in God and Mohammed, and then, in accordance with his answers, they either torture or comfort him. The infidels, not all of whom are Mohammedans, are confined in a certain well, or, being first offered to heaven, then offered to earth, and rejected by both, become subject to unspeakable tortures until the day of resurrection.

Mohammed was not an educated man, but his first wife, Khadija, could read to him the sacred Scriptures, and many of his chapters are mere travesties of the Bible history. Thus the demons taught Mohammed that Christ was not nailed to the tree, but he said:

Verily, Christ Jesus, the son of Mary, is the apostle of God, and his word, which he conveyed unto Mary, and a spirit proceeding from him, honorable in this world and in the world to come; and one of those who approach near to the presence of God. Yet Jesus was a mere mortal and not the son of God; his enemies conspired against his life, but a phan-

tom was substituted for him on the cross, while he was translated to heaven.

Of course, this letting down of Christ to the position of a "mere mortal" and a prophet is merely to boost Mohammed himself into the position of the greatest of all prophets.

Some of the lies in the Koran are that one of Noah's sons was drowned in the Flood; that the wife of Pharaoh saved Moses; that the winds were subject to Solomon; that Solomon was driven from his kingdom; that devils built for Solomon, and other devils dived for him; that thousands of dead Israelites were raised to life; that Ezra and his ass died for a hundred years and were raised to life. One of the evidences relied upon to prove the inspiration of the Koran is that Jesus promised to send the Comforter—Mohammed, of course.

### **225 Conflicting Passages**

The Devil is a liar, as Jesus expressly stated. And the Scriptures refer to the other members of Satan's organization, the demons, as lying spirits. So it is not to be wondered at that Mohammed's "revelations", made over a period of twenty-three years, and written down by fourteen scribes on palm leaves and other substances conveniently at hand, contain so many contradictions that those running the Moslem religious business have found it necessary to cancel 225 passages that conflicted one with another.

The Koran is exceedingly incoherent and without any logical order in whole or in part. The historian Gibbon, in his *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, calls the Koran an "incoherent rhapsody of fable, and precept, and declamation, which sometimes crawls in the dust and sometimes is lost in the clouds".

In the Koran Mohammed restricted the number of legitimate wives a man could have to four, but after the death of his first wife he married twelve others, exempting himself from the restraint imposed on others. He it was who ordered all these women to wear a close

veil, leaving only the eyes free when going out. And even in the house they were not to show themselves unveiled except to their nearest relatives. He also prohibited them from remarrying after his death. He thus started the harem business.

Mohammed's idea of the future was that his followers should be entertained forever with music of the most ravishing nature. Also, and above all, the boys, especially those that lost their lives pushing the Mohammedan faith, were to forever remain in the full vigor of youth and manhood and to forever enjoy "the Hur-Al-Oyun, the black-eyed daughters of paradise, created of pure musk, and free from all the bodily weaknesses of the female sex". It was the teaching of Mohammed that the majority of the inhabitants of hell are women. His idea seemed to be that the women would get so used to being in hell in this life that they wouldn't feel at home in any other place in the next world.

The effect of Mohammed's teachings regarding women is to be seen in the conditions described as follows by M'Clintock and Strong:

The volumes explaining Moslem laws on divorce enter into the closest and most disgusting details, forming a mass of corruption poisoning the mind and morals of every Mohammedan student, and utterly defiling the very language. Hence arises the prevalence of the most indecent language and conduct and also of extreme profligacy among both sexes. Unnatural vice is fearfully common. The pictures of paradise contribute to this; these come to be the object of their thoughts, and are anticipated, as far as possible, on earth.

### **A Really Clever Hypocrite**

Mohammed denounced falsehood and upheld truth and yet never hesitated to lie to gain his ends. He advocated trusting in "God" and submitting to His will, and yet made the angel Gabriel play a part as bearer of divine revelations which he did not himself believe. He

denounced pride and advocated modesty, yet the houses of the Christians and Jews must not be higher than those of the Mohammedans, and they were compelled to ride on asses, not horses, on the streets, to yield the way to Mohammedans and, at public assemblies, to rise before them. He advocated sincerity and straight forwardness and denounced mistrust and suspicion, and yet he could not look straight into a man's face, but turned his eyes, usually outward. He

denounced debauchery, and advocated decency, yet every evening he applied antimony to his eyes and dyed his gray hairs to please his young wives. When he was ill he sobbed like a woman in hysterics; or, as Ayesha (his wife) says, he roared like a camel; and his friends reproached him for his unmanly conduct. He died a natural death (A.D. 632), all traditions to the contrary notwithstanding.

---

## New Jersey

### **"The Boss Is on the Run"**

◆ "The Boss is on the run"; so says Arthur Garfield Hays, in *PM*, in a proposal to erect a Civil Liberties Monument to Hague the Great. Mr. Hays says reminiscently:

The rejoicing voice of Hague's enemies has been heard in the Jersey land many times before. It was heard when the snooping Case Committee of the legislature wanted to know how a man whose highest salary in years had been \$8,000 could afford to blow in \$400,000 in Deal real estate, keep a 14-room duplex apartment in Jersey City at a yearly rental of \$7000 and live like a multimillionaire in Manhattan, Florida, and at Saratoga Springs. It was heard when he guessed wrong on the presidential nomination of 1932 and almost took a walk with Al Smith. It was heard more recently when the Supreme Court of the U.S. set him back on his heels in the free speech case.

Hays writes an interesting story about this man that has fixed it so that democrats can be born free. The Jersey City Medical Center cost the taxpayers some \$30,000,000, and it costs \$2,000,000 a year to operate it, but it works. Hague has been squeezing millions out of the railroads. He boosted their assessments from \$67,000,000 to \$160,000,000 in a single year. It meant acres of velvet for himself and his henchmen. Now the railroads balk at paying and "the boss is on

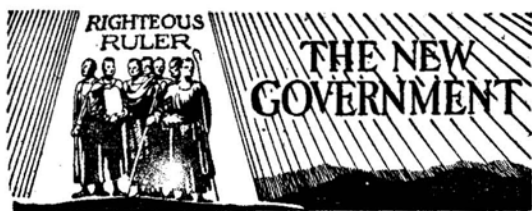
the run". When an army gets neither money nor food it ceases to fight, and that is as true of a political army as of any other.

### **Mean Thieves of May's Landing**

◆ The thieves of May's Landing, N. J., take the prize for meanness. Eighteen of them, prominent in business and society, took money credited to the aged, lame, maimed, toothless and nearly blind and deprived them of the medical treatment, coal, money and food which the community had provided for the needy. Plainly guilty of forgery, embezzlement and fraudulent conversion, it will be a miracle if these birds do any time for their crime against the community and its poor and needy.

### **George Washington Bridge**

◆ The George Washington bridge, the magnificent highway structure that connects Fort Lee, N. J., and upper New York city, cost \$60,000,000 to build and will pay for itself in twenty years. It takes four years to paint the huge structure. About a hundred men are on the pay roll. It has added more than a billion dollars to the values of Bergen county, N. J. Fifty-six people have dived or jumped off the bridge, but only one of them, an expert stunt diver, lived to tell the tale.



### Desecrating the Sabbath (?)

◆ The religionists of Clinton, Iowa, could not think of any way to make trouble for Jehovah's witnesses except to have them arrested for "desecrating the sabbath". In due time this came to the attention of the Supreme Court of Iowa and that body dismissed the charges against the witnesses, and said interestingly and convincingly:

It is contended by the state that the calling upon householders after 10 a.m. on Sunday for the purpose of propagandizing appellants' religious views by spoken and printed words constituted "disturbing a private family". The language of this portion of the act is "disturbing a worshipping assembly or private family". We need not here determine the exact interpretation to be given this language. The record indicates that at the time of the calls the householders were engaged in eating or other mundane activities. No disturbance of any kind is shown to have taken place. We are not prepared to hold that the calling at private homes in the middle of the sabbath day, however unwelcome the caller may be, in itself constitutes a desecration of the sabbath.

The state also contends the distribution of the booklets and occasional receipt of the sum of ten cents constituted "selling property" within the prohibition of the act. However, appellants were not engaged in selling booklets. The alleged sales were merely incidental and collateral to appellants' main object, which was to preach and publicize the doctrines of their order. Indicative of this was the practice of giving booklets to those unwilling to contribute. Appellants regarded the amounts received as donations and this was frequently the thought of those who gave money. Appellants were teaching and spread-

ing their religious views without compensation and at their own expense. All receipts from the booklets were placed in a publication fund, which it was necessary to supplement by voluntary contributions to cover the cost of publishing the booklets. The commercial aspect of sales was absent. We do not think the statute contemplates that the distribution of booklets of this nature and under these particular circumstances constitutes desecrating the Sabbath.

### Partially Rewarded by a Parking Ticket

◆ One Saturday afternoon while working with the magazines a special publisher was standing near a group of men who were in close conversation and kept looking in the publisher's direction so much so that the publisher knew they were speaking of him. At last one elderly-like man spoke out loud enough for the publisher to hear him say, "He is one of them Jehovah's witnesses. He is a big, strong, husky fellow; ought to do lots of work. Bet he never even registered for the war." Then again the elderly one speaks loudly, "Jehovah? Jehovah? I'd like to see that guy"; and about that time another man walked down the street to the grumbling group and in doing so passed several parked cars which a policeman just checked on his beat. The publisher saw the man stop and glance at one car for an instant, then went straight up to the elderly one, saying, "Oh, you ought to see what you got fastened onto your car."

He had spent too much time grumbling about Jehovah and Jehovah's witness; so a ticket for overtime parking was on his car.

The publisher couldn't help chuckling to himself.—Mrs. A. Carryer, Missouri.

### Witnessing to an Honest Official

◆ My first special assignment as a pioneer came last week when I was asked to help distribute *The Theocracy* and *God and the State*. I took the latter to the captain of the North Side police station and witnessed to him for an hour and a



half. He gave me a 50c contribution and in the afternoon I went back, explained our campaign for this month, and obtained his *Watchtower* subscription.

I told him about Judas' betraying Christ, and that we still have Judases today. He said that was true and they have them in the police force and in the whole political system today. He said he was glad to hear our side of the story, as all he had heard thus far was

anything but that. He also said that any time I was in that neighborhood, and had some time, to come in, as he enjoyed our talk very much. This shows that God knows some political leaders have been poisoned against Him because they do not know any differently. I am glad that I can proclaim His name and have a chance for everlasting life.—Rudolph Bittner, Minnesota.

(To be continued)

---

## When Religion Rides Again\*

JOSEPH E. DAVIES, former American ambassador to Soviet Russia, states: "Christianity could be superimposed on Communism without doing violence to either."<sup>1</sup> Here the ambassador is giving the Soviets a big hint: Communism has been "superimposed" on Catholicism (Orthodox) ever since the Bolsheviks got rid of the "divine rule" of the czar and the "Church", and now it's time Communism got down and gave religion a ride. With religion exalted as queen regent in a "new world order founded on moral principles", Soviet Russia will receive her due share of "Christendom's" blessings, of course. How the Russians, like the people in Spain and all other nations, are going to enjoy that "new order" into whose folds priestcraft is fighting desperately and with all the cunning of a Jesuit, is another story. It can be imagined only by a glimpse at a few.

### "Exhibits of a Past Civilization"

This term was once used by the League of Militant Atheists in referring to anti-

\* One of *Consolation's* contributors sent in two articles at one time, and, as they are quite closely related, and are live and up-to-date, and well-documented, it is a pleasure to publish them consecutively under the name of the author, which appears at the close of the second contribution, "Christendom's New Baby."—Ed.

<sup>1</sup> "Religion in the USSR," by A. R. Williams, *Soviet Russia Today* (October, 1942).

religious museums in which they exposed the crass superstitions and bald hypocrisies of the "Church". These Bolsheviks thought their bloody revolution had set them safely beyond the clutches of priestcraft and on down the broad way which Vice-President Wallace calls "the march of the common man". The following glimpse from *Soviet Russia Today* (October, 1942) ought to give an idea of what a kick the Atheists got out of their show houses:

Most of them were former monasteries and cathedrals, now exhibiting what are termed "exhibits of a past civilization", among which are an amazing collection of relics and amulets; hundreds of nails from the true cross, tears from the eyes of the Virgin, milk from her breast, a wisdom tooth of Moses, wood from the cradle of Jesus. Besides these relics are diagrams showing the colossal revenues of the church. Charts and documents graphically represent the history of religion with emphasis on the evils of clericism and the Holy Inquisition.

In the same article are mentioned other reasons why the Bolsheviks didn't want any more blessings from the "Church":

It took the peasants' money to build magnificent temples and allowed them to live in miserable straw-thatched huts. It gave them ikons to pray to in misfortune, and left them to the ravages of plagues and diseases, a third of the children dying before one year of age (two million a year). It mesmerized them with

mystic rites, with bells and incense, while 70 percent were unable to read and write.

The "Church" held the peasants to ludicrously primitive and unproductive ways of farming, and the effect of its teaching—submission to and contentment with their miserable lot—so paralyzed their will for betterment that they rose up angrily against any "infidels" who might suggest rotation of crops or other new ways of farming. "Instead of spraying insect-infested fields with chemicals, they marched around them with waving banners and crosses. Instead of running irrigation ditches into the drought-stricken areas, they sprinkled them with holy water."

### ***Bringing the "Past" Up to Date***

If Ambassador Davies thinks that to "superimpose" religion upon communism, democracy or any other form of government means merely to dress it up in lace skirts, pour "holy water" on it and call it "Christian", he is thinking himself right into the hands of the "Holy Father" at Vatican City. Wherever religion is superimposed upon a nation the results are always the same. Spain is an example of a country that is giving the "Church" her ride, and the harvest of miseries and woes being reaped by the people of Spain is a blueprint to what any people may expect under the enforced principles of a 'moral new order'.

A year after Hitler, Musso and Franco "superimposed" the rule of the Roman Catholic Church upon Republican Spain, the foreign minister of that murdered republic, J. Alvarez del Vayo, published a report<sup>2</sup> showing that more than a million Spanish loyalists were still being held in concentration camps in their own nation. House-to-house searches for Republicans were still going on; men were being shot in cold blood on any trumped-up charges.

Having been an active Republican is in itself a crime. Schools, convents, and public

buildings have been converted into jails, but there are still too few buildings to accommodate the "penal" population, and so a vast system of concentration camps on the Nazi model has been established to complete the repressive apparatus of a regime dedicated to the elimination of all opposition.

The "Holy Inquisition" in Spain had been revived in all its sickening forms; Franco's jailers, old in the Inquisitional tradition, were turned loose upon their helpless victims "to exorcise from the Republican prisoner the baleful effects of 'red' sorcery". These priest-inspired fiends, "experts at the art of transforming a robust peasant into a heap of flesh," in the words of the ex-foreign minister, put to shame the Inquisitors of Andalusia and Estremadura of old: "Those cruelties pale beside the present methods of the Franco government."

With the blessings of the "Holy Father" at Vatican City, Franco reduced the Spanish citizenry to outright slavery—bound to national work of reconstructing the paradise of the "new order", or hired out to private entrepreneurs at a peseta a day. Hunger became—and still is—the dominant feature of the living-death existence in Spain. Land which under the Republic had been distributed among the peasants was returned to the grandees.

Three additional measures taken by Franco during his first year are just what one would expect: "first, the return to the Jesuits of all their property; second, the return to the former king, Alfonso, of all his personal property; third, the transfer to Franco of all the total patrimony of the crown of Spain, with an annual income of millions of pesetas."

On April 4, 1942, when Mr. del Vayo published his second "obituary" on Spain,<sup>3</sup> he found that—

the main conclusions are the same. . . . The only thing they have achieved is terror, death, hunger, and typhus. All the rest is

<sup>2</sup> "One Year of Franco," *The Nation*, 3/30/40.

<sup>3</sup> "Three Years of Franco," *The Nation*, 4/4/42.

chaos, or grandiose plans—on paper only—for building a great navy, or for reconstructing Spain, or for reconquering America. . . . They send to Germany everything that the Nazi can extract from a Spain economically so utterly disorganized. They send some metals; they send workers from Andalusia and other regions; they send “volunteers” to die for Hitler on the Russian front; they even send the little food that might, if they could keep it, alleviate a state of starvation which can be matched only in Poland and Greece. . . . Economically and politically Spain is already in the New Order.

Religiously, Spain was already ninety-nine and ninety-nine hundredths percent Roman Catholic,<sup>4</sup> and, with the pope through his minions in complete control of her religion, politics and economics, she is in the “New Order” 100 percent.

### ***Religion's Final Ride***

The Hierarchy's efforts to get herself astraddle of this long-horned critter called “Communism” is making awfully bloody history these days; but it is in the hearts of earth's rulers to give the old girl one last fling, because they have a strong delusion that with priestcraft rising triumphant over constitutional governments in all nations, she will have what it takes to ride their troubles off the range, hogtie the masses and petrify them into “exhibitions of a past civilization”. Anyone who doesn't have religion can read Revelation 17 and find there a detailed description of this last ride, together with an explanation of how she gets bumped off at the end of it. Consider the detailed discussion in the booklet *Peace—Can It Last?* published by the WATCHTOWER Society.

<sup>4</sup> *Lords of the Press*, by George Seldes.

### **“Christendom's” New Baby\***

OLD Mother “Christendom” is giving birth to a new baby girl. Her name is “Christian Communism”. And what

\* Source of material used: “Religion in the USSR,” by Albert Rhys Williams, in *Soviet Russia Today*, October, 1942.

sardonic circumstances brought this baby into the world! When Hitler, following the blueprint worked out on the slaughter fields of Spain, hollered “Godless Bolshevism!” and opened his “Holy Crusade” against the Soviets it was for the avowed purpose of breaking down constitutional barriers that prohibited unrestricted priestcraft in Russia.

Worldly-wise men among the United Nations try to pooh-pooh the idea that Hitler is fighting a religious war. Nevertheless, one look at what Hitler, Mussolini and Franco with the pope's blessing brought about in Spain ought to convince the baldest fool that, with priestcraft turned loose and religion enforced as it now is in Spain, such things as Communism, socialism, democracy and liberalism vanish like snow in the sun. Earthly rulers since Nimrod have known that religion is the most effective means of stifling freedom and keeping the masses in subjection.

But all you politicians and capitalists who tremble at the nightmare of worldwide Communism, take heart. Hitler need not annihilate the Soviets to achieve this objective. The pressure of his *blitzkrieg* warfare, plus overtures from Russia's politico-religious allies, is doing the work; under the war emergency the Soviet government is lifting the barriers against religion of its own accord. Priestcraft, unrestricted and unlicensed, now rising up in all the nations, is also right at Russia's door.

As the following evidence will show, Orthodox Catholicism, in collaboration with other religionists, politicians and future-makers, is rapidly absorbing into herself the theoretical features of Communism, so as to bring forth a Soviet state religion that for the first time can be labeled “Christian”, and which not only appeals to politico-religionists throughout the United Nations, but, no doubt, is also destined to achieve the results so ardently desired by the pope—that is, overthrow the Communist constitution, turn the country over to the

priests, and thereby make Russia ready for whatever "new world order based on moral principles" may be in the offing.

### ***Aims of the Soviets and the "Church" Now One***

What a red-hot chance Hitler's war afforded for the Orthodox church to wake up and recognize that "in their social and ethical aims the Soviets and the 'Church' are now one"! As old as the Catholic church is this trick of trapping its victims under the guise of patriotism. Today the somber ikons in village churches are replaced by portraits of Lenin, Stalin, Timoshenko. Today more churches are being opened and turned into centers for collecting gifts for the Red Army. The "Patriarchs" who howled "Monsters of the human race!" when the Bolsheviks unseated the "Church", now offer up fervent prayers and direct impassioned appeals to the "faithful" and to all peoples everywhere to support the Soviets. Priests flock to the military. In a word, the clergy are scrambling over each other to demonstrate how "indispensable" religion is to Communists. And the Soviet government looks out over its scorched earth, mountains of dead and rivers of blood and heeds the songs of the harlots.

It hears all "faiths" chiming in harmony with the Orthodox priests—from the head of the 1,000,000 Russian Baptists to the Jews and the Moslems. It discovers that in 1941 there were about 30,000 religious societies, with some 58,000 priests and ministers, and at the outbreak of the war with Germany a throng of 12,000 packed the Cathedral of Moscow alone.

At that time the head of the atheists was lamenting that a third of the people in the towns and two-thirds in the villages were "Christians", which would mean more "Christians" in the Soviet Union *than in the whole British Empire*. To cap things off properly, the League of Militant Atheists, who had been foremost in exposing the crass superstitions

and bald hypocrisies of the "Church", turned square around, disbanded its members and ceased its official publication *"with one last blast at the Nazis for their persecution of religion"*!

The hard old priest-killer heart of Bolshevism has been wrung by so touching a scene. The "Reverend" Benjamin, whose full title reads "Metropolitan of the Aleutian Islands and North America", reviews this change of heart toward the "Church" thusly: "At first it was negative; then merely suspicious; later peaceful; most recently—it seems to me—*there is recognition of the usefulness of the church.*" What this long-titled bird sees is that many "disabilities" and "restrictions" are being relaxed or totally rescinded out of religion's way.

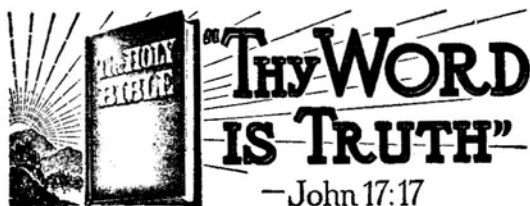
The once disfranchised clergy now vote just like ordinary citizens. As far back as 1936 the "Church" was winning 78 percent of her cases in court. In 1938 Kalinin, president of the Supreme Soviet, told a reporter that "one of his frequent duties was the reopening of village churches that had been closed by local zealots".

The former "scurrilous attacks" by atheists and suchlike are now being purged out of textbooks, theater and cinema. Any mockery or insult to the "feelings of believers" is subject to penalties. The making and sale of ikons (images, statues and mosaics of "sacred" subjects) is now a legal racket. Lithuanian priests since 1939 have been given allotments of land the same as the peasants. In 1941 the seven-day week was restored, making Sunday the "rest" day for all. One of the three newly-created decorations for Soviet commanders is named after a canonized "saint" of the Orthodox church. The Moscow radio now appeals to Catholics, Protestants and Jews throughout the world to "unite in the war against the Nazis".

One wonders if there's anything wrong with the Communists' religion that a little "inter-faith" powwow couldn't patch up?—Marley Cole, Tennessee.

CONSOLATION





## The Forgotten Name

RELIGION has caused the most honorable and most illustrious name of all to be forgotten in "Christendom". This result so apparent today has been the express design of religion from its beginning. The like result was brought about thousands of years ago in the very nation to whom the wonderful name was declared with miracles. In that unfaithful nation the name of Baal, which designates the great enemy of the name of the Most High, was exalted and glorified instead. The Most High, speaking by His prophet Jeremiah, points out the religious spokesmen as responsible for this forgetfulness and says: "Am I a God at hand, saith Jehovah, and not a God afar off? Can any hide himself in secret places so that I shall not see him? saith Jehovah. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith Jehovah. I have heard what the prophets have said, that prophesy lies in my name, saying, I have dreamed, I have dreamed. How long shall this be in the heart of the prophets that prophesy lies, even the prophets of the deceit of their own heart? that think to cause my people to FORGET MY NAME by their dreams which they tell every man to his neighbor, as their fathers forgot my name for Baal."—Jeremiah 23: 23-27, *A.R.V.*

A faithful remnant, including Jeremiah, struggled against such disastrous effects of religion and sought to uphold the name of Jehovah, but for this they suffered at the hands of religionists. The expression of such faithful suffering remnant is given at Psalm 44: 20-23: "If we have forgotten the name of our God, or stretched out our hands to a strange god; shall not God search this

out? for he knoweth the secrets of the heart. Yea, for thy sake are we killed all the day long; we are counted as sheep for the slaughter. Awake, why sleepest thou, O Lord? arise, cast us not off for ever."

Prophetic of the movement to put Jehovah's name in its rightful place among those professing to be His people, it is written, at Psalm 22: 22, 23: "I will tell of thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of an assembly will I praise thee: 'Ye that revere Jehovah, praise him, all ye seed of Jacob, glorify him, and stand in awe of him, all ye seed of Israel.'" (Rotherham's *Studies in the Psalms*) This prophecy points to the one who has done and will yet do the most to uphold the honor of the name of Jehovah; and the apostle Paul by inspiration identifies that vindicator of Jehovah's name as Jesus Christ. At Hebrews 2: 9-12 the apostle applies the above prophecy to Jesus and says: "For which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren, saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee."—Verses 11, 12.

The apostle's application of the prophecy is based upon the attested facts as stated in the several accounts by Matthew, Mark, Luke and John concerning the works and sayings of Jesus Christ when on earth. Jesus taught His disciples to pray, saying: "After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven." (Matthew 6: 9, 10) At His triumphal ride on the ass into Jerusalem the prophecies were fulfilled when the multitudes of common people hailed Him as coming in the name of Jehovah: "And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna; Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord: Blessed be the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord: Hosanna in the highest." (Mark



11:9,10) To unfaithful religionized Jerusalem Jesus said: "Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: and verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord." (Luke 13:34, 35) To the religious Jews Jesus said: "I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive." To His heavenly Parent He prayed: "Father, glorify thy name." And in behalf of His apostles He prayed: "I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: . . . Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are. . . . I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it."—John 5:43; 12:28; 17:6, 11, 12, 26.

It is manifest from the facts, therefore, that it was Christ Jesus who raised the name of Jehovah God and made it an issue both by His utterances and by His deeds, in fulfillment of the prophecies from the lips of Jehovah God. In declaring Jehovah's name to His apostles Jesus would not consider it too holy for Him to take on His lips and correctly pronounce to them lest He take that name in vain. He was the great Prophet foreshadowed by that Moses to whom Jehovah God declared His name at the burning bush near Mount Horeb, and through which Moses Jehovah caused His name to be declared throughout the land of Egypt before the deliverance of Israel therefrom. (Exodus 3:13-15; 6:3; 9:16) It is therefore unscriptural for complainers today to say that those to whom Christ Jesus left an example that they should follow His steps are out of order in this time when they make an issue of the name of Jehovah by declaring it throughout all the earth and honoring it and seeking to have a part in the vindication of that forgotten Name together with Jesus.

A representative Roman Catholic priest in decrying Jehovah's witnesses

of the present day remarks, among other things, that the term "Jehovah" is not the way God's name was or should really be pronounced, and that all there appears in the original Hebrew Bible text for the name is the tetragrammaton, or four radical letters JHVH (יהוה). Hence this Romanist clergyman of Britain scoffs at Jehovah's witnesses' being the witnesses of the Most High God, because, argues he, "Jehovah" is not the true and correct pronunciation of God's name. On the same basis this religious mouthpiece of the Vatican should scoff at the Jesuits, or so-called "Society of Jesus", because the term "Jesus" is not the true and correct name of our Redeemer, the Son of God. "Jesus" is merely the English for the Greek name "Iesous", and this Greek name is merely a form of the Hebrew name "Jeshua" or (in its fullest form) "Jehoshua", and the ancient Greeks could no more pronounce the Hebrew *sh* sound than the Ephraimites could pronounce it in the word "shibboleth". (See Judges 12:6.) From which it can be seen that the argument against Jehovah's witnesses on the basis of God's name's being pronounced "Jehovah" or otherwise is a matter of tweedle-dee and tweedledum, in effect. The undeniable fact remains that the term "Jehovah" contains the four radical letters regardless of the particular vowels in between those four consonants, and the term "Jehovah" is found in the standard English and foreign-language Bible versions and is understood to be the equivalent in such languages for Almighty God's name as He revealed it to humankind.

The real point that counts, and which the Lord God has blessed in spite of religious scoffers, is that Jehovah's witnesses not only declare phonetically the name of the Most High God, "whose name alone is JEHOVAH" (Psalm 83:18), but also declare and make known the meaning of God's own peculiar name, namely, His purpose toward His

CONSOLATION

creatures. Jehovah's witnesses also publish abroad all His marvelous deeds, past, present and yet to come, that are associated with that name and in vindication of it. Not for much longer will that holy name remain forgotten by all religionists, but, after His witnesses

have finished their testimony, God Almighty will by Christ Jesus fight the battle of Armageddon, and "my holy name will I make known . . . and the nations shall know that I am Jehovah, the Holy One in Israel".—Ezekiel 39: 7, *American Revised Version*.

## The Rights of the American People

THE Bill of Rights belongs to us. More than any other part of the Constitution, these ten amendments are the precious possession of private citizens. They came out of the people and were made directly for their benefit.

The original Constitution was different. It was not framed by representatives elected at the polls. In 1787 the tariff barriers raised by the states against each other had become disastrous, so the authorities of the various states picked out delegates and sent them to the Convention in Philadelphia, to consider measures for improving commerce. Fortunately, as soon as they got there, they went far beyond their instructions, faced the greatest need of their time, and set up the machinery of a strong national government. The Constitution they made with extraordinary ability told how congressmen and senators and the president should be elected, how long they should serve, what laws Congress could impose on the states, how officials and judges were to be appointed. So far, so good. But except for limiting the suspension of the writ of habeas corpus, which releases men from illegal imprisonment, it said very little about what was to happen to farmers and storekeepers and workmen when they were face to face with the powerful officials of the new government. And so when the Constitution was sent out to the states for consideration, the plain people back home saw that something vital was still lacking. They chose some of their number to go to the state conventions and insist that the establish-

ment of the new government should be followed by constitutional amendments setting up safeguards against official oppression of ordinary citizens like themselves, like us. Their demand was satisfied very soon. Within six months after Washington's inauguration, the first national Congress, under the leadership of James Madison, framed ten amendments as a Bill of Rights and submitted them to the states. Once more the plain people back home knew what they wanted. They elected state legislators who approved all ten amendments. By that time there were fourteen states, so it required eleven to make the necessary three-quarters. When the eleventh state, Virginia, ratified, a century and a half ago today, the citizens established their Bill of Rights, and ours.

### WE'VE BEEN TAKING THEM FOR GRANTED

I have not run across any account of celebrations on the hundredth anniversary in 1891, but probably the liberties guaranteed by these ten amendments were then pretty much taken for granted. True, we had them, but so did many monarchies on the continent of Europe. In 1891, despite the imperfect progress of popular self-government, civil liberties little short of ours were enjoyed by the citizens of Belgium, Holland, Austria, Italy, and Germany, to say nothing of a republic like France. Tonight we have greater reason for thankfulness than our fathers fifty years ago. This celebration moves us more deeply than if it had happened a decade earlier. Dark contrasts have shown us, all too plainly, what it means to us to be secure in our

"persons, houses, papers, and effects against unreasonable searches and seizures", not to be "held for a capital or otherwise infamous crime, unless on a presentment or indictment of a grand jury", not to be "deprived of life, liberty or property", without having our day in court and a fair trial, not to have our property "taken for public use, without just compensation". Or read the Sixth Amendment: "In all criminal prosecutions, the accused shall enjoy the right to a speedy and public trial, by an impartial jury . . . , and to be informed of the nature and cause of the accusation; to be confronted with the witnesses against him; to have compulsory process for obtaining witnesses in his favor, and to have the assistance of counsel for his defense." Then think of innocent men just like us dragged from their homes at midnight to some concentration camp; the rest is silence. Even if a German today gets into a court, he can be tried and condemned for doing anything that the judges say is "not according to healthy public sentiment". In this country a man cannot be arrested or tried or imprisoned except for some specific offense which has been made a crime by the elected representatives of the people in Congress. Thus the due process clause prevents our officials and judges from being a law unto themselves. They can enforce only the law of the land.

#### IT'S YOU AND I THAT YOU AND I ARE PROTECTING

The tyranny that fetters the mind may be less cruel than the tyranny which imprisons or destroys the body, but it is even more degrading. In continental universities which formerly led the thought of the world, professorships are now filled as we fill third-class postmaster-ships. Great newspapers of old days like the *Frankfurter Zeitung*, the *Neue Freie Presse* of Vienna, the *Corriere della Sera* of Milan, are either gone or are reduced to the status of governmental bulletins. Shirer's *Berlin Diary* and

many another book bring home to us how crippled life can be without the liberties guaranteed to us by the amendment of which I shall mainly speak tonight, the First Amendment, which leaves each of us free to worship God in his own way, free to think his own thoughts, and within very broad limits free to spread those thoughts to others.

The Bill of Rights belongs to us, and not merely to Communists and other unpopular persons. It may be invoked by them at the moment, but it protects us too. If we let down the bars to make it easier for secret police to get Communists, then the bars will be down if they ever want to get us. Hence, we directly benefit ourselves when we insist on the maintenance of free speech and other constitutional liberties for men we dislike. As Judge Pound, of New York, said, "Although the defendant may be the worst of men, the rights of the best of men are secure only as the rights of the vilest and most abhorrent are protected." Once you let suppression get under way it spreads very fast and you are just as likely as anybody else to find yourself in its path. The big steel magnates of Germany were delighted when Hitler began rounding up Jews and Communists and seizing their property, and one of the biggest steel men, Mr. Thyssen, contributed large sums of money to help Hitler carry on the 'good work'. Within a few years Mr. Thyssen had all his property seized, and departed for Switzerland in a hurry. About all he had left was the privilege of writing a book to tell everybody how badly Hitler had treated him.

#### AND MAYBE WE'LL LEARN SOMETHING TOO

And we get more from letting unpopular persons talk than the chance of our own future protection. We learn while they talk. We hear about grievances which might otherwise go uncured until they burst forth in violence. We hear some needed truths even though intermingled with much falsehood. Our ancestors insisted on freedom of speech

CONSOLATION

because they believed that in this way we could attain the wisest sort of government and the best kind of community to live in, a community that is not filled with spies and suspicion.

"Those who won our independence were not cowards," so Mr. Justice Brandeis reminded us. "They did not exalt order at the cost of liberty. They believed that the final end of the state was to make men free to develop their faculties. They believed liberty to be the secret of happiness and courage to be the secret of liberty. They believed that freedom to think as you will and to speak as you think are indispensable to the discovery and spread of truth; that the greatest menace to freedom is an inert people; . . . They recognized the risks to which all human institutions are subject. But they knew that it is hazardous to discourage thought, hope, and imagination; that fear breeds repression; repression breeds hate; hate menaces stable government. They knew that the path of safety lies in the opportunity to discuss freely supposed grievances and proposed remedies; and that the fitting remedy for evil counsels is good ones. The remedy is more speech, not enforced silence."

#### IT DEPENDS ON US

The Bill of Rights belongs to us, and it depends on us whether its provisions become a dead letter or remain vital forces in our national life. The liberties which were created by the action of the people a century and a half ago can remain vital only through the vigorous support of the people today,—men and women like all of us in this room. This is clearly true of liberty of speech. We do well to think about important decisions in the United States Supreme Court and eloquent opinions by Justices Holmes and Brandeis and Chief Justice Hughes. Yet it is we who can keep discussion open during an emergency, and the Supreme Court can do nothing about it. Cases of suppression will not get to Washington until long after the emer-

gency is over. The only judicial decisions made while it lasts will be those by lower United States judges. Still more important is the attitude of prosecutors and police, because they can stifle free speech by confiscating pamphlets and by breaking up meetings through arrest, even though they do not bother to bring many persons to trial. Above all, the maintenance of open discussion depends on the great body of unofficial citizens. If they are intolerant and threaten mob violence and demand suppression, then officials are so sensitive to public views that they will confiscate and arrest and prosecute. And the power of the community extends far beyond official acts of suppression. If a community does not respect liberty for unpopular ideas and facts, it can easily drive such ideas and facts underground by persistent discouragement and sneers, by social ostracism, by boycotts of newspapers and magazines, by refusal to rent halls, by objections to the use of municipal auditoriums and schoolhouses, by discharging teachers and professors and journalists, by organizing mobs and lynchings. On the other hand, plain men and women by their tolerance can make an atmosphere of open and unimpeded controversy as fully a part of the life of their community as any other American tradition. The law plays only a small part in either suppression or freedom. In the long run, the public gets just as much or just as little freedom of speech as it really wants.

#### YES, THERE'S A RISK

There is one important principle for all citizens to bear in mind whenever they are faced with a problem of the proper limits to be allowed for discussion. Let me explain a little what I mean. You may be talking about the desirability of prosecuting an unpopular speaker. You may be talking about letting him hold a meeting in a public hall. Whatever the problem is it will have two ends to it—the free speech end and the risk end. One end has to be



balanced against the other to reach a solution. The First Amendment requires us to run a good many risks for the sake of the gains. Still, the value of open discussion is on occasions outweighed when the risks are so great as to constitute a clear and present danger of injurious acts. For instance, we cannot allow a newspaper to publish a map of the fortifications of San Francisco, because this would give great help to foreign invaders. The constitutional right to talk does have some limits.

How can we most wisely tell whether those limits have been reached in the particular case? Here comes the important guiding principle I have in mind. In balancing the two ends against each other, *always begin at the free speech end*. Do not think first of the risks. Start by remembering the value of open discussion in American life. If you begin with the risks, you may easily become so frightened that you never get around to the free speech end at all. But if you start with what this country has gained from the First Amendment, you will view the risks more calmly when you get to them.

Take an example several months back, —the last radio speech by Mr. Lindbergh. Some writers of letters to the press began by picturing the evils of a divided country and ended by denouncing Mr. Lindbergh as guilty of treason. Instead, begin at the free speech end. I disagreed with much that Mr. Lindbergh said, but is it not a cause for pride that we live in a country where the president can make a radio address at ten o'clock and his chief opponent is free to go on the air and answer him at eleven-thirty? Imagine Hitler speaking from Berlin, and then ninety minutes later a nation-wide German hookup for ex-Chancellor Bruening replying by transatlantic radio from his study at Harvard. That such things are possible in America makes all of us eager to defend her. Once we realize this, we do not get excited about the dangers of opposition, but see

that there was abundant opportunity for the president and his supporters to point out later whatever they considered untrue or unsound in Mr. Lindbergh's criticisms. Instead of suppression there was a fair field for all and no cause for resentment. The ultimate decision is far stronger because it was shaped by abundant previous discussion both ways. Now that the crisis has arrived, the result of free speech is a united nation.

#### FREE SPEECH—NOW

The Bill of Rights belongs to us—now. Free speech is not a policy to be laid on the shelf in emergencies. That is always a tempting idea. In 1917 we were told by many that there would be time enough to think of the merits of the claims of England and France when the war was over. They said, in effect, "We don't care what sort of war it is. My country, right or wrong. Let us go ahead. This is no time to talk." The trouble is that unless argument be conducted during the emergency, it will often come too late to do any good. We know now that it is even harder to make peace effectively than to make war effectively, and yet we were forced to patch up the Treaty of Versailles in six hurried months without the benefit of an enlightened public discussion of such essential factors as the secret treaties among our Allies.

This war is not going to be like the last. The methods of fighting are very different, and the kind of talk which may be sought out for suppression will, I think, be just as different. There is not likely to be the same questioning of the causes of the war as in 1917. The events of December 7 leave very little room for argument on that score. Although employment relations may cause some disputes, radical labor will not be so outspoken as before, for the expenditures and policies of the New Deal have gone a long way to satisfy the platforms of the I.W.W. and the socialist farmers. In 1942 the trouble seems likely to arise more from criticism of our associates, England and Russia, or from criticism of

CONSOLATION

the disposition of the armed forces and the supply of munitions. Also the time may come as in the Civil War, when some citizens will favor ending hostilities at once by a negotiated peace, while the administration and the majority are determined to struggle on for a decisive victory. Opposition to the government on such matters is sure to arouse resentment and fears and vigorous demands for prosecutions and other forms of suppression. Then it will be necessary for thoughtful Americans to remember the national tradition of free speech. Great is the value of united opinion in war, but it cannot be effectively obtained by persecution. It is equally important that the war should be waged with as few mistakes as possible, and that it should be ended at the right time. The ultimate decision of all such questions is more likely to be wise if it be shaped by an informative and informed public opinion. And that means that both sides must have a fair chance to speak out.

#### LET'S DISCUSS THE WAR—AND THE PEACE

Most of all, we need an immense amount of thinking and talking about the kind of world we want after the war. Victory is not enough unless it brings a just and enduring peace. American civilization cannot stand an endless outpouring of billions for defense during a patched-up peace. The problem is enormously difficult. In 1919 we tried to put together the pieces and failed. Now there are very few pieces to put together. There will have to be a big, fresh start, and its success will depend on the continued support of the American people for a good many years after the fighting is over. Any plan framed by a few leaders, however wisely, will fail unless it responds to widespread thoughts and desires of us ordinary men and women. Whatever plan be proposed, it will involve drawbacks, and citizens must first have become ready to accept those drawbacks as preferable to the horrors of a third world war. That means they must be made thoroughly aware through

JANUARY 20, 1943

long discussion in speech and print of the nature of the plan. The seed Wilson sowed was perhaps better than we knew in the short time it was before us. At all events, it fell on thin soil and was blown away. If the new seed of 1943 or 1944 or 1945 is to take firm root, the soil must first be plowed long and deeply back and forth by the impact of ideas, until it is prepared for fertile growth.

The First Amendment is a principle of political wisdom for just such emergencies as we are in now. The men who drafted it had just been through a seven-year war and a seven-year depression. As that rugged individualist of the North Dakota frontier, Judge Amidon, said in 1918:

"The framers knew that the right to criticize might weaken the support of the government in a time of war. They appreciated the value of a united public opinion at such a time. They were men who had experienced all those things in the war of the Revolution, and yet they knew too that the republic which they were founding could not live unless the right of free speech, of freedom of the press, was maintained at such a time. They balanced these considerations and then wrote the First Amendment."

Last time we forgot all this. We became so afraid of those who advocated a peace without victory that we put some of them in jail and scared the rest into silence, and so we got a victory without peace. This time we must be wiser and not forget. Let us not in our anxiety to protect ourselves from foreign tyrants imitate some of their worst acts, and sacrifice in the process of national defense the very liberties which we are defending.

#### THE RESPONSIBILITIES OF THOSE WHO SPEAK

Last of all I want to reach the ears of some of those who contemplate writing or speaking on behalf of unpopular causes during the war. So far I have talked about the responsibilities of the authorities and ordinary citizens to pre-

serve this liberty. Now I want to speak of responsibilities of the men who wish to talk. They are under a strong moral duty not to abuse the liberty they possess. All I have said and written goes to show that the law should lay few restraints upon them, but that makes it all the more important for them to restrain themselves. They are enjoying a great privilege, and the best return that they can make is to use that privilege wisely and sincerely for what they genuinely believe to be the best interests of their country. It is not going to be an easy task during the next few years to maintain freedom of speech unimpaired. There will be hard times ahead, perhaps even periods of disaster, during which many devoted citizens will readily believe that the safety of the nation demands the suppression of all criticism against those in authority. This tendency toward suppression will be immensely strengthened if speakers and writers use their privilege of free discussion carelessly or maliciously, so as to further their own ambitions or the immediate selfish interests of their particular minority. By abusing liberty of speech, they may easily further its abolition. I should be very slow to lock men up or confiscate their pamphlets, but I do say that they owe it to the framers of the First Amendment who gave them this privilege, they owe it to all their fellow citizens and particularly to the few who share their own views, to think long and hard before they express themselves, so as to be sure that they speak fruitfully. It is hopeless for the law to draw the line between liberty and license. Judges and juries cannot look into the heart of a speaker or writer and tell whether his motives are patriotic or mean. But the man can look into his own heart and make that decision before he speaks out. Whatever efforts of this sort unpopular persons make will do much to maintain the vitality of the First Amendment.

There is another danger to the American tradition of open discussion, against

which unpopular speakers and writers should be constantly on their guard. If our enemies win this war, the First Amendment will be the first to disappear. These speakers and writers will have no opportunity to criticize their rulers. There will be no newspapers in which to publish their views, no platforms on which to speak, no Supreme Court to protect them by a test of clear and present danger. Yetta Stromberg and Angelo Herndon and Harry Bridges will no longer have nice distinctions drawn in their favor by judges in gowns; they will merely be dumped into concentration camps or sent to the scaffold. More temperate opponents will be dragged down along with them. The only political party will be the party in power. Therefore, those who propose to criticize governmental policies during war should be ever aware of the fact that criticism carries risks. Attacks may weaken the power of the leaders to obtain the support of the rank and file. Even at this price, the risks of criticism must be run for the sake of its benefits, for the sake of being sure that the war is waged in the best possible way. Still it is the responsibility of the critics to be sure that the risks are as small as possible and the benefits are as great as possible. Hence they should take plenty of time and effort before they speak to be sure that their criticisms are based upon ascertained or highly probable facts, and that the judgments based thereon are formed calmly and without malice. They should be sure to frame their remarks so as to persuade their hearers to correct the mistakes which are pointed out and not merely arouse them to useless or dangerous resentment.

The Bill of Rights belongs to us all. Majorities and minorities alike, we must henceforth give the best that is in us to preserve these ten amendments together with the rest of the Constitution and everything else that we hold dear.—Zechariah Chafee, Jr., Harvard Law School, Cambridge, Mass.

## Consecration vs. Cannibalism

(A WBBR Broadcast)

**ANNOUNCER:** "Everybody does it; nobody ought to care!" That is the principle that sets fashions! Fashion of thought, of action, of mode of dress, of the manner of life itself. Because the majority subscribe to some thought or idea, it becomes an 'established fact'; not because it is true of itself, but because the majority have accepted it. This dangerous premise has made possible the deceiving of countless millions by formalistic religious ceremonies, by the founder, Satan, the Devil: "All we like sheep have gone astray." But let's step into the Jonathan Goodwill home. We might hear something to our benefit.

**Jonathan:** Getting that matter straight, regarding the attitude of one who has entered into a covenant by consecration to do the will of God, has opened up a whole line of thought. Ruth and I were discussing it all week.

**Ruth Goodwill:** There was a text we came across, while reading what Paul said in Romans 8. It was verse 6.

**Witness:** Read it; let's hear what it says.

**Ruth:** Romans 8, verse 6: "For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace."

**Jon:** Here was the point we couldn't quite grasp. Looking up the word "carnal" in the dictionary, it says it means "pertaining to the flesh". Does that mean that everything we do according to the flesh is wrong?

**Ruth:** And would it mean that when Adam was perfect, he could not follow any of the desires pleasing to his flesh? For instance, to look at the beautiful things of nature pleases the entire organism, pleases the flesh; but that isn't being carnal, is it?

**Tom Smith:** Pardon my butting in right here. Eating a good meal is very pleasing to the flesh; at least it is to my flesh; would that be wrong? Even eating

a piece of flesh is very delightful, especially when it's nicely broiled.

**Jon:** That's right, Tom. Even Jesus ate flesh when He ate of the paschal lamb. There must be something more to the word "carnal" than just merely meaning "pertaining to the flesh".

**Witness:** Perhaps in our common usage of the word we've failed entirely to get the real meaning. Even in our most up-to-date dictionaries, the definition of a word is quite frequently based on the commonly accepted usage of that word. This very word "carnal" is a fitting case in point. It's very certain, to answer your query, Mrs. Goodwill, that God would never have condemned Adam for exercising all his perfect powers pertaining to his human fleshly organism, had he acted in harmony with his God. The wrong he committed was not in properly using his fleshly powers, but in using them improperly, that is, he obeyed the Devil and thus disobeyed God. His act of disobedience was his first act of religious worship of the Devil.

**Ruth:** You mean he succumbed to religion.

**Witness:** Just that.

**Ruth:** Are you bringing out the thought that to be "carnal" means to be religious?

**Witness:** That's just the point I believe we shall prove.

**Tom:** That's a new one on me. How can that have anything to do with religion?

**Jon:** You weren't with us, Tom, when we discussed the subject of religion some time ago.

**Tom:** No, this is all new to me.

**Witness:** Can you quote that correct definition of "religion", Mr. Goodwill?

**Jon:** I think so! It is literally from two root words, *re*, meaning "back", and —let's see; what was the other?



Ruth: I remember it was spelled "l-i-g-i-o".

Jon: That's it, *ligio*, meaning "to bind"—"to bind back" is the literal meaning of the word.

Tom: "To bind back"—how does that apply to religion?

Witness: It means that, in the relationship of the creature to the Creator, *anything* that prevents him, that turns him away, that holds him back—that binds him back from serving his God with *all* his heart, with *all* his mind, with *all* his strength—is religious.

Tom: That's the first time I've ever heard that definition of *religion*; but that's correct, isn't it?

Ruth: And that's how the act of disobedience on Adam's part bound him back from the pure worship of his heavenly Father.

Jon: Now how does the word "carnal" tie up with religion?

Witness: Let's see. Give us that text again from Romans 8:6, Mr. Goodwill.

Jon: "For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace." Why, it's right there! You're either one or the other.

Witness: To be spiritually minded would mean what?

Tom: Seems to me it would be, to be fully guided by the Word of God. Sure, that's what it means; that's what we found out in the last few weeks: the King's "business" means publishing the knowledge of God's purposes.

Ruth: Yes, and the Hebrew word translated "business" was also translated "words", where Jeremiah says, speaking as of Jehovah: "I have put my words in thy mouth."

Jon: And the one who has the word of the Lord in his mouth is entirely set apart, as it were, as a deputy, a minister. In other words, he's a witness for Jehovah.

Witness: All of which is absolutely correct. Now notice what each said: One is set apart by the Lord God as repre-

senting Him by having His word in his mouth; we notice that, don't we?

All: Yes.

Witness: Now notice what Jesus said. John 17:17: "Sanctify them"—mark you, "sanctify" means, literally, 'to set apart for service'—"sanctify them through thy truth; thy word is truth." That clear?

All: I should say so.

Witness: The word of God, influencing the mind and heart of the willing and obedient creature, sets him apart for service of Jehovah. That's what Jesus said, isn't it?—he's now in the business of the Lord. Do we get that clear also?

Tom: I don't see how it could be clearer.

Witness: He worships—that means he serves with his whole mind and heart Jehovah God, and Him only.

Jon: That's what Jesus meant when He said, 'Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with *all* thy heart, with *all* thy mind, with *all* thy strength'; isn't it?

Witness: Yes, that's what He meant; and you remember the Bible definition of "love"?

Ruth: The perfect expression of unselfishness. And that would mean the creature's unselfish devotion to the Creator.

Jon: Yes, and unselfish devotion would be the same as "pure worship"; or we might say the one would go hand in glove with the other.

Witness: Well, now here's the point. One whose mind is ruled and governed by God's Word would have what kind of mind?

Tom: Spiritual mind.

Witness: Right! But why do you say that?

Tom: Well, because God is a spirit; isn't he?

Witness: That's just the point I wanted to bring out. Mr. Goodwill, read John 4, verses 23 and 24.

Jon: John 4, verses 23 and 24: "The true worshippers shall worship the

Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth." And that would make such spiritually minded.

Ruth: And to be spiritually minded is life and peace.

Tom: Now I can see what we're getting at. One can only be of the one or of the other. If you're not spiritually minded, then you must be carnally minded, according to Paul's argument. There's no middle ground.

Witness: In other words, you're either worshiping God in spirit and in truth or you're carnally minded and worshiping some creature, and that worship is binding you back from the true worship, hence it's religion—you're carnally minded—and that means eventual death.

Ruth: It must mean, Mr. Witness, that the worship of the creature you mention means the worship of the god of this world, Satan. But how does this tie in with the definition of "carnal"?

Witness: That's just the point we're coming to, Mrs. Goodwill. First, let's look a little further into this matter of sanctifying or setting apart for God's service. Mr. Goodwill, will you read for us Exodus 13, verse 2.

Jon: Exodus 13, verse 2: "Sanctify unto me all the firstborn, whatsoever openeth the womb among the children of Israel, both of man and of beast: it is mine."

Witness: Now read verse 12.

Jon: Verse 12: "That thou shalt set apart unto the Lord all that openeth the matrix, and every firstling that cometh of a beast which thou hast; the males shall be the Lord's."

Witness: You see, "sanctify" means 'to set apart'. So here's a beautiful picture showing that we recognize that everything we have or are belongs to the Giver of every good and every perfect gift and to Him belongs our strength, our first-fruits, our all. 'Thou shalt love the

Lord thy God with *all* thy strength.' Now, this was offered to Jehovah in consecration, to be entirely consumed in His service.

Ruth: What a beautiful picture! How marvelous is our Father's word!

Jon: And that's how the consecration of one who is now worshiping God in spirit and in truth is pictured.

Witness: That's the beautiful picture and its significance to us.

Tom: And how about the carnally minded?

Witness: Well, Mr. Smith, suppose you read Jeremiah 19, verses 4 and 5. And notice, here's what Israel did when they left the pure worship of their God Jehovah and were ensnared with the religious customs of the surrounding nations and went completely over to religion. Jehovah had warned them against this. Go ahead; read it slowly.

Tom: Jeremiah 19, verses 4 and 5: "Because they have forsaken me, and have estranged this place, and have burned incense in it unto other gods, whom neither they nor their fathers have known, nor the kings of Judah, and have filled this place with the blood of innocents; they have built also the high places of Baal, to burn their sons with fire for burnt offerings unto Baal, which I commanded not, nor spake it, neither came it into my mind." Boy, oh boy, they ate human flesh!

Ruth: Isn't that horrible! And you say Jehovah warned them?

Jon: In the worship of Baal, did they eat the human sacrifices, Mr. Witness? That's what I gathered from the verses Tom read. That seems incredible!

Witness: Yes, they ate human sacrifices. Here's a horrible picture of religion for you. Here's why to be carnally minded is death. The word "priest" in the Chaldean language is *cahn*; for "THE priest" it is *cahna*. So the priests of Baal were called the *cahna* of Baal. They were the ones who ate part of the human sacrifices offered in worship to Baal—the devil god. This was a blasphemous

counterfeit of the true worship in the Jewish type. This was the religion of demon-worship. From this we have the word which applies to a human-flesh eater—a cannibal. Those priests of Baal, therefore, were most literally carnally minded. Moreover, those priests themselves were flesh and their minds were set upon the things of Satan's world. So to be carnally minded means to be worldly and religiously minded, and to subscribe to demon-worship, whether you know it or not; and that means death. But to be spiritually minded means to worship the Great Spirit, Jehovah God, the Righteous One; and that means life.

Jon: Say, isn't that a line-up! "Thy word is truth"; how true that is!

Tom: And Jehovah warned those people back there; but just as they didn't heed then, they're not heeding now.

Ruth: To think of their offering their firstborn in that frightful fashion and believing it was worshiping the God who made the beautiful rose!

Witness: Well, after all is said and

done, it's no worse than believing in a god of "Purgatory" or "hell-fire"!

Tom: I'll say not. And yet many people object to any criticism of such doctrines as "Purgatory" and "hell-fire".

Jon: You said it, Tom. Why, I met a Catholic man the other day who acted as though he wanted to kill me just because I said the doctrine of "Purgatory" is of the Devil.

Witness: Suppose we discuss that a little next week and show it is of the Devil; what do you say?

All: Fine! Let's do that.

### Mary Anderson, Ex-Slave

♦ Mary Anderson, one-time slave at Jetersville, Va., is dead after 35 years of bondage that she liked and 76 more years of liberty that she never cared as much for. She always looked on the freeing of the slaves as a misfortune. At the time of her death, at 111 years of age, she had been a resident of New Jersey for 28 years, and during much of that time supported herself as a capable midwife.

## GREATEST CHRISTIAN ASSEMBLY EVER HELD!

That aptly describes the New World Theocratic Assembly of Jehovah's witnesses held September 18-20, 1942. Eighty-nine cities scattered throughout the earth united in participating in this gathering. More than 156,000 persons flocked to these cities to join in worship of Almighty God and were greatly blessed by Him. If you were not there, certainly you will desire a full report of the swiftly moving events of the New World Assembly. Such report is now available. Preparations for the Assembly, its magnitude, advertising it, the discourse high-lights, its surprises, victorious conclusion, and the work accomplished world-wide—all are interestingly related in the *Report of the New World Theocratic Assembly of Jehovah's witnesses*.

No ceremonial, formalistic, religious rite, this

New World Assembly. While the dying old world clamors for "more religion" it viciously wars against Christianity and free worship of Jehovah. You will be amazed by the demoniacal opposition to the Assembly by religionists. Your wonderment will grow as you read of the fight for the New World Assembly waged by Jehovah's witnesses against overwhelming odds and the dramatic account of victory after victory piled up in all 89 cities. The stirring details are set forth in the *Report of the New World Theocratic Assembly of Jehovah's witnesses*. A magazine of 32 pages, size 9½ by 11½ inches, illustrated, and with a highly-descriptive colored cover design, tells the story. It may be had on contribution of 5c, or in lots of 25 copies to one address, only \$1.00.

### WATCHTOWER

117 Adams St.

Brooklyn, N. Y.

Please send me a copy of the above *Assembly Report*, for which I enclose 5c.

Please send ..... copies, for which I enclose ..... (25 for \$1.00)

Name .....

Street .....

City .....

State .....

## Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"

### "God's Word on Vital Subjects"

**I**N CONSIDERATION of the portions placed in the back of the Watchtower edition Bible, one section, called "God's Word on Vital Subjects", should be very helpful to both publishers and those newly interested in the truth.

When one first learns something of the truth the question is often asked, "What must I do?" If he has read some of the Society's literature or looked in the Bible, he is sure to wonder where he fits into God's arrangements, His Kingdom. It is the privilege of Jehovah's witnesses to show him.

This new Bible, "the sword of the spirit," will be of great aid in doing this. Looking at the section "God's Word on Vital Subjects", the first subheading is "Ministers of the Gospel". Many potential sermons are set out here for use by the witness of Jehovah. In fact, if one started preaching sermons on just these scriptures, he would not finish in many hours. Material for many back-calls is in this one subdivision of the Watchtower edition Bible. A newly interested one, having gained some knowledge, asks, "What shall I do?" and the question is here answered by scriptures showing what he must do and why he must do it.

Reading the scriptures under "Ordination" one will see that he must be a minister of the gospel. Numerous scriptures set forth the work to be accomplished by this preaching: comfort all that mourn, release those bound in prison houses, proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord. It is found that not only men but also women are ministers of the gospel and commissioned to preach. Whether they be bond or free, rich or poor, young or old, there is no distinction so far as the commission from the Lord ordaining them to preach is concerned. Studying the texts listed one will find that there is no reason for him

not to preach. The requirement for ordination is not a brilliant mind, high education or great learning, but every human creature upon this earth may be a preacher if he has the right heart condition.

These scriptures will be a comfort to meek persons who ask "What shall I do?" Kindly, by God's Word on vital subjects, show them that they must take their stand on the side of the Lord, make a covenant to serve Him, and then follow out the commandment to preach. Next in order are set forth numerous scriptures on the "Commission to Preach". It shows this gospel of the Kingdom must be preached in all the world, and "woe is unto me, if I preach not the gospel!" One statement goes so far as to say, "Let the dead bury their dead; but go thou and preach the kingdom of God." When anybody dies in this old world large gatherings are assembled and much ceremony follows. The Lord says that that is their business, "let the dead bury their dead," but as for you, your commission is to preach the gospel. That is more important, because preaching the gospel will bring life. One having taken this course, these scriptures point out that such person may never stop; he must be obedient to the commission undertaken. It is not being a preacher for ten or fifteen years and then retirement, but it is a lifetime job. That is what those scriptures show and what one equipped with this Bible is enabled to point out clearly to people who ask, "What must I do?"

One having been shown what to do, the next subdivision, "Manner of Preaching," shows how to do it. Then "Obedience to Commission" is stressed. One must obey God rather than men. No longer does one come under man's direction, but now, as God's minister, one is under the direction of the Higher Powers, Jehovah God and Christ Jesus. Many



scriptures here plainly state how, when, where and how much preaching should be done.

Farther on, "Integrity Toward the Kingdom" scriptures point out that His servants are not to meddle in the things of this world. In other words, the Devil has set up certain requirements for those in his organization. The Lord bids His people flee from that organization. Therefore, do not meddle in the things of the world; let the old world run its business, but you, a minister, must be wholly devoted to the Lord. Christ Jesus will always be ruler of The Theocracy and the One directing the affairs of those who have entered into the covenant with Jehovah. The subdivision further shows that this covenant one makes with God is an everlasting covenant. It does not stop; it continues on forever unless you break it.

Additional scriptures point out that, having made this covenant, one must continually study, never thinking he knows it all, but by the renewing of his mind and studying the Lord's Word keep himself alert to do the work assigned. It is shown that he must be a good soldier, properly equipped, working all the time in the interests of the Kingdom. Service is rendered to no creature, but to the Creator, Jehovah God. Christ's followers are not to serve and honor mother, brother, sister, wife, or daughter. Remember Jesus' query, "Who is my mother?" Entering into a covenant with the Lord one has only one thing to do, and that is to serve the Lord and honor His name, not creatures. The Lord has shown in His Word what course of action His ministers should take, and they are not to become entangled with the things of this world, or succumb to the lusts thereof.

Who are those who get life? Only those who come entirely out of the Devil's organization and stand wholly for the Kingdom. By a person's taking such a course of action and devot-

ing everything to the Lord's cause, what will the results be? The subdivision "Blessings of the Kingdom Rule" answers with many scriptures, too many to enumerate all of them here. It proves Christ Jesus will be the Righteous Ruler. No greater blessings can come to any creature than to live under His reign. The government will be world-wide; it will be without end. There shall be no death; there shall be no want. There will be a resurrection of the dead. Those who love righteousness will have the opportunity of going through the battle of Armageddon and share in the Kingdom blessings immediately thereafter. All of these things are proved by scriptures, and one possessing this Bible containing these special Kingdom features can talk about them without hesitation and with a ready mind, instructing the people.

One thing this 'Vital Subjects' does for one is to make him think and study, and shows the importance of searching the Scriptures and doing so. Matthew 4: 23, one of the first scriptures in the so-called "New Testament" about studying and teaching, states: "And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom." Who were with Him? The apostles. Jesus' disciples followed Him from city to city and continued to listen and to learn what He had to say. Matthew 9: 35, 21: 23 and 26: 55 accumulate evidence of Jesus' teaching, showing that He did so daily and that the apostles were with Him. They followed after the Lord for three and one-half years, and all that time Jesus was teaching, and they were learning.

Then, at Matthew 28:18-20, Jesus said to the apostles: "Go ye therefore, and *teach all nations*, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy [spirit]: teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world." Those were the last statements recorded

in Matthew, to go into the world and teach. For three and one-half years they were sitting at the feet of Jesus and learning. Learning what? Learning the Word of God. Why? That they might subsequently teach others.

Therefore it is very important for Jehovah's witnesses to study, to learn, to be taught, and "to teach others also". They are being taught the Word of God that a greater witness might be given

to the Word and name of Jehovah; that they might go "even unto the end of the world" teaching others to observe and do all the commandments of God.

The special features in this new Bible will greatly aid such ministers in meeting this requirement. "And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also."—2 Timothy 2:2.

---

## Defeat of Persecution in Odessa

AT Odessa, Texas, following the outrageous and libelous attack upon Jehovah's witnesses by the correspondent of the United Press at Del Rio, Texas, and the exploiting of that attack by Harlan Miller,\* columnist, there were outrages against the witnesses all over the United States, but especially in Texas.

At that time, late May, 1940, or early June, the next month, the county attorney of Odessa, Texas, ordered at first that around 100 of Jehovah's witnesses should be held in jail until they had saluted the flag. He was not interested that there is no such law in any state in the United States, and cannot be. He considered himself in the same class with Hitler, but barked up the wrong tree.

It is a long time to wait, but after fifteen long months, the *Odessa American* published the good news that a full investigation of Jehovah's witnesses had been made by the Federal Bureau of Investigation, that it has established that the organization has no connection with any anti-American or pro-Nazi organization, that they should not be molested nor interfered with in any way, but should be granted the same freedom of worship as any others of Americans.

---

\* Due recompense awaits these two men for the awful suffering they brought on the innocent, all over this broad land.

This was good news to Jehovah's witnesses. They remembered when they had been marched out of Odessa at the point of a gun, or several guns, and compelled to walk the railroad track for many miles in intense heat, denied access even to a drink of water. Many of the witnesses on that march were so overcome that they had to be carried by the others, while the jeering crowd of demonized citizens of Odessa marched on the highway alongside to see that they kept moving.

Now it is all over. Jehovah's witnesses are back in Odessa witnessing from door to door and spending hours at a time in the street work with the magazines. Some view them sheepishly, and some with hate in their eyes, but the police are kind and much interest has been found among the people of good-will toward God who were greatly moved by the terrible scenes enacted in their city in 1940.

One of the witnesses said, "In my seven years of witnessing I could never have dreamed of meeting so many good people and as many welcome receptions as I have had in Odessa in these three days last past."

So all is well that ends well. And the Devil is licked once more, this time in Odessa. All praise to Jehovah God, who knows how to do what men cannot do.

# VITAL EQUIPMENT FOR CRITICAL 1943

## 1943 YEARBOOK OF JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES

Read the stirring annual world-wide report prepared by the Watchtower Society's president, showing the victories given faithful Christians during 1942 in the face of ever-increasing persecution. Do you think you may have to use the tactics of Jehovah's witnesses in other lands to defeat persecution and preserve your rights in your own community, in order to worship God? This 1942 annual report stands out as a monument to the faith of men, women and children, throughout our demon-troubled earth, in Jehovah God and His kingdom of righteousness, to the honor and praise of His name, and will make you think!

Every day you should meditate on some portion of God's purpose. The *Yearbook* contains a Bible text and brief comment for every day in the year 1943. Arm your mind by daily reading from the *Yearbook*.

This is a volume of 416 pages, bound in royal-blue cloth, with a gold-embossed title. It is available in a limited edition at 50c a copy.

## 1943 CALENDAR

The inspiring yeartext, "More than conquerors through him that loved us" (Rom. 8:37), appears at the top of a colorful picture that depicts the timely prophecy of Revelation 17 wherein it is shown that victory will come to the righteous. Having this before you continually throughout the year will keep your mind centered upon the purposes of God and His provision for the protection of His human servants.

The CALENDAR pad for the twelve months briefly sets out the Kingdom work outlined for the entire year 1943. You will want to keep up-to-date and share in the work each month.

The Calendar is available at 25c each; five to one address, \$1.00.

---

### WATCHTOWER, 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y.

Please send me a copy of the 1943 *Yearbook of Jehovah's witnesses*. (50c each)

Please send ..... of the 1943 Calendar. (25c each, or 5 for \$1.00)

Herewith is my contribution of .....

Name ..... Street .....

City ..... State .....

# CONSOLATION

JOURNAL OF FACT, HOPE AND COURAGE

## Control Hitlerism

What is back of the demoralization of American schools?

---

## Jehovah's witnesses Mold Constitutional Law

They fight for freedom on the home front

---

## Peoples of Northwest Africa

Some interesting facts about the land of the second front

---

## No Life in Hell

The doctrine of everlasting torment refuted

---

## "Holy Roman Empire" Attempts a Comeback

Common aims of Nazis and Hierarchy shown

Five Cents a Copy  
One Dollar a Year

February 3, 1943  
Vol. XXIV No. 610

\* \$1.25 in Canada and  
\* Foreign Countries

Published Every  
Other Wednesday



# Contents

School Hitlerism (Part 1)	3
Jehovah's witnesses Mold Constitutional Law	9
Lands and Peoples of Northwest Africa	10
Fascist Ambitions in Libya	11
Why the Cry of "Tunisia", "Tunisia"	11
Algeria an Integral Part of France	12
Map of North Africa	13
Morocco Farthest West	14
Some First-Hand Information	15
Butter Tree, Flour Tree, and Cheese Tree	15
"The Profit of the Earth Is for All"	16
"Thy Word Is Truth"	
No Life in Hell	17
The "Holy Roman Empire"	
Attempts a Comeback	19
Has the "Church" Reformed?	20
Common Aims of Nazis and Hierarchy	21
The "Church" and Hitler Remember	22
Hitler a Catholic in Good Standing	23
Hitler and the "Old Lady"	24
Birds of a Feather	25
Condemned out of Their Own Mouths	26
Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"	
Features of <i>The Emphatic Diaglott</i>	29
The Best Convention Report	2

Published every other Wednesday by  
WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, INC.  
117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

Editor Clayton J. Woodworth  
Business Manager Nathan H. Knorr

Five Cents a Copy  
\$1 a year in the United States  
\$1.25 to Canada and all other countries

## NOTICE TO SUBSCRIBERS

**Remittances:** For your own safety, remit by postal or express money order. When coin or currency is lost in the ordinary mails, there is no redress. Remittances from countries other than those named below may be made to the Brooklyn office, but only by international postal money order.

**Receipt of a new or renewal subscription** will be acknowledged only when requested. **Notice of Expiration** is sent with the journal one month before subscription expires. Please renew promptly to avoid loss of copies.

**Send change of address** direct to us rather than to the post office. Your request should reach us at least two weeks before the date of issue with which it is to take effect. Send your old as well as the new address. Copies will not be forwarded by the post office to your new address unless extra postage is provided by you.

Published also in Greek, Portuguese, Spanish, and Ukrainian.

## OFFICES FOR OTHER COUNTRIES

England 34 Craven Terrace, London, W.2  
Australia 7 Beresford Road, Strathfield, N.S.W.  
South Africa 623 Boston House, Cape Town  
Mexico Calzada de Melchor Ocampo 71, Mexico, D.F.  
Brazil Caixa Postal 1319, Rio de Janeiro  
Argentina Calle Honduras 5646-48, Buenos Aires  
Entered as second-class matter at Brooklyn, N. Y., under the Act of March 3, 1879.

# Notandum

## The Best Convention Report

♦ The *Report of the New World Theocratic Assembly of Jehovah's witnesses*, September 18, 19, 20, 1942, just at hand, is, by all odds, the best report of any annual convention of Jehovah's witnesses that has ever been published. And it is the most attractive. With pages 9" by 12" in size (the same as *The Watchtower*), the pictures, 82 of them, are generous in their proportions, and tell a great story in themselves.

Of special interest is the magnificent scene which goes to make up the front cover. A hand, as the hand of the great Creator, is revealed as opening the windows of heaven and pouring out upon Jehovah's witnesses so many and so great blessings that they could not be contained. The blessings themselves are shown: the WATCHTOWER Bible; the October 1, 1942, issue of *The Watchtower*, containing the discourse on "The Only Light"; the new book, *The New World; Kingdom News* No. 11, entitled "The People Have a Right to Good News Now"; the booklet *Peace—Can It Last?* and *Organization Instructions*, which instructions enable Jehovah's strange work in the earth to be done in an orderly manner by the most orderly and obedient people on earth; and then the avalanche of thousands upon thousands of these new features that enabled the witnesses to make immediate use of them.

As in all the new books and booklets, provided by the Lord through the Society, only the name of Jehovah God is exalted in this report of the greatest convention of Jehovah's people ever held on earth. It is known that 156,424 attended and that at least 4,992 were immersed. In every way this report is different and better than any that preceded it. No one that is of good-will toward God can read it without praise to Jehovah welling up within his heart.

# CONSOLATION

“And in His name shall the nations hope.”—Matthew 12:21, A. R. V.

Volume XXIV

Brooklyn, N. Y., Wednesday, February 3, 1943

Number 610

## School Hitlerism *(In Two Parts—Part 1)*

THERE has been much publicity about the enforcement of the flag salute in certain schools throughout the United States. On the other hand there is a total lack of publication as to the educational success of such schools. Some of Jehovah's witnesses have now been refused an education on this ground for more than three years. What is accomplished thereby? Are the schools reaching new standards of excellence? Have their school methods and practices produced better Americans, well grounded in essential knowledge? It is now time to consider.

Public Law 623, passed last June by the 77th Congress, expressly provides: “Citizens will always show full respect to the flag when the pledge is given by merely standing at attention.”<sup>1</sup>

Meanwhile some school authorities continue to bring unsavory attention to themselves by insisting on the salute, not lawfully required of civilians. Surely children are entitled to all the rights and immunities allowed to other civilians, especially to the inherent and constitutionally guaranteed right to worship God according to the dictates of the young conscience. Unprejudiced authorities

would rejoice to see the child exercise that right. But unhappily there is a breed among our school potentates who find the Nazi methods more attractive than the American way of life. These are the little Hitlers of the schoolyard.

**“The salute of the flag is an expression of the homage of the soul. To force it upon one who has conscientious scruples against giving it, is petty tyranny unworthy of the spirit of this Republic and forbidden, we think, by the fundamental law. This court will not countenance such tyranny but will use the power at its command to see that rights guaranteed by the fundamental law are respected.”**  
—District Court of the United States, Southern District of West Virginia.

Among the tyrants of all time no other is so despicable as the oppressor of the youthful conscience. It is painful to endure the ostracism of one's schoolmates, but to suffer punishment at the hands of respected elders for that which

is done for conscience' sake is severe indeed. Let the minds of the adult return to his own school days and recall the little heartaches which racked so painfully. Pause for a moment and reflect as to how you would have endured chastisement for doing what you conscientiously believed to be God's will. Such is the hardship courageously borne by little children who love the Lord.

School days are not the happiest times at best. The youngster must accommodate himself to discipline, sacrifice many yearnings, and obey without question. He must learn the difference between right and wrong. This is often hard, even though it may be explained to him that rules are for his benefit. To aid in this process of molding the young mind nothing else is so helpful as con-

<sup>1</sup>For full discussion of this law, see *Consolation* No. 602, “Respect to the Flag.”

fidence in and love of the teacher. How, then, can the school authorities gain respect from the child by forcing upon him that which is repugnant to his conscience? It is their duty to quicken this conscience and not to punish its exercise.

Properly, then, the teacher becomes the guide to right conduct and is looked up to for instruction in nearly every phase of life; and the adolescent conscience is quickened not merely by "MUSTS" and "MUST NOTS", but by the example of the beloved ideal. For more than half his waking hours the student lives in this influence, which can be exerted mightily for his benefit.—Proverbs 22:6.

School thus grows to be a large part of the child's world. Those who people it have either his confidence or his distrust. He reasons about the conduct of others; and although he may accept unreasonable behavior, it is not without wonder, which may even recur in later years to be threshed out and the action condemned. Injustice is most likely to be bitterly remembered.

Injustice comes now in its ugliest form: punishment for doing right. The whole framework of education built on confidence, respect and devotion collapses. The eminence of the child's tutors is brought low, and nothing but contempt for such action, which will increase through the years, can result. Nor is the effect limited to the persecuted one, but spreads to all those who see it, and even beyond, to all who hear about it; little impressionable minds carrying a record of wrong for many generations.

Proper instruction, on the other hand, leads to "have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men". (Acts 24:16) What happens, then, from the attempt to force an improper conscience toward God and toward men? What occurs when in good conscience a boy or girl asks to be excused from the flag salute because he or she considers it against God's law, and, without any attempt to prove the child's reasoning

incorrect, the principal or teacher says: "If you don't salute you will be whipped or expelled"? The child of faith remains firm. But there are many others with a sense of justice who begin to wonder whether the voice of conscience is the thing to listen to or not. The teachers have said so. But now a schoolmate is in trouble because he insists on doing what he thinks is right. Are any rules right after all?

The principles expounded by the educators are fine. In an abstract manner their reasoning is sound; in practical application they are found wanting. Take, for example, Springfield, Mass. A write-up in the Springfield *Union* eulogizes the schools of that city for their teaching the youth the fine art of good citizenship and democracy. It says, in part:

Gone are the days when democracy could thrive in the schools on perfunctory salutes to the flag and pictures of Washington crossing the Delaware. Democracy is fighting for its life. The schools know this and are doing something about it. They realize that their big job is to make democracy live. They must show what lies behind the flag and what it means to live in a democracy. America must be understood rather than accepted. . . . Students learn of the bitter struggles by which liberty was won in America and how it is imperiled by antidemocratic movements which are sweeping the world. "Be open-minded and get the facts," is the lesson students are urged to learn.

The actions of Springfield schools belie the above words. They tried to force perfunctory salutes from children who declined because of conscientious scruples based upon God's law. They tried to force acceptance of what they call "democracy", not understanding true democracy themselves. These arbitrary methods failing to break the faith and integrity of the children, they were expelled from school.

Another principle not everywhere followed is that stated by a well-known

educator, Wilford M. Aikin, in the New York Times. He says, in an article entitled "What's Wrong with Our Schools?" that after prolonged study many teachers and principals have stated their convictions, one of them in the following phrase:

We believe that the mind and spirit of man should be free, that there should be no shackles upon intelligence or spirit, that all aspects of life, even the democratic ideal itself, shall be open to honest inquiry, discussion and criticism. For that reason the Bill of Rights was included in the Constitution. Mind and spirit can be free only where freedom of speech, press, assembly and worship are guaranteed.

Demoralization is sure to follow digression from God's law. School boards even digress from the laws of the land in order to set up petty dictatorships over the pupils. The Nazi example, where each official metes out "justice" according to his own whim or caprice, becomes the practice. Besides expulsion, whippings and incited assaults by other children are resorted to. Here again appears the Nazi pattern, the weapon of tyrants of all ages. Certainly this conversion to Fascism gladdens the heart of Hitler, and gives his father the Devil much joy because the whole tendency is to reflect discredit upon Jehovah. But it should be no cause for joy to Americans.

All patriotic Americans agree with the words of former Supreme Court Justice Byrnes when he said:

We must by all means avoid developing among ourselves a Hitler-like contempt of other groups and creeds and races. We want no Hitler justice here. We want no trials by axe-men instead of juries. We know the meaning of Equal Justice Under Law. We know the blessings of liberty. To preserve these we will give our all. God helping us.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Byrnes himself did not live up to that fine declaration of American princi-

<sup>1</sup> Speech before the Illinois Bar Association delivered in Chicago, June 4, 1942.

ples, because, four days later, he fell in with the majority decision, that famous five to four decision against freedom, permitting tax levies upon Bible truths.<sup>2</sup> Many school boards also thus render lip service to the four freedoms, while they deny their enjoyment to children of a faith different from their own. This statement, of course, does not include the thousands of American schools that magnanimously recognize the right of Jehovah's witnesses to worship the Lord according to conscience, and excuse them from the salute. But today the germ of Hitlerism is spreading to some of these.

The question now arises: Why do school authorities emphasize the salute, which can have but small importance in the realm of education? Briefly answered, they prefer Nazism to Americanism, seeking to dominate without recourse for the victim; and hate the God of Jehovah's witnesses. They exhibit all the symptoms of the disease ravaging this country, *suppression of free worship*. In violating the Constitution and Federal Law 623 the schools have been aided and abetted by other groups, as we shall see later.

Related to the exaggerated emphasis upon the salute are other questions for most serious consideration by parents and educators of the United States, to wit: How do the achievements of the schools in the proper field of education compare with their zeal to destroy obedience to Jehovah? While doing homage to totalitarian methods is there a corresponding neglect of basic and moral instruction? In the unhappy land of Nazism immorality is glorified. Are the American schools following suit?

<sup>2</sup> The Chicago Tribune editorially regretted the appointment of Byrnes as director of economic stabilization because of his "concurrence as a member of a five to four majority in the Supreme Court in an opinion of the court last June which held, in the Jehovah's witnesses cases, that vendors of religious books and pamphlets may be licensed and taxed, notwithstanding the constitutional guarantee of freedom of religion, speech, and the press".



## The Answer

Answering the foregoing questions *Consolation* submits several forms of evidence: statements of pupils themselves; the opinions of educators and professors of grade schools, high schools, and colleges; quotations from civic and national leaders and spokesmen; testimony of police officials as to immorality; Catholic and, particularly, Jesuit objectives in education, and the results; and excerpts from the court records.

Consideration will be given to the points in the order mentioned. First, the statements by the pupils themselves. This is perhaps the least reliable evidence, as children are given too much to imagination and hearsay and then repeating it as a fact. But to round out the picture such information is offered.

A high-school girl of fifteen relates the following:

In my English class the other day, we were conjugating verbs, and one of the girls asked if "sit, sat, *sut*" was correct. The teacher asked how she would use "*sut*" in a sentence. The girl replied: "We have *sut* here for hours."

The class and teacher both laughed, but there was no attempt made to correct this girl's mistake.

While I read a great deal, and have acquired a vocabulary that way rather than at school, yet I have not learned to spell properly. Several years ago, in South Carolina, we learned spelling through the spelling bee, which everybody enjoyed. Now they seldom, if ever, have spelling bees.

The present-day history books do not tell why America was settled. They show merely that the people were heavily taxed, and therefore left their country to come here. There is scarcely any mention of their desire for freedom of worship. No mention is made of the Catholic Inquisition or the massacre of St. Bartholomew's Day in 1572. They don't teach the coming of the peoples of Europe here to find refuge from the Inquisition.

Evolution is generally taught.

This young lady, who signs herself a

"California high-school girl", touches also on the subject of morality.

The average high-school age for boys and girls is from fifteen to eighteen years. Girls sixteen and seventeen are attending high school married. They talk freely of their married life in front of girls fifteen years old. Is this anything for these young minds to be absorbing? . . . The boys have no scruples at all; they are utterly disrespectful to girls and to teachers. There is no limit to which they would not go to humiliate a girl, especially one who they know dislikes them. Mean things are done by starting untrue, filthy stories about the girl, and molesting her in the halls. These boys are not only filthy-minded, but filthy in body. In fact, they are quite insipid and revolting. They wear dirty corduroy trousers covered with everything from lipstick to parts of their breakfast.

As an afterthought then she adds: "This is not true of ALL the boys, but of the majority"; and concludes: "Youth composed of atheists, agnostics, is the result of this 'mess' of education,—unbelievers, not only in God and the Bible, but in anything."

The educational deficiencies are fully corroborated by newspaper statements and quotations from educators. The Los Angeles *Examiner* of September 11, 1942, printed four news articles concerning the basic lack of modern education. The first of these is a report of interviews with students themselves, and is headed: "Progressive Education Condemned by Students Themselves." Clubwomen, parents, businessmen, high-ranking military officers, and thousands of teachers, as the *Examiner* has shown with abundant evidence, have expressed alarm at what misnamed "progressive education" and slighting of the "three R's" have done to school children. Now the children condemn it themselves!

Even the students themselves turned out of California's high schools under the misnamed "progressive education" (or "coddling") system don't like what has been done to them!

They know they have been shortchanged on the "three R's", and they say so.

Here are answers by high-school graduates to the question, "In what way do you think your high school could improve on its program in preparing students for the university?"

"High school should be more thorough."  
"MORE MATHEMATICS and English composition needed in high school."  
"More homework. High school should RAISE standards."

The next column of the same issue voices the request of 71,000 members of the California American Legion:

"Our organization at its last convention in Los Angeles went on record as advocating the compulsory teaching of American history in all California institutions of learning—especially in high schools where it is frequently an optional part of the curriculum," Happell declared. . . .

The Los Angeles *Examiner* has made quite a campaign for improved education. In the issue of October 2, 1942, Doctor Russell W. Starr, 17th District Americanism chairman of the American Legion, is quoted as denouncing "schools' stress of socially significant" topics to the neglect of basic training in the "three R's". Dr. Starr sees the infiltration of Nazism:

"The very future of our nation depends on the correct training of our children. You can change the outlook of an entire nation in 20 years by teaching methods, as witness Germany and other countries where that has actually been done.

"Suspicion is aroused that there may be some of this being attempted in some parts of our own country. [The enforced flag salute is just such an attempt disguised in patriotic dress.] Why have so-called 'socially prominent' items and attacks on our institutions become more important in classrooms than primary training in reading, writing and arithmetic?

"Is an attempt under way to steal the minds of our children—to turn them away from basic principles, which have been proved sound in

a period of over 150 years of our national life?

"WHO is it who does NOT want children taught reading, writing, spelling, arithmetic, and geography, but DOES want them taught foreign philosophies and ideologies? . . . [Who but the Hierarchy of the Catholic sect?]

"WHY is so much time wasted in the school-rooms—given to play subjects? Why the stress on letting the child 'do as he pleases'? Why this encouragement, cited in many cases, of disregard of discipline? Are these attitudes American?"

Another educator, L. J. White, for 25 years an instructor in the Manual Arts High School, gave this opinion:

"I have opposed the so-called new or 'progressive' type of education [which appears to have come in shortly before the enforced flag salute] for the past ten years. I do not believe we should confine the education of our children to just the 'three R's', but I do believe every child should have a good knowledge of fundamental subjects FIRST and so-called 'cultural' subjects LATER. . . .

"Some years ago I noticed that students in my A-II civics classes misspelled many words on every written piece of work they handed me. I finally gave a spelling test to the students in three of my classes and used a list of 50 words from the list used between high schools in radio spelling contests. I took the words in regular order and did not select difficult words. I pronounced each one carefully, and used the word in a sentence.

"Two of these students missed every word. A few got two words spelled correctly. The highest mark given was 52 percent! I also gave a little test in arithmetic and found almost as deplorable a situation. Many of our students take no mathematics during their high school course."

"I recommended a high-school girl to a friend of mine as a stenographer. He gave her a trial, but did not employ her. Later he told me she could take dictation rapidly enough, but couldn't spell even the simple words after she had taken them down! The

schools MUST get back to fundamentals, and to EMPHATIC teaching methods."

A monthly bulletin entitled "Friends of the Public Schools", from Washington, D. C., puts its finger on the difficulty. Following are some excerpts from its issue of May, 1941:

From all over the United States comes to this office letter after letter complaining that children can't read, can't write, can't punctuate, have no vocabulary, can't spell or can't do simple arithmetic. What is the reason?

We have long felt that it is the shortening of school hours and the introduction of fads and frills, and, lately, the introduction of every sort of topic under the theory of broadening education. . . .

Let us just pause for a moment and think deeply on the fact that it was the methods of teaching in vogue 40 to 100 years ago that produced the brilliant men and women of invention, science, literature and art that has made America the greatest nation in all human history—in every line of invention and endeavor. . . . But they were thoroughly trained in the fundamentals of reading, arithmetic, spelling and the like, or made themselves masters of those fundamentals and then diligently, systematically, energetically and continuously applied themselves to the one great objective in their lives. Almost none of them were the result of highly mechanized schools, or, as Mr. Hart puts it, schools with "too great educational machinery".

If that teaching produced such an age of brilliant men and women with what the modern educators call "underprivileged" equipment, then we had better seriously sit down and reflect how many of the present fads and frills we should cast out of our schools in order to get back to methods that will produce for coming generations the same brilliant men and women in same proportion according to numbers as the old methods of teaching produced in the past. . . .

There is no time (and we fear, sometimes, no inclination) to drill children in reading, spelling, arithmetic, grammar, geography and other fundamentals, and without drill (repetition) young children can't learn, and above

all, can't acquire that fluency and confidence that bring success. [Now the "more religion" advocates would further encroach on precious school time and add religion to the curriculum of the public schools.]

The same bulletin quoted some of the remarks, on Senate Bill No. 1313 pertaining to education and schools, by Merwin K. Hart, president of the New York State Economic Council, some of which follow:

"Too many things attempted; too few things perfected! . . .

"Public education in recent years, at least in New York, has tended to spread out and to include too many subjects. As more subjects have been taken in, the teaching of many of them, notably of such elementary things as reading, has often deteriorated. At a conference on the cost and quality of education held in February, 1940, in Albany, Dr. John L. Tildsley, former associate superintendent of schools of New York City, pointed out that about 20 percent of all pupils admitted to one high school in that city were unable to read well enough to read its textbooks in high school courses; and he believed that proportion would hold throughout the city. . . .

"Part of the cause of this I believe to be too much educational machinery. The schools are trying to do too much. In many cases they are not doing essential things well. The machinery could be simplified with money saved and with better education to the child.

Dr. Joel L. Hildebrand, dean of the University of California's College of Letters and Science, characterizes the modern trend as an "educational spree", from which such educators must "sober up". His book published in May, entitled "School and Society", generally derides "progressive education" in biting satire.

A Los Angeles businessman, in search of a typist, opened a readably good letter from a girl desiring work as a "typist". She failed to get the job.

It is, of course, not maintained that such deplorable conditions are the direct result of enforcement of the flag salute. But these facts are presented to show

that the school authorities are not attending to their proper business. It will further be observed that ignorance is the devoted companion of lawlessness.

[In the foregoing, consideration has been given to the fact that while emphasis has been placed upon nonessential gestures and fads in the schools, education in fundamental and practical knowledge has been allowed to suffer neglect.

What are the moral conditions in the schools? How are American children affected by their schooling? For what kind of activity in life does it apparently prepare them? And what influence back of the situation must bear a large measure of blame? These matters the writer takes up in the next issue, bringing the article to a striking conclusion.—*Ed.*]

---

## Jehovah's witnesses Mold Constitutional Law\*

**S**ELDOM, if ever, in the past, has one individual or group been able to shape the course, over a period of time, of any phase of our vast body of constitutional law. But it *can* happen, and it *has* happened, here. The group is Jehovah's witnesses. Through almost constant litigation this organization has made possible an ever-increasing list of precedents concerning the application of the Fourteenth Amendment to freedom of speech and religion.

The First Amendment protects freedom of speech and religion from undue encroachment by the federal government. Of course, the freedoms are not defined therein. They assume definite content only when an individual alleges in the courtroom that as to him they have been infringed. As that body of precedents increases predictions as to future conduct become more accurately possible. In normal, peaceful eras precedents seldom arise, because challenges to them do not occur. Nonetheless, during the course of time a substantial body of case law has developed concerning the First Amendment. Only in recent years, however, has the Fourteenth Amendment been judicially considered as protecting the freedoms against encroachment by the states. Minute analysis here becomes possible only as a sufficient variety of cases comes before the courts. Until that

occurs, prediction as to permissible conduct is little more than guesswork.

In the World War espionage cases the Supreme Court evolved the now-familiar "clear and present danger" test as the most definite available standard concerning the First Amendment. More recently, the same test has been applied to state legislation under the Fourteenth Amendment. And so, a body of precedent crystallizing rules regarding the limits of encroachments by the states has been developing.

To this development Jehovah's witnesses have contributed the most, both in quantity and in significance. Primarily their interest has not been merely to develop this phase of constitutional law; rather, it has been to maintain and perpetuate the existence of organization. This cult has found it necessary to struggle against a tremendous surge of unfriendly local opinion and opposition—opposition aided by local laws designed to curtail the Witnesses' functions and activities—opposition aided and abetted by zealously antagonistic local law-enforcement authorities. Wherever and whenever they have been thus hampered, the Witnesses have alleged that the local legislation infringed upon their freedom of speech and religion. Favored by a strong organization with adequate financial support, they have been ready, able and willing to carry these issues to the highest tribunal in the country. The decisions resulting therefrom now set

---

\* Excerpts from Part 1 of a lengthy article on the above topic by John E. Mulder and Marvin Comisky, in *Bill of Rights Review*.



the pattern for state courts in determining how far state legislatures may validly proceed on matters pertaining to freedom of speech and religion. The cases assume greater and greater significance, as local legislative bodies, with one type of law ruled unconstitutional, proceed to new and different devices aimed at curtailment. Thus, while the cult, though vigorously active, has but negligible influence, its incidental contributions to constitutional law have been tremendously significant.

Whether one accepts their teachings

or whether he privately thinks them ridiculous, is beside the point. The Witnesses are citizens and residents of the United States; they are as much entitled to the protection of the Constitution as are various other religious sects. To restrain them because their beliefs are unpopular is hardly in keeping with American traditions; they should be permitted freedom of activity so long as they do not violate laws found to be valid exercises of the police power. This point of view has been affirmed by the Supreme Court in a series of important decisions.

---

## Lands and Peoples of Northwest Africa

BECAUSE, unexpectedly, and, it would seem, under the circumstances, with excellent good judgment, the second front was opened November 7 in French North Africa, it seems appropriate here to pay some special attention to this portion of the world. The last previous issue of this magazine gave some historical information regarding Tunisia, now the center of the battle for control of North Africa. The possibilities of French North Africa were presented to the view of the reader, and, because almost all the people of northern Africa are Mohammedans, considerable attention was paid to this particular religious racket which controls 220,000,000 people.

Robert Gale Woobert, in the *New York Times*, gave a very interesting review of his travels in and impressions of North Africa. He referred to an oft-repeated saying that "Tunisia is a woman; Algeria is a man; but Morocco is a lion". It seems that this statement is correct, and would be still more apropos if it said, "Libya is a child; Tunisia is a woman; Algeria is a man; and Morocco is a lion." Libya is the least fertile and the most desert-like of the four states.

It is only thirty years since Italy seized control of Libya. Though the

country as a whole is rather barren, it has date-palm orchards, olive groves, lemon, almond and fig trees, and vineyards. Other exports in normal times are tobacco, matting, carpets, leather articles, and fabrics embroidered with gold and silver.

The laws are made in Rome, and the government of the natives and of the Jews has not been such as to make the governors objects of love and appreciation by the common people.

Even before the present war broke out tales came from Libya that one of the prominent Mohammedan chieftains had been taken up in an Italian airplane to a height of several thousand feet. Then he was thrown out, and his remains were scattered over the landscape to teach the people that "Mussolini is always right".

Within the last five years the Jews in Tripoli, the largest city in Libya, were flogged by command of the Italian authorities for failure to keep their shops open on Saturday in violation of their conscience. The floggings, ten strokes with a whip made of pleated leather, were inflicted in the open market-place. The red-whiskered assassin (Graziani, captured in the Ethiopian war) who perpetrated these and other outrages is now a prisoner of war in British India.

The population of Libya in 1939 was only 888,401, distributed over an area of 679,358 square miles. That is only one person to a little less than a square mile. The population is of a very mixed character, containing, besides the Moors, traces of the ancient Numidians, Phoenicians and Romans, together with the more recent influx of Italians.

### ***Fascist Ambitions in Libya***

It is now about seventy years since Italy began to have dreams of empire in Africa. Mussolini's ambition, like that of Caesar, grew upon that on which it fed, and when he seized Ethiopia, in 1935, it was apparent shortly afterward that along with Hitler he planned the seizure of Egypt and the Suez Canal, and, indeed, the seizure of the whole of Africa; and, along with Japan, the domination of the world.

It is quite interesting that in 1935, when the Falasha princess of Ethiopia, Rassari Heshia Tamanya, cousin of Emperor Haile Selassie, was in New York city, and when the unprovoked invasion of her country was impending, she made the correct prediction that a second world war, more wide-spread, more devastating than the 1914-1918 conflict, was in sight. The princess traces her lineage back to King Solomon and the Queen of Sheba and seems to have some of Solomon's wisdom. It is not apparent that Mussolini made much out of his Ethiopian venture, but the one that incited him to it, and "blessed" his murderous expedition, made it one of the conditions of his support that only Roman Catholic missionaries would be permitted to do business in this land which for centuries has been neither Roman Catholic nor Protestant, but of the Coptic religion.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy would cheerfully bargain with the Devil direct for anything that would give them political power. Hence the indulgent attitude of this "church" toward its children,

Mussolini, Hitler, Franco, Tiso, Salazar, Quisling, and De Grelle, and maybe Hirohito. (Hirohito's four daughters are being educated by Roman Catholic nuns.)

Cardinal Fracchinetti, whose journey to the so-called "Eucharistic Congress" in Tripoli was made in an Italian warship, wrote on his arrival that one of the aims of the Congress is to aid Fascism, Latin civilization, and to stifle Bolshevism, Asiatic barbarism.

There are many interesting things in Libya besides those of military significance. One of these is the Arab city of Garia, sixty-five miles from Tripoli. This city is built thirty feet below ground, where the people have lived for centuries in laboriously carved passages and exquisitely decorated chambers to hide themselves from the hot winds that sometimes sweep over Libya. To an approaching visitor the Arab city is invisible, but the Italians have built their barracks above it. The subterranean houses are ventilated by airshafts which rise from the courtyard about which most Arabian homes are built.

In the middle of the Sahara, south of Libya, is the Emi Kussi, 11,000 feet high, the highest mountain of Sahara. This mountain contains copper deposits. Also, there are date and palm trees in the near-by oasis of Bardi. But, unfortunately, so think the Italians, this mountain is just over the border, and is therefore in the French Sahara. The Italians want it and asked France to give it to them, but the French said, Nix. Result: Hard feelings.

### ***Why the Cry of "Tunisia", "Tunisia"***

Nominally the ruler of Tunisia is a bey, whose family has been on the throne for some 240 years, but in 1881 the French took him under their protection, and since then he has done what he was told. This has not just suited the Italians, because they have 94,289 of their nationality there out of a total population of 2,608,313; while the French, aside from

the army, is only 106,068. Tunisia is about the area of New York state or Pennsylvania.

In the mountainous north there are large and fertile valleys; in the north-east peninsula, excellent land for fruit culture; in the central part, pastures and high tablelands; and in the south are famous oases and gardens in which dates grow in rich profusion. Agriculture is the chief industry, and wheat, oats, barley, olives, dates and grapes are produced abundantly, besides almonds, oranges, lemons, shaddocks, pistachios, alfa grass, henna, and cork. The most important minerals are lead, iron, phosphate, and zinc.

Those who have been accustomed to think of northern Africa as being mainly desert will be amazed to learn that there are, in little Tunisia alone, over 7,000,000 acres of tilled land, 2,725,000 acres covered by pine and cork forest of considerable value, 75,600 acres of vineyards, and 11,500,000 acres of stock lands.

Before the war well over 2,000,000 tons of shipping annually entered and cleared Tunisian ports. More than 60 percent of trade was with France. The chief imports were textiles, manufactured metals, and minerals, while the main exports were agricultural products, olive oil, and minerals. Governmental expenditures in 1940 were over 800,000,000 francs.

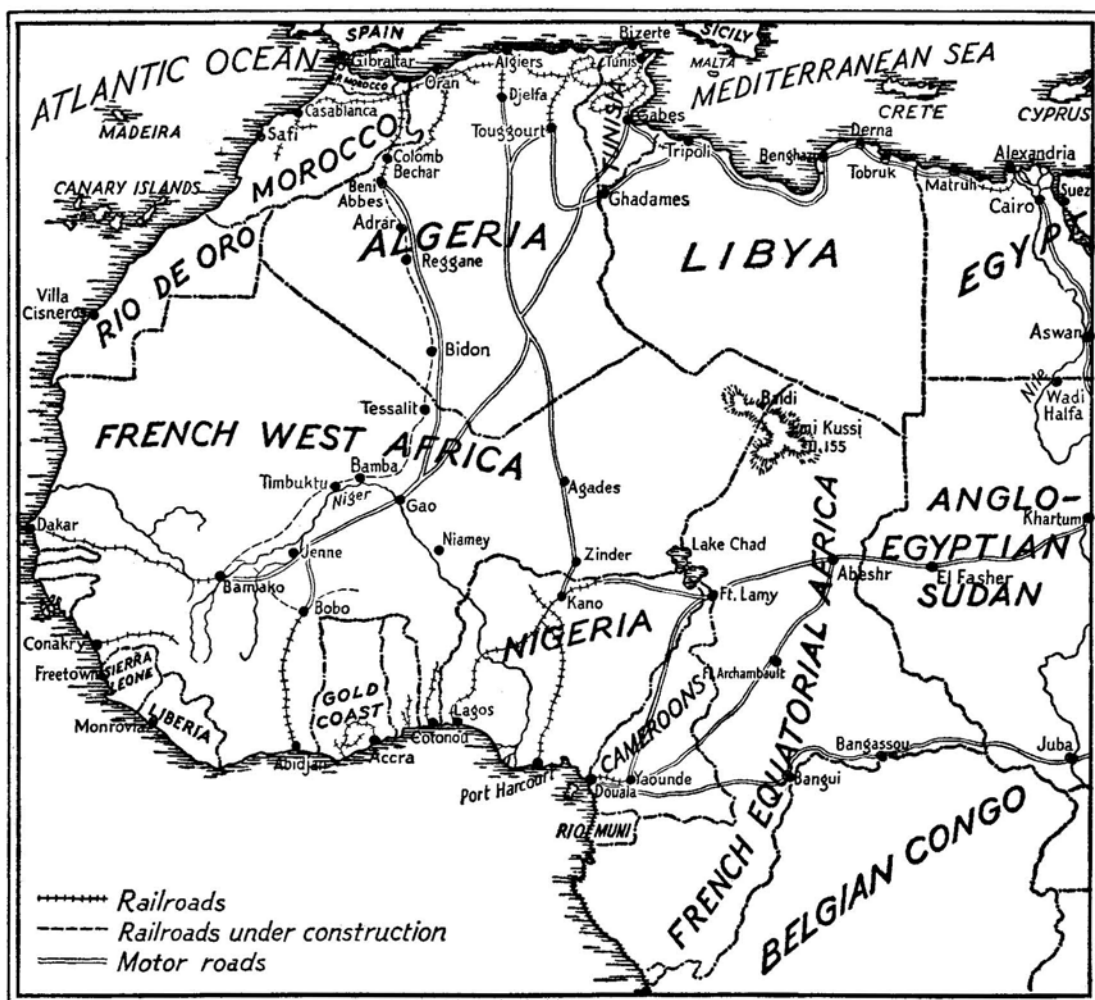
When Mussolini's "government" stabbed France in the back, a few years ago, he doubtless visualized a greatly enlarged African empire for Italy after the war. These dreams are now fading, as is Mussolini himself. At the time of the back-stabbing, and when the streets of Rome resounded with the cry of "Tunisia", this human jackal could have had no idea that, when the time came for foreign troops to cross the borders of that beautiful land, those troops would not be Fascist, bent on loot, but Americans and British sent to assist defeated and divided France.

### *Algeria an Integral Part of France*

Algeria, unlike either Tunisia or Morocco, has been a part of France since 1830. For centuries the principal business of Algiers was piracy, and for a long time England paid the bey of Algiers \$280,000 a year tribute. A part of this tribute was always demanded in armed vessels, ammunition, and naval stores, so that England really furnished these cutthroats with the tools wherewith the piracies on the ships of other nationalities were accomplished.

The time of settlement came when the Algerians captured two United States vessels and 21 men, who, as usual, were reduced to slavery while the question of their ransom was pending. Eleven of these men died in slavery, and as a consequence Admiral Decatur raided the whole coast. Coming into Algiers he chanced to find the entire fleet at sea. He gave the bey three hours to release all captives, of whatsoever nationality, and forswear all future tribute, or he would blow his place off the map. The bey capitulated. Subsequently Decatur visited Tunis and Tripoli on the same errand, and with like results. The next year the British government stopped paying tribute and made a similar trip.

The bey continued to prey upon the French, but it didn't go, and in 1830 his country was seized, the French taking the whole works, though not without resistance lasting forty years. Today no native of Algeria can become a naturalized French citizen and vote unless he renounces his personal status as a Mohammedan. This includes giving up polygamy and accepting the French law of inheritance. Only a few thousand natives have accepted these terms and become French citizens. This Mohammedan situation is so ticklish that just before the greatest armada in history moved through the straits of Gibraltar every soldier was given printed instructions not to speak to any Moslem woman, not even the most innocent word, as such



would be considered an insult bitterly resented by every Moslem man.

Algeria extends for 650 miles along the Mediterranean sea, and inland for approximately 350 miles. On the coast is an area, the Tell, from fifty to a hundred miles wide, of very fertile plains, with valleys running out from the mountains. This land, principally owned by Europeans, is cultivated scientifically.

The agricultural products of Algeria include wheat, barley, oats, corn, potatoes, artichokes, flax, and tobacco. Dates, figs and pomegranates grow in abundance. Also wine and olive oil are produced. Cattle grazing is the main agri-

cultural pursuit. The country also has large deposits of iron, zinc, lead, mercury, copper, and antimony.

Algeria has an area of 847,500 square miles, and a population of well over 7,000,000. Southern Algeria takes up the larger part of the total area, being 767,435 square miles in extent. It is a separate colony under military command and has a separate budget.

There are three seasons in Algeria: winter, from November to February; spring, from March to June; and summer, from July to October. Rains fall plentifully from December to March. The summer is very hot and dry, and



the hot desert wind, called the "sirocco", often adds to the heat. However, in many parts of the coast the temperature is moderate and the climate so healthful that in times of peace Algeria is a winter resort for invalids.

### ***Morocco Farthest West***

If one were coming from Arabia and traveling along the coast of northern Africa, the territory now known as Morocco would seem a far-off point. Hence the Arabs who conquered that entire region, in the latter part of the seventh century, called it *Moghreb el Aksa*, meaning "The Extreme West".

Morocco has been pacified only about ten years. The job was cleverly done and with no great amount of bloodshed. As the tribes were conquered they were allowed to retain their own customs and religion, except that they had to cut out raiding, pirating, kidnaping, and warring. As territory was brought under French administration roads, asphalt or rail, were built, modern cities were erected outside the native settlements, schools and public works were set up, and agriculture, industry and trade were promoted. But the main civilizing element was the highway. After every tribe was conquered, roads were brought to that point, and hotels, adapted to the climate, but elaborate in equipment and management, were built in gardens and oases. The tourists came in, and, before he knew it, the native was civilized. There are many good points in this method of educating the demonized Mohammedans. Take, for instance, the city of Casablanca. When the French took this over in 1907 it was only a native fishing village, but today it is a flourishing European-like city of some 260,000 population, whose dazzling white buildings make a striking picture from the sea.

While the French part of Morocco is only one-fifth the size of Algeria, it has a population of only a million less than that greater neighbor, i. e., 6,242,706. The most numerous of the inhabitants are

the Berbers, whose ancestors conquered Spain three times. Spain now holds the upper or northwest portion of the country as a protectorate. This portion is about a tenth of the entire area. The Atlas mountains extend across the country from northeast to southwest. The Dra'a, a river 700 miles long, is periodically dry at its lower end.

The native sovereign, or sultan, of Morocco, styled "emperor" by Europeans, bears the title of Emir el Mumenin, or "Lord of the True Believers". His subjects generally refer to him simply as Seid-na, "Our Lord." Until recently, and perhaps this is true still to a considerable extent, his power was absolute; the lives and properties of his subjects being wholly at his disposal. He made and unmade laws at his pleasure. The imperial revenues were derived from imposts on property, from duties on imports and exports, from monopolies, and from fines or confiscation.

Under the sultanate regime every office was directly or indirectly purchased, small salaries or none being paid, as the holders recouped themselves by plunder and oppression, tempered by the fact that any moment they might be forced to disgorge to the sultan, or else—be left to rot in loathsome dungeons, or be beaten or tortured to death. All justice was bought and sold. The religious fanaticism, together with the mutual jealousies of the European powers, was largely responsible for these conditions, and they were continued until quite recently.

Sparsity of woodland in Morocco keeps the wild animals in check. The lion exists in limited numbers and is said to lack the quality of courage. There is also the spotted leopard, panther, hyena, jackal, lynx, fox, wild boar, porcupine, antelope, and gazelle. In the remote reaches of the mountains the aoudad, or wild sheep, is to be found. There are blackbirds, goldfinches, linnets, greenfinches, robins, wagtails, skylarks,

and crested larks; swifts, magpies, cuckoos, lapwings, rollers, shrikes, turtledoves, nightingales, jays, and egrets, but no sparrows. Some of the country governors enjoy hawking, and the Moors are fond of hunting, frequently with greyhounds.

The mule is the most common beast of burden, but the camel, mare and ass are also used.

### ***Some First-Hand Information***

A *Consolation* subscriber in Illinois, who, apparently, either was or is a missionary, sent in a memorandum, entitled "Excerpts on Africa", dealing chiefly with French Africa. From this, note is taken of some interesting details:

In Morocco figs are many and delicious, being of various hues. Some are white, some black, and others purple, yellow, or green. The purple ones are considered the best, though the yellow figs are more beautiful. Fig trees are raised from seeds. The sprouts are transplanted in rows sixteen or more feet apart. The trees begin to yield when three years old, and some varieties produce two crops each year, and have done so for centuries. There are more than three hundred varieties.

As to olives, there are orchards everywhere. At about the eighth year the olive tree comes into bearing, and then will bear for a hundred years. Some trees yield forty gallons, and some a hundred gallons, in a year. Fruit that is pickled is picked comparatively green. In making the oil the olives are spread on a floor of glazed tile, to let the water run off; then they are pressed.

One of the modes of irrigating is to raise the water to a higher level by means of two wheels set at right angles to each other, moving in cogs and connected with a third wheel which has clay jars tied to its rim. This last wheel is so set that, as it turns, the jars dip into the water and fill. As the jars come to the top they empty into a trough which leads into the field. The motive power is usually a blindfolded ox, camel or mule.

The village huts are made of mud, stone

or straw. Each house has a wall or hedge of cacti around it. Some of the villages are all tents, arranged either in squares or in circles. The tents are the homes of the shepherds, who move as the grass fails.

The natives have a novel way of climbing trees, using a long hoop of rattan fastened around the tree. Stepping inside the hoop the native raises it so that his back is supported by the hoop. He then moves his bare feet on the trunk of the tree and by a succession of jerks walks right to the top.

### ***Butter Tree, Flour Tree, and Cheese Tree***

The karite, or butter tree, has a bark and trunk similar to the chestnut tree, while the leaves are somewhat like those of the pear tree. It grows very large and has nuts so full of oil that when boiled in water the oil rises and can be skimmed off. It cools and hardens, and is molded into blocks which look more like tallow than like butter. The natives use this butter in many parts of the Sudan (*Sudan* means "black"). The oil nuts are each enclosed in a flesh which tastes much like a peach. It is so sweet that it can be made into candy.

The nata, or flour tree, has large pods containing flour of a yellow color, somewhat sweet to the taste; and the cheese tree, which the natives call the "baga", produces fruit which tastes like cheese, with a fiber nearly as fine as silk.

On one of the caravan routes, in the midst of the Sahara, is a mine of rock salt which supplies many of the oases and a large part of the Sudan. The salt is dug in large lumps and trimmed into blocks about a yard long and eighteen inches wide, in which shape it can be easily packed on the backs of the camels. The salt is thus brought to Timbuktu, and is shipped from there to all parts of the Niger basin.

From Timbuktu to Jenne [250 miles southwest, upstream, toward Dakar—see the accompanying map] the Niger flows close to the desert most of the way, and on both sides of it are irrigated farms. Jenne stands on an island surrounded by branches of the Niger, its people owning most of the land for miles

around. It is better built than many cities of Egypt, and is a busy city; and at certain times of the day the business sections are crowded. The market is an open place in about the center of the town, with shops on three sides of it, and a mosque on the fourth. Here hundreds of people are buying and selling. Near the butcher shops are little ovens, upon which one may roast his meat free of charge, if he buys his fuel from the fuel seller next door.

One of the chief exports of West Africa is palm oil and the kernels of palm nuts. These products come from the oil palm, which thrives everywhere along the Gulf Coast and is so numerous that thousands of natives are engaged in gathering the nuts and making the oil. The oil palm has no leaves except at the top, where the fruit grows in great bunches or cones, at the base of the leaves. Some cones weigh seventeen pounds, and a single cone may contain as many as seven hundred nuts, each as large as a horse chestnut. The natives climb the tree by the hoop method, and cut off the cones and throw them on the ground, where they are left for a few days, till the nuts shrink and drop out. They are now boiled in water to remove the outside shell, which is lined with a fiber that is saturated with oil. The fiber is crushed from the kernels of the nuts in a large mortar and is then placed in clay vats filled with water. Native women get into the vats and tramp the fiber, pressing out the oil, which rises to the surface and is skimmed off. After this, the fiber and shells are again boiled and the oil skimmed. It is of a dirty yellow color, but it is so valuable for making soap, axle grease, and other things, that it is exported to Europe by the thousands of tons. The kernels of the nuts are valuable for the same purposes. They are dried and sent to Europe, where they are ground up and the oil pressed from them.

The leaves of the oil palm are used to thatch the huts, make hats, mats, and other things. At the root of the leaves there is a heart called the palm cabbage, which is eaten as a vegetable. When boiled it tastes like parsnips; and its neck has the flavor of the finest asparagus.

### ***"The Profit of the Earth Is for All"***

The foregoing gives one some idea of the abundant fruitfulness of North Africa. It is for the exploitation of these and other similar sources of wealth that "the king of the north" contends with "the king of the south", seeking world domination in order to gratify unbounded ambition, and ignoring the Word of God, which says, "The profit of the earth is for all."—Ecclesiastes 5:9.

In this connection an excerpt from *The New World* is of interest:

The tremendous issue at stake is universal domination, and the time schedules of "the king of the north" and "the king of the south" are inaccurate and unreliable, and shall never be carried through, either in time or in the events scheduled. . . . "The king of the north" and "the king of the south" were the two leading combatants in that world war of 1914-1918. But who are these "kings"? In chapter eleven of Daniel's prophecy concerning the "time of the end" the term "king" does not mean the totalitarian dictator of Germany, the pope, or other individual. "King" is the symbol of a world power, and this accounts for the fact that Daniel's prophecy shows that these two "kings" would fight, for centuries, until the FINAL END in our day. During that time "the king of the south" has been Egypt, the first world power, and her allies. In the nineteenth century the British Empire became involved in Egypt by reason of the Suez Canal and imperial matters. When the World War broke out Britain set up a protectorate over Egypt, which protectorate has been replaced by a military alliance, in 1936. The United States of America went into the World War on the side of Egypt and Britain. Therefore when the "time of the end" began, in 1914, "the king of the south" meant, and it still means, the world ruling-power that claims the right to rule and does rule in the name of democracy. It is therefore the rule by creatures, presumably the people, in contrast with The Theocracy, which is the direct rule by God Almighty through his King Christ Jesus, the Seed of God's "Holy Covenant".—*The New World*, pages 321-323.



## "THY WORD IS TRUTH"

—John 17:17

### No Life in Hell

**W**HAT? No hell torment? God's own answer is: "The wages of sin is death"; which precludes eternal torture. (Romans 6: 23) Having fixed this penalty for violation of His law, God could not change it afterward, because He cannot be inconsistent; He cannot deny himself. (Malachi 3: 6; 2 Timothy 2: 13) It was by the disobedience of the first man that sin came into the world and death as the result of sin; and so death has been the penalty upon all mankind. "Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned." (Romans 5: 12) For this reason Christ Jesus tasted death as a man and was raised to life divine in order that there might be a resurrection from the dead of those whom He redeems.

Psalm 145: 20 states: "The LORD preserveth all them that love him: but all the wicked will he destroy." The apostle Paul plainly says that all the wicked shall be punished with an everlasting destruction. "Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power." (2 Thessalonians 1: 9) But do not the wicked go to hell?

It is true that all who have died, from Adam until now, have gone to hell; but hell does not mean a place of conscious torture. Wherever the word "hell" occurs in the English translation of the Bible it means the condition of death. Hell is not a localized place, but is a condition. Those who go into it are not conscious there; but they have gone into the death condition, which is the condi-

tion of those in the graves. Their bodies decay and return to the dust. The word "hell" translates the Hebrew word *Sheol* only a number of times, because a number of other times *Sheol* is translated "grave" and "pit". The apostles, writing in Greek, used the word "Hades" to stand for "Sheol", so that in their writings *Hades* likewise means the condition of death, the state in the grave.

Some Bible illustrations of this prove that "hell" means a condition of death. Take Job, that good and godly man who tried to obey Jehovah. He had suffered the loss of all his earthly possessions and then his neighbors taunted him because of his suffering. While thus suffering, Job prayed that God would permit him to go to hell, saying: "O that thou wouldest hide me in the grave [*Sheol*, hell], . . . until thy wrath be past." He desired to be hid in the grave until the time of the resurrection, hoping in God's promise that some day the dead would come again. Then Job added: "If I wait, the grave [*Sheol*, hell] is mine house: I have made my bed in the darkness. . . . Our rest together is in the dust." (Job 14: 13; 17: 13, 16) Thus he pictures the grave as a condition of darkness, where there is no knowledge, no wisdom, nor any device. He said also a man's "sons come to honour, and he knoweth it not; and they are brought low, but he perceiveth it not of them". (Job 14: 21) Why? Because those in "hell", in the death condition, have no knowledge of anything. They are out of existence, and unless they are in line for a resurrection they shall not live again.

Benjamin's brother Joseph was sold into Egypt by his half brothers. They dipped Joseph's coat in the blood of an animal and brought it to their father Jacob and told him that his son Joseph was dead. In his grief Jacob exclaimed: "I will go down into the grave [*Sheol*, hell] unto my son mourning." (Genesis 37: 35) According to Hebrews 11: 9, 39, Jacob was a man of faith and approved



by Jehovah God. Hence Jacob meant he was going, not to torment in hell, but into the death condition, mourning for his supposedly dead son.

After Jacob lost Joseph his affections were centered upon his youngest son, Benjamin. His elder sons came to him and requested that Benjamin be permitted to go down with them to Egypt. Their father Jacob objected thereto, saying: "My son shall not go down with you; for his brother is dead, and he is left alone: if mischief befall him by the way in the which ye go, then shall ye bring down my gray hairs with sorrow to the grave [*Sheol*, hell]." (Genesis 42:38) The hell here named could not be a place of fire and brimstone; for the gray hairs of Jacob would not last long in the fire. What he really meant was that as an old, gray-haired man he would go down to the grave in sorrow if anything should befall his beloved son.

The Son of God came to earth, lived, died, and was buried; and of Him, Christ Jesus, it is written that He went to hell. Hence the psalmist says concerning Him: "Thou wilt not leave my soul in hell." (Psalm 16:10) If hell were a place of endless torment and Jesus went there He could not have been released. The fact that He did not remain in hell is proof conclusive that hell is not a place of eternal torment.

In the prophet Jeremiah's day the Jews became religious and forsook their covenant with Jehovah God and became worshipers of Baal, who is the Devil. In practicing Baal-worship the Jews offered their children as sacrifices, concerning which Jehovah God said: "They have built also the high places of Baal, to burn their sons with fire for burnt offerings unto Baal, which I commanded not, nor spake it, neither came it into my mind." "They built the high places of Baal, which are in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to cause their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire unto Molech; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my mind, that they

should do this abomination, to cause Judah to sin." (Jeremiah 19:5; 32:35) The things which the heathen sacrificed they sacrificed to devils, and not to God. (1 Corinthians 10:20) Such false worship or devil religion established among the deluded people of the world was another means employed by the Devil to blind the minds of men to the truth of God's Word and purpose.

In exercising divine justice, Jehovah at no time employs torture; but He denounces such torment doctrine as an abomination in His sight. Divine justice exercised destroys the evildoers; therefore that which is destroyed eternally is punished everlastingly. Inspired Scripture texts proving this are: "Evildoers shall be cut off: but those that wait upon the LORD, they shall inherit the earth. For yet a little while, and the wicked shall not be; yea, thou shalt diligently consider his place, and it shall not be. . . . But the wicked shall perish, and the enemies of the LORD shall be as the fat of lambs: they shall consume; into smoke shall they consume away. . . . For such as be blessed of him shall inherit the earth; and they that be cursed of him shall be cut off. . . . For the LORD loveth judgment, and forsaketh not his saints; they are preserved for ever: but the seed of the wicked shall be cut off. . . . The transgressors shall be destroyed together: the end of the wicked shall be cut off."—Psalm 37:9, 10, 20, 22, 28, 34, 38.

The doctrine of eternal torment supposedly in "hell" is a wicked defamation of Jehovah and a wresting of the Scriptures. It is a foul stain upon God's lovable name. The chief purpose of faithful man is to glorify God. It is therefore the Christian's privilege and duty to remove from the minds of religionists this misconception of Jehovah God and to enable others to understand that God is indeed love. An understanding of Jehovah's purpose shows that everything He does is prompted by love of righteousness.

## The "Holy Roman Empire" Attempts a Comeback

**I**F AT first you don't succeed, try, try again. So philosophizes the patient Roman Catholic Hierarchy at Vatican City. Dethroned as undisputed champion of the religious world by the Reformation, she has desperately and tenaciously fought since that time to re-establish herself on the pinnacle where she formerly perched and oppressively ruled and exploited the nations of earth. She has made many bids for a return to power. Two stand out prominently. Having the same end in view, they are similar in some significant points. One was in the 17th century; the other, in the 20th: the Thirty Years' War, and World War II. Consider the former, and be enlightened concerning the latter, the outcome of which is still to be decided.

According to *The Encyclopædia Britannica*, the Reformation in Germany was above all things a popular movement, that it sprang directly from the heart of the nation. The attempt to stem this movement and reseat the totalitarian Hierarchy was by force and the sword. It was due mainly to the persistent zeal of the Jesuits, which Catholic reaction was destined to wreak fearful havoc in Germany. Protestantism, however firm its hold on the peoples, had dissipated itself in doctrinal wrangles, while the Jesuits had disciplined the forces of Catholicism into a virile, militant bloc. Throughout their history the Jesuits have always lurked behind the scenes to advance their bloody religion by Catholic Action. It is even so today.

Germany was divided by the Reformation in the 16th century, the Protestants wishing the democratic right to worship God according to the dictates of their own conscience, and not according to the pope's. In this wish they were refused. Ferdinand II, educated by the Jesuits and under oath to exterminate Protestants from his kingdom, came into power in 1617 and persecutions began. The

following year, 1618, saw the beginning of a religious war which was to surge back and forth in destructive fury for thirty years, fomented by the Catholic Church in a vain effort to forestall the birth of what has now developed into democracy and the recognition of the inalienable right of freedom of worship.

Catholic Ferdinand started the war in Germany, just as did Catholic Mussolini in Ethiopia, Catholic Franco in Spain, and Catholic Hitler (joined by the pope's newly adopted son Hirohito) in the whole world, to wipe out freedom and gain world domination by re-establishing the "Holy Roman Empire". Is it a coincidence that these cruel totalitarian aggressors are Catholic; that all have the crusader complex, Mussolini converting the Ethiopians, and Franco and Hitler the Reds; that Jesuitical methods are discernible in all three; and that none of them have been excommunicated or even personally censured by the pope?

### *Results of the Thirty Years' War*

The fearful tyranny of Ferdinand over those of his dominion, like that of his footstep followers today, drove the people to despair and prolonged the war. The German Protestant forces resisting the Catholic "putsch" had many allies—Hollanders, French, Swedes, and Danes, and were aided by a British subsidy. Finally for them victory, and the Peace of Westphalia, was concluded, at Münster, on October 24, 1648. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy never recognized it as a peace, but has warred against it and tried to wipe it out ever since. It is recognized by many as the birth, after thirty years' travail, of present-day democracy. It solidified and added to the gains of the Reformation movement during the 16th century.

*The Encyclopedia Americana* says concerning it:

Few wars, however, have been more calami-

tous in their general effect on the mass of the people and the happiness and progress of mankind. Apart from the horrors which attended the capture of Magdeburg, and other barbarous scenes of the struggle, it reduced the peasantry and most of the townspeople to abject misery.

M'Clintock and Strong's *Cyclopædia* says that—

an age of greater toleration was introduced into Germany. In all religious questions the Protestants secured an equality with the Catholics, and gained equal weight in the diet and high courts of the empire. The Peace of Westphalia terminated the religious wars of Europe, and thus became an important landmark in its history.

This cyclopedia was published in 1871 and the world had not as yet witnessed the second big attempted comeback to be staged by the Vatican during the 20th century; for, strange as it may seem to many, that is just what the present conflict is. It is a religious war. But, you may say, the Thirty Years' War was three hundred years ago, and the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and her methods have changed. Not so. She claimed to be Christian then, and makes the same claim now. She does not acknowledge her past methods as un-Christian; she sees no cause to lay them aside where her power permits her to use them.

For centuries the Hierarchy of Rome has been accustomed to use Catholics high in power as her temporal "sword" to advance her religion. She is accustomed to inquisitions and other wicked reactionary weapons against democratic progress. She is accustomed to do evil. To her it is second nature and she will not change; for God's infallible Word says: "For the greatness of thine iniquity are thy skirts discovered, and thy heels made bare. Can the Ethiopian change his skin, or the leopard his spots? then may ye also do good, that are accustomed to do evil." (Jeremiah 13: 22, 23) Her spots of filth remain unchanged.

### **Has the "Church" Reformed?**

Since the Catholic Church presumptuously says God's Word alone is insufficient, and blasphemously claims that the Almighty's utterances must be corroborated by the words of the "Church", the following testimony is taken from that source, showing her position is unchanged. The *Toronto Gospel Witness*, of November 6, 1941, under headline "Jesuit Teaching of Today", states:

The Catechism of Pere Picotin, published by Guirodet of Paris in 1929 and bearing the churchly approbation of Pere Ignace Foubiget, S. J., asks the children:

"Were it not then of great importance, dear child, that the holy Inquisition be again restored for the salvation of Souls?"

"Yes, that is the end for which all the faithful must strive.

"What are the counsels of the Fathers in this matter?"

"We must root them out with death, kill them, burn them, tear them in pieces, break them on wheels, and crush them."

Thus it is seen, then, that if the Hierarchy, always the opportunist, thought she could erase the hateful smirch of Westphalia by an alliance with Catholic politicians, she would not hesitate to do so. She so allied herself with Italy in 1929, and with Germany in 1933.

Is it misrepresentation to say that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy would like to see the destruction of the Peace of Westphalia, which is in effect the same as saying she would like to see the destruction of freedom of worship in democracies and the defeat of one of the "four freedoms" of the Atlantic Charter, and therefore the defeat of the United Nations? No, it is not misrepresentation. Pope Innocent X, in an official papal bull, *Zelo Domus Dei*, vigorously protested against the Peace of Westphalia. The magazine *Revelation*, in its July, 1941, issue, reproduces a portion of this papal bull, which is as follows:

It has been with a very great feeling of pain that we have learned that by several

articles of the peace made at Osnabrück the 6th of August, 1648, between our very dear son in Christ, Ferdinand, King of the Romans, elected Emperor, together with his allies and followers on the one hand, and the Swedes, with their allies and followers on the other hand; and by the peace which was concluded at Münster in Westphalia, the 24th of October, in the same year 1648, between the same Ferdinand, King of the Romans, elected Emperor, together with his allies and followers on the one hand, and our very dear son in Jesus Christ, Louis, very Christian King of the French, together with his allies and followers on the other hand; great injury has been wrought against the Catholic religion, against the divine worship, against the Roman Apostolic See, and against the subordinate churches, and ecclesiastical orders; as also against their jurisdictions, authorities, immunities, franchises, liberties, exemptions, privileges, affairs, properties and rights; because through certain articles of one of these Treaties of Peace, there have been abandoned in perpetuity to the Heretics and their successors, among other things, the ecclesiastical properties which they have formerly occupied; there is permitted to the Heretics who are called the followers of the Augsburg Confession, the free exercise of their Heresy in many different places; they have been promised that places would be assigned to them to build Temples for such exercise, and that they would be admitted on equal terms with the Catholics to public charges and offices . . . they have ordered many other things that would be shameful to mention, very prejudicial and damaging to the Orthodox Religion, to the Roman See, to the subordinate churches, and the others above mentioned. . . . We, on our own initiative, and on our own knowledge and ripe deliberation, and in the fulness of our ecclesiastical power, say and declare by this act, that the said articles of either or both of the said Treaties, or anything else contained in the said Treaties, which in any fashion whatsoever injures or brings the slightest prejudice to, or that anyone could say, understand, pretend or conclude that it might injure or might

have injured in any manner, the Catholic Religion . . . shall be perpetually null, vain, invalid, iniquitous, unjust, condemned, re-proved, futile, without force and effect; and that no one is held to observe any detail of them, even though he be bound by an oath.

The "liberties" here referred to as being infringed upon were her liberty to run roughshod over Protestants and anyone else who jeopardized her dictatorial rule.

### ***Common Aims of Nazis and Hierarchy***

But isn't it true that the Nazis are opposed to the Roman Catholic church? That is what Vatican propaganda, so fawningly dished up for public consumption by a spineless press, would have those in democratic lands believe. But the facts are not in support thereof. Note the following which ties in the Thirty Years' War with the present conflict, and the similarity of the issues involved. First, the democratic freedoms born at Westphalia were never recognized by that church, and the Nazis and their Axis partners speak of such democratic liberties as "putrid". The dictators aim not merely at the destruction of freedom, but at the re-establishment of the "Holy Roman Empire". Certainly this aim, if true, and it is, coincides with Papal lust for power. This is shown by items in the news which slip through when the Catholic censors sleep on the job; and it's a big job, this covering up of the pope's political machinations. The *New York Times*, February 17, 1940, stated:

The German war aims were outlined tonight as a re-establishment of the Holy Roman Empire by Dr. Edmund A. Walsh, regent of the Foreign Service School of Georgetown University, before a capacity audience in Memorial Continental Hall in the first lecture of his annual series. Dr. Walsh said that he had heard Adolf Hitler say that the Holy Roman Empire, which was a Germanic empire, must be re-established.

Nearly one year later, the same paper



added to the cumulative evidence by release of the following item:

The *Deutsche Allgemeine Zeitung* said today, in reply to alleged statements by commentators in Great Britain and the United States that a German victory would reduce Europe to the level of the Middle Ages, that "we Germans have no reason to be ashamed of the Middle Ages". "On the contrary," it declared, "the Middle Ages, on which Americans acquire naive ideas through English suggestions, were a proud time, one of the proudest in memories. The European Middle Ages developed a culture of the highest peak."

It is these Middle Ages of which the Nazis are so proud that the Catholic Church once ruled in partnership with the German church "swords". It was the time of reign of the "Holy Roman Empire of the German Nation". It is what the same two conspirators are in cahoots to set up once more. It was maintained in power, not by any deserved loyalty or devotion to it by its subjects, but by the Inquisition. As it is re-established now by Catholic Hitler, first in Germany and then extended to conquered countries, its rule is enforced by a revived inquisition in the modern form of the Gestapo and concentration camp.

Toppled from her lofty perch by the Reformation, the Catholic Church tried a comeback in the launching of the Thirty Years' War. She was beaten, and the strongholds of freedom were strengthened as a result. Now, in the 20th century, she makes another attempt on the comeback trail. Round 1 was World War I, at which time the Vatican sided in with the *Dreibund*, though outwardly trying to appear impartial, as she does at the present time, and, as a result, was left out of the peace negotiations that followed. She lost that round; and now, in round 2, the same fight and the same issues of democracy and freedom at stake as in World War I, and the Thirty Years' War, the Hierarchy comes out of the corner of Germany in World War II, though still ostensibly impartial and neutral.

### ***The "Church" and Hitler Remember***

It is both interesting and illuminating to note further facts which span the centuries linking inseparably the two conflicts, and bring to remembrance once more the Thirty Years' War and note the similarity of sides chosen and stakes involved. The Catholic Church doesn't forget, neither do the German politicians, the "proud period of the Middle Ages" in which they collaborated in ruling to their mutual satisfaction. Nor do they forget the bitterness of their defeat at Westphalia nearly 300 years ago; and they look to the time of revenge. The Nazis remember too.

Dr. Alfred Rosenberg, chief Nazi ideologist, in a German broadcast yesterday, recorded in New York by the United Press, described the war as a "terrible thunderstorm over Europe, which has required of the German people an enormous amount of work". He warned the Germans that they must get used to the idea that this was "another Thirty Years' War".—*New York Times*, Sept. 2, 1942.

Now the Nazis are always bragging about their conquests and boasting of the near approach of the day of complete victory. They do not anticipate a war of thirty years' duration or anything remotely approaching it. The reference must have been to the similarity of the stakes involved and the aims to be attained.

Catholic Hitler remembers, too. Hitler is a sentimentalist, moody, brooding, and has a flair for the dramatic. For instance, when the armistice with France was signed in 1940 it was done in the very same car as that used for the signing of the Armistice of 1918. This car was brought to the clearing in the forest of Compiègne. It was not convenient; yet it must be done to gratify the sentimental Hitler. He made a great speech about the righting of great wrongs, wrongs committed in that same car, in the same clearing, in the same forest of Compiègne. These wrongs, according to Hitler, were appropriately righted, on the

same spot. That erased somewhat the stigma of defeat suffered in round 1, World War I; the big issue still remained unsettled.

What was that issue? What were the further wrongs that must be righted? The place for the final armistice signing, if chosen by Hitler, would be a key to the enigma. *Das Schwarze Korps*, official Nazi organ, in reporting the armistice proceedings, said the *fuehrer* had decided that the final treaty ending the war and ushering in the "new order" would be signed in Münster and known as the Treaty or Peace of Westphalia! According to the Catholic church the first Peace of Westphalia granting liberty to Protestants was a wrong to be righted. Evidently Hitler is in complete agreement with his mother church. "Saint" Hitler, knight errant, crusader, righter of wrongs, looks to a second Westphalia to erase the smirch of the first. It has never been a "peace" to the Hierarchy. It will be if Hitler succeeds in rewriting it. So it can be seen how the Papacy is trying to use Hitler as her "sword" to gain revenge for her for the former Treaty of Westphalia, which gave liberty to others than herself.

### ***Hitler a Catholic in Good Standing***

It may be that some do not believe that Hitler is a Catholic. This is not surprising, in view of the barrage of propaganda concerning Hitler's supposed persecution of the Catholic church. Many deny that Hitler is a Catholic. All this is propaganda to sidetrack the people and offset the pope's consistent refusal to ex-communicate his star performer. The following written testimony, confirmed by photographic evidence, should sweep aside any false ideas on the point. (See accompanying pictures of Hitler in the Catholic church, and leaving the church after the service.) In the book *Mein Kampf*, written by Adolf Hitler,—though it is claimed a Catholic priest had a hand in its preparation, and certainly its pages are



Hitler in St. Hedwig's Cathedral, Berlin

sprinkled with Jesuit teaching—Hitler's affinity for the church of Rome is apparent. Concerning this intimate relationship *The Converted Catholic*, June, 1940, makes the following assertions, supported by page references to *Mein Kampf*:

Hitler approves of everything particularly relating to Jesuit Catholicism as opposed to Protestantism. He approves of the indisputability of Catholic dogmas (p. 293), of the intolerant attitude of Catholic education (p. 385), of the necessity of blind faith (p. 417), of the personal infallibility of the pope—imposed upon the church by the Jesuits in 1870 (p. 507), and of the compulsory celibacy of the Catholic clergy. These are all matters that make Catholicism radically different from the other churches of Christendom.

In an open and prophetic expression of his admiration for the Catholic church, he says (p. 513): "Thus the Catholic church is more secure than ever. It can be predicted that, as passing phenomena vanish away, she will remain as a beacon light amid these vanishing elements, attracting blind adherents in ever-increasing numbers."

Add to this the fact that, since Rudolf Hess flew to Scotland, each and every member of Hitler's cabinet is Roman Catholic, as are the Vichy and Franco cabinets, and ties between papal Rome and the world's No. 1 nuisance become more apparent. Von Papen, Hitler's shrewd politician, said, "The Third Reich

is the first power which not only recognizes, but which puts into practice the high principles of the papacy." He should have said "high-handed". It was in 1933 that the papal nuncio to Germany, Pacelli (now Pope Pius XII), conspired with von Papen and others to put their Catholic crony into power. Is Hitler grateful? "I shall give the Roman Catholic Church the sacred mission of re-Christianizing Russia." So spake Adolf Hitler, the "holy crusader"! The statement was made to a Benedictine monk, "Father" Odo, and appeared in the London *Sunday Express*, November 3, 1940. This promise is already being fulfilled by Catholic priests following in the wake of the Nazi armies in Russia to do their "re-Christianizing" work, as shown by news dispatches.

### **Hitler and the "Old Lady"**

Wythe Williams, in an article published in *Liberty*, August 23, 1941, commenting on Hitler's "crush" on the "old lady" at the Vatican, said:

During his first visit to occupied Paris, Hitler went to Les Invalides to visit the tomb of Napoleon. After a cursory inspection of the building he sent his retinue outside. When he emerged some thirty minutes later, his face was pale.

He confided that night to several of his close friends that, while he had been alone beside the sarcophagus, the spirit of the Emperor had appeared before him. The spirit admitted, he said, that Napoleon's great mistake had been to antagonize the Church. Hitler was counseled to rectify his own mistakes in that direction. On the surface this story may sound absurd, but in view of the strange constitution of Hitler's mind it is quite conceivable that he does think this happened.

At any rate, during his entire tour of occupied France he showed a surprising interest in religious edifices and monuments. He visited Notre Dame and the Madeleine in Paris, the cathedrals at Amiens, Chartres, and Strasbourg. On returning to Berchtesgaden, he ordered the building of a chapel at the Berg-



From a photograph of Hitler coming out of a Catholic church.—In London *Catholic Herald*.

hof, which he is known to visit frequently. No one has been allowed to enter with him. He also ordered, so Klausmann says, the building of two hundred motorized chapels—chapels on truck bodies—which were sent to regions within the Reich where churches were few.

While the subject is taboo for press and propaganda bureau, it is said at Berchtesgaden, Klausmann informs me, that Hitler has made several attempts, through selected titled intermediaries, to better his personal relations with the Papacy. When he sent a large collection of Church ornaments and accessories to Spain to replace those lost during the Civil War, he asked that a complete list be communicated to the Vatican.

Hitler idolizes Napoleon. Napoleon negotiated with Cardinal Consalvi the concordat of July, 1801, which restored the Roman Catholic Church as a power in France. Hitler's concordat with the Vatican doubtless aims at the restoration of the "Holy Roman Empire".

### **Birds of a Feather**

'The bigger the lie, the better the chances of putting it over,' is one of Hitler's rules of mass psychology. It is not original with him. It has been a papal pet of longstanding and sprang from the blasphemously-named 'Society of Jesus', or Jesuits. It is founded upon the presumption that no one else is or can be such big liars as they, which is true. They reason that everyone will lie in varying degrees, but that most people have a limit beyond which they will not go. Balking at this limit himself, the average person feels everyone else will likewise draw a line which he will not pass, that no one would have the cheek to blandly tell what was obviously an outlandish whopper, unless it were actually true. But the Hitler and Jesuit and papal perfidy knows no bounds, has no brakes. Their minds and tongues are set free for limitless action by the Jesuit philosophy that the end justifies the means. Their hands, so to speak, are not tied by qualms or scruples.

This appalling expansion of freedom of speech goes so far beyond the bounds of conscience and moral principle restraining and limiting decent people that they do not even dream of its existence. So, when such political and religious frogs croak their colossal yarns the people swallow them because they think no one can be such a liar! But when the religionists lie they go "all out".

To many this may seem harsh and caustic, but certainly it is true, well deserved. To anyone who has read just a page or two in the Bible, who has not totally lost his power to reason, who has an ounce of reverence left—after the modern-day *blitzkrieg* against Godliness—for the almighty Creator of the universe, the following blaspheming lies are utterly sickening and repulsive beyond words. It is papal gall at its best.

"The pope: He is not man but God."—*"Decretals, Gregorii."*

"The pope and God are the same."—*Barclay, "Pius V."*

"The voice of the pope is the voice of God."—*"Life of Liguori" (London).*

"Our Lord God the pope, pope John XXII."—*(Roman Canon Law).*

"We hold upon this earth the place of Almighty God."—*Leo XIII. in "Encyclical Letters."*

"Speak, O great Pius, it is the voice of God."—*"Rome on the Council."*

"The pope being God cannot be judged . . . O Most Mighty One! Is not all power given to thee in heaven and earth."—*Labbat and Cossart (Jesuits).*

"What can you make of me but God."—*Boniface VIII. in the Bull "Unum Sanctum."*

"Popes have never reproved or rejected this title."—*"Priest" A. Pereira in Tentativa Theologia.*

"I will combat with every effort heretics, schismatics, and those rebelling against our Lord the pope and his Successors."—*"Cardinal" Bourne ("Daily Telegraph," Dec. 1, 1911).*

Innocent III., Leo X., Alexander VI., Pius VII., Pius X., all claimed to be God on earth.



*Honorius* says: "The pope in a manner can do all that God can do." Among the inscriptions on the triumphal arches erected at the inauguration of Alexander VI. was this: "Rome was great under Caesar, now she is greatest, for Alexander reigns. The former was a man; this, a God." (*Alexander VI. is usually considered as the very vilest of the popes—and that is saying something!*)—*Gospel Witness*, January 22, 1942.

How could any human creature find it possible to utter such rank blasphemies? To the normal mind it defies comprehension. It shows utter lack of understanding or appreciation of the relationship of the creature to his Creator. In the 14th chapter of Isaiah is told the Devil's ambition to ascend above the heights of the clouds and be like the Most High, and that for it he will descend to the lowest depths of hell and suffer eternal destruction. God is no respecter of persons. For the same sin, the same punishment is meted out, regardless of the camouflage of religion behind which it is perpetrated. The pope's usurpation of the position to be occupied by God alone as the pre-eminent one before the peoples of earth shall not pass unnoticed or unpunished.

Hitler has similar pipe dreams. The press often speaks of his deification in Nazi Germany. Hitler himself has made arrangements for the scientific study of his phenomenal brain, his swelled head. He thinks of himself as infallible, and wants others to so think. He expects to live forever in the memory of Germany and the world. Jehovah God says that the wicked, and their memory, shall rot.

Another thing common to both Hitler and the Hierarchy is their love for money, and their methods of getting it. Adolf Hitler, raving critic of "plutocrats", has the greatest private income in the world. The net profits of *Zentral Verlag*, German publishing combine of which Hitler is sole owner, are estimated as between 30 and 40 million dollars annually. No balance sheets are ever

published; no auditor is ever allowed to examine the books. Likewise the Hierarchy. Hitler summoned the German industrialists and bankers and told them he wished a fund put at his disposal for charity which would free him from the petty restrictions of the budget. The *Adolf Hitler Spende* fund was created and nets Hitler from 8 to 12 million dollars yearly for personal aggrandizement and buying personal political security. So the "charity" goes to Adolf and the money is obtained under false pretenses, like the money for masses to relieve souls in an imaginary purgatory.

Due to the similarities of the two systems there is competition between them. Both are modeled along totalitarian lines, both have dictators at their heads who claim infallibility, and both deal in the same commodities—traffic in human flesh,—and strive toward the same goal—money, power, and world dominion. The foregoing facts should suffice to show that these two "birds" appropriately "flock together".

### ***Condemned out of Their Own Mouths***

Experience is the best of teachers, say some. The Hierarchy's comeback fight today shows she has profited from her centuries of warfare. She is a seasoned fighter against liberty. Now, much revived by her rest between rounds, she comes out slugging. In the vernacular of fighters, it's no holds barred, fair or foul; in the parlance of the Papacy and the Jesuits, it's the end justifies the means, fair or foul. Of course, the religious "women" do not fight openly, but send out the church "swords": formerly Ferdinand II, now Mussolini, Franco, Hitler, etc. Dressing like women, they fight like women; yea, they have forborne to fight openly, but remain in their holes.—Jeremiah 51:30.

The foul holds and low punches now used are fifth-column tactics. The Hierarchy constantly finds it necessary to deny her totalitarian affiliations and fifth-column activities. The denials are

words, protests of patriotism, unsupported by facts; the charges are attested to by the physical facts and come from divers sources. Her religious garb fools some; others in high places are not fooled, but are pleased to wink at the old harlot and consort with her in her whoredoms; while still others are wise to her political intrigues and ambitions and have the courage to expose them. Much evidence has been presented to prove Vatican alliance with the dictators, but the press, either fearful of Catholic boycott or in on the game, refuse to give such facts publicity to help preserve freedom. They prefer to go "witch hunting" against unpopular minorities. It's a safer and more popular pastime.

The yearning devotion of the Papacy toward the Axis is betrayed by the uncontrollable zeal of her "holy water brigade". She has blessed, directly or indirectly, the Axis leaders, their armies, their mechanized equipment, and their crimes. She has given thanks for their victories. Proof of these blessings has been presented by *Consolation* in previous issues, both in written and in pictorial form, but in view of the insistent and never-ending flood of propaganda from the Vatican to offset the facts, further items are offered in support of the above claims.

First, a United Press release, published in the New York *World-Telegram*, stated that Catholic Army Bishop Franziskus Rarkowik issued a pastoral letter to all Catholic soldiers of Germany telling them they were fighting a "just war". The New York *Times*, December 8, 1941, reports the recommendation by the conference of German Catholic bishops in Fulda of a special "war prayer" to be read at the beginning and end of all divine services. The *Times* stated: "The prayer implores Providence to bless German arms with victory and grant protection to the lives and health of all soldiers. The bishops further instructed Catholic clergy to remember in

a special Sunday sermon at least once a month German soldiers on land, on sea and in the air." Members of the Catholic priesthood do not recognize national sovereignty, but are responsible to and owe their loyalty to the church. Yet the Catholic *Universe* of Friday, January 30, 1942, carried the headline concerning Catholic priests in Germany, "They Want Germany to Win War." Despite this admittedly fervent desire of the priests, the article said:

The only serious resistance to the Nazi regime in Germany today comes from the Roman Catholic Church. Right up to December 9, 1941, sermons were being preached in the Catholic churches of Berlin that could never have been made in 1935, 1936 or 1937. Why these priests are not flung into concentration camps I do not pretend to know.

Others do know. Hitler can afford to smile at token resistance by harmless words which are primarily intended to maintain the propaganda front in democratic lands. The account further applauded the "courageous sermon of the Bishop of Münster", that is, Count Clemens von Gallen. Did they mean the "courageous" pastoral letter he issued, the account of which appeared in the New York *Times*, November 8, 1941? It follows:

"A pastoral letter said to have been issued by the Bishop of Muenster, Count Clemens von Gallen, condemning Soviet Russia and commending the 'Christian soldiers of Germany' for their fight against the Soviet Union, has caused widespread interest in Berlin. Dienst aus Deutschland (official and authoritative Government news agency) said the letter was issued by the Bishop to his South German diocese a few days ago. . . . It closes with a citation from Adolf Hitler's most recent speech, a speech assailing Russia as being under 'Jewish-Bolshevist domination'. It praises the German army not only for taking up arms against the Soviet Union but also because it 'holds our enemies on the Atlantic coast and on the shores of the Mediterranean with bravery and stamina'."

No, it must have been a different one. "Special meetings of the Roman Catholic bishops throughout Germany have resulted in a decision to hold thanksgiving masses for the German victory in Belgium and Flanders, it was reported today." So ran a United Press dispatch from Berlin in 1940 and published in the *Boston Traveler*. In agreement with and expanding upon the above is a later Associated Press dispatch published by the *Philadelphia Record*, which reads:

BERLIN, Aug. 27 (AP)—A pledge of loyalty to Adolf Hitler by the German Catholic Bishops Conference at Fulda is to be read to the faithful from pulpits at the end of the war, D.N.B., official news agency, said today. The pledge to Hitler is contained in expressions of gratitude to German troops adopted by the conference which ended August 22. The agency said the view predominated at the conference that "the Catholic church in Germany is indebted to German troops for the victorious advance and defense of the German homeland. Without the success-

ful warding off of enemy invasion by German armed forces, German Catholics could not have pursued so undisturbed and quietly their church work and ministerial offices". "Publication of the pastoral letter, customary in past years after conclusion of the conference, is to be postponed until after the final victory of German troops," the agency added.

More testimony would not convince a mind steeped in prejudice; more is not required for the unbiased mind. All of this testimony by Hierarchy spokesmen shows their whole-hearted acquiescence with totalitarian aggressors and their moral support and backing of the dictators.

World War II is the "all out" comeback attempt of the "Holy Roman Empire". It shall be her last, and will end in her complete destruction at the "battle of that great day of God Almighty", Armageddon. That afflicting religious organization will never rise up again thereafter. "Affliction shall not rise up the second time."—Nahum 1:9.

## 1943 YEARBOOK

*"And the gospel must first be published among all nations."—Mark 13:10.*

Has the gospel or "good news" been forgotten in a world torn asunder by blitzkrieg warfare? Have the gods of war, by the most devastating carnage this earth has ever experienced, succeeded in driving from the minds of men the promised establishment of a God-ruled paradise with health, happiness and life without end for its inhabitants? Read the astounding answers to these questions in the 1943 *YEARBOOK OF JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES*. No, it is not a religious publication, but a dramatic record of the result of heroic efforts put forth by Christian men and women to hold aloft the "only light" in a world darkened by hatred, malice, strife, and total war.

Prepared by the president of the WATCHTOWER Society, the 1943 *YEARBOOK OF JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES* sets forth an inspiring report showing that this gospel IS being "PUBLISHED AMONG ALL NATIONS", notwithstanding the efforts of freedom-hating, totalitarian-minded men to stop this work of world-wide importance.

This valuable, heart-cheering volume also contains an appropriate text and comment for each day of the coming year; something to enlarge your vision of and to make strong your hope in the New World of peace, health and life. You should have a copy of the 1943 *YEARBOOK OF JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES* in your home!!

416 pages  
Gold-embossed

Due to the limited edition a contribution of 50c  
per copy is asked for the

**1943 YEARBOOK OF JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES**

Royal-blue  
cloth binding

**WATCHTOWER**

**117 Adams St.**

**Brooklyn, N. Y.**

Please send me ..... copies of the 1943 *Yearbook of Jehovah's witnesses*. I enclose a contribution of ..... to aid in cost of publishing more Kingdom literature.

Name ..... Street .....

City ..... State .....

## Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"

### Features of *The Emphatic Diaglott*

**THE EMPHATIC DIAGLOTT** was produced by a Greek scholar, Benjamin Wilson, in the latter half of the nineteenth century, about 1867. Attention was first called to it in *The Watchtower* in the January issue of 1880, and some time later the Watch Tower Society bought the plates and publication rights from the author, Mr. Wilson, and today *The Emphatic Diaglott* is published exclusively by its owners, the Watch Tower.

*The Emphatic Diaglott* contains the Greek text of what is commonly styled the "New Testament", Christ's apostles and their companions having originally written the text in the Greek. The *Diaglott* text is that of Doctor John Jacob Griesbach's recension, as stated on the title page of the *Diaglott*. This recension (or codex) is the critically amended edition of the Greek text of the so-called "New Testament", made by Griesbach and published by him in 1774 and 1775. It is based on a comparison of many Greek texts, but it conforms more to the Alexandrine Manuscript which the British Museum in London acquired in 1753. Griesbach placed the most reliance upon the "eastern" or "Alexandrian family" of Greek manuscript texts.

The name which Mr. Wilson chose for his fine work describes the style and purpose of it. The book deals with two languages: the Greek and the English. The name "Diaglott" is made up of two Greek words, "glotta" meaning tongue, and "dia" meaning through, referring to the channel through which something is done and carried along. Hence "Diaglott" means "through the tongue" (or language), and means to say that by the style and method of Mr. Wilson's work the user of it gets at the true sense of the Christian writings "through the language" of the Greek text which is presented in this book and translated literally word for word.

This style of presentation of the subject enables the reader, even if he is no Greek scholar, to check up on the translation which Mr. Wilson gives in the right-hand column of each page. This translation is the emphatic or emphasized translation made by Mr. Wilson and "based on the interlineary translation, on the renderings of eminent critics, and on the various readings of the Vatican Manuscript No. 1209 in the Vatican Library", as stated on the title page of the *Diaglott*. So, then, if the reader finds that Mr. Wilson's translation does not agree with what the Bible teaches elsewhere but agrees with the sectarian views of Mr. Wilson or of some religious sect, the reader can shift his eyes to the left of the page. There he will find the Greek text and directly underneath each Greek line he will find a literal word-for-word translation of the Greek into English. Since this literal translation is strictly according to the Greek word-arrangement, it is not according to good English sentence-arrangement and does not make such easy reading in English. However, it does show us the original sense of the Greek text and the positions of emphasis and of relationship of the various Greek words in the sentence. Such translation in between the Greek lines is what is called the English "interlineary translation".

To illustrate, on page 312 of *The Emphatic Diaglott* we find Mr. Wilson's translation of that much disputed text, namely, John 1:1, 2. Wilson's translation, in the right-hand column, reads: "In the Beginning was the Logos, and the Logos was with God, and the Logos was God. This was in the Beginning with God." This translation seems to support the trinitarian view of God and Jesus. Knowing that the "trinity" doctrine disagrees with God's Word as a whole, the reader shifts his eyes leftward to the Greek and checks up on Mr. Wilson's



translation by referring to the interlinear translation. This reads: "In a beginning was the Word, and the Word was with the God, and a god was the Word. This was in a beginning with the God." This interlinear translation agrees with the rest of the Bible that Jesus was the beginning of Almighty God's creation and is God's first-born and only begotten Son, but is not "the God" himself.

In a case like this is where the marks of emphasis which appear in Mr. Wilson's right-hand-column translation come in handy to further prove that the Word, or Logos, is not His own Father and His own Son at the same time. On page 8 of the *Diaglott* is given the explanation of the "signs of emphasis", and it says that "the Greek article often finds its equivalent in the English definite article *the*, but in the majority of cases it is evidently only a mark of emphasis". Hence, on this point the *Diaglott* uses the following system of notation in the English translation in the right-hand column, namely: "Those words rendered *positively* emphatic by the presence of the *Greek article* are printed in Small Capitals."

Accordingly, on page 312 one will note that where the Greek text has *ho theos*, or "the God", in the right-hand column in his translation Mr. Wilson renders it God, with an initial large capital "G" because it refers to the Supreme Person, and the rest of the word in small capitals. On the other hand, where the Greek text has no definite article, but just "theos", "a god" according to the interlinear translation, there Mr. Wilson renders it "God" with only a capital initial "G" and the rest of the word in "lower case"

\*[ΕΥΑΓΓΕΛΙΟΝ] ΚΑΤΑ ΙΩΑΝΝΗΝ.  
[GLAD TIDINGS] BY JOHN.  
\*ACCORDING TO JOHN.

ΚΕΦ. α'. 1.

Ἦν ἀρχὴ ἦν ὁ Λόγος, καὶ ὁ Λόγος  
In a beginning was the Word, and the Word  
ἦν πρὸς τὸν Θεόν, καὶ θεὸς ἦν ὁ Λόγος.  
was with the God, and a god was the Word.  
Οὗτος ἦν ἐν ἀρχῇ πρὸς τὸν Θεόν.  
This was in a beginning with the God.  
Πάντα δι' αὐτοῦ ἐγένετο· καὶ χωρὶς  
All through it was done; and without  
αὐτοῦ ἐγένετο οὐδὲ ἓν, ὃ γέγονεν.  
it was done not even one, that has been done.  
Ἐν αὐτῷ ζωὴ ἦν, καὶ ἡ ζωὴ ἦν τὸ φῶς  
In it life was, and the life was the light  
τῶν ἀνθρώπων· καὶ τὸ φῶς ἐν τῇ σκοτίᾳ  
of the men; and the light in the darkness  
φαίνει, καὶ ἡ σκοτία αὐτὸ οὐ κατέλαβεν.  
shines, and the darkness it not apprehended.

Ἐγένετο ἄνθρωπος ἀπεσταλμένος παρὰ  
Was a man having been sent from  
Θεοῦ, ὄνομα αὐτοῦ Ἰωάννης· οὗτος ἦλθεν  
God, a name to him John; this came  
εἰς μαρτυρίαν, ἵνα μαρτυρήσῃ περὶ τοῦ  
for a witness, that he might testify about the  
φωτός, ἵνα πάντες πιστεύσωσι δι' αὐτοῦ.  
light, that all might believe through him.  
Οὐκ ἦν ἐκεῖνος τὸ φῶς, ἀλλ' ἵνα μαρτυρή-  
Not was he the light, but that he might  
σῃ περὶ τοῦ φωτός. Ὁ γὰρ τὸ φῶς τὸ  
testify about the light. Was the light the  
ἀληθινόν, ὃ φωτίζει πάντα ἄνθρωπον ἐρχο-  
true, which enlightens every man com-  
μενον εἰς τὸν κόσμον. 10 Ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ ἦν,  
ing into the world. In the world he was.  
καὶ ὁ κόσμος δι' αὐτοῦ ἐγένετο, καὶ ὁ  
and the world through him was, and  
κόσμος αὐτὸν οὐκ ἔγνω. 11 Εἰς τὰ ἴδια ἦλθε, καὶ  
world him not knew. Into the own he came, and  
οἱ ἴδιοι αὐτὸν οὐ παρέλαβον. 12 Ὅσοι δὲ  
the own him not received. As many as but

CHAPTER I.

1 In the  $\dagger$ Beginning was the  $\dagger$ Logos, and the Logos was with God, and the Logos was God.  
2 This was in the Beginning with God.  
3  $\dagger$ Through it every thing was done; and without it not even one thing was done, which has been done.  
4 In it was Life; and the life was the light of MEN.  
5 And the  $\dagger$ light shone in the DARKNESS, and the DARKNESS apprehended it not.  
6  $\dagger$ There was a Man, named John, sent by God.  
7 He came for a Witness, that he might testify concerning the LIGHT, that all might believe through him.  
8 He was not the LIGHT, but to testify concerning the LIGHT.  
9 The TRUE LIGHT was that, which, coming into the WORLD, enlightens Every Man.  
10 He was in the WORLD, and  $\dagger$ the WORLD was (enlightened) through him; and yet the WORLD knew Him not.  
11  $\dagger$ He came to his own domains, and yet his own people received Him not.  
12 but to as many as

\* VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—Title—ACCORDING TO JOHN.  
† 1. In this and the fourteenth verse *Logos*, has been transferred rather than translated. Dr. A. Clarke remarks, "This term should be left untranslated for the very same reasons why the names *Jesus* and *Christ* are left untranslated. As every appellation of the Savior of the world, was descriptive of some excellence in his *person*, *nature*, or *work*, so the epithet *Logos*, which signifies a word spoken, speech, eloquence, doctrine, reason, or the faculty of reasoning, is very properly applied to him." See 1 John 1. 1, for a clear and useful comment by the apostle John on the poem to this Gospel. † 3. *ἰσχυροί* occurs upwards of seven hundred times in the New Testament, but never in the sense of *create*, yet in most versions it is translated, as though the word was *idea*. "The word occurs fifty-three times in this Gospel, and signifies to be, to come, to become, to come to pass; also, to be done or transacted. All things in the christian dispensation were done by Christ, i. e. by his authority, and according to his direction; and in the ministry committed to his apostles, nothing has been done without his warrant. See John xv. 4, 5. "Without me ye can do nothing." Compare ver. 7, 10, 16; John xvii. 8; Col. 1. 16, 17. "Cappe's Diss. † 10. *ho kosmos*, the order, arrangement of things, the human race; here it evidently means that *kosmos* of human beings which he came to enlighten and to save. John viii. 12; iii. 16.  
† 1. Prov. viii. 22, &c.; 1 John 1. 1. † 3. Eph. i. 9; Col. 1. 16. † 5. John viii. 12; ix. 5; xii. 35, 46. † 6. Mal. iii. 1; Matt. iii. 1; Luke iii. 2. † 11. Matt. xxi. 38; Mark xii. 7; Luke xix. 14; xx. 14. † 12. Rom. viii. 15; Gal. iii. 26, 27; 1 John iii. 1.

letters. Thus even Wilson's rendering shows that the Word, or Logos, was God, but that the One with whom the Logos was in the beginning was God in an EMPHATIC sense and hence superior to the Logos as God. According to the general Scriptural teaching, John 1:1, 2 is an exception to the view of Mr. Wilson that the article *the* before the substantive God was merely emphatic and hence was not to be translated. In fact, the Greek article was meant to differentiate God,

who has no beginning and no end, from the Logos, who is a god or "mighty one" and who had a beginning. Hence Mr. Wilson should not have dropped the article "the" before "God" in his English translation. By this example one can see that, as the name *Diaglott* means, one gets at the original sense of John 1:1, 2 THROUGH (*dia*) the Greek text and its interlinear translation just underneath the Greek.

In order to get the full benefit of Wilson's English translation and its several ways of showing degrees of emphasis of words, one should read, on page 8, the explanation under "Signs of Emphasis". Since one will also be referring frequently to the interlinear rendering and then comparing it with the Greek text above, it would prove useful to study pages 9 and 10, "Letters and Pronunciation of the Greek Alphabet"; also the three Greek accents and other introductory points of Greek grammar. So doing, one will be able to read and recognize many Greek root-words from which our English words are drawn or made up, as, for example, "Theocracy," from the Greek word *theos*, meaning "God"; or "democracy", from the Greek word *demos*, meaning people; or "theology", from *theos* and *logos*.

Whereas the Greek text Mr. Wilson exhibits is that of Griesbach's recension or revision, Wilson's emphatic English translation conforms for the most part with the Vatican manuscript.

Turning now to page 11, where the apostle Matthew's account begins, one notes at the very top of the page the expression "GLAD TIDINGS" and the Greek word above are in brackets. As Mr. Wilson explains on page 7, under "Plan of the Work", as to those brackets, "Greek Words enclosed in brackets [thus], though authorized by Griesbach, are omitted by the Vatican manuscript." Hence, at the top of page 11, before the Greek word "evangelion" above "Glad Tidings" in brackets, one finds an aster-

isk. This refers one to the lower margin of the page, where the footnote marked with an asterisk reads: "VATICAN MANUSCRIPT—Title—According to Matthew"; which shows that Vatican manuscript No. 1209 does not contain the Greek word "evangelion" in the title of the apostle Matthew's account.

Referring (on the same page) to verse six of the Greek text, one sees another asterisk before the Greek words in brackets and translated "the king" beneath in the interlinear. This refers one down to the lower margin of the page where, on line with "VATICAN MANUSCRIPT", it reads: "6. the KING—omit"; which means to say that in verse six the Vatican manuscript No. 1209 omits the words "the king". Mr. Wilson therefore renders his own English translation in the right-hand column according to the Vatican manuscript, as at Matthew 1:6, where he omits "the king" just as the Vatican manuscript does.

In Revelation 20:5, the Greek words for "But the rest of the dead did not live till the thousand years were ended" are in brackets. The footnote says those bracketed words do not appear in Vatican manuscript No. 1160, neither in the Syriac nor in the Sinaitic. Yet Wilson puts those bracketed words in his English translation because, as he explains, he believes they were omitted in the Greek manuscript copies by oversight by the copyist. But is that true? One must determine the answer by sources outside of Mr. Wilson. However, from the Greek text there is reason to believe that Wilson's footnote is true.

Such examples emphasize that in reading the *Diaglott* English translation one should note every reference to the margin and read every footnote, rather than take Wilson's translation as unquestionably correct and hence be led to unsafe conclusions. Where there is a question, then the reader must refer to other works and Bible helps. Besides that, he should especially be guided in his judgment by his knowledge of Jehovah's purposes.

# Here Is Your Chance

February opens up this year's *WATCHTOWER* Campaign and special offer. Here is how you may obtain this offer.

Apply for

Subscription  
\$1.00 per year



If you subscribe for *THE WATCHTOWER* during this campaign you will receive, as a premium, the clothbound book



and the  
booklet

*PEACE—  
CAN IT  
LAST?*

## ***WATCHTOWER MAGAZINE***

Printed semimonthly. Composed of 16 pages of Bible instruction published for the purpose of disseminating God's word of truth so that you may be guided by this only light which leads to comfort and hope.

## ***THE NEW WORLD***

384 pages of Bible truths on the weighty and vital subject of *THE NEW WORLD*. Although only released in September of last year, its distribution has towered to the amazing figure of 1,750,000!

## ***PEACE—CAN IT LAST?***

This 32-page booklet contains astounding facts substantiated by Bible proof on the subject of major importance and concern to all people during these days of instability.

*Don't make a mistake by letting this superb offer pass by.*

All three  
for only  
\$1.00

**WATCHTOWER, 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y.**

Remitted herewith find \$1.00 for which please send to me for a year the *Watchtower* magazine. Also mail to address below, **FREE**, a copy of *The New World* and of *Peace—Can It Last?*

Name ..... Street .....

City ..... State .....



# CONSOLATION

JOURNAL OF FACT, HOPE AND COURAGE

## Hierarchy and Axis Collaboration

Uncovering facts distorted by a faithless press

## Jehovah's witnesses- Ordained Ministers

## Your Unseen Adversary

How you can successfully resist his attacks

## School Hitlerism

Immorality and foreign influence undermine education

Five Cents a Copy  
One Dollar a Year

February 17, 1943  
Vol. XXIV No. 611

\*  
\*

\$1.25 in Canada and  
Foreign Countries

Published Every  
Other Wednesday



# Contents

<b>Roman Catholic Hierarchy and Axis</b>	
Collaboration	3
The Press Collaborates	4
"Protests" by Catholic Dignitaries	5
Freedom of Speech Only for Hierarchy	6
Whitewashing the Pope	7
Persecution of Catholics in Germany	8
Cumulative Evidence	9
"Come, Let Us Reason Together"	11
"Comfort All That Mourn"	12
Jehovah's witnesses--Ordained Ministers	12
The Hope of a Perfect Day	15
Another Police Force at Reedley	15
Baptism	16
"Thy Word Is Truth"	
Your Unseen Adversary	17
School Hitlerism (Part 2)	19
Immorality	19
"Hearings"	21
Spineless, Rudderless Boards	23
Conquest Aided by Seduction of Schools	24
The Issue	27
Results	28
Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"	
Paragraph Construction	29
Edison Can't Figure It Out	31
The Totalitarian Monstrosity Rebuked	2

Published every other Wednesday by  
**WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, INC.**  
 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

Editor Clayton J. Woodworth  
 Business Manager Nathan H. Knorr

Five Cents a Copy

\$1 a year in the United States  
 \$1.25 to Canada and all other countries

## NOTICE TO SUBSCRIBERS

**Remittances:** For your own safety, remit by postal or express money order. When coin or currency is lost in the ordinary mails, there is no redress. Remittances from countries other than those named below may be made to the Brooklyn office, but only by International postal money order.

**Receipt of a new or renewal subscription will be acknowledged only when requested. Notice of Expiration** is sent with the journal one month before subscription expires. Please renew promptly to avoid loss of copies.

**Send change of address** direct to us rather than to the post office. Your request should reach us at least two weeks before the date of issue with which it is to take effect. Send your old as well as the new address. Copies will not be forwarded by the post office to your new address unless extra postage is provided by you.

Published also in Greek, Portuguese, Spanish, and Ukrainian.

## OFFICES FOR OTHER COUNTRIES

**England** 34 Craven Terrace, London, W.2  
**Australia** 7 Beresford Road, Strathfield, N.S.W.  
**South Africa** 623 Boston House, Cape Town  
**Mexico** Calzada de Melchor Ocampo 71, Mexico, D.F.  
**Brazil** Caixa Postal 1319, Rio de Janeiro  
**Argentina** Calle Honduras 5646-48, Buenos Aires  
 Entered as second-class matter at Brooklyn, N. Y., under the Act of March 3, 1879.

# Notandum

## The Totalitarian Monstrosity Rebuked

♦ To me it is a monstrous thing that in any American community the right of children to public school education should be made dependent upon such a thing as a salute to the flag. That right is theirs by reason of citizenship. "The country and its institutions exist for the people, not the people for the institutions." That the people exist for the state is a totalitarian notion.

The flag salute was injected into the schools by busybodies and its adoption seems to have coincided with the decadence of the teaching of American history, a decadence which has been the subject of recent editorials in the *Herald-News*. As the *New York Times* has said in its long campaign against encroachments in Central Park, that if every structure which busybodies had wished to erect there had been built there would be no park; so with the public schools, if all the notions of busybodies were injected into them there would be no education.

If Jehovah's witnesses refused to salute the flag in order to show defiance of the nation's Constitution and laws and in support of some foreign power there might be some reason for all the judicial fuss. But they do not; theirs is a religious attitude.

Freedom, including religious freedom, is so precious, and should be so close to the heart of every American, that we should rather lean over backward to sustain it than to have it encroached upon in the slightest degree. Rather than have one child driven from the public schools for declining to salute the flag in contravention of his conscience I would prefer to take that compulsory ritual out of the schools. After all, America got along very well without it for a century and a half.—Russell Palmer, in the *Passaic* (N. J.) *Herald-News*.

# CONSOLATION

"And in His name shall the nations hope."—Matthew 12:21, A. R. V.

Volume XXIV

Brooklyn, N. Y., Wednesday, February 17, 1943

Number 611

## Roman Catholic Hierarchy and Axis Collaboration

**T**HE Roman Catholic Church blesses the arms of the dictators, and gives thanks for their victories. She goes even farther. She takes her position in the ranks of the totalitarian forces as an integral part of the war machine. Her job is to prepare the way by manning the fifth-column activities, and her priests then consolidate the gains in the wake of the conquering Fascist legions and prevent uprisings of the Catholic occupied countries. Since their organization the Jesuits have been foremost in the fifth-column infiltrations and backstabbing. The Jesuits have, because of these seditious traits, been run out of many countries, only to return later and repeat the performance. Instead of their becoming dizzy by this "revolving door" existence, the practice has only resulted in a closer approach to perfection in the nefarious work of their father the Devil.

The Hierarchy's hand in this respect was exposed more in Spain than anywhere else. Throughout the recent civil war there this was obvious and the pope's blessing of Franco, the "Christian gentleman", would of necessity include his two cat's-paws, Hitler and Mussolini, used to rake the papal chestnuts from the Spanish fire. Now the pope is further embarrassed by the dead giveaway of his Fascist connections by Franco's plans, recently publicized in the press, for a *Catholic* axis against the democracies, consisting of Vichy France, Spain, and Portugal.

The Spanish Falange is a notoriously Fascist organization; it is also Catholic.

The bishop of Madrid is the director of the youth front of the Falange. Speaking to the leaders of this youth front the bishop, "Reverend" Leopoldo Eijo y Garay, said: "Falange would not have raised you to the dignity of instructors of Spanish youth unless you were found to be good Catholics; and you would not be good Catholics if you ignored the saving social doctrines of the church." The bishop quoted the founder of the Falange as follows: "Man must be free, but liberty exists only within a determined order." Incidentally, this is similar to the sophistry of the majority opinion of the United States Supreme Court, rendered on June 8, 1942, against Jehovah's witnesses, that 'the mind of man remains forever free, but he must have a license to preach the gospel'.

The dictator of Spain had two diplomatic receptions at New Year's. To avoid embarrassment he had the friends of the Axis at one of them and the friends of the United Nations at the other. The representatives of Eire and of the Vatican were at the Axis reception. Six weeks later the Vatican telegraphed the abbot of the Benedictine monastery at Montserrat to bless the Butcher; which he did.

### *The Western Hemisphere*

Perhaps the reader would like to view the fifth column work nearer home.

At a meeting of the governors of the Pacific coast states of Mexico held at Mazatlan, Governor Gonzalez, of Jalisco, stated that the clergy in his state was carrying on a ridiculous campaign against Mexican efforts to organize

national defense, telling the people "they should be on the side of Germany and Japan because those countries represent the religious interest of the world". When Mexico's archbishop, Luis M. Martinez, denied the charges, the Jalisco legislature, the local branches of the Mexican Confederation of Workers, the League of Agrarian and Peasant Syndicates, and the Federation of Leagues of the People's Sector supported the governor's charges, declaring that "the activities of the National Synarchist union and National Action unquestionably follow the tactics pointed out for them by ecclesiastical authorities".

The Los Angeles *Times*, November 9, 1941, contained a story stating that the Synarchists (elsewhere described as "Mexico's gold-shirted legions") are "ardent Catholics", "claim 500,000 members and few deny their claim" and that "the power potentially commanded by the Sinarquistas [Synarchists] is formidable when one realizes the Mexican army numbers only 61,500 men". And the Synarchists demand "restoration of full liberty for the Catholic Church".

It was found necessary to outlaw a Catholic weekly in Costa Rica because of its love of Nazism and the "new order".

The president has ordered the suspension of the pro-Nazi Catholic weekly *Epoca* under the extraordinary powers granted to him by Congress. The action, based upon the fact he considered the weekly an organ of the Nazis, Fascists and Falangists, meets with the general approval of the public and press. —New York *Times*, March 9, 1942.

Only the most expert of liars could be backing Hitler and Hirohito tooth and nail to gain world domination, and at the same time pretend to the democracies that he is wholly on the side of freedom. The conference of the republics at Rio de Janeiro was prevented from gaining the end it had in view because Chile and Argentina, under control of the Vatican, refused to go along. Anticipating that some might suspect him of being at the bottom of their balky conduct the

pope sent out a feeler, through his secretary of state and his delegate at Washington, denying that he had done anything to torpedo the conference. The joke is that nobody accused him of it. He denies everything as a matter of routine policy. He knows he should be accused. (Chile has since broken diplomatic relations with the Axis.)

In February of this year a well-known and responsible news commentator added to the voluminous evidence proving the collusion of the Vatican with Hitler in the present war. The statement broadcast was, in part, that "the Brazilian government has just seized a big supply of Nazi arms intended for a Nazi uprising. The arms were hidden in a church, the monastery of the German Franciscan Friars at Ceara." This is all regular, but the plan slipped up. The Brazilian government seized the arms and the Hierarchy denied that they ever existed. That was, of course, to be expected. Poor, persecuted church! The use of churches as centers from which to overthrow democratic governments is a long-established practice. In the betrayal of the Spanish Republic, the churches were the 'arsenals of Fascism'.

### *The Press Collaborates*

Jesus was accused of sedition, was innocent, and was crucified. It has ever been the same with His sincere followers. But Barabbas, on the other hand, was accused of sedition and murder, was guilty, and yet was freed! So it is with the fifth-column Barabbas priests of the "Holy" Roman Catholic Church today. This advance army of Hitler and the pope infiltrates behind the enemy lines and does its deadly work, preparing the way before the mechanized hordes of the church's "sword", as it so effectively did in France. And the courageous, battling public press of America insipidly falls all over itself to feed soothing sop to these beskirtd termites while they honeycomb democratic structures! If any other group or person has enough

spine to present the obvious facts about their precious sacred cow, they belittle and ridicule and treat facetiously the evidence, calling them bigots, campaigners of hate, unneighborly, peculiar and unique. The unique thing would be if they could recognize a fact when they stumbled and fell over one, and, even more startling, then have the spunk to publish it. Under the lightly worded headline "H. G. Wells Pops Up with Unique Idea on the War", the *Chicago Daily Tribune*, August 31, 1942, reported:

"The present pope is in open alliance with the Japs," he [Wells] wrote in the *Sunday Dispatch*, "and is the declared enemy of our ally Russia. Why not a 2,000-pound bomb on the Vatican garden as a warning now? What mysterious influence or what diplomatic imbecility is it that prevents this clear and decisive action?"

The Rev. Dr. John C. Heenan, in a "Catholic Reply to Wells", said that "with the exception of Jehovah's witnesses, nobody now takes him [Wells] seriously when he talks about history or religion".

H. G. Wells' reputation as a historian is generally good and the publicity and circulation enjoyed by his books would tend to indicate many do take him seriously, far more so than do Jehovah's witnesses. This so-called "reverend doctor", Heenan, may be indulging in a little wishful thinking on this point. Typical of all Hierarchy rebuttal tactics, the facts presented are ignored, of necessity since they are true, and the man personally is attacked. But the press continues to grovel at the old lady's feet. When the clandestine love of the Hierarchy for totalitarians shall have been fully exposed, as it surely will; when the darkness shall have given way to light; when even the dissipated press can see a truth; it will be amusing to see this brilliant press blinking stupidly in the unusual element called "light". This belief of their ignorance is the kindest deduction from their attitude. If, on the other hand, they see the dark blight of Jesuit control twining its cruel fingers

slowly about democracy's throat, and tolerate and even aid its throttling work, then their traitorous course is most despicable. With the vast resources for gathering news at the disposal of the large newspapers, ignorance is really inconceivable.

### **"Protests" by Catholic Dignitaries**

But here, you say, if there is this collusion which the facts presented indicate, why do the Hierarchy spokesmen protest against the Nazis in Germany? Why is there so much persecution of the church by the Nazis? To make anything approaching a complete consideration of this conspiracy, these questions must not be side-stepped.

Certainly there is a flood of alleged protests by Vatican representatives printed in the press at the present time. The protests are never clear-cut. They cannot be understood by the common people. The ordinary person is too busy or uninterested to ferret out the "vigorous protests" of such Hierarchy statements. But there is always an obliging papal-instructed reporter or editor to interpret the "courageous and bold" speech. According to the Catholic Church, the people are too dumb to read the Bible, although God tells them to 'search the Scriptures and study to be approved of Him'. They say one must have a priest to interpret the Scriptures. Certainly a dexterous interpreter is required to bring to light from Vatican droolings any tangible protest against the dictators.

The *New York Times*, June 30, 1942, opens the account of such a dynamic protest against Nazism with the statement, "A sermon directly opposing Nazi state and social theories was read yesterday at St. Hedwig's Church, Berlin, by the Catholic Bishop of the German capital, Count Konrad von Preysing." The 'direct opposition' turned out to be a statement that the pope is praying day and night for peace and a better world, that it should be based on love, that you



should not do unto others what you would not want others to do unto you, and that life is sacred, both of an unborn child and an old and decrepit man. Now doesn't that blistering and scathing denunciation of Nazism make your skin tingle and incite your admiration for the courageous bishop? It doesn't? Then you must let the *Times* interpret it; which it does as follows: "Thus the Bishop was indirectly criticizing the theories and practices of Nazi extremists who preach racial hygiene and euthanasia." Now you see? Of course, the promise given by the introductory words about 'direct' opposition has dwindled to 'indirect'; but don't trouble your head about that: the newspapers will do your thinking for you. Incidentally, the bishop, in flowing red robes, arrived in a carriage drawn by two white horses and was met by enthusiastic "hails" for "our bishop", three more cheers for "our holy father, Pope Pius XII", and there were probably three more heils for Herr Hitler, the third member of this trinity, but this, if reported, would take the edge off the story for the democracies.

The *Times* also carried a story, on July 7, 1941, of a pastoral letter by the bishops in Germany in which they allegedly assailed the Nazis and stated that this was their first protest read from the pulpits since the start of the war. According to the account this unusual move "had a startling effect upon the faithful". But they weren't startled for long. The letter praised the soldiers, saying their achievements encouraged constant prayers in their behalf, described the war sacrifices made by the church in the interests of the German nation and that 'the Catholic church in Germany is loyal to the government and gladly shouldered the burdens and sacrifices of the times'. If this had really turned out to be a protest and thus continued startling the German Catholics unaccustomed to such action, one might ask why they waited until the war was two years old before deciding to object.

Much ado was made during May of last year about the blasting of the Nazis administered by Cardinal Faulhaber, archbishop of Munich. Part of the "protest" was, "Whoever complains that Peter's throne does not stand on German soil does not know the history of God's kingdom and ancient Germany." This is in effect a statement that the papacy (Peter's throne to the deceived Catholics, usurped) is standing in Germany as it did in the days of the "Holy Roman Empire of the German Nation". He complained of the peaceless condition of the hearts of those of the Catholic religion in Germany. True Christians, regardless of trials, are not so troubled; for, "The peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus." (Philippians 4:7) This great 'liberty-loving' cardinal concluded with the following magnanimous prayer that should touch the hearts of the Protestant democracies: "Today it is a question of life or death for Christianity, for in its blind rage against religion the Nazi 'faith' does not or cannot distinguish between Protestantism and Catholicism." Thus he gives the tip-off to his true sentiments, that blind rage against Protestants is all O. K. and in harmony with the returning Middle Ages procedure, but that Catholicism should be spared. The *Herald-News*, of Passaic, N. J., after reporting on this supposed denunciation of Nazism but in reality a condemnation of Protestantism, simpers on, "Remembering the fate of Pastor Niemoeller and of thousands of Christian clergymen in Germany, Protestant and Catholic, we tremble for this great Archbishop of Munich. But the cardinal is not trembling. He will carry on. He is a brave man. He will meet death and not cringe! He is on God's side!"

### ***Freedom of Speech Only for Hierarchy***

Niemoeller was a Protestant. He protested against the Nazis. He landed in a concentration camp. The Catholic dig-

nitaries supposedly protest, are free to do so, and remain free. Why? Also, why is it that as soon as Niemoeller decides to become a Catholic the gate to freedom begins to open for him? Catholic apologists needn't waste breath denying this; for their own paper, the *Altoona Register*, says, "The International News service said it had word of the conversion on reliable authority. He may soon be released from the concentration camp as a result of it." Thus it may be seen why the cardinal is not trembling, and the gushing *Herald-News* may save its tremors for those that need them. The cardinal will carry on, with Catholic Hitler. He is on god's side, which according to Catholic teaching means the pope, who in turn is in the Hitler clique. All are on the side of the god of this world, Satan the Devil.

After discussing Niemoeller's position the *Manchester Guardian*, October 27, 1941, said: "It is the adherents of the Bible Students' sect (Ernest Bibelforscher), corresponding to Jehovah's witnesses in this country, who have been persecuted for pacifism in concentration camps." Jehovah's witnesses continue to protest in Germany and are still in these camps. Niemoeller as a Protestant suffers; as a Catholic, gets relief. The Catholic prelates have always been free to voice supposed protests. Why? Does the Nazi party fear public opinion if they took action against them? No; for they would just as soon murder whole towns, as Lidice, that uprising as they would one person. The fact is that the Hierarchy is in cahoots with the Nazis, and the "protests" are for democratic consumption and avidly swallowed by the majority of persons in such lands.

### ***Whitewashing the Pope***

Here is a typical sample of the vigorous moral leadership Pope Pius XII is setting for the liberty-loving peoples of earth, accompanied, of necessity, with the interpretation thereof:

Mussolini, this writer learned from reliable

Vatican circles, suggested that the pope sanction what the Fascist press termed the "Christian crusade against the Russian atheists". Pope Pius, however, refused to commit himself. [Now, wasn't that courageous!] His silence showed more significantly than anything else up to that time the grave concern of the church over a possible Nazi victory in Europe. He has not, of course, come out openly in favor of an Anglo-American victory, for, in keeping with the traditional policy of the church, he must preserve at least a semblance of impartiality. But those who can read between the lines have now a clear idea of his attitude.—*Kansas City Star*, June 8, 1942.

Of course, Pius XII hasn't come out openly for a United Nations victory. And those who can read between the lines without the aid of servile reporters and editors who read between lines as told to by the Vatican, or get no more news releases from there, can easily see he's on the other side, with Catholic Hitler. The only reason that he attempts to maintain an outward appearance of impartiality and even favoritism toward the democracies is to kid them into thinking he's for them and hence desirable as a peace arbiter when the time for that comes. One Catholic paper says in apology for the Vatican's failure to protest the bombing of civilians in Catalonia by Franco that it was necessary to avoid "any association to which a political character might be imputed". Of course, there was no political partiality involved in papal blessings for Mussolini in Ethiopia and Franco in Spain and Japan against China. Now the pope shows conclusively his 'fighting spirit for right', not by refusing to bless the Russian crusade, but merely by his refusal to commit himself one way or the other. Isn't that a thrilling rallying point for the oppressed peoples? Some of his henchmen are not silent, and doubtless speak with his approval. In Italy Archbishop Margotti called for a crusade against Bolshevism: "Italy has joined the anti-Bolshevik front with enthusiasm

and faith of the ancient crusaders, proving that Italian soldiers are ready to give their blood generously for civilization's victory against atheism and barbarism. Therefore, we also invite all good Catholics to raise insistent prayers to God to concede triumph to the new order and justice." (New York *Daily News*, July 21, 1941) Thus this high church dignitary under the pope's control not only goes "all out" for the crusade in Russia but is also for the "triumph of the new order" advocated by the crusading Axis powers.

The New York *Times*, June 25, 1941, said, "The German Catholic episcopate today sent to all dioceses a message describing the war against Russia as a battle for Christianity all over the world." In Italy, Archbishop Margotti called for a crusade against Bolshevism: "Today we salute and bless the Italian legions who are marching with their allies in the common struggle to open the immense prison which encloses the Russian population."—New York *Times*, July 21, 1941.

So, outwardly the Vatican remains 'impartial' but inwardly approves; 'appears piously beautiful outwardly, but within is full of dead men's bones.'

So perhaps in view of these statements the pope's silence is not significant of his enmity toward the Fascist cause as so obligingly interpreted by a spineless press but rather that the generally accepted saying holds true here also, namely, 'Silence gives consent.' In this same article praising his 'intrepid daring' in maintaining silence it said that copies of his speeches "advocating peace and a new world order sell by hundreds of thousands". The "new order" is the Hitler-Pacelli revival of the old order of the "Holy Roman Empire".

Vatican "protests" entirely fade out when contrasted with the course of Protestant ministers in Norway, and more so when compared with the unyielding integrity of Jehovah's witnesses for the New World, or Theocracy, as maintained

despite the Vatican-inspired persecution against them in Germany. Go still further, and consider the course of the great Fighter for the New World, Christ Jesus. No pope has ever denounced Nazism. Nor can anybody point to any encyclical or anything else that definitely shows his disapproval of the outfit now trying to seize control of the world. The most that can be shown is that on one occasion the pope said something that one or more reporters said was a reflection on Nazism. That was the way they interpreted the remark, and doubtless the way they were told to interpret it. But that is not the way Christ Jesus said things. If He had something to say He said it so that He could be understood the first time. When He called the clergy vipers, hypocrites, liars, thieves, and murderers, they understood whom He meant, and so did everybody else! (Matthew 23) Strange indeed if this straightforward Fighter for righteousness would use some ambiguous and pussyfooting pope as His "vicegerent"! They have nothing in common.

### ***Persecution of Catholics in Germany***

So much for "protests". What about persecution of Catholics in Germany? This reported persecution is the greatest obstacle to many seeing clearly the true position of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and the Nazi party. Hitler and the Hierarchy may have a few lovers' quarrels. But don't fret; it's nothing serious, yet. Here's an analysis of Catholic persecution in the Third Reich.

First, the Vatican and the Jesuits have always opposed liberalism and favored totalitarianism. There are many honest Catholics who desire freedom and democratic principles to prevail, but the Catholic Hierarchy feels differently. This liberal element of the Catholics of Germany formed the Catholic Centre Party, and was one of Hitler's enemies in his rise to power. This bulwark against Nazism—these liberal Catholics—was "sold out" and dissolved by order

of Pope Pius XI, and Catholic Hitler surged into power as a result thereof, and a concordat was immediately concluded between Hitler and the one who put him into power. The leader of the liberal Catholic Centre Party, Klausener, was assassinated in the purge of June 30, 1934, and the Jesuit fear of infiltration of Protestant and liberal ideas into the German Catholic mind was quieted. Catholic social reformers within the church suffer its enmity as well as outside dangers to its absolute rule, and this is amply verified by the Reformation and the Inquisition. These liberal Catholics, therefore, are persecuted, and that with the full collaboration of the Vatican and the Jesuits to 'cleanse' the church, all under the guise of Nazi persecution. It is so capitalized upon in democracies to facilitate "fifth column" work therein by Jesuits.

A catechism entitled "Brief and Simple Explanation of the Catholic Catechism", by R. P. Angel Marcia de Arcos, S. J., distributed by hundreds of thousands of copies, says regarding liberalism and in proof of the foregoing:

Q. Is there no grade of Liberalism which may be Catholic?

A. That is what its partisans claim; but the church teaches that what is called Catholic Liberalism is not Catholic.

Q. Then there is no grade of Liberalism that can be good?

A. None; because Liberalism is mortal sin and anti-Christian in essence.

Q. Then whatever is liberal in politics sins?

A. Certainly; because in liberal politics there exists that liberalism which the Church condemns.

Q. Then a Catholic must be anti-Liberal?

A. Without a doubt; exactly as he must be anti-Protestant or anti-Freemason; in short, against all the contraries to Christ and His Church.

So the Catholic Hierarchy serves two purposes in conniving with the Nazis in persecuting honest and liberal-minded Catholics in Germany: purges out of her

own organization any decency and freedom, thus maintaining her cherished totalitarian corruptness, and capitalizes upon this self-inflicted persecution in the democracies for propaganda purposes. How the Devil must pride himself in the infamous duplicity of his favorite child.

### ***Cumulative Evidence***

Add to all the foregoing testimony the following facts and the pile of evidence against papal Rome mounts and the case against her becomes conclusive: (1) The prosperity of the Catholic church in Germany, and (2) her prosperity in the wake of the German armies in the occupied countries.

First, in Germany. In a statement in Rome Virginio Gayda, prominent Fascist, declared that "the Catholic churches, like the Protestant, are always open and full of people in German territory and carry on their functions undisturbed". Corroborating this, the *Seattle Times*, November 16, 1941, contains the information, forwarded from London by the United Press, that "Catholic churches are crowded as never before in Germany". Four days later the *Springfield Union*, Springfield, Mass., contained the following excerpt from a personal letter by Mrs. Virginie Jourdan-Herbst, Newtown, Conn., which speaks for itself: "More people attend church with a real love in Germany than any other country I've been in. The German government supports the clergy, spending hundreds of millions annually for them, their palaces, convents, monasteries, schools, etc." An Associated Press dispatch of March 7, 1941, says: "Catholic clergymen are taking religion to the German people by means of specially built automobiles equipped with altars. Notwithstanding the nation's gasoline economy measures, German authorities approved the plan because the motorized churches are intended to serve scattered garrisons and isolated hamlets. The priests do their own chauffeuring." If Germany



were trying to stamp out Catholicism she would not supply priests with precious gasoline and automobiles.

Secondly, the occupied countries. Wherever the Nazi conquest prospers, the Hierarchy reaps benefits. In an interview with a London *Catholic Herald* reporter, the archduke Felix, brother of the pretender to the Austrian throne (Otto Habsburg), made the statement that the [Catholic] churches of Austria "were more full than ever they were before; in fact, Catholicism seemed to be enjoying a revival in the country". This same paper further said that the churches in Luxemburg are full, as is the case wherever the Pacelli-Hitler conspiracy has been fully carried out. The same system of state payment of the clergy is used in Luxemburg as in Austria.

Vichy France is another glaring example of the reaping the spoils of war by the Vatican. The "good marshal" Petain has "made financial grants to church schools of the primary grade". The dispatch carrying this news says that the new laws "give satisfaction to the Catholic Hierarchy", which Hierarchy doubtless drafted them in the first place. The article continues:

Enactment of these laws was foreshadowed in the New York *Times* last Wednesday. In effect they reverse one of the outstanding principles of the Third Republic, namely, that, while tolerated under certain conditions, church schools of the primary grade should receive no aid from the State. Conversely, there was every possible help for State schools.

The first of the three laws empowers prefects in each Department to grant subventions to church schools which otherwise might be compelled to close. The second establishes State inspection of church schools as regards both the health of the children and the instruction given them, but no inspector may enter any school unless accompanied by the headmaster or a duly accredited representative. The third authorizes the creation of "school funds" for church schools, which funds

also may receive financial aid from the State. Hitherto "school funds" were authorized only for non-religious schools. The Petain government having restored religion as a moral value, it was but logical that the church should regain some of its privileges and that new ones should be granted.

A wireless from Vichy to the New York *Times*, November 5, 1941, pertaining to this same matter, shows the flourishing condition of the Hierarchy now as contrasted with her former status in France, and testifies of the church's support of the "new order".

Under the former regime church schools were not viewed with a tolerant eye by Cabinets which, to say the least, described themselves as non-religious. All their attention was turned to State schools, which were strictly "lay" in the present French sense of the word which connotes agnosticism. Now, under the new order, Religion has its due place and a number of privileges have been restored to the church. Marshal Petain himself is a churchgoer. The church, on its part, supports the new regime, although some diehards, such as the monarchists' Action Francaise, occasionally accuse it of being lukewarm.

An account in the New York *Times* of April this year shows the revival of papal power there. It reads:

Under a decree published today, the Council of the State Advisory Body on Legislation is empowered to issue legal status to religious congregations outlawed under the laws of 1901. The Cistercian Order by a special ruling was reinstated in the Grande Chartreuse and certain other expelled [Catholic] orders were believed to have resumed activities in France.

The most recent evidence of papal prosperity and harmonious working with the Nazi church "sword", Hitler, is seen in the following:

Considerable Catholic missionary activity in the occupied South Russian territories is reported by the Catholic newspaper, *L'Italia*, of Milan, arriving here today.

The leader of the missionaries is Luigi

Cardinal Lavitrano, archbishop of Palermo. The cardinal is also president of a Catholic organization which for past years has been striving for a union between the Catholic and Orthodox churches [in other words, the swallowing of the Orthodox by the Catholic].

Presumably with the consent of German military authorities, this church organization now has been given the opportunity to propagate its ideas in Southern Russia.—*St. Louis Post-Dispatch*, July 23, 1942 (Copyrighted).

Now you see why archbishops bless as a 'Christian Crusade' Hitler's Russian venture and the pope gives his 'consent by silence'? Religion is the binding tie; it is used to consolidate the Nazi gains.

### ***Who Are Persecuted***

Not only does the Hierarchy prosper as shown above, but their enemies suffer. Invariably dissolution of all Masonic lodges follows Nazi conquest. In the Balkans, patriarchs and priests of the Orthodox church suffer and monasteries are confiscated. Great pressure is exerted everywhere to force Orthodox church members to become Roman Catholic. The enmity of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy (not liberal-minded Catholics) has always been manifested against the Jews. This anti-Semitism is marked in the occupied lands, as well as Germany. Its manifestation by Jesuits and like-minded totalitarians is also noted in democratic lands. According to the encyclopedias, the rise of the Catholic church in the early centuries of Christianity marked the beginning of the troubles of the Jews, and such troubles have since then been in direct proportion to the prosperity and power of the Hierarchy. The Hierarchy's betterment in France has been mentioned. The Jews are in great distress there now. The pope, despite centuries of persecution of the Jews by the Catholic church, has the gall to pose as the Jews' friend and "protests" their treatment in France. The simple-minded will believe this latest papal propaganda move; the thinking person will see that

the facts outweigh and contradict this pose taken to deceive the naive. Above all, Jehovah's witnesses are the targets of Nazi persecution inspired by the Hierarchy.

### ***'Come, Let Us Reason Together'***

If Germany were trying to stamp out religion, and particularly Catholicism, as the public press would have us believe, and for which fairy tale some gullible ones fall, why would she inaugurate a "holy crusade" to 'bring God to Godless Russia'? German Jesuits have so termed the war in Russia, that is, a "holy crusade". The Nazis would not seek to establish Catholicism in another country while trying to destroy it in its own land. The only thing the Nazi-Hierarchy combine wants to stamp out is Christianity, not religion, least of all the Catholic cult. So all the Hierarchy "protests", and all their crying about being persecuted, and all their crocodile tears publicly shed for the Jews, are all sham. The poor, weak, oppressed, mistreated "church", still reeking with the Protestant and Jewish blood she so freely shed during her first tyrannical reign, now wails piteously to the Protestant nations that she is persecuted by bad people. Will the gag go over? Will her comeback attempt succeed so she can once more splash about in her sanguinary splendor of the Middle Ages?

In actual practice she is now collaborating with the Axis powers to accomplish that goal. Should it seem expedient to her in the future to switch over to the camp of the United Nations, this adroit maneuver will be executed with a skill becoming a past master in duplicity. But despite any seeming success the Roman Catholic Hierarchy may attain for a short season, her final end is sure.

Concerning such religious totalitarians Jehovah God's decree has been entered and shall stand. "Yet he shall come to his end, and none shall help him."—Daniel 11:45.

## “Comfort All That Mourn”

**I**T IS part of the commission of Jehovah's witnesses, as ordained ministers of The Theocracy, “to comfort all that mourn.” (Isaiah 61:1-3; Matthew 5:4) It is therefore appropriate that they should be ready to extend that comfort when asked to do so on the occasion of a funeral. It is a comfort to know that one's dead are not in “purgatory” or the orthodox “hell”. It is a comfort to



400 gathered outside this Rochester, N. Y., home to hear appropriate messages from The Theocracy, on the occasion of a funeral. See the loud-speaker at upstairs window.



Advertising The Theocracy by means of a loud-speaker, third-floor window, Chincoteague Island, Virginia

know that they are not wandering about as disembodied “spirits” but that they are at rest, asleep, and awaiting the awakening when they shall ‘hear the voice of the Son of God, and come forth’.

At Rochester, N. Y., recently, those present at a funeral heard words of real comfort, conveyed to them by transcription. Several hundred persons outside the home likewise heard the message of the resurrection, a loud-speaker installed outside enabling them to hear.

The mourning ones are not limited, however, to those who have lost some relative or friend in death. Many lives are darkened as a result of grief from other causes. Transcription recordings setting forth the consolation that will be realized in the Theocratic kingdom of Jehovah God are sounded forth by Jehovah's witnesses.



Transcription meeting in Berrien county, Georgia. See loud-speaker on roof of car.

### Jehovah's witnesses—Ordained Ministers

Recently the *New York World-Telegram* had occasion to publish an article about the status of Jehovah's witnesses under the draft. In order to clarify the

matter there is quoted in full below the Opinion of National Headquarters of Selective Service System which the *World-Telegram* quoted only in part:

CONSOLATION

VOL. III OPINION NO. 14 (AMENDED)  
NATIONAL HEADQUARTERS  
SELECTIVE SERVICE SYSTEM

SUBJECT: Ministerial Status of Jehovah's Witnesses

FACTS:

Jehovah's Witnesses claim exemption from training and service and classification in Class IV-D as duly ordained ministers of religion under section 5 (d), Selective Training and Service Act of 1940, as amended, and section 622.44, Selective Service Regulations, Second Edition, which read as follows:

Section 5 (d):

"Regular or duly ordained ministers of religion, and students who are preparing for the ministry in theological or divinity schools recognized as such for more than one year prior to the date of enactment of this Act, shall be exempt from training and service (but not from registration) under this Act."

Section 622.44:

"Class IV-D: Minister of religion or divinity student.

(a) In Class IV-D shall be placed any registrant who is a regular or duly ordained minister of religion or who is a student preparing for the ministry in a theological or divinity school which has been recognized as such for more than 1 year prior to the date of enactment of the Selective Training and Service Act (September 16, 1940).

"(b) A 'regular minister of religion' is a man who customarily preaches and teaches the principles of religion of a recognized church, religious sect, or religious organization of which he is a member, without having been formally ordained as a minister of religion; and who is recognized by such church, sect, or organization as a minister.

"(c) A 'duly ordained minister of religion' is a man who has been ordained in accordance with the ceremonial ritual or discipline of a recognized church, religious sect, or religious organization, to teach and preach its doctrines and to administer its rites and ceremonies in public worship; and who customarily performs those duties."

Question.—May Jehovah's Witnesses be placed in Class IV-D as regular or duly ordained ministers of religion exempt from training and service?

Answer:

1. The Watchtower Bible and Tract Society, Inc., is incorporated under the laws of the State of New York for charitable, religious, and scientific purposes. The unincorporated body of persons known as Jehovah's



Witnesses hold in common certain religious tenets and beliefs and recognize as their terrestrial governing organization the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society, Inc. By their adherence to the organization of this religious corporation, the unincorporated body of Jehovah's Witnesses are considered to constitute a recognized religious sect.

2. The unusual character of organization of Jehovah's Witnesses renders comparisons with recognized churches and religious organizations difficult. Certain members of Jehovah's Witnesses, by reason of the time which they devote, the dedication of their lives which they have made, the attitude of other Jehovah's Witnesses toward them, and the record kept of them and their work, are in a position where they may be recognized as having a standing in relation to the organization and the other members of Jehovah's Witnesses similar to that occupied by regular or duly ordained ministers of other religions.

3. Members of the Bethel Family are those members of Jehovah's Witnesses who devote their full time and effort to the manufacture and production of books, pamphlets, and supplies for the religious benefit of Jehovah's Witnesses, the purpose of which is to present the beliefs of Jehovah's Witnesses and to convert others. For their religious services, the members of this group receive their subsistence and lodging and in addition a very modest monthly allowance. This group of individuals consist of the office and factory workers at 117 Adams Street, Brooklyn, New York, and workers in the executive offices at 124 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, New York, and at the Farms. Pioneers of Jehovah's Witnesses are those members of Jehovah's Witnesses who devote all or substantially all of their time to the work of teaching the tenets of their religion and in the converting of others to their belief. A certified official list of members of the Bethel Family and pioneers is being transmitted to the State Directors of Selective Service by National Headquarters of the Selective Service System simultaneously with the release of this amended Opinion. The members of the Bethel Family and pioneers whose names appear upon such certified official list come within the purview of section 5 (d) of the Selective Training and Service Act of 1940, as amended, and they may be classified in Class IV-D. The status of members of the Bethel Family and pioneers whose names do not appear upon such certified official list shall be determined under the provisions of paragraph 5 of this Opinion.

4. The original paragraph 4 has been consolidated with paragraph 3 of this amended Opinion.

5. The members of Jehovah's Witnesses, known by the various names of members of the Bethel Family, pioneers, regional servants, zone servants, company servants, sound servants, advertising servants, and back-call servants, devote their time and efforts in varying degrees to the dissemination of the tenets and beliefs of Jehovah's Witnesses. The deference paid to these individuals by other members of Jehovah's Witnesses also varies in a great degree. It is impossible to make a general determination with respect to these persons as to their relationship to Jehovah's Witnesses. Whether or not they stand in the same relationship as regular or duly ordained ministers in other religions must be determined in each individual case by the

local board, based upon whether or not they devote their lives in the furtherance of the beliefs of Jehovah's Witnesses, whether or not they perform functions which are normally performed by regular or duly ordained ministers of other religions, and, finally, whether or not they are regarded by other Jehovah's Witnesses in the same manner in which regular or duly ordained ministers of other religions are ordinarily regarded.

6. In the case of Jehovah's Witnesses, as in the case of all other registrants who claim exemption as regular or duly ordained ministers, the local board shall place in the registrant's file a record of all facts entering into its determination for the reason that it is legally necessary that the record show the basis of the local board's decision.

*Lewis B. Hershey.*  
DIRECTOR

LBH/spd

Legal

November 2, 1942

Secs. 5(d), 622.44

DISTRIBUTION "A,B,C,D"

---

## The Hope of a Perfect Day

EVERY reasonable person will readily agree that there is more justice in a democracy that is an enlightened people's rule than in a rule imposed by selfish and oppressive despots, whether religious or political. The present assault upon civilization, what little there was of it, by such despotic powers, will come to its end. It is Scripturally destined to fail. The real civilization of earth will come only when Jehovah's King, Christ Jesus, makes all things new. Then the earth shall yield its increase and the destroyer will no more devastate the fruitful fields or bring the people into want. The day of the aggressor will be at an end, and the present period of transition, even if it be followed by a brief blackout of hope, is but the prelude

of the perfect day when men shall learn war no more.

---

### Another Police Force at Reedley

◆ Information is at hand that there is now another and first-class police force at Reedley, California. The present capable gentlemen on the staff do not wish to be classed or confused with the previous useless and lawless ones mentioned in *Consolation* No. 602, issue of October 14, 1942. One nice thing about a republic is that when the people do get an inferior public servant they can change him; but in an authoritarian and totalitarian state they have to put up with him permanently. The people of Reedley are to be congratulated on now having a police force that is a credit to them.

## Baptism

**B**ELIEVING on the Lord Jesus Christ does not mean merely a mental acceptance of the fact that He is the Son of God and Savior of the world. It means much more than that. It means that the person so believing also agrees to be governed by the will of God, as Christ Jesus left an example. Belief includes the act of consecrating oneself to God, thus demonstrating real faith. In that manner the person comes into relationship with God through Christ, and has access into God's favor. In order to continue to receive the favor of God one must continue to do the will of God. Having agreed to do God's will, the proper thing for one then to do is to declare, confess and witness that he has so agreed, by being baptized in harmony with the example and command of the Lord Jesus Christ.—Matthew 3:13-17; 28:18-20.

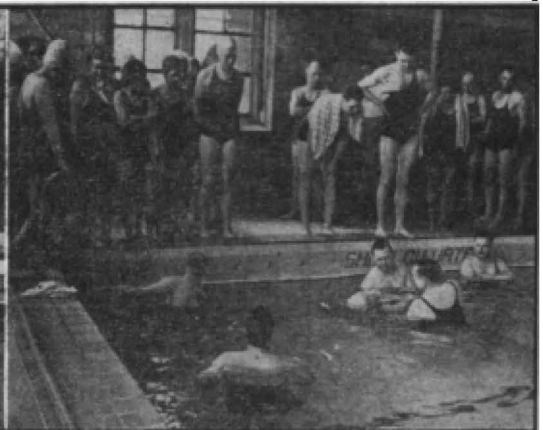
Baptism, by immersion, is the symbol of a consecration to serve Jehovah God, to do His will in Christ. Jehovah's witnesses and companions thus symbolize their consecration, usually in some outdoor body of water, but on occasion indoor pools or tanks are used, particularly when the weather is unfavorable for outdoor immersion. Some typical scenes appear on this page.

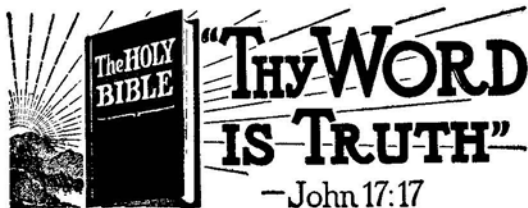


Baptism in Snake river, Twin Falls, Idaho



Baptism in the Rio Grande at El Paso Assembly





## Your Unseen Adversary

**T**IME was when the ones now the big devil and all the little devils were not devils. There was a time when they were "sons of God", angelic sons, holy angels. Among these there was one especially bright and glorious creature styled "Lucifer, son of the morning". (Isaiah 14: 12) There is a grand description of him in Ezekiel 28: 11-19, in which, after explaining that he was at one time in Eden, the garden of God, it declares that in the garden he was "the anointed cherub that covereth", unseen to man.

When Lucifer saw Eve, and reasoned upon God's method of establishing an earthly dominion, he said in his heart: 'I will estrange Eve and her husband from their Creator; instead of worshiping and obeying Him they shall worship and obey me'; "I will exalt my throne above the stars of God [the other bright shining ones of the angelic hosts]; . . . I will be like the most High." (Isaiah 14: 13, 14) Man's temptation and fall in the garden of Eden followed.

So, then, when, in 1 John 3: 8, we read that "the Devil sinneth from the beginning", we are to understand that he sinned, not from the beginning of creation, nor even from the beginning of the fashioning of our earth, but from the beginning of the human race. The same thought was expressed by our Lord. When He said of the Devil: "He was a murderer from the beginning" (John 8: 44), Jesus locates just the point of time in history where Lucifer ceased to be Lucifer and became something else, a murderer; for the word "murderer" means a malicious, willful killer. Lucifer killed the first human pair by his wicked

course; and in that he ceased to be Lucifer (Brightness) and became Satan (adversary), as he is now known.

That the words Devil, Satan, and Beelzebub refer to one and the same creature we can see from a comparison of certain passages of the Holy Scriptures. In the parable of the sower, as recorded in Mark 4: 3-20, it is *Satan* that comes immediately and takes away the Lord's Word from the wayside hearers, the hard-hearted ones. In the same parable, as also recorded in Luke 8: 4-15, it is *the devil* that comes and takes away the Word out of their hearts. The identity of Satan with the Devil is thus established. The identity of Satan as Beelzebub, prince of the devils, is established at Matthew 12: 24-28.

Satan has other titles than the above. To our Lord he was "the prince of this world" (John 14: 30), who had nothing in common with Him; also the prince that was to be cast out and to be judged. (John 12: 31; 16: 11) To the apostle Paul Satan was "the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience" (Ephesians 2: 2); and he was "the god of this world [who] hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them". (2 Corinthians 4: 4) To the prophet Ezekiel Satan was represented by "the king of Tyrus".—Ezekiel 28: 11-19.

The apostle Paul also urges all Jehovah's people "to put on the whole armour of God". To what end? "That ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil." (Ephesians 6: 11) The same apostle tells Christians respecting Satan that "we are not ignorant of his devices". (2 Corinthians 2: 11) A soldier who has no idea at all of the direction from which the enemy is likely to come is placed at a great disadvantage. In the day in which we live Satan makes his attack upon those who stand for the honor of Jehovah's name. If he did not bend every energy to discredit those who are Jeho-



vah's witnesses it would show him as not being onto his job. The persecutions which he is bringing against the Lord's Kingdom publishers is one of the best evidences that these publishers are on the right side. They must be on the watch, because the reason why some are ensnared by the adversary is that they are not watching, not wakeful or alert.

It is very evident that when Satan took Jesus "up into a high mountain" and "showed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time" and backed up his demonstration with the statement that "all this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it", he was in person and not mentally making suggestions to the Lord Jesus; even as the angels ministered in person to the Lord thereafter. Evil was back of the suggestion that the Lord should demonstrate that He was the Son of God by leaping off the pinnacle of the temple. When it is stated that the Devil "brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple", this was a descriptive suggestion, inasmuch as the account shows that throughout the whole period of temptation the Lord Jesus "was there in the wilderness forty days, tempted of Satan", and was not on a mountain from which an earth-wide outlook could be had, neither at Jerusalem nor elsewhere. Not for an instant did Jesus permit Satan to inject selfish, ambitious, wicked and unfaithful thoughts into his mind fixed on holiness.

Jesus' experience discloses that some of Satan's suggestions come along misapplications of Scripture; for in connection with the temple suggestion Satan quoted and misapplied the scripture, 'He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.'—Psalm 91: 11, 12.

That Satan can and does put thoughts into the self-seeking, unfaithful mind appears from the scripture which tells

of the circumstance of the Lord's betrayal, and which tells of "the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him". (John 13: 2) Instead of resisting Satan, Judas was completely obsessed, possessed, owned, and controlled by Satan himself. The obsession did not come until after Judas made his bargain with the chief priests to betray his Master. The bargain took place before the Passover supper, but it was not until the Passover was begun that "Satan entered into him" to possess Judas, so the plan could be carried out without further delay.—John 13: 26, 27.

Satan's suggestions are often along the line of apparent righteousness, apparent goodness, apparent justice. It is for this reason that the apostle Paul says that "Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light". (2 Corinthians 11: 14) If his real motives were evident on the surface he would find fewer dupes.

While Satan can *touch* Jehovah's people in the sense of testing their integrity toward God, and thus seek to take away their standing with God (Job 2: 4-7; Ephesians 4: 27), yet he cannot grasp and hold the faithful ones who keep covenant with God; for such is the meaning of the word, at 1 John 5: 18, translated "toucheth". They can "overcome the wicked one". (1 John 2: 14) Satan opposes the Lord's workers today by stirring up apparent reasons for discouragement, disobedience, disloyalty, discord, dissatisfaction and distrust. Faith in God and unquestioning obedience to Him are the weapons to be used against Satan. Do not stop to argue with the Devil. He knows a lot more than you do in worldly matters; but you have the spirit and grace of God on your side as long as you keep busy, studying, practicing and proclaiming the truth. Those who have faith in God cannot be discouraged, disobedient, disloyal, dissatisfied, distrustful or disagreeable to their brethren. They will be one in the service of God's kingdom by Christ Jesus.

Beware of your unseen adversary.

## School Hitlerism (In Two Parts—Part 2)

IN THE first part of this article it was shown that the schools have been stressing things that have not been conducive to giving the pupils the start in life to which they are entitled. Emphasis and insistence upon outward gestures and fads have led to neglect of the instruction which would give the children a mental appreciation of the principles of freedom and democracy. It has resulted, too, in conditions of lawlessness and immorality that are startling in their extent. These are now given consideration.

### Immorality

This article undertakes to show a condition in our schools paralleling those that prevail in Germany and for similar causes. Since Americans have observed the beginnings of encroachment of Nazism, and failed to sound the warning (except a few scattered voices "in the wilderness"), it may be expected that the advance will increase. And one of the results, as disclosed by *Consolation's* review of Germany's methods set forth in the book entitled *Education for Death*, is gross immorality among the nation's youth. Even the degeneration of our schools is seen to follow the Nazi decline. In New York an 11-percent increase in delinquency is noted.

In addition to the facts disclosed by the children, interviews with students reveal an even worse condition. In one school in California it is a common thing for girls to be sent home because of pregnancy. It is further alleged that much of the promiscuousness is practiced under the trees and on the very grounds of the campus. Married boys and girls acquaint their younger companions with premature knowledge, which appears to lead many to desire to find out for themselves. Alcohol and tobacco, including the terrible marijuana, likewise help the demoralization along.

Until these conditions became preva-

lent in the schools it was never necessary for cities to adopt curfew laws requiring unaccompanied children to be off the streets after 9 p. m. San Francisco and Los Angeles have both adopted such laws. In the case of Los Angeles, hoodlums of high-school age were attacking and robbing pedestrians in gangs. Several hundred of these were rounded up, all of them boys in the teens age. This menace to the lives and property of citizens has not yet been completely wiped out, and it is causing the authorities much concern. Assault, robbery, and rape are still on the rampage.

The situation in New York is causing widespread dismay. A recent article in the *Times* (December 11, 1942) states:

Teachers, alarmed by the breakdown of discipline among city school children, have appealed to the police over the heads of the Board of Education for protection, it became known yesterday. The step was unprecedented. In a letter to Police Commissioner Lewis J. Valentine, the New York Teachers Guild (Local 2, American Federation of Teachers) urged the immediate help of the police force to check the wave of terrorism in schools, particularly those in underprivileged areas.

The New York *Sun* of the same date carried the following item, going into some details of juvenile lawlessness:

The president of the New York Teachers Guild said today police had promised to protect teachers against beatings by unruly pupils and intruders. She cited a series of incidents "which vary in gravity from outright murder to mere threat". The president, Mrs. Rebecca Simonson, said forty police precinct captains, following her appeal to Commissioner Lewis J. Valentine, had advised her they would send police by radio car upon receipt of a telephone call.

[A Brooklyn junior high school teacher recently was shot to death by two former pupils whom he reprimanded for smoking in the school building. The boys received long prison terms.]

Some teachers have reported blackened eyes suffered in encounters with unruly pupils.

That juvenile crime is general is shown by the *Fresno Bee*, which, under date of August 16, 1942, says:

During the first six months of 1942 more 19-year-old boys were arrested for various crimes than any other group and 18.5 percent of all those arrested in this period were under 21. There were 12,991 19-year-old youths arrested, and the crimes of robbery and automobile theft predominated. The 18-year-olds totaled 12,865; those of 20, 11,830; and of 21, 11,946.

There is also an increase of immorality, accompanied by venereal disease, among school children between 15 and 19 years old.

School work lags as crime increases. Poorer work is noted this year than before the outbreak of the war in this country.

In the first nine months of 1942 juvenile crime took an alarming jump. This is blamed partly to the war. Children (under 21) accounted for 18 percent more assaults, 23 percent more sex offenses, 22 percent more gambling, and 30 percent more drunkenness, than during the same period in 1941, according to J. Edgar Hoover, director of the Federal Bureau of Investigation.

In Maryland a young miscreant of 16 shot a man of 38. Two girls of 14 were also involved in this crime. At Four Mile, N. J., a girl of 15 was killed in a woodland cabin. A Boston high-school girl of 15 was shot and killed by a young man with whom she "kept company". Various cities are proposing curfew laws to curb the crime trend among the young people.

Admittances of delinquents in three Massachusetts reformatories have risen 60 percent; and in Connecticut some schools show a 66-percent rise!

A friend of the writer was on her way home on South LaBrea in Los Angeles, when jumped on by two hard-looking young boys. Though elderly, she is strong, having spent many years of her life as a masseuse. While she pushed

one young ruffian away, another grabbed her pocketbook. Be it said for this courageous woman that although her clothes were almost torn from her she repelled the assault and recovered her pocketbook. Someone approached from a distance and the kids fled, but as she continued to walk home they followed, even prowling around her door, but not risking another attack. Nor were they ever apprehended by the police.

Washington, D. C., has its own particular problem with girls of high-school age. An article by Arthur F. Hermann, quoted from the *San Diego Tribune Sun* of October 2, 1942, says: "Vice in Washington, the wartime capital of the nation, is threatening to become what authorities state will be a big business." It was disclosed at a joint meeting of army, navy, congressmen, and public health officials that there were 45,000 cases of syphilis, and the great increase was ascribed to prostitution. There were said to be more than a thousand known prostitutes who plied their trade daily in houses and on the streets. "The investigators found that street solicitation is higher in Washington than in any other American city it had surveyed."

Prostitution has been with humanity since ancient times. But note the influx of young girls of high-school age, and the testimony of the police official that this is a recent development:

In past years these have been largely women of mature years, but Captain Rhoda Milliken, head of the women's division, admits that there has been a recent influx of 15-, 16-, and 17-year-old girls who have "entered the business and are giving us a lot of trouble".

These young girls, according to Captain Milliken, come to Washington *mentally ill-equipped*, but nonetheless hopeful of finding employment in some war-swollen government agency. Upon failing in this, many of them gravitate to the only means of livelihood open to them, she said.

Note that the degradation of these girls, according to Captain Milliken, was chiefly the result of being "mentally ill-

equipped". What a condemnation of our system of society and education thus proclaimed! That girl children having either no parents or such a repugnance for them, their homes, their schools, and so poor an education as to render them unfit to earn their own living, must pawn their bodies from man to man! And their name is legion!

The schools cannot escape a measure of responsibility for these appalling conditions. *Consolation* rejoices, in passing, that there is more hope for these poor girls than for their hypocritical guardians who sent them to ignominy. The words of Jesus are the authority for this statement: "Verily I say unto you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you." (Matthew 21:31) "By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not."—Hebrews 11:31; James 2:25.

Besides the professional harlots, how many others have entered the insecure relation of mistress to their employers, or other associates, and as yet escape classification by the police department? It is not maintained that this is entirely the fault of the schools. Some of the blame falls on the homes for not bringing up the children in the "nurture and admonition of the Lord" (Ephesians 6:4); some upon the churches for not teaching God's laws of righteousness. (Deuteronomy 4:9,10; 11:19; Proverbs 22:6) But this fact does not lessen the responsibility of school boards; for they are often composed of parents and church members. Let them now consider the results fearfully. As for the children the words of Isaiah now have terrible significance: "They which lead thee cause thee to err, and destroy the way of thy paths."—Isaiah 3:12.

In the face of this abominable record the school boards continue to set their authority above God's law and even the law of the land, and instead of teaching righteousness, they punish righteousness. (1 Corinthians 8:12) No wonder from the corridors of the schools pour

forth the sons and daughters of perdition. *Consolation* rejoices that the day of wicked authority is soon done!—Psalm 145:20.

"The LORD looketh from heaven; he beholdeth all the sons of men. . . . He considereth all their works . . . a mighty man is not delivered by much strength. Behold, the eye of the LORD is upon them that fear him, upon them that hope in his mercy." (Psalm 33:13, 15, 16, 18) God is with the little children who obey His law, and against the school boards which persecute them, whether such boards like to be told this fact or not. "I will punish the world for their evil, and the wicked for their iniquity; and I will cause the arrogancy of the proud to cease, and will lay low the haughtiness of the terrible. Therefore I will shake the heavens, and the earth shall remove out of her place, in the wrath of the LORD of hosts, and in the day of his fierce anger."—Isaiah 13:11, 13.

### "Hearings"

It has been observed that immorality and decay follow disobedience to Jehovah's moral laws. English and American law was therefore founded upon God's law as set forth in the Bible, and the eminent English jurist, Sir William Blackstone, in his authoritative *Commentaries*, a requirement in the course in most law colleges, sets forth the principle that God's law is binding EVERYWHERE and AT ALL TIMES. "The revealed or divine laws are to be found only in the Holy Scriptures." Thomas Cooley, whose *Constitutional Limitations*, an American authority, likewise reiterates the principle that the conscience must be left unfettered in its yearning to obey Jehovah. Another American jurist, hated by religionists, but loved by men of God, namely, Judge J. F. Rutherford, compiled the Scriptural and legal defenses of God's servants with respect to the flag, entitled *God and the State*, and this has been presented to all school boards. Petitions have requested hearings for



the reinstatement of children of Jehovah's witnesses, filed with every school board in the United States where expulsions or suspensions for this cause have occurred.

These petitions ask for an amendment to the school rule commanding the salute so that Jehovah's witnesses may merely stand at attention during the ceremony, thus showing full respect according to the recent law of Congress (Public Law 623, 77th Congress), above referred to. They are also willing to go farther and offer a substitute pledge putting Jehovah first and flag second. The Catholics claim to put "the flag of God" above that of the United States and are permitted to do this by the recent enactment. With the petition is also presented by verbal reading the articles "Respect to the Flag", which describes this Public Law 623, passed last June, and cites the penalties that boards may incur who continue to deprive child citizens of substantial rights.

How do such boards react to this strenuous effort on the part of Jehovah's witnesses to obey the law of the land, as well as God's law? How do they treat this painstaking effort to reconcile the authorities to their position, so that neither the boards nor the members themselves shall suffer punishment at the hands of Jehovah? The boards that may be convinced by this last act that Jehovah's witnesses are right, and permit them to return to school on the terms appealed for, are *not* included in what is said hereafter in regard to the "bitter-enders" who stubbornly resist righteousness. The latter, like the Pharaoh of Moses' day, are not moved by words.

A few instances of boards reinstating Jehovah's witnesses' children follow:

In accordance with a decision of the United States attorney general, three children of Jehovah's witnesses at Ascutney, Vt., were re-instated by the local school board.

In Luzerne county, Pa., Mrs. Mary Nemchik, one of Jehovah's witnesses and

a widow, who had been arrested because her children failed to salute the flag, was released, and her children returned to school, in accordance with a decision of the Court of Quarter Sessions in November.

At Avondale, Ariz., children of Jehovah's witnesses returned to school when it was agreed they would stand at attention during the flag-salute program, though taking no part in the ceremony.

At Virginia, Minn., children were returned to school by a decision of the district court in their favor.

At Gillespie, Ill., also, the local board readmitted one of the children of Jehovah's witnesses in response to the filing of the petition by the parents.

Another instance is the reinstatement of pupils at Derby, Conn.

At Watsonville, California, the school board, after giving due consideration to the petition, concluded that it was proper to let the children return to school, both from the Scriptural and the legal standpoint. Reports of boards in other cities reaching the same conclusion are coming in.

The arbitrary boards have generally granted "hearings" on this new petition with its accompanying proof, as a salute to fairplay. The gesture is as far as their respect for justice goes, however, and further action reveals the shallowness of the minds of men who enforce the ceremony and ignore the principles. They are, of course, not familiar with Jehovah's admonition, "He that answereth a matter before he heareth it, it is folly and shame unto him" (Proverbs 18:13); because, long before Jehovah's witnesses appear before them, they have hardened their hearts against all appeal.

The word "hear" occurs more than 400 times in the King James Version; derivatives, about a thousand times more. It is often used as a command from Jehovah to give ear to His instruction. For example: "Hear ye, O mountains, the Lord's controversy." (Micah 6:2)

"And it shall come to pass, that every soul which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people." (Acts 3:23) "Hear instruction, and be wise." (Proverbs 8:33) "Hear, all ye people; hearken, O earth." (Micah 1:2) "This is my beloved Son: hear him." (Mark 9:7) The Lord certainly did not mean that to "hear" meant merely to endure the vibrations upon the eardrums. Hearing was for proper instruction, and obedience was required thereafter.—Deuteronomy 30:2, 8, 20; 13:4.

Moreover, in ancient days there were many who followed the course pursued in our educational institutions. They "have ears, and hear not". (Jeremiah 5:21) "Hearing they hear not, neither do they understand," said the great Teacher. (Matthew 13:13) Boards that sit with stolid faces while the wisdom of God's Word is poured forth diligently by His witnesses are in the above class described by Jesus. Little children and their parents, showing their willingness to do anything in order to receive an education, EXCEPT BREAK GOD'S LAW, are received with cold animosity, which is more often increased by the stern warning of Jehovah's message.

Present also at these "hearings" is an ugly foreigner, a specter foreign to Americanism. The ugly form of the SNAKE is there, in the guise of RELIGIOUS INTOLERANCE. Flailing like a sea serpent, it fomented waves of persecution from the stagnant waters of religious superstition. The reptile cavorts beneath the school boards, pushing them along the stream which flows to the cataract of destruction by Jehovah!

### ***Spineless, Rudderless Boards***

"Boards," said President Theodore Roosevelt, as if prophetic of those that misgovern schools today, "are long, narrow, and wooden." A more apt description is hard to imagine. The educational planks are woody clear through. How could it be expected of such timber to receive instruction? Instead of pillars

to support learning, they resemble logs cast into the waters of religious prejudice, and propelled by a modern "generation of vipers" bent on wrecking everything that does not swim their way. (Matthew 23:33) Spineless, rudderless boards, rushing headlong to the sea of destruction! "HEAR instruction, and be wise, and refuse it not. But he that sinneth against me [wisdom or instruction] wrongeth his own soul: all they that hate me love death." (Proverbs 8:33, 36) "There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death."—Proverbs 14:12; 16:25.

The chief monster that befouls the waters of truth has bathed and grown strong under the protection of American institutions, only to turn its fangs into the heart of the nation. It is a foreign enemy administered from Rome, oath-bound to destroy the four freedoms which we cherish. It is this religious Hierarchy that has whipped itself and its servants into a fervor of "patriotism" to furnish excuse for the destruction of the Lord's servants. The death-dirk of Fascism is more terrible concealed in the folds of the beloved flag. And already that once immaculate symbol has been soiled by the tears of little children and fouled by the blood of righteous men who defended it. O America, let not Hitler and the Vatican tell you how to wave and respect the national emblem, lest it be made to hide the dagger-thrust to the heart of freedom!

The action of these school boards is just such a misuse of that high emblem. No greater travesty could be found than the claim of men to serve the cause of patriotism by the VERY ACT of destroying the principles for which the real patriots died. The enforced salute is one example. There are others that mark the spread of Hitlerism. In September, 1942, members of Jehovah's witnesses were mobbed, beaten, and shot, in Oregon, Arkansas, and Illinois, for the alleged reason, where any reason was forthcom-

ing, that they did not salute the flag. Remember at this point that the enforced flag salute is in effect forbidden by Public Law 623, and by the provisions of the Constitution. Bloody scenes of carnage, in which His witnesses were victims, raged unchecked, and, in fact, were aided and abetted by "officers of the law". (For details see *Consolation* No. 604.) Bruised and broken bodies of the witnesses of Jehovah still lingered long in hospitals upon beds of pain. Such is the harvest of Hitlerism, nurtured by school boards, and blooming in mob violence. If not immediately repudiated by America this bloody record will form a part of the epitaph of the United States.

It has been suggested that there is a deeper cause for outrages in the name of the flag than mere patriotism misguided. In fact, Romanism has always worn the garb of the nation infested, saluted its flag, shouted for its welfare, simply as a smoke-screen to conceal treachery. This great danger to our country, which is now beyond the control of men, appears more clearly as we examine next the schools entirely controlled by Jesuitism, particularly the Catholic schools and universities.

### ***Conquest Aided by Seduction of Schools***

It is naturally in the Catholic school itself that it is possible to inspect the Jesuit ideal for an America of the future, fully Catholicized according to the standards of the Italian Papacy. The parochial school and the higher institutions of learning are therefore viewed with the thought in mind that the education of all Americans in similar academies of "learning" is the program scheduled by Catholic Action. As prophetic samples of what is purposed for ALL youth by the Papal Axis, the examination becomes more interesting.

The question arises at the outset: Why do Catholics require schools (which they claim should be, and in many places are, maintained at public expense) to give

religious instruction, when they have an overabundance of untaxed churches, established for that very purpose? What is the matter with the public schools of our nation? The answer, as baldly stated by Catholic spokesmen on numerous occasions, is, that the public, non-sectarian schools teach the "heresy of freedom". Catholic authorities lament any spreading of this "pernicious doctrine". Not content with sovereignty over the child's religious training, nor with the subjection of his home life to devout Catholic parents, they demand the rest of his waking hours, yea, even extending their sphere of influence into his sleep, by the terrifying descriptions of "purgatory" and "hell torment". With such a program of "education" there is no opportunity for the youngster to absorb the much-feared principles of "liberty and justice for all". Thus reared without contact from the "pernicious errors" of freedom, he becomes (if diligence is unremitting to protect him from the 'error' which surrounds him in this "pseudo-democracy") an American Catholic, as much like an Italian Catholic, or a French or Irish Catholic, as the ingenuity of his tutors can make him.

Of course, in practice it is not as easy as that. No one in this country can be prevented entirely from learning of its benevolent principles. Once hearing about it the Catholic is apt to love freedom as much as another, perhaps more, as he has not enjoyed its blessings to any extent. Often he attempts to graft it upon the structure of the intolerant "church" law, to the disgust of his superiors. There are thus many just and liberal Catholics, but, whether they know it or not, they are without favor in the eyes of the Catholic ecclesiastical authorities. But it is the PURPOSES of Catholic training, and its generally baneful effect, rather than the exceptions who do not conform to type, in the which we are concerned. The fact that they are not always successful does not lessen, but on the contrary strengthens, the de-

termination of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy to Jesuitize America.

In this process the school is an important theater of action. Discussing the Catholic control of schools, *The Converted Catholic* (January, 1942) thus outlines the aims of this organization:

Outstanding among the claims of the Catholic Church is its asserted right to control all education. The late Pope Pius XI went so far as to lay down (in his encyclical on education in 1931) that the Catholic church's mission to educate 'embraces every nation without exception, and all men, within or without her membership, and there is no power on earth that may lawfully oppose her or stand in her way'. The Catholic church holds that education is a spiritual function and that its direction and control must rest with her alone, "the only true church established on earth by God."

Efforts to carry this outrageous claim into practice are aggressively made in this country year in and year out. The public school system is insolently styled "publicly supported paganism"; Catholic children are strictly forbidden by canon law to attend public schools or private non-sectarian schools. In some places Catholic parents are refused the sacraments of their church if they send their children to such schools.

The same issue, in an article entitled "Catholic Pressure on the Public Schools", recounts the indifferent successes of the Hierarchy to have legislation enacted to legalize public support of the parochial school. Such efforts failed in Texas, South Dakota, Kentucky, Missouri, and Ohio; while efforts to obtain released-time from public schools for Catholic religious training failed in California, New Mexico, Rhode Island, Oklahoma, Pennsylvania, and Colorado. "Only in Massachusetts was the effort successful."

On July 25 the Supreme Court of Missouri handed down a decision which ended the practice in many Missouri counties of "incorporating parochial schools into the public school system while allowing them to retain their

religious character". This "forceful and unanimous decision most emphatically denied any use of public funds for the support of religious schools". The decision is further interesting because it furnishes a graphic description of parochial school routine:

We find the usual school day commencing with prayer in the morning. After prayer the pupils are marched, one room at a time, to the Catholic church next door for holy mass. After mass the pupils are marched back again to their schoolrooms, where they receive religious instruction. In this they study the Catholic catechism and the child's Catholic Bible. On one or two days of each week the parish priest gives religious instruction to the pupils in the mid-morning, either at the church or in the schoolhouse chapel. On Friday afternoons the pupils are again marched to the church for confession. In the quarterly "Teachers' Report to the Parents" the subject of "Religion" is included under "Branches Pursued", and a grade on this subject is given each pupil.

This is the kind of "education" that Rome would demand for everybody, and a new definition of freedom would be forced upon us, the "freedom" to obey the laws of the Catholic church. The latest papal blast against the public school system is brought to our attention by *The Converted Catholic* of November, 1942:

Bishop Blasts Public Schools. Catholic Bishop Karl J. Alter, of Toledo, Ohio, ardent supporter of the Petain and Franco regimes, has issued a pontifical blast against the American public schools. He has ordered what amounts to excommunication—refusal of the sacraments—against parents or guardians who enroll children in the public schools or secular colleges without his consent. This is in accordance with orders from Rome.

The bitterness of Jesuit hatred for public schools is further disclosed in the booklet by Jesuit Paul Blakely entitled, "May an American Oppose the Public School?" The intolerant attitude follows the Catholic into Catholic universities. An incident is related in the September issue of *The Converted Catholic* where



Roger J. Schwartz, a senior in the school of journalism of Marquette University, "was expelled from the university [a week before his graduation] because he, a Catholic, persisted in marrying a Protestant girl." In explaining the ruling "Father" R. C. McCarthy stated that "no question of grades was involved". Schwartz "had been expelled from the university solely because he was guilty of a serious infringement of church law". McCarthy said that under university rules non-Catholic students could marry non-Catholics, and Catholic students could marry Catholics, but that Catholic students could not marry non-Catholics without "special dispensation". Of course, such "dispensations" are hard to get, and costly. Again *Consolation* notes the Catholic suppression of freedom, when in their power to accomplish it.

As for the moral effect of Catholic education, a few examples well known to all should suffice on this point: Cardinal Cesare Borgia, and his sister Lucrezia, most famous poisoners of all time; Catherine de Medici, niece of the pope, and organizer of the Massacre of St. Bartholomew's Day, in 1572, the most horrible of the acts of Catholic persecution which drove the French Huguenots to the shores of South Carolina; "Bloody Mary," of England, who, about the same time, caused so many Protestants to be burned to death; Philip II of Spain, who sent the Armada against England, in 1588; the duke of Alva, and Thomas Torquemada, who were expert at inflicting the tortures of the "Holy Inquisition"; these were all given a Catholic education and bore much fruit to this form of "instruction" centuries ago.

But there are some more recent examples. For instance, there was Al Capone, noted Chicago gangster; Francisco Franco, butcher of Republican Spain, made knight of the papal order of St. Gregory the Great; another member of this order, ex-Judge Martin T. Manton, recently convicted of selling justice; and do not forget Leopold of Belgium,

who sold out his country and betrayed the French; Joseph Tiso, Roman Catholic priest, and seller-out of Czechoslovakia, at present Slovakian chief of state; Pierre Laval, French "heel" of Hitler's boot; Emil Hacha, Nazi president of Bohemia-Moravia; Konrad Henlein, betrayer of Sudetenland; and Adolf Hitler,—all recipients of preferred Catholic instruction.

Just how many others have embarked on careers of less notorious immorality, not to say crime, it is impossible to say. But well known to statistics are the tables compiled by corrective institutions and prisons, that the percentage of Catholic inmates is frequently twice or three times the percentage of Catholics among the total population.

A comparison between the total Catholic population and the Catholic prison population in certain representative states is significant:

	Total Catholic Population	Prison
New York	26.73 percent	56.46 percent
Arizona	33.16 percent	53.26 percent
California	16.83 percent	43.61 percent
Wisconsin	23.79 percent	43.52 percent
Wyoming	7.13 percent	32.18 percent

This does not speak well for the claims of Catholic educators that their teaching is essential to the morality of the nation.

It will be seen that morality is not the objective of the Catholic educators, but SUBJECTION. As for the non-Catholic schools, it is their intention to undermine them. While from without every effort is made to force the abandonment of the non-sectarian public school, from within the Jesuits raise a furor for the enforced flag salute. It is indeed a bitter day when Americans are expelled from their own schools, which they have built up, paid for, and cherished, at the instance of the Italian Hierarchy, who while blessing the armies of America's enemies abroad fights to exterminate her schools and freedoms at home.

Stressing the right of American children to an education in the country's pub-

lie schools, President Roosevelt said:

From that time on down to our own days, it has always been recognized as a responsibility of government that every child have the right to a free and liberal education. . . . In recent times, in the last decade, this right of free education that has become a part of the national life in our land has taken on an added significance because of certain events in certain other lands. For a very large portion of the world that right no longer exists. Almost the first freedom to be destroyed, as dictators take control, is the freedom of learning.

Some totalitarian-minded school officials have already destroyed "freedom of learning" for children who place Jehovah God first in their allegiance and object to the Nazi ideology of forced salutes.

No doubt there are some who have fallen into the trap of the Axis, and consider that failure to enforce the flag salute will endanger the country's welfare. It is to such that may have been honestly deceived that this article is chiefly addressed. To them this question is propounded: How can the obedience to Jehovah of any of its citizens endanger a country that is officially praying to Jehovah for blessing and protection of its armed forces upon the field of battle? Can even the least reasonable believe that Jehovah would bless the persecutors of His faithful servants? Let calmness replace passion now, and sane rulings be made by boards who believe in the existence of the Lord. There is no disaster to be compared to the Lord's vengeance. Beware lest it overtake you.

Besides those ensnared by the sweep of totalitarianism there are many more who are "pretended patriots", wolves in sheep's clothing, the emissaries of Rome and Hitler. Chief among these are the more than 6,000 Jesuits freely permitted to conduct their espionage work upon these shores. The business of this gestapo is discord, deception, and destruction. They constantly prey on Americans by stirring up strife, disunity and distrust. Of them George Washington warned:

"Beware the impostures of pretended patriotism."

The Hierarchy, operating from Vatican City, has unleashed the secret army of Jesuits, like a pack of bloodhounds, on the trail of the Lord's witnesses. They infest school boards and are found in every element of society. Because of them Jehovah's witnesses today often leave a path red with their own blood. (See *Consolation* No. 604.)

Hitler has declared that he will wreck America from within. Now, let there be no mistake; the enforcement of the flag salute is a dagger at the heart of freedom, and a panzer movement no less effective because it is accomplished without tanks. Behind it is the Devil himself, bent on driving all creation into the ditch of destruction, resulting from opposition to Jehovah. "The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God."—Psalm 9:17.

### *The Issue*

The great question before all men is: WHOM SHALL EACH SERVE? "Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?" (Romans 6:16) "No man can serve two masters: . . . Ye cannot serve God and mammon." (Matthew 6:24) "Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin." (John 8:34) It is plain, then, that the flag-salute issue is permitted by Jehovah as a test of the obedience of His servants, and to allow opportunity for school boards to demonstrate whom they will obey. The hearings before these boards, therefore, become a part of the great judgment of the nations now in progress by Christ Jesus. (John 5:22, 27; Matthew 25:32) The punishment meted out to the children is counted as done to the Judge himself.—Matthew 25:44-46.

The salute is a small thing, but the issue, OBEDIENCE, is of paramount im-

portance to the individual children and to the individual members of the boards. Those who think that Jehovah's witnesses make too much fuss about obedience have forgotten the results of eating just one little piece of forbidden fruit in the garden of Eden. Those who think that the boards will be excused by the Judge on their pretext that they act to serve the country's welfare are also gravely mistaken. Those who think their execution will be stayed by the claim that such was merely a necessary act of discipline will likewise plead in vain.

The plain facts, as fully demonstrated, discredit all the defenses of the wicked. Neither patriotism, nor discipline, nor morality has been fostered, but these important virtues have been degraded among the American student body in a manner that is without parallel in the annals of education, and during the same period of time that enforcement of a flag salute has had much attention from otherwise negligent educators.

Jesus described this very folly of men in His day: "Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote [speck] that is in thy brother's eye." (Luke 6:42) He also castigated such hypocrisy thuswise: "Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel." (Matthew 23:24) "Blind guides" well describes "educators" who are trying to find a "speck" of wrong-doing on the part of Jehovah's witnesses, and meanwhile waded through a whole mud pile of ignorance and immorality. Thieves and harlots freely ply their trade within and without the school grounds while Jehovah's faithful children are denied the rights to education on "moral" or "disciplinary" grounds. In these same yards hypocrisy has indeed ripened and gone to seed!

### Results

It appears from the evidence that the present methods of education are fast

## PAST, BUT NOT FORGOTTEN

Burning in the hearts of all servants and fighters for THE NEW WORLD are the memory and inspiration of the joyous Kingdom activities of the past year, which surpassed any previous year in bearing witness to the Theocratic Kingdom as the only hope of mankind. By the grace of Jehovah, a world-wide report of these thrilling Kingdom activities has been compiled and published in a 416-page book entitled

### 1943 YEARBOOK OF JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES

In reading this book you will learn how the witnesses of Jehovah during the past year printed and produced the astounding total of 36,000,000 books and magazines, all explaining why God purposes to establish a NEW WORLD. Also, you will see how the faithful servants of this NEW WORLD utilized upward of 28,000,000 hours to distribute these publications from one end of the

earth to the other in order to magnify Jehovah's name and comfort those that mourn.

A second feature of this 1943 YEARBOOK is the daily texts and comments. Here you will be reminded of God's purposes and words of comfort each day of the coming year.

The edition's being limited enhances the cost of production, and therefore a contribution of 50c per copy is asked. Order now, while yet available.

**WATCHTOWER**

**117 Adams St.**

**Brooklyn, N. Y.**

Please send to me prepaid a copy of the 1943 *Yearbook of Jehovah's witnesses*. My contribution of 50c toward the Kingdom work is enclosed herewith.

Name .....

Street .....

City .....

State .....

producing atheists, ignoramuses, harlots, and thieves. Is it not about time that the schools gave some account of themselves to the taxpayers who support them? Why should these dignitaries be immune to question? Is the public content for them to keep on waving a flag and let everything else "go to pot"? Or do parents and citizens want something else for their money? Why should not the school boards themselves be kept in due subjection to their duties? These are civic questions that confront all American families, and are now crying for a remedy.

But the civic questions, serious as they be, are trivial compared to the danger the actions of these school boards bring upon all involved. The dictates of conscience should generally be respected, but, when obedience to Jehovah is the compelling urge of the moral impulse, to tamper therewith is fatal. (1 Corinthians 8:12) It is presumptuous interference with Jehovah's servants. On appeal

when the boards are fully apprised of the position of Jehovah's witnesses and the officials refuse to hear, the words pass beyond the schoolrooms. Passing upward the appeal has "entered into the ears of the Lord of sabaoth [armies]".—James 5:4.

As for the faithful obedient children, they demonstrate love for Jehovah, and although the countenances of school boards are set in hostility, yet is the knowledge of complete integrity sweeter than the applause of the world. Jesus despised the shame, for the joy that was set before Him. (Hebrews 12:2) They who are His followers will do likewise. "If thou seest the oppression of the poor, and violent perverting of judgment and justice in a province, marvel not at the matter: for he that is higher than the highest regardeth; and there be higher than they." (Ecclesiastes 5:8) "Behold, your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompence; he will come and save you."—Isaiah 35:4.

## Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"

### Paragraph Construction

**G**OOD paragraphing is based on the principles of unity. Paragraphing is the division of thoughts into handy, sensible units to show the introduction of a new idea, a new group of ideas or a direct quotation. The only hard and fast rule to remember is to place in the same paragraph all sentences related to the same thought or the same phase of a thought. Each paragraph has a topic sentence, which is generally the first one of the paragraph. In it the writer states the main thought of the paragraph. In effect he says, "This is what I'm going to talk about." It is the signpost for what comes next. This sentence may take the form of a forecast or of a question.

The last sentence is often referred to as the clincher sentence. This serves as a conclusion to the paragraph. In fact,

these two substantial statements, the topic and clincher sentences holding the paragraph together, serve the same purpose as do the introduction and conclusion of the talk as a whole.

The development or filling in of the paragraph between these two opening and closing sentences provides the specific details, description, illustration, bits of proof, without which the paragraph would be meaningless. It supplies sentences elaborating the topic sentence and developing its thought in detail.

These sentences may be arranged in any one of four ways: order of action, order of time, order of space, order of importance.

**ORDER OF ACTION** consists of starting with the preliminaries and progressing to the beginning of action, middle of the action, end of the action and the consequences. One would use this method of



sentence arrangement if he were telling of David's slaying Goliath. The preliminaries would be David's speech to Goliath concerning Jehovah's name. The beginning of action would be David's running toward the Philistine to meet him. The middle action would be David's putting his hand into his bag to select a stone for his sling. The end of the action and the consequences would be the throwing the stone and Goliath's falling on his face. All this could be easily worked into one paragraph. All narrative material is arranged this way.

ORDER OF TIME consists in taking next whatever happens next. In plain language, put the first things first and the last things last.

ORDER OF SPACE is used mostly in descriptions. A landscape, for example, may be described from foreground, middle distance, and remote distance. Or it might be from left to center and to right. A building may be described from the foundation to roof or roof to foundation. With this type of arrangement your sentences have a logical sequence in space order and do not skip about.

ORDER OF IMPORTANCE consists in putting the most important matter first and following it with matters of less importance. Or the arrangement can be reversed, starting with the less important facts and working up to a climax.

After the arrangement of the sentences is decided upon, next follows the development of those sentences to bring out the detail and argument. There are several methods of development that may be used; six are here mentioned. They are: by definition, by example, by comparison or contrast, by repetition, by elimination, and by relation to cause and effect.

Development by DEFINITION is accomplished by defining a key word or words in the topic sentence. If the paragraph were to start with the sentence, "Jehovah has with great long-suffering endured the activity of persecutors for several thousands of years," and then one proceeded to define persecution as, "To

persecute means to pursue persistently in a manner to injure, grieve and afflict," then the development would be from the standpoint of definition; for here one defines a key word in the topic sentence. In the same paragraph one could define the word "endure" as applied to his discussion, for that, likewise, is a key word.

Development by EXAMPLE means to cite examples in support of the key thought. If one had such a statement as, "No one who advocates for The Theocracy can escape persecution from those that work for the opposition government," and then gave examples of Abel, Jeremiah, Daniel, Christ, and the apostles as evidence to prove the statement, that would be development by EXAMPLE.

Development by COMPARISON OR CONTRAST consists of comparing like things or contrasting two or more dissimilar things. A paragraph in point is one from the *Watchtower* discussion of "Covenant Obligations". It starts, "In striking contrast to unfaithful Urijah is the prophet Jeremiah, who was a faithful witness of Jehovah." The paragraph is then developed by contrasting the respective courses of action of Urijah and Jeremiah and the result to each because of such action.

Development by REPETITION is not as common as the other methods; for usually the discussion of the thought repeated is sufficiently long to constitute a phase of thought and is put in a separate paragraph. It is, however, used in short paragraphs. Such a paragraph would be, "We are in the 'time of the end'. It is a time of woe for the world; for darkness covers the earth, and gross darkness the people. It is a time of importance for those that must now choose whom they will serve. It is a time of apprehension for God's covenant people lest they, by word or deed, come short of their covenant and displease Him. It is a time of joy for the faithful, for they, by faith, see the vindication of Jehovah's name." The repetition of a key word of the topic sentence

is what gives the emphasis in this type of development.

Development by **ELIMINATION** is very forceful in argumentation. It consists of eliminating from the discussion those points not applicable to the proof the writer is presenting. For example, "The Theocracy is a government by the immediate direction or administration of God. It is *not* based on a 'share the rule' proposition, as is a democracy. *Nor* is it a government based on power being vested in one creature, as is a monarchy. It is the immediate direction and administration of the world by Jehovah God through His anointed King, Christ Jesus."

Development by **RELATION TO CAUSE AND EFFECT** is one commonly used. Causes or factors are discussed, which causes produce certain effects. As: The demons rule the earth; this is one cause of world distress. Here world distress is the effect or result. One might go from effect to cause: world distress to demon rule.

Sometimes, no matter how well the sentences are arranged and the paragraphs developed, the connections between paragraphs are loose. They lack coherence. This fault may be overcome by the use of connectives.

A connective is a word or group of words that acts as a bridge from one thought to another. It may be a single word, called a transitional conjunction; or a group of words, called a transitional

expression. Every writer or speaker should have at his command a long list of connectives, enough that he will not have to repeat even once in a composition. These can be grouped in six divisions, for use in any given setting.

To express change of time use: previously, formerly, meanwhile, then, now, since then, after this, thereafter, heretofore, at last, at length, from now on.

To express similar point of view use: likewise, next in importance, in the same manner, similarly, in addition, too, also, that is to say, moreover.

To denote change in point of view use: seriously, frankly, on the other hand, in another sense, but, in fact, still, on the contrary, nevertheless, however.

To convey emphasis use: indeed, add to this, besides, in addition to this, even more, above all, to repeat, furthermore.

To make a forecast of what is to follow use: first, to continue, parenthetically, by the way. For example: There are three factors to consider. First, etc.

And for summary use: therefore, for these reasons, we now see, as we have seen, in conclusion.

All the methods of developing paragraphs as shown in this study may be used to advantage in writing or composing talks. One paragraph may use a combination of these methods. Then, by the use of connectives, if the thought continuity itself from one paragraph to another is not sufficient, give the finished whole coherence where necessary.

## Edison Can't Figure It Out

**I**T SEEMS that the son of Thomas Edison the inventor, which son is Charles Edison and is now governor of New Jersey, has an inquiring mind, like his famous dad. During one of the summer months the State of New Jersey maintained a summer 'White House' for the New Jersey executive at Sea Girt. The governor scrutinized the food bills closely, and this is what he found: that an average of 20 persons are supposed to

have consumed *daily* \$30.23 worth of meats, poultry \$22.36, lobster \$7.83, caviar \$7.23, other seafood \$7.76, milk 10½ quarts, heavy cream 2.6 quarts, butter 11 pounds, eggs 9 dozen, and coca cola \$5.55. It seems, according to the bills, that each person at the summer cottage had raw food purchased for him to the amount of \$8.90 per day. Edison thinks something is rotten in New Jersey, and he isn't the only one that thinks it.

# THE CAMPAIGN GOAL

## 100,000 New *Watchtower* Subscriptions

### YOU MAY HAVE A SHARE

Even though *The WATCHTOWER* already has a yearly distribution of 10,000,000 copies, arrangements have been made for a *WATCHTOWER* CAMPAIGN during February, March and April.

Throughout this campaign a special endeavor will be put forth to obtain 100,000 new subscriptions for the semi-monthly journal *The WATCHTOWER*, on the regular basis of \$1.00 per year.

*Would you like to have a part in reaching this goal?*

This is how you may:

1. If you do not already have *The WATCHTOWER* coming to you regularly, then subscribe for it yourself.
2. If you do have it, then offer the opportunity to others.



16 pages

Every person who loves God and His Kingdom and who puts Kingdom interests first will want *The WATCHTOWER* and a part in seeing that others also receive this helpful guide. The sole authority for every line in *The WATCHTOWER* is the Bible, God's Word, which

is the only beam of light now shining to illuminate the pathway of sincere men through this dark world to God's Kingdom. Yes, dark and doomed is the present old world. But there is hope in the New World. Note the special offer below, which will bring to you a vision of the New World of righteousness.

### SPECIAL GIFT—

The *WATCHTOWER* Society has made provision to give to every person who subscribes for *The WATCHTOWER* during this campaign a *FREE* book and booklet—

#### ***THE NEW WORLD***

384 pages. Peach-colored cloth binding.  
Both a topical and a scripture index.  
Published in 1942.

#### ***PEACE—Can It Last?***

Reliable inside information  
on postwar conditions.  
32 pages.

**WATCHTOWER, 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y.**

I am enclosing \$1.00, for which please place my name on the yearly subscription list for *The Watchtower*. Please send me, *FREE*, the book *The New World* and the booklet *Peace—Can It Last?*

Name ..... Street .....

City ..... State .....

# CONSOLATION

JOURNAL OF FACT, HOPE AND COURAGE

## Is American Democracy Freedom of Worship

How complete are the freedoms of the nations to the south?

## Persecution in West Africa

Its aims defeated by Christianity

## A Free Judiciary

Must be maintained to defend the freedoms of all

## Humility Rewarded

Does not mean servility, cowardice or timidity

## What Destroyed France?

The real enemies of the republic revealed



# Contents

Latin-American Democracy and Freedom of Worship	3
Kindred Nations	5
"Inter-American Seminar for Social Studies"	7
Statement on 'Victory and Peace'	7
Defeat of Persecution in West Africa	10
'The Increase of His Kingdom'	11
A Free Judiciary	14
"Thy Word Is Truth"	
Humility Rewarded	17
What Destroyed the French Republic?	19
A Peculiar Local Patriotism	20
Too Much Venality—as Elsewhere	20
To Devil's Island for Life	21
What Devil's Island Is Like	22
Some Judges as Bad as—Elsewhere	22
Too Many Politicians	23
Who Are France's Enemies?	24
Dodging the Vital Truth	24
Another Real Statesman	25
Dove or Raven, Which?	27
"Blessed Are the Merciful"	27
Otto the White Hope	29
Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"	
Cruden's Concordance	30
Just Beginning to Learn	2

Published every other Wednesday by  
**WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, INC.**  
 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

## OFFICERS

President	N. H. Knorr
Secretary	W. E. Van Amburgh
Editor	Clayton J. Woodworth

## Five Cents a Copy

\$1 a year in the United States  
 \$1.25 to Canada and all other countries

## NOTICE TO SUBSCRIBERS

**Remittances:** For your own safety, remit by postal or express money order. When coin or currency is lost in the ordinary mails, there is no redress. Remittances from countries other than those named below may be made to the Brooklyn office, but only by international postal money order.

**Receipt** of a new or renewal subscription will be acknowledged only when requested. **Notice of Expiration** is sent with the journal one month before subscription expires. Please renew promptly to avoid loss of copies.

**Send change of address** direct to us rather than to the post office. Your request should reach us at least two weeks before the date of issue with which it is to take effect. Send your old as well as the new address. Copies will not be forwarded by the post office to your new address unless extra postage is provided by you.

Published also in Greek, Portuguese, Spanish, and Ukrainian.

## OFFICES FOR OTHER COUNTRIES

England	34 Craven Terrace, London, W. 2
Australia	7 Beresford Road, Strathfield, N. S. W.
South Africa	623 Boston House, Cape Town
Mexico	Calzada de Melchor Ocampo 71, Mexico, D. F.
Brazil	Caixa Postal 1313, Rio de Janeiro
Argentina	Calle Honduras 5646-48, Buenos Aires

Entered as second-class matter at Brooklyn, N. Y., under the Act of March 3, 1879.

# Notanda

## Just Beginning to Learn

♦ The human family is just beginning to learn something about the treasure house, the earth, in which, by the kind providences of God, they now find themselves. The statement is made by those who ought to know that in the year 1941 Americans consumed \$10,000,000,000 worth of products that were unknown before World War I.

You know some of these things. Maybe you are wearing some of them right now, as underwear, stockings, dresses, suits, hats, shoes, or what not. You call them nylon, rayon, vinyon, or something else, and all you know or care about them is that they are made of such things as milk, beans, peanuts, bark, and that they don't wear quite as well as the things for which they act as substitutes.

It was a big surprise to most people to learn that rubber can be made from petroleum, yet that will probably be the principal source from which future supplies come. It is claimed that there are now about 6,000 research workers spending their time studying petroleum, to get out of it some of the things it evidently contains.

## Lined Squarely Up with the Devil

♦ Arrested in Charleston, S. C., for circulating the gospel of Jehovah's Kingdom in printed form, three women, with their children, summoned two clergymen to speak for them, but the clergymen, "Rev." W. O. Kersey and "Rev." Henry F. Wolfe, entered a plea against the innocent instead; and, though these two men make their living by circulating what they falsely claim to be the gospel, they were delighted when these women were fined for preaching in this manner without first obtaining peddlers' licenses. The Supreme Court of South Carolina had previously decided that circulating God's Word and explanations thereof by books not sold for gain is doing the work of an evangelist and not taxable.

# CONSOLATION

"And in His name shall the nations hope."—Matthew 12:21, A. R. V.

Volume XXIV

Brooklyn, N. Y., Wednesday, March 3, 1943

Number 612

## Latin-American Democracy and Freedom of Worship

**S**OUTH AMERICAN and Central American lands are generally, for the sake of convenience, grouped together and called "Latin America". They speak mainly the two Latin-European languages Spanish and Portuguese, although there are millions of their inhabitants that speak one of the aboriginal tongues that were spoken when the Americas were first discovered.

The west coast of South America is straight south of New York city, a small portion of its western bulge being the exception. The largest South American country, Brazil, extends east of that line twenty-six hundred miles. Latin America, most of it, is in the tropics. People in the tropical climes live at a pace different from that of those who live in temperate zones. They are neither worse nor better on that account, but would naturally prove somewhat difficult to understand unless one keeps that fact in mind. The bulk of Mexico and everything between it and Buenos Aires, Argentina, to the south, is subject to the effect of direct solar rays and all that is implied by that fact.

Yet, because altitude has an important bearing upon the climate of Latin America, there are places where the temperature, even in the torrid zone, is moderate and sometimes chilly. Each ascent of 330 feet results in a variation of one degree Fahrenheit in temperature. A point 5,000 feet above sea level at the equator has the same climate as one at sea level 1,500 miles north or south. Mexico city, although in the torrid zone,

is situated 7,500 feet above sea level, and has a climate described as that of an eternal spring. Plateaus and mountainous terrain in other parts of Latin America have similarly affected the climate, though not to the same degree. The capital of Ecuador is situated 9,371 feet above sea level, and has as a consequence a climate unusual in that torrid zone.

There is still a considerable measure of illiteracy in Latin America, a condition that is being slowly remedied. Theoretically, and in a measure actually, education is free all over South America, and in some parts it is compulsory. Whites and Indians, and also Negroes, have intermarried to a surprising extent. In Brazil only a tenth of the population is wholly white. The color line is almost entirely ignored. Similar conditions, though in different proportion, exist in many other South American countries.

A general survey of Latin America is difficult because there are such wide differences between the countries and peoples of which it is composed. Asia is more easily comprehended in a homogeneous whole than is South America. A separate visit to each country of this part of the Western Hemisphere is therefore desirable, and it is hoped that such visits (on paper) can be arranged for the readers of *Consolation* from time to time. It will be well worth while to become better acquainted with our neighbors to the south. For the present, however, consideration is given to Latin America as a whole, representing a population of some 130,000,000.

Every country and every colony of Latin America is unlike the others. Although part, in the main, of one continent, they are all different; surprisingly so. Each claims a republican form of government. Yet some of them have been ruled by dictators for long periods of time. One has an enviable record of orderly and constitutional government that has had but one interruption in a period of well over a century. Others have had frequent "revolutions" and consequent changes of government.

In some of the countries of South America there is as complete freedom of the press and speech as there is in the United States (although that is not as complete as some may think). In others there is practically no such freedom. Politicians who oppose or criticize the government are sent into exile, and critical newspapers are put out of business. In such lands the dictator or other ruling element brooks no opposition.

Early in the nineteenth century all the South American and Central American countries revolted and threw off the yoke of Spanish domination that had held them. Brazil also gained her independence (from Portugal). The revolts were largely inspired by the American and French revolutions. Conditions that existed until these revolts changed them are summarized as follows by John Gunther in his best-seller *Inside Latin America*:

Latin America was, it happened, colonized by two countries, Spain and Portugal, that never experienced the Reformation. Thus Catholicism in peculiarly undiluted form dominated it from the earliest days and remains today a profound and tenacious influence. The early 'Conquistadores' fought in the name of the cross, and baptized Indians by the tens of thousands. In every new settlement the clergy took a large share of the best land, and achieved an important vested interest in the community, socially, politically, economically. The great archbishops admitted allegiance only to the king of Spain. They ruled like princes. The clergy were their troops

and the Inquisition their Gestapo. The church had no competition, since no other religion but Catholicism was permitted. It grew fabulously rich and fabulously decadent. In several countries the church owned as much as one-half the total land; Paraguay, for instance, became practically a Jesuit colony. Nowhere did the clergy, secular or regular, bestow upon the people anything like proper recompense for their inordinate position, though an effort was made in education.

In Jesuit-colonized Paraguay today from 60 percent to 70 percent of the people are illegitimate and Catholic. The claim that South America as a whole is Catholic is, of course, a very broad generalization. The Indians, Incas and others, who were baptized by the tens of thousands several centuries ago, evidently did not get very far beyond the starting point, nor did they bring up their offspring as "good Catholics", willingly subservient to the "Church" and loyal to Spain as the instrument of the church in reducing them to bondage. As the Roman Catholic church retains its control of the men through its control of the women, every effort was made to keep the people, and particularly the women, in ignorance. This helps to keep the people at least nominally Catholic.

A large number of Latin Americans, and particularly the men, are indifferent to Catholicism. Yet the teaching and example of the priests have had their effect. In this connection an item is quoted from *The Christian Century* of September 2, 1942.

The legend that South America is a Catholic continent still persists. But it is hard for its supporters to make a clear case. It was not so many decades ago that a recommendation went to the Vatican that South America be declared a mission field, moral and spiritual conditions were that bad. But, of course, it was impossible to do that and not lose face. All churches and convents, however, in Ecuador were closed, and a group of German priests were put in charge to reorganize and reopen the work of the church. Last year the theological seminary in one of the most

Roman Catholic of South American countries was closed because of moral conditions and a group of Mexican priests were brought down to reorganize that institution. In that country no priests will be graduated from the seminary for the next three years. . . . the first group of missionaries has gone out from the Maryknoll institution to do missionary work in Bolivia. A second group of fifteen missionaries is to follow soon.

Of course, the status of the Roman Catholic church in Latin America differs in each country. In some sections it has a strong hold upon the superstitious susceptibilities of the people, while in others it occupies a position more nearly like the one held in the United States. In either case, there are large numbers of the population that have no attachment for the church and there is a considerable number of Protestants. Protestant church organizations in the United States have also sent missionaries into Latin America, which, in every country, claims to adhere to complete religious toleration, though the Roman Catholic religion is generally said to be "dominant". Whatever may be said of Protestantism's too obvious failings, the missionaries have brought the Bible with them. This fact, together with the further fact that these missionaries have met with some success, has greatly disturbed the Catholic Hierarchy.

In an effort to stop the introduction of the Bible and its teachings into Latin America the "princes of the church", such as bishops and archbishops, have gotten together with United States clergy of the same general rank in a so-called Pan-American "seminar" ostensibly to further "social studies". The pronouncements of the "seminar" and of the bishops of the Roman Church in the United States enable one to see just what the Hierarchy and its head mean when they speak of the triumph of "Christian principles", and of the necessity of seeing to it that these principles shall be given first consideration in the building of a "new world". There is no real intention to

extend liberty of worship and speech to all. The Bible, and those who sponsor its circulation, are not wanted. What the Hierarchy has done and is doing in South America or Latin America it will attempt to do wherever it can. One of the pronouncements of the seminar in its "studies" last year was as follows:

Democracy, whatever its deficiencies may have been in the past, is certainly opposed to totalitarianism, and when it is directed by Christian principles constitutes a system under which Christian living can be best achieved.

Interpreting that in harmony with what the Hierarchy are trying to do in Latin America, it is just saying that everybody must be brought around to accepting the pope as "God on earth" and Mary, the mother of Jesus, as a virtual goddess. These are the main tenets of Catholicism, and when Catholic bishops speak of Christian "principles" they certainly have in mind these fundamental doctrines of the Hierarchy. That the four freedoms are not a part of them is apparent from the pronouncements of the popes on democracy. None of them has done other than condemn it. The "essential rights" of the individual are to knuckle down to the "princes" of the "church". According to the bishops, that is supposed to be the way Latin America accepts the Catholic idea. Actually Latin Americans assert in large and increasing numbers as much freedom of thought and action as do North Americans.

### *Kindred Nations*

Ever since the Latin-American revolutions there has been a kindred love of freedom and democracy common to them and the people of North America. The constitutions of the Latin-American nations are patterned in considerable degree after the Constitution of the United States. True, there have been failures in living up to the implications of these constitutions, yet they are there and exert their influence upon the populations. Outstanding in all these constitu-



tions is the constantly reiterated tolerance in the matter of worship. In this respect the constitutions express the attitude of the people. A different thing, of course, is the attitude of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy.

Recently Latin-American representatives of the Hierarchy met with some of their fellow clergy in the United States, under the auspices of the National Catholic Welfare Conference, and took occasion to invite representatives of religious groups other than the Hierarchy to keep out of Latin America. These hated "heretics" have gotten under the skin of the Hierarchy, particularly in view of the fact that quite a number of Latin Americans have shown an inclination to exercise the right of freedom of worship in a manner that the Hierarchy does not approve.

The Roman Hierarchy is alarmed. It proposes to change, if not the constitutions of Latin-American countries, at least the effect of them. Having made a bad botch of instructing the people in morality and religion, they propose that no one else shall do so. They intend to keep the field for themselves, to rule or ruin as may suit their purpose.

With an eye to their own advantage, the Hierarchy are turning the "good neighbor" policy to account. This policy was in reality begun by President Hoover. He visited Central America and South America with the thought in mind of closer co-operation between the two divisions of the Western Hemisphere. Before Hoover diplomatic service of the United States in Latin America left much to be desired. Each new president had, as a rule, appointed his supporters to diplomatic posts, and gave Latin-American countries to those political favorites that were least competent. Hoover appointed men better equipped intellectually and more competent from the standpoint of education. The result was generally beneficial. American diplomats in the lands below the Rio Grande were worthy of the name. As a result

the Americas have been drawn closer together. Conferences of various kinds have also served the purpose of acquainting nominally Catholic Latin America with nominally Protestant North America. It has also tended to show that North American Protestants were not what Rome pictured them to be, even though admittedly not perfect.

The "good neighbor" policy was resulting favorably in many respects, furthering collaboration between the countries of Latin America and the United States and opening up new fields of commerce and mutual profit. A concrete example of the effectiveness of the policy of co-operation is the opening up of the Pan-American highway system. Linked with United States highways at Nuevo Laredo, it runs through all of Central America to Panama and continues to Bogota, Colombia, whence it branches out to Caracas, in Venezuela, and Quito, Ecuador. Thence it continues to Vitor, Peru, branching again to Valparaiso and Santiago, Chile, and La Paz, in Bolivia. Continuing thence to Rosario, it divides into three branches, one going to Buenos Aires, Argentina, another to Asuncion, Paraguay, and a third to Porto Alegre, Brazil. Thence it branches once more with Montevideo, Uruguay, and Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, as termini. There is also a connecting road between Santiago, Chile, and Buenos Aires. At least a part of the work in linking various highways together to constitute this international system has been financed by funds supplied by the United States. Only the Guianas remain to be reached, and an extension from Caracas, in Venezuela, to accomplish that end is not hard to visualize.

These various inter-American transactions and relations have resulted in greater understanding between Latin America and North America. Missionary activity has also played a part. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy, fearful of the results of this better understanding of "Catholic" Latin America and "Prot-

estant" North America, proposes to do what it can to keep out the Bible and those who, whatever their motive, play a considerable part in its circulation.

### **"Inter-American Seminar for Social Studies"**

The "Inter-American Seminar for Social Studies", already alluded to, is one of the instruments which the Hierarchy uses to consolidate its own interests in the Americas. In its August (1942) meetings in North America it visited various cities in the United States. According to press reports it was then composed of some 'thirty Latin American and North American leaders of social thought and action'. When the "seminar" came to Washington, D. C., Archbishop Michael J. Curley extended a welcome by letter, saying, in part:

I will pray that the good God may bless the deliberations of the delegates and that both clergy and laity will go back to their homes with a feeling that the 25,000,000 (?) Catholics in this country have a profound interest in the faith and welfare of every republic in Latin America. [The Catholic population is growing by leaps and bounds—on paper.—*Ed.*]

The idea of this welcome was mainly to impress South American Catholics, and particularly the lukewarm ones, that North America is strongly Catholic, and that there the Catholics are the ones that really count. The seminar is bound to do what it can to further the aims of the Roman Hierarchy. "Rev." Alfonso Castiello, of Mexico city, addressing the seminar, urged closer co-operation between the United States and Mexican Catholics in developing and applying a social action program to improve living conditions in Mexico. He charged that the "Catholic program of social reform in Mexico" had been impeded by the foreign owners of capital. Just what he means does not matter. It is well known that the Catholic Hierarchy has fought the social reform program in Mexico tooth and nail, and is still fighting it as

far as possible, and especially in the field of education. One wonders whom the Hierarchy thinks it is kidding.

Another Mexican bishop attending the seminar, the "Most Rev." Miguel Dario Miranda, bishop of Tulancingo, said that the "providential destiny" of the Americas was to return Christ to a world which has forgotten Him. Just where the Vatican comes in here is not too clear. But one feels that, viewing what the Hierarchy have accomplished in South America and Central America and the way the Indians have been treated, America is not too well fitted for the job at the moment.

The seminar also issued a statement, which said, in part: "Even when not totalitarian, any government that suppresses the individual or persecutes him in his essential rights deserves a complete condemnation." It also opined that "the totalitarian state betrays the common good and must suffer the condemnation of every civilized and Christian conscience".

It would be more significant, however, if such a statement issued from the Vatican. Statements of the "lesser fry" of clergy are contradictory. Even though it is made to appear that the clergy of Germany are persecuted, it is well known that they fully backed Hitler in his program of conquest and pillage. What American clergy say is spoken to the galleries. Is the Catholic Hierarchy catholic, or what? Note what the German bishops said, as reported in the *New York Times* of September 25, 1939:

In this decisive hour we admonish our Catholic soldiers to do their duty in obedience to the Fuehrer and be ready to sacrifice their whole individuality.

### **Statement on 'Victory and Peace'**

It is at this point that a consideration of the recent statement of American bishops and archbishops on 'Victory and Peace' should be examined, particularly in its bearing on Latin America. In this statement, after the customary endorse-

ment of America and its allies in the war, the Hierarchy state:

We send our cordial greetings to our brother bishops of Latin America. We have been consoled by recent events, which give a sincere promise of a better understanding by our country of the peoples of Mexico, Central and South America.

Citizens of these countries are bound to us by the closest bonds of religion. They are not merely our neighbors; they are our brothers professing the same faith. Every effort made to rob them of the Catholic religion or to ridicule it or to offer them a substitute for it is deeply resented by the peoples of these countries and by American Catholics. These efforts prove to be a disturbing factor in our international relations.

Commenting on this statement the Federal Council of the Churches of Christ in America said:

... we deplore the pretension of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy to circumscribe the religious freedom of Protestant Christians in the proclamation of their faith, while by implication reserving for themselves the right to the universal proclamation of their own.

The council also said, significantly, that the bishops of the Roman Communion had "set the relation of Protestant Christianity to Hispanic America in a perspective which does violence both to historical truth and contemporary fact". In plain phrase that means that the bishops did not tell the truth. The council continues:

We affirm, with full and first-hand knowledge of the facts, that, so far from Protestant institutions and the representatives of Protestant Christianity being a peril to good relations between the Americas, they are ... regarded with extreme favor by governments and peoples in the countries where they are located.

It is obvious, in any event, that the Hierarchy's bishops, although professing support of the fight for freedom of speech, worship, press and assembly on the one hand, do all within their power to obstruct those very freedoms in their subtle attack on other religions in their

statement on 'Victory and Peace'. It offers an example of how little stock should be taken in the pronouncements of the Hierarchy at any time, which vary according to the lands in which they are made, while the Vatican maintains a fictitious neutrality. Among other things the American bishops say:

Since the murderous assault on Poland, utterly devoid of every semblance of humanity, there has been a premeditated and systematic extermination of the people of this nation. The same Satanic technique is being applied to many other peoples.

Yet the German bishops, exhorting German soldiers to obey the fuehrer, sacrificing their whole individuality, said:

We appeal to the faithful to join in ardent prayers that the Divine Providence of God Almighty may lead this war to blessed success and peace for our fatherland and nation.

And so the German bishops endorsed what the American bishops characterize as utterly devoid of every semblance of humanity. Are not *all* bishops subject to the pope?

Commenting on this aspect of the 'Victory and Peace' statement *The Christian Century* says, under date of December 2, 1942:

But there is at the top of the hierarchy an authority which symbolizes the whole church, which is slow to take sides in an international war, which deplores the war and works for peace, and which waits until its own ecclesiastical interest is clearly known to be involved on one side or the other before it surrenders its catholic position. . . . Thus the Catholic Church is able to maintain the fiction of catholicity or ecumenicity while its national branches are allowed to fight on both sides of the conflict. What would not the United Nations give for a statement from the Vatican like that of the American prelates! How can these prelates make such a decisive declaration as, "This conflict of principles makes compromise impossible," while the Holy Father [sic] himself is vacillating and will continue to vacillate until he is satisfied which side is going to win?

But *The Christian Century* realizes that the real purpose of the bishops' manifesto is to suppress freedom of worship in Latin America and to keep the Bible out. It continues:

The bishops and archbishops could not refrain from revealing their strategic motivation even in the text of their manifesto. The document reaches its climax in an implied but unconcealed reference to Protestant mission work in Latin America. On this subject the resentment of the hierarchy has been gaining in frankness of expression in recent years. . . . But in the prelates' manifesto it is brought to focus in a fashion which clearly bids for government favor in return for the hierarchy's [verbal] support of the war. . . . the church now hopes to win the good offices of the American government in support of its claims to exclusive religious rights in Latin America.

While grossly exaggerating the loyalty of the peoples of these countries to the Catholic Church, . . . the prelates decry "every effort to rob them of their Catholic religion or to ridicule it or to offer them a substitute for it". This caricature of Protestant missionary effort among a people millions of whom in disillusionment have left the church, is made the basis of an assertion that "these efforts are a disturbing factor in our international relation." . . .

The bishops are quite frank about it. . . . they boldly suggest action by the national government to restrain Protestant activity in Latin America because it is "disturbing international relations".

Meanwhile the Hierarchy, through its Latin-American Catholic press, shows its real sympathy as being for the Axis cause. The London *Catholic Herald* says:

While the popular press has a marked leaning to the left and is pro-Allies, the Catholic papers [which the pope calls his very own voice] react in the contrary direction, sympathizing with Germany and her friends.

Indicative of the same trend is a report from Rio de Janeiro; which states:

Brazilian police have uncovered evidence of subversive activity in a German Franciscan Convent at Sao Pessoa in the Northern State

of Parahyba. Nazi propaganda, insignia, maps and Brazilian Army uniforms were found.

In Argentina it was reported that members of the Catholic Order of the Divine Word, a missionary organization, were conducting a Nazi propaganda agency. The order exercises a virtual monopoly of religious teaching throughout the territories of missions and the Chaco.

Reports from other sources in Latin America show the same "leanings" on the part of the Hierarchy, contrary to the attitude of the people generally. These are not in favor of the Axis or totalitarianism. They love liberty and are aware that after more than four hundred years of Hierarchy domination the Indians are no farther advanced than in the days of Cortez and Pizarro, and in some respects they have retrograded. They feel, too, that they have been held back from advantages and advancements which they have noted in other lands, and particularly the United States. Hence they are not likely to allow the Hierarchy to hinder amicable relations with the northern neighbor while professing to promote them. North Americans, including a good many Catholics, are aware of the insult gratuitously handed out in the bishops' statement on 'Victory and Peace' and note the very evident effort to interfere with freedom of worship. If some Latin Americans do not want the Bible or those who bring it, that is up to them. They do not have to accept it or even to listen. Generally the purpose of restrictions of the kind favored by the Hierarchy is to keep people who wish to know from learning the facts. To close Latin America to the entry of reputable and non-seditious persons active in some non-Catholic religious work is not likely to promote the friendship between the South American and North American republics. The fact that this effort to exclude these non-Catholic workers is coming to the fore in every one of these South American countries indicates that the international



influence of the Hierarchy is back of it. Whether Latin-American peoples will be long deceived and influenced by these manipulations is another question. Unquestionably many Latin Americans will see the obvious inconsistency of fighting for freedom of religion or worship, on the one hand, and denying it on the other.

It will, doubtless, show in due time whether the seminar and the bishops represent its real sentiments in the matter or not. It is not likely that the Hierarchy is the official spokesman for the Latin-American peoples, though for the moment it may have succeeded in pulling the strings to its own advantage.

## Defeat of Persecution in West Africa

**T**HAT was a big order that Jesus gave to His faithful apostles, "Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them," and it was a big prophecy that in "the time of the end" "this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations" and then shall the final end come. But all the resources of the Creator are back of the command and of the prophecy.

Strung along the west coast of Africa are seventeen countries between Morocco and the Belgian Congo. Seven of these are French, two are Portuguese, one is Belgian, one is independent, two are Spanish, and four are British. If you agree with the politicians that what the world needs is more religion, you should go to any of these west coast countries and see in what a flourishing condition the religious business is as there carried on.

The natives have the same ancestors as the 11,000,000 Negroes in the United States. For the most part they are intelligent, simple-hearted and inoffensive. But when they get religious they lose all the common sense they ever had. The native gods (demons) put them up to killing and eating one another, either to square the account or to assimilate the good qualities of those that were bumped off. Some of them are devil-worshippers, but none are so fallen that they could imagine a devil so hideous that he would stand up in a pulpit and warn the people not to read any books that tell anything about God's kingdom.

One has to be educated to be that kind

of devil. And so along the West African coast there are altogether too many European educated missionaries whose business on arrival is to confirm the heathen in their pagan beliefs that the dead are more alive than ever, and that what they really need is—not the truth, that would never do at all—but that what they need is more religion.

The European missionaries train the native clergy, who thereafter are twice as useless as they were in the first place. One idea goes over big with them, however, and that is to get out of the common people, on one pretext or another, every last nickel that can be extracted. On account of the customs of humanity, to get married, and to die, the native clergy work the marriage and funeral rackets to a finish. Especially do they foster the idea that without a church funeral there is no salvation. One wouldn't think that the common people would fall for such a line of foolishness; now, would one? Have you ever heard about the mass racket?

### *The Great State of Nigeria*

When looking at the map of Africa one readily discerns that Nigeria is one of the great states of a vast continent, but it is hard to realize that it is in itself as large as all of the United States between the Hudson and Mississippi rivers and north of the Potomac and Ohio. The real ruler of Nigeria is not the British Empire, but is actually The Niger Company, which has the exclusive right of importing rum and missionaries

and exporting the host of equatorial products for which the country is famous. Its tin, lead and iron ore industries are old and valuable. There are more than 2,000 miles of railways.

"God hath made of one blood all nations of men," and the Negroes of Nigeria are as bright as the Negroes of North America, or the whites either, for that matter. And as the Kingdom message has found many hearing ears among the colored of the United States, and thereby offended those in the religious business, so in Africa. And if, to protect his bread ticket, a missionary is willing to lie about Jehovah, what is more natural than that the stigma attaching to Him should attach also to His faithful witnesses?

So it was in the regular way of business that, about two years ago, the publications of the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society were banned in Nigeria and the importation thereof was strictly prohibited. There it is now a "crime" to even have one of the publications of the Society in one's possession. So strict is the censorship, and so dreadful the fear that some of the natives of Nigeria might get to learn of the Kingdom message, that all mail is withheld from Jehovah's witnesses.

For example, Lagos, Nigeria, was at one time one of the principal slave markets of the world, and the authorities there are still so terror-smitten about the four freedoms that Mr. Churchill and Mr. Roosevelt talked about, at the time they got up the "Atlantic Charter", that the Branch servant of the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society at Lagos has not been permitted to receive even one piece of mail (not even personal mail from his relatives) for two full years.

What lies back of this persecution? The answer is simple. It is just religion. Those that are operating the religious prison-houses cannot endure the thought that knowledge of the way to life should come to the common people; that they should learn that the dead are dead;

that the only hope of humankind is in the resurrection and in The Theocracy which Jehovah's witnesses in Nigeria, as elsewhere, so boldly proclaim. But has the estoppage of entry of books explaining the Bible, and the cutting-off of all correspondence regarding The Theocracy, achieved its desired end of disorganizing the work? The answer might reasonably be Yes, but actually is No.

### ***'The Increase of His Kingdom'***

'Of the increase of His Kingdom there shall be no end.' What is true of Jehovah's kingdom as a whole is true even of Nigeria. To be sure, some have been sent to jail for having the Kingdom literature in their possession, but that merely makes a good advertisement for the truth. Many are constantly watched, and it is often true that if one of the Lord's people makes a call he is followed up by one of the authorities who is fearful that he may have left some literature behind him. This also is an advertisement. The Devil cannot make a single move without sticking his foot into it clear up to his thigh. Many people are afraid to receive a Kingdom publisher, but they are not afraid to discuss the whole phenomenon with their next-door neighbors. The Society's Branch servant at Lagos is restricted in his travel. Those who wonder why this is will naturally talk about it, and thus the Kingdom is advertised some more.

Under the above conditions, and especially because of the close censorship of the local mails, it would seem impossible for the organized work to continue throughout Nigeria. But, true to His promise, Jehovah has made a provision for His servants there to receive some information from time to time. Jehovah's witnesses there may not receive this information as quickly as it is received in America or Britain, but eventually the Kingdom message reaches them in a manner which Jehovah directs. This information (and the Bible, which they have) strengthens the witnesses.

### ***What Work Can the Witnesses Do?***

Perhaps you wonder what work the witnesses can do. Well, they are permitted to hold study meetings, and in these meetings the message of Jehovah's kingdom may be proclaimed, despite the fact that the Kingdom literature may not be used openly, on account of spies, who are quick to report if any literature other than the Bible is used. But there is nothing to prevent an attendant at one of the meetings from using typewritten notes, and if he chances to have personal possession of some one of the 400,000,000 copies of the banned publications which have been distributed world-wide, who but he himself can be certain of the facts? Many hundreds attend these Bible studies regularly, and the Lord sees to it that they are fed.

One of the standard methods of preaching the gospel of Jehovah's kingdom is the back-call method. In Nigeria hundreds of back-calls and model studies, using the Bible, are under way with the people of good-will toward God. As a result of these back-calls and model studies and the regular witness work done by word of mouth, using only the Bible, many honest-hearted ones are taking their stand for the Kingdom.

Recently, and simultaneously with the New World Theocratic Assembly in the United States and other parts of the earth, three assemblies were held in Nigeria. From the one at Abeokuta came this touching report:

All activity was carried out very nicely at the convention. The witness work was done well. All auditoriums being denied, we held the meetings out in the open. The rain we had proved the determination of the brethren and all those of good-will; for the shower was so strong Saturday evening it was almost impossible to finish the program. All were soaked through, but we counted it a privilege to suffer for this cause. This was a witness to the people of the city, who said: "Those people must be of God: even rain cannot stop them"; and, "These people really have the love of Jehovah, or they would not hold the

remaining part of their meeting." Many of them wished more information about the Kingdom because of this.

All were received with kindness in the homes and shops of the city. The police were courteous. A cafeteria was arranged which was like in the days of Israel in the wilderness (held in the open air) and there was food enough for all.

We discussed the important parts of the new work, such as individual territory, back-calls, model studies, house-to-house witnessing, street-corner witnessing, and many more features. We had many demonstrations of the work during the convention so that all might be thoroughly furnished unto all good works upon returning to their homes. The assembly sends their love to the brethren all over the world.

Other conventions were likewise very successful. Many new ones are taking their stand for the Kingdom, proof of which is seen in the fact that during the past three months, including the convention, 542 have been immersed, showing their devotion to Jehovah God.

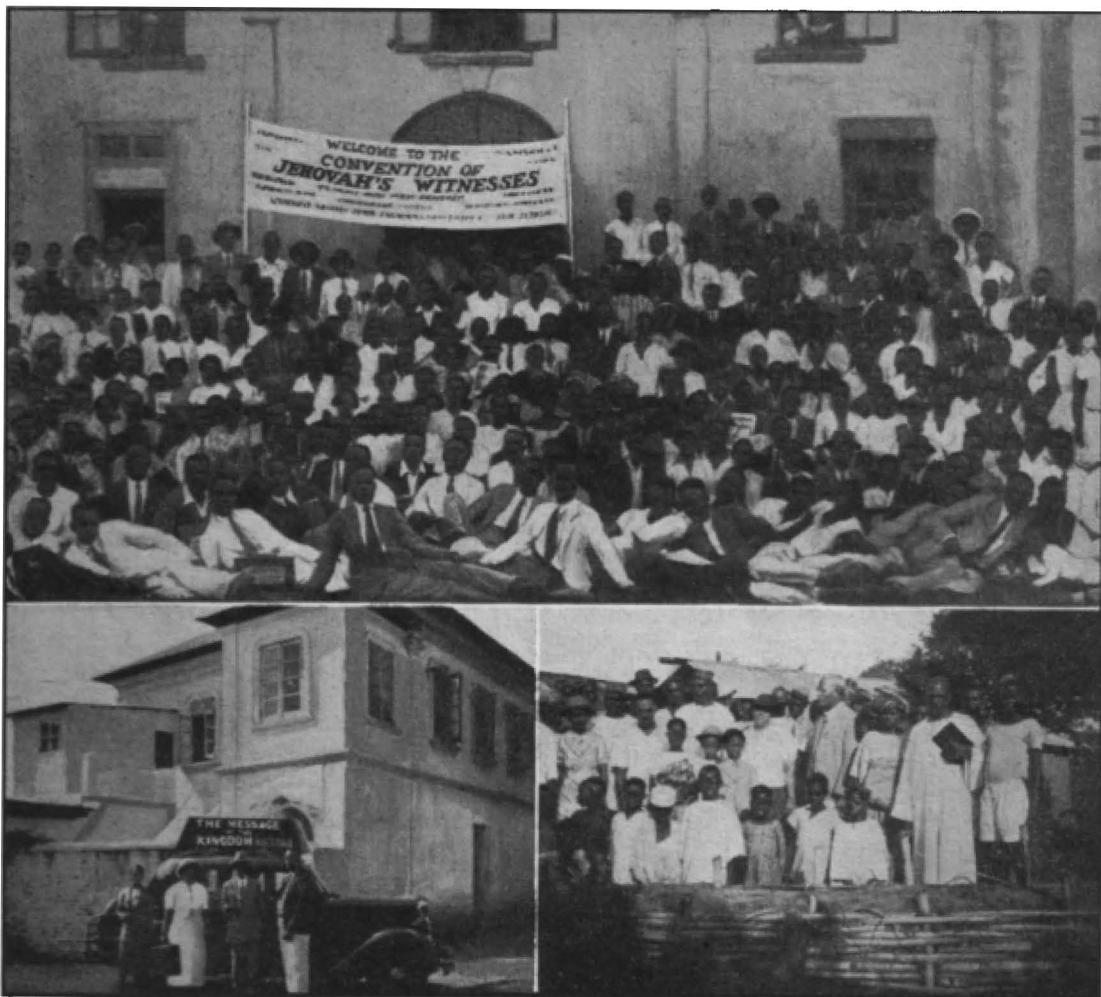
### ***Convention on the Gold Coast***

Another of the seventeen countries on the west coast of Africa is Gold Coast, of about the size of Maryland, District of Columbia, Virginia and West Virginia, the cocoa center of the world. The crop, grown entirely by the natives, is of the value of \$50,000,000 a year. Gold Coast has a \$17,000,000 harbor and 5,000 miles of fine roads. The natives enjoy and freely use the buses, which race from one end of the country to another.

The truth has spread here also, and has aroused the political religionists, as it does everywhere, into measures of attempted repression. These follow the same lines as in Nigeria. But a grand convention of New World publishers was held here at the same time as the three conventions in Nigeria and the 90-odd held elsewhere at the same time, September 18-20, 1942.

A faithful witness who has recently

CONSOLATION



One of the four West African conventions, the Branch office at Lagos, Nigeria, and a group of some of those baptized

returned to America after a visit to Jehovah's witnesses in Nigeria, the Gold Coast, and two other of the West African countries, Liberia and Sierra Leone, in which the Kingdom message has been proclaimed, reports all the witnesses standing at full unity in the Kingdom service, recognizing their privilege of bearing each his own burden, and thankful for the provision Jehovah makes for the welfare of His people everywhere. These West African witnesses have requested that their greetings be conveyed to all of good-will

toward Jehovah God throughout all the earth.

This news from West Africa brings joy to the people of good-will everywhere and shows clearly that none can fight successfully against Jehovah God. Jehovah is permitting His people to maintain their integrity under test and is blessing their faithful efforts. As hundreds more rally to the standard of The Theocracy, the religionists of West Africa are at their wits' end. Persecution is being defeated in West Africa. Christianity shall triumph.—Isaiah 54:17.



## A Free Judiciary

**A** VERY recent opinion by the New York Court of Appeals calls to mind that a free people must have a free judiciary to remain free from fear, free from want, and free from oppression. Failure to interpret the law fearlessly and impartially impairs justice, breaks down public confidence in the state and destroys the spirit and welfare of the people, and invites destruction of the institutions of democracy.

On June 8, 1942, the United States Supreme Court took another step in the direction of destroying the "self-confidence of a free people" by sustaining the validity of the license tax as applied to the Christian activity of Jehovah's witnesses. In this that court blindly declared *legal* and sanctioned the resurrection of the ancient "stamp taxes" against publication of literature which were the cause of the American Revolution.

It was thought and hoped by some that such decision by the "high court" would smother out the activity of Jehovah's witnesses in this country. In spite of the *five to four* decision Jehovah's witnesses have continued to push on with the apostolic house-to-house preaching and at the same time carried more like cases to the higher courts of the states of the *Union* for their decision. Many thought that all the state courts would follow the lead of the high court and do likewise; but in this they were wrong. Why? What has since happened?

More than one hundred fifty years ago, when the fearless and thinking forefathers of this country began deliberation over the ratification of the Constitution in the various free states of the *confederation* they became very jealous as to a repetition of the condition against which they had just revolted. The issue that was a topic of heated discussion, along with centralized power of government and state rights, during that hectic creative period of this nation, was the failure of the writers of the Constitution

to provide for freedom of speech, of press, and of worship of Almighty God.

The failure of the federal constitution at the time of adoption caused all states (that did not have specific guarantees of the fundamental freedom of worship, speech and press in their own constitutions) to adopt and write into their constitutions that guarantee, to make up for deficiencies of the federal constitution. The State of Virginia went farther than the other states and passed a special statute on "religious freedom". Many of the states would not ratify the federal constitution until it had been amended providing for guarantee of these freedoms. The first ten amendments to the Constitution, known as the "Bill of Rights", were proposed and adopted; then followed the ratification of the Constitution by the original thirteen states.

The "Bill of Rights" as originally adopted in 1791 was a restraint only upon the federal government against encroachment, and not against the action by states. The later passage of the Fourteenth Amendment, in 1868, made the First Amendment of the "Bill of Rights" an injunction against invasion by the states as well as against encroachment by the national government.

For almost seventy-five years after the adoption of the Fourteenth Amendment the people of the United States enjoyed a *double wall* of protection around their sacred liberties of speech, of press and of worship of Almighty God by having the restraint against abridgment by government in the state constitutions as well as in the national compact and its amendments.

This double protection **did not appear** to be actually needed until the spirit of totalitarian aggression began to spread over the face of the earth and terrified *state and federal* judges lost their judicial balance. When the invasion of the precious liberties began in the Supreme Court of the United States in June 1940

and reached its climax in June 1942 it became clearly manifest that there was great need to fall back behind the shield of protection contained in the various state constitutions.

New York was one of the original states to adopt the federal constitution without the Bill of Rights, on July 26, 1788. At that time it had a strong guarantee of freedoms of speech, press and worship in its own state constitution, to protect its people against internal aggression upon these rights.

This old and faithful shield of guarantees of that state was recently pulled out from the shelf and used as a strong instrument of protection from the totalitarian suppression of liberty approved by the Supreme Court in the notorious license tax decision of June 8, 1942.

On January 7, 1943, Judge Lehman, writing for the New York Court of Appeals in the case of *People of New York against Carmen Barber*, one of Jehovah's witnesses, declared that such highest court of New York was not obliged to follow the path of error made by the United States Supreme Court, and specifically held that the constitution of that state would not allow the application of the license tax laws to the activity of Jehovah's witnesses in New York.

The case originated in the town of Irondequoit, before a justice of the peace. It was charged that Carmen Barber committed the unlawful act of "selling" a Bible and "offering to sell" WATCHTOWER literature without applying for and obtaining a license, obtainable upon payment of a tax fee in money. The witness, Barber, refused to do either, on the authority of the perfect word of God recorded in Acts 20: 20; 1 Peter 2: 21; Matthew 24: 14; and Acts 5: 29, which reads, "We ought to obey God rather than men." Although it was plainly shown that Jehovah's witnesses did not and do not *sell* anything, but preach and receive contributions, the police officer testified that the *witness*

offered to "sell" him a Bible for twenty-five cents. (Psalm 94: 20) Upon the testimony of the police officer the defendant was convicted, and on appeal to the County Court of Monroe County the judgment was affirmed. An appeal was allowed, and the case was argued before the Court of Appeals in October, 1942.

In that case Chief Judge Lehman said:

In the case of *Jones v. Opelika*, decided June 8, 1942, the Supreme Court of the United States sustained the power of a state to impose by statute or ordinance a tax upon the sale of all merchandise, without discrimination between religious books and tracts and other articles or merchandise, and sustained the *power* of the state to require a license for the exercise of . . . Four justices of the court dissented from that decision on the ground that taxing or licensing statutes or ordinances "could—when applied to the dissemination of ideas—be made a ready instrument for destruction of that right" and "place a burden on freedom of speech, freedom of the press and the exercise of religion" in violation of the guarantees of those freedoms contained in the Constitution of the United States . . . Parenthetically we may point out that in determining the scope and effect of the guarantees of fundamental rights of the individual in the Constitution of the State of New York, this court is bound to exercise its independent judgment and is *not bound* by a decision of the Supreme Court of the United States limiting the scope of similar guarantees in the Constitution of the United States. . . .

The Bill of Rights embodied in the Constitutions of the state and nation is not an arbitrary restriction upon the powers of government. It is a guarantee of those rights which are essential to the preservation of the freedom of the individual—rights which are part of our democratic traditions and which no government may invade. Where a legislative body has sought to invade a field from which under the Bill of Rights the government is excluded, and has violated rights guaranteed by the Constitution, the courts must refuse to recognize or sanction the legislative decree—but legislative bodies are no less responsible than

the courts for the preservation of the liberties of the individual, guaranteed by the Bill of Rights, and legislative bodies, as a general rule, accept no less sincerely the democratic traditions and principles which the Bill of Rights expresses. We may not impute to a legislative body an intent to adopt a statute or ordinance which might be used as an instrument for the destruction of a right guaranteed by the Constitution which executive and legislative officers of government, no less than judges, are sworn to maintain. For that reason an ordinance or statute should be construed when possible in manner which would remove doubt of its constitutionality, and possible danger that it might be used to restrain or burden freedom of worship or freedom of speech and press. . . . We conclude this opinion by a quotation from that brief: "It may seem to some that appellant's activities were of such a character that, at this critical period in world history, the Courts and the Bar need not be particularly concerned with their repression. But, if appellant's activities involved the exercise by him of fundamental rights guaranteed by the Federal and State Constitutions, the violation of those rights cannot be disregarded as of trivial consequence. Each case of denial of rights to an individual or to a small minority may seem to be relatively unimportant, but we know now, more surely than ever before, that callousness to the rights of individuals and minorities leads to barbarism and the destruction of the essential values of civilized life." We can find no reason to doubt that the ordinance was not intended to furnish an instrument by which the right of any group to spread its religious beliefs, or even social opinions, could be curbed. We are bound to construe the statute in manner which would exclude possibility that the ordinance might be given such effect.

This decision received wide publicity through the large newspapers throughout the east, which was followed up by a number of editorials; from two we quote. The *Washington Post* of January 9, 1943, says, among other things,

New York's Court of Appeals has courageously reasserted that religious freedom is

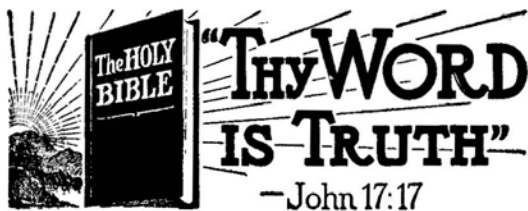
a right which must be respected and preserved by governments, even though it had to fly in the face of the United States Supreme Court to do so.

The *New York Daily Mirror* says:

The New York State Court of Appeals has taken an enlightened stand on a far-reaching question of civil liberties which has unusual interest because the decision ignores and, in effect, overrules, a decision taken in a similar case by the United States Supreme Court. . . . With all who regard Constitutional guarantees sacred, never to be infringed or abridged, this newspaper congratulates Judge Lehman and his colleagues.

We too congratulate such judges and give praise to the great Creator for endowing the judges and honest men, who wrote the provisions of the New York constitution, with the quality of justice and liberty that resulted in this decision of *rebellion* against oppression approved by the highest court of the land. In thus taking their stand the judges have held up the barrier of protection against the "Ammonite" aggression and invasion of the "land" of worship of Jehovah. We recognize this victory, therefore, as from Jehovah God, the Almighty Judge.

It is therefore the persistent pushing on with the house-to-house and street witnessing to the name and power of Almighty God regardless of the impotent adverse decrees of men to the contrary, and following in the footsteps of Jesus and His apostles by obeying God rather than men, that causes the victory to be given by Jehovah. It takes a miracle to cause a lower court to willingly and knowingly rule contrary to a higher court as was done here. This is solely because Jehovah gave the victory. Although persistent fighting in the courts is necessary to give the courts the opportunity to take their stand, nevertheless the victory has been given solely because of the continued and faithful proclamation of the Kingdom message by Jehovah's witnesses in the manner commanded by Jehovah, and not as commanded by man.—Psalm 37:39, 40.



## Humility Rewarded

**H**UMILITY'S path the Son of God himself faithfully walked. Born in a manger, He said of himself: "I am meek and lowly in heart." His humility is a model of perfect deportment. (See Luke 2:7; Matthew 11:29; Zechariah 9:9.) It is therefore with interest that we are privileged to observe the results or reward of blameless obedience in this particular. The record states that He "made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men; and being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name". (Philippians 2:7-9; Acts 2:33; 5:31) The lowly and humble Jesus now has pre-eminence in all things, and all power in heaven and in earth.—Colossians 1:18; Matthew 28:18.

In addition, Jesus called attention to some notable examples of self-exaltation against the Lord in the past, and did so as a warning to the haughty and high-minded of all times. His words, recalling history more ancient, referred to cities, such as Capernaum, which refused the message of God's kingdom brought to them by the Lord's seventy commissioned disciples, thus inviting a worse calamity than befell Tyre, Sidon, and Sodom. To the wicked of that day, picturing "Christendom" in her self-exaltation now, Jesus repeated the rule: "And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell [the grave]." —Luke 10:15.

Turning back the pages of history

nearly 3,500 years we may read about one of the earliest examples of self-exaltation against Jehovah. Pharaoh of Egypt thought it expedient to hold the Israelites in subjection in spite of God's frequent warnings sent through His servant and witness, Moses. Not even the ten plagues brought Pharaoh to a humbler attitude of mind. He continued his arrogant defiance of the Lord God, with the result that Egypt was wrecked by national disaster, losing first-born children and cattle, armies and wealth. —Exodus, chapters 11-14, inclusive.

About 780 years later, the record of Hezekiah, king of Judah, who humbled himself, and of Sennacherib, the Assyrian invader, who exalted himself, is in point. Concerning the latter's aggression the Scriptures read: "Whom hast thou reproached and blasphemed? and against whom hast thou exalted thy voice, and lifted up thine eyes on high? even against the Holy One of Israel." (Isaiah 37:23) The braggart Assyrian lost 185,000 men slain by the Lord and he himself died by the hand of his own sons. (Isaiah 37:36-38) In this connection it is of especial importance to note why Hezekiah was blessed with deliverance: "Hezekiah humbled himself for the pride of his heart, both he and the inhabitants of Jerusalem, so that the wrath of the LORD came not upon them in the days of Hezekiah." —2 Chronicles 32:26.

The reason for God's favor is repeated at 2 Chronicles 34:27. His mercy was similarly extended to King Rehoboam for the same reason. (2 Chronicles 12:7, 12) To that effect the Lord had appeared to King Solomon in a vision and given him this message: "If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land." —2 Chronicles 7:14.

Further and abundant expressions of condemnation of the high and mighty, and contrasted approval of the humble,



occur throughout the Scriptures. "And he shall save the humble." (Job 22:29) "He forgetteth not the cry of the humble." (Psalm 9:12) "The mighty man shall be humbled." (Isaiah 5:15; 2:11) "Before destruction the heart of man is haughty, and before honour is humility." (Proverbs 18:12) "He that exalteth his gate seeketh destruction." (Proverbs 17:19) At the overthrow of Zedekiah, last king of Israel (606 B. C.), the Lord caused Ezekiel to utter this prophecy: "Thus saith the Lord God; Remove the diadem, and take off the crown; this shall not be the same: exalt him that is low, and abase him that is high. I will overturn, overturn, overturn it; and it shall be no more, until he come whose right it is; and I will give it him." (Ezekiel 21:26, 27) Twenty-five hundred and twenty years later the crown and kingdom were given to the ONE who had had neither home nor possession on earth, but whom God later exalted to become the Invisible Ruler in the Theocratic Government, next in authority to Himself.

In current usage "humility" is often ascribed to people of low degree, and it is never considered a proper attribute of rulers or officials. Funk & Wagnalls Dictionary defines it as "the quality or condition of being humble"; and the adjective is defined as "Having or expressing a sense of inferiority, dependence, or unworthiness; meek; . . . lowly in condition; submissive, deferential." On the other hand, the Scriptures indicate that humility is the quality to be most sought after by princes and kings. Jesus said: "He that is greatest among you shall be your servant." (Matthew 23:11; Mark 10:44, 45) Nor does *humility* mean to be abashed before creatures or subservient to them. Applying the word to the crude and witless divests it of the noble qualities which should spring to mind on mention of *humility*. Few have desired it. So it is commonly applied to the undesirable.

Remembering now the words of the Bible above quoted, it is possible to bring

forth a definition from God's Word. Its Scriptural meaning is not at all according to customary usage. Humility, it has been observed, does not mean to be abashed or servile in the vassal sense; nor does it indicate timidity, fearfulness, or cowardice. Humility is a recognition of Jehovah as supreme and almighty, and a consequent unwillingness to exalt the creature, including self.

How ruthlessly and scornfully have world officials howled down Jehovah's admonition to humility! How viciously they have assaulted His humble witnesses and poured on them scorn, contempt and abuse! How cruelly His meek ones have been dragged from lowly dwellings and meeting-places, even from the field and forests where they sought refuge, and been maimed, beaten and shot to satisfy the venom of the religious "high and mighty"! In mock-humility these wear black garbs, and, bloated with opulence, they prate of sacrifice and make long-faced prayers over victims of a thousand wars of their own instigation!

How does the exalted King regard such action toward Jehovah's witnesses? His answer rings with as great clarity today as when He announced the rule more than 1900 years ago: "Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me." "Whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased."—Matthew 25:40; 23:12.

Those humble before the Lord have their reward from Him; and likewise the self-exalting. "The Lord preserveth the faithful, and plentifully rewardeth the proud doer."—Psalm 31:23.

"Be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble. Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time: casting all your care upon him; for he careth for you." (1 Pet. 5:5-7) "By humility and the fear of the Lord are riches, and honour, and life."—Proverbs 22:4.

## What Destroyed the French Republic?

THERE came the great day in the lad's life. He had learned something of the Latin grammar, been helped through the First Latin reader, and would next read Julius Caesar's Commentaries on the Gallic Wars (because it is the easiest Latin there is to read, and because Caesar's conquests ended the Roman Republic).

The first sentence was, "Gallia est omnis divisa in partes tres," i. e., "Gaul is a whole divided into three parts." And it is as true today as it was the day it was written. France is always divided, and perhaps more so in the dawn of the year 1943 than in any other year of her history. And there is a reason.

### *The French People*

The French people are specially dear to the American people, and in days not so long gone by if an American had accumulated some money and wanted to have a good time with it, he headed for Paris as a matter of course. And so did the rest of the world. New York is American, London is British, Berlin is German, and Tokyo is Japanese, but Paris is cosmopolitan. It belongs to mankind.

No one who can read need get lost in Paris. Suppose he wishes to go somewhere by subway. He goes down to the station, where there is a huge map of the subway system with all its branching lines. He knows the name of the station to which he desires to go. He presses a button opposite the name of that station and immediately a series of small electric lamps lights up showing exactly the way he must take.

Or he is up on the street surface. At the street corner is a huge map of Paris in a glass case. Next to the case is a winding scroll bearing the name of every avenue, street, boulevard and place in the city. He looks up the name of the street to which he wishes to go. He finds its key number. He turns a knob to that number and a rotating arrow instantly

reveals the exact location on the map.

Then there is the metric system, "suitable for all peoples and all ages," and gradually spreading over all the earth. One can hardly imagine its having originated elsewhere than where it did originate, namely, in France. The United States and Canadian and other coinage systems are children of this idea. In the British Commonwealth of Nations and in the United States the metric system is used by scientists.

### *Personal Traits*

"God that made the world and all things therein . . . hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation" (Acts 17: 24, 26); so there is not so great a difference in human creatures as some would like to believe. All are pretty much alike, yet there are differences which are interesting, amusing, exasperating, between one people and another, and in what follows it is not to be thought that one people are being held up before another either as models or as objects of reproach. Consider these statements and you may get some light on present-day conditions that contain so many perplexing problems.

In the spring of 1937 the Paris Exhibition was opened three weeks after the scheduled date and it was still in no condition to be opened. On that occasion a distinguished Frenchman, learned and cosmopolitan, painfully taking note of the fact that only the German, Russian and Belgian pavilions were finished, made this angry statement about his own folks:

How I detest these French people. You can do nothing with them. You can't order them, you can't appeal to them, you can't drive them, you can't coax them. You have just got to wait until they choose to do what you want and then they insist on doing it their

own way. Meanwhile they argue and talk and waste time till one goes crazy. Then suddenly they do things and one forgives them and loves them.

The newspaperman to whom this was said, P. J. Philip, of the *New York Times*, topped this peculiarly savage and withal bitter-sweet remark with the philosophical observation:

That is always the trouble. Just as nobody can stay forever angry with a beautiful woman, one cannot stay angry with the French.

The British and the American people can understand this pretty well, because, since the days of William the Conqueror (crowned in Westminster Abbey, December 25, A. D. 1066) there has been plenty of French blood flowing in British and American veins.

As far back as history goes France was inhabited chiefly by Celtic tribes, with Teutonic (Germanic) influences in the north and Mediterranean (Latin) influences in the south. It has made an interesting mixture.

A Berlin broadcast finds that the indifference of the average Frenchman toward political questions is astounding and marveled at the "wait and see" attitude while matters of life and death are hanging in the balance, but history seems to show that the French with their dilatoriness have made about as good a record as the Germans with their blitzkrieg schemes and methods.

### ***A Peculiar Local Patriotism\****

The French have, in many districts, a form of patriotism that seems peculiar. It may be styled "local" patriotism, and it is so general throughout France that even in near-by towns the people are called foreigners because their customs are regarded as peculiar. The French

\* This view is advanced by "Reverend Father" Ernest Dimnet in his book *My Old World*, and, as he has spent his life as a Catholic priest in France, he should know. However, it may be reasonably suggested that it is the earnest desire of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy to break up every republic, and therefore "Father" Dimnet would wish to see a divided France, even locally.

word for 'foreigners' is the same as for 'strangers'. This implies a large degree of attachment to one place, sometimes called "inhabitiveness". The French, if they can do so, like to live and die in the same place where their ancestors lived and died. And yet they have an "empire" which is spread over all the globe. This suggests the militaristic aspect, which must be deferred till later in this tale.

The French have been sliding down hill as far as their birth rate is concerned. The suggestion is made that with the French Revolution the peasants each received the land for which they hungered, but they wished to remain in that one place, if possible, and knew that in order to do so they must keep the number of little folks down. Hence they did so. In any event, few families are increased to great numbers in these days, either to suit the politicians who would have more voters, or the ecclesiastics who long for bigger congregations and heavier collections.

The Vichy government is now teaching pupils of 10 and 11 years of age that many hands are needed to harvest the crops that the land provides; that a depopulated land is without strength for defense and therefore invites invasion; that the French villages and countryside have become depopulated, and that the empire is in danger of being seized by others because there are so few French colonists. The children are also taught by graphs and statistics concerning the rising trend of population in other countries. They are shown that in the two centuries of France's greatest strength she had the most densely populated territory in Europe, and in later years there are talks on the dangers of celibacy and the joys for parents of having many happy children.

### ***Too Much Venality—as Elsewhere***

As Paris is the center of a world's civilization, so it is a center of a world's corruption. It has been described by a

Frenchman himself, and a capable one too (Pierre Lazareff, in his book *Deadline*), as having—

... a sodden and venal press; industrialists on the make, corrupt or fooled; politicians in similar ease; a few men honest but helpless; an army guided by old men, either defeatists at heart or unable to understand new ideas; a people from whom the truth is hidden, unable to know whom to trust.

It would be well for the reader to commit this description to memory and then see how well every statement it makes is now a matter of history. The militarists arise in the mind at once, and the beastly record they made in the Dreyfus case, the outlines of which are as follows:

In the year 1894 Colonel Alfred Dreyfus, because he chanced to be a Jew, and despite the fact that he was an entirely innocent and patriotic officer in the French army, was double-crossed by two jealous and lying fellow officers, Major Esterhazy and Colonel Henry, who falsely accused him of betraying French military secrets to Germany. It took twelve years for Dreyfus to get justice, but he finally did, and at the end Colonel Henry cut his own throat in prison, after avowing all his falsehoods and forgeries. Esterhazy also confessed, and died a pauper.

### ***To Devil's Island for Life***

In the meantime, Dreyfus had been sent to Devil's Island for life and the imaginary "honor of the army" was such, and the military code of the time was such that, as expressed in the *Manchester Guardian*, "no means proved too base, no expedient, not even systematic forgery, too foul for use in defense of that sacred cause." The *Guardian* goes on to explain:

In a century France has had some nine or ten changes of political regime. During all these revolutions and counter-revolutions the one stable thing, the red thread in French life, the constant focus of French patriotism, whether clerical, monarchist, or free-thinking Jacobin, has been the army. To the French-

man as to the citizens of no other country the army is the nation. So faithful are all sections of French opinion, even the Socialist, towards the army that it is safe to say that there would never have been a Dreyfus case had it not been for the now quite inexplicable anti-Semitic aberration into which the officer caste fell in the early nineties, and of which Dreyfus was the victim. This anti-Semitism is all the more inexplicable as in France, of all countries, and particularly in southern France, where the Phœnician element has left so strong a mark, it is almost impossible to distinguish physically a Jew from a Frenchman. It is simply because the victimization of Dreyfus and the consequent turmoil were the manifestations of such a passing and meaningless aberration that the hegemony of the military chiefs in France has survived the Dreyfusard storm when all else, the cause of the monarchy and the empire and the church, went under for ever.

The most popular writer in France, Emile Zola, sacrificed himself that Dreyfus might get a square deal. His published denunciation of the crooks in the army shook the world and compelled his own flight to Great Britain. But the reputation he made by his open letter to the president of the French Republic and which was entitled "J'accuse" still reverberates to the ends of the world. One good man at a typewriter can do far more than an Esterhazy or a Henry with a battery of 18-inch guns.

When Dreyfus died, in 1935, the *New York Times* carried two full pages going into all the phases of this greatest military scandal, saying thoughtfully, and with some courage (and one may have to read the paragraph twice to see the point):

The Zola trials brought the iniquities of the Dreyfus case relentlessly before the world. Amazement was mingled with sorrow that such things could be in "the most highly cultured nation". There the line of demarcation between the two schools of patriotism was being definitely drawn—on one side, the Monarchists, Catholics and super-Nationalists under the spell of anti-Semitism and the



"honor of the army" fetish; on the other, Republicans, Protestants, Jews, and radicals of every persuasion.

When one has clearly understood that paragraph, with all that it implies, one will have smelled a very large rat as to what has been and what is now, in its most aggravated form, the most infamous and most dangerous peril of the French Republic, not even excepting Schicklgruber himself.

### ***What Devil's Island Is Like***

Devil's Island itself lies six miles off the coast of the prison colony of French Guiana, just north of the equator, on the northeastern coast of South America. The idea of making an unpleasant home for his unpleasant subjects first arose in the mind of a gentleman then in the king business, Louis XV of France.

This wise or otherwise and humane or inhumane ruler in the year A. D. 1763 shipped off 14,000 criminals, and in six months or so they all died of fever, plague, snakes, wild beasts, savages, hunger, or other foes that they found awaiting them, which includes the unhappy combination of tropical storms with torrid heat.

Being in the king business, and therefore not pressed with either necessities or thoughts for those who had become victims of misgovernment or folly, Louis tried the same stunt three years later, with the same result. After he had tried it twice and learned nothing, the policy was adopted, and has been practiced ever since.

History shows that where seemingly bad men have been sent to a decent climate, they readily clean up, with excellent results to themselves and their friends and governors. Both America and Australia were once penal colonies for Great Britain.

But take a group of perhaps inferior men; mix in a few that are half insane; add on a generous installment of those afflicted with loathsome diseases; top it off with some lepers and here and there

an innocent man; deprive the expedition of thermometers, iodine, quinine, and send it to a land of mosquitoes, snakes, venomous spider crabs, vultures, pumas, wild pigs, scorpions, sloths, vermin, and put sharks in the surrounding waters, and you have a fair idea of this prison camp.

The natural result is that out of 800 annual arrivals at the camp, 200 are dead in six months. In 1901 there were 6,290 inhabitants of this penal colony. In the next fourteen years more than 10,000 arrived there from France. Yet when the fourteen years were up there were only 6,415 in the camp. Dreyfus had four years of this.

The convicts are carried in a prison ship fitted with steel cages equipped with steampipes. In case of mutiny the steam can be turned on, thus emulating results obtained in one of the Pennsylvania prisons in recent years, where four were baked to order. (Nothing was done with the Pennsylvania-baked prisoners, nor with those that had charge of the culinary details. No prisoners were eaten.)

Occasionally, but rarely, some prisoners have escaped via Trinidad to America, the land of the brave, where even little children have taken their stand on the side of Almighty God and His Word when it cost them everything a little child holds dear. The use of Devil's Island is on the way out.

### ***Some Judges as Bad as—Elsewhere***

The Stavisky scandal, which broke in 1934, is one that puts French officials and judges in about the same light in which some shone in Chicago in the days of Al Capone. Stavisky, it seems, was a clever swindler, concerning whom it was admitted in the Chamber of Deputies that he was under arrest on a criminal charge and yet was released without being brought to trial.

When the storm broke Stavisky committed suicide, and fifteen people, including his wife, were jailed, but the French Republic, not even expecting

whole truth was revealed and that some of the really big men in France were not involved. The magistrate who knew the facts was lured from home and murdered. At the time of the partial exposé of this man the London *Observer* said:

Magistrates are accused of being at the beck and call of barristers who are also Deputies and can bring political pressure to bear. Rival newspapers are alleged not only to have drawn subsidies from Secret Service funds, but to have been in the pay of Stavisky himself, who either bought them off when they began to attack him or engaged their editors or contributors as touts for the placing of his valueless bonds. Lastly, there are the suspicious protections and condonations which enabled Stavisky, convicted forger, card-sharper and impostor, awaiting trial on a new charge, freely to continue his fraudulent operations.

Eight months later, under the title "The Stavisky Mystery Grows Still Deeper",\* the Paris correspondent of the New York *Times* said:

There has been so much lying, so much camouflaging of the truth, such violence of accusation, such insidious insinuation that very few people any longer believe anything that emanates from any quarter in which the hand of politics can be suspected; and the hand of politics is seen everywhere.

### ***Too Many Politicians***

In sixty-five years of the Third Republic France had eighty-eight different cabinets. That is a new government every nine months, and it is just too much of a good thing. It is not a half bad idea to have a housecleaning once in a while, and get in some new blood; but what would the people of the United States say to the idea of having a brand new administration at Washington four times in every three years? They would say, and rightly, that nobody could accomplish anything worth while in so short

\* The subtitle was, "The scandal that upset one government in France continues to harass another, while the truth, even concerning the death of the man who may have known all, evades capture."

a time, and probably wind up with "Let him alone and give him a chance".

But in France it is different. One can do a Finnegan in French politics every year for many years and nobody thinks anything of it. And the statesmen have to take the sudden changes along with the mere politicians. Thus, take the case of Aristide Briand. It is generally agreed that he was one of the most sincere and capable men France produced in the last century. His life shows that he was interested in the French people, in democracy, and in the pursuit of the joys of peace. In a period of a third of a century he served in twenty-three cabinets and was France's premier no less than eleven times. Like every real statesman, Briand was a gentleman of the Left, always fighting the bloodthirsty and infinitely selfish groups that go to make up the Big Church crowd and its satellites. In a review of his life the New York *Times* said:

The French Chamber was split into a dozen little parties at that time and no Ministry lasted more than a few months. Briand set out at once to secure a union of the radical elements, and he soon became a leader of the Left in the constant fight to check the reactionary Deputies of the Right. The question of Church and State was agitating France. Catholic, Protestant and Jewish religious organizations were recognized by the government and were supported out of the State treasury. The Roman Catholic Church was the dominant one, of course, and the issue became the Church of Rome against the French state. *The Clerical party was also the Royalist party, and for the most part those who supported the claims of the church were also advocating overthrow of the republic.*

Briand interested himself in this controversy from the first, taking the anti-clerical viewpoint. A commission was appointed to prepare a separation law and Briand became a reporter of the commission. His report did much to insure the ultimate adoption of the law. He succeeded in carrying the measure through with the united support of the groups which he had brought together. Although he

was widely condemned as an enemy of religion, his own mild but firm arguments for separation won over many who had taken the opposite view. In the ensuing elections all of the Deputies who had voted for separation were returned.

### ***Who Are France's Enemies?***

It ought to be plain enough, even to a blind man, what kind of politics it is that has been ruining France. It is the same kind of politics that aims at the destruction of every democracy and the seating back in power of the incompetent, empty-headed, empty-hearted, strutting, vicious titled aristocracy whose only real objective in life is to see that they themselves receive as much as they can carry in the way of wealth and honors, while the common people slave from year's end to year's end for just enough to keep their physical machinery working. Notice again now that last sentence at the end of paragraph one above quoted:

*The Clerical party was also the Royalist party, and for the most part those who supported the claims of the church were also advocating the overthrow of the republic.*

It is easy enough from the foregoing to see who France's real enemies were and who they are now. Briand and Clemenceau are both dead. Neither of them would trust any churchman farther than you could throw a live bull by the tail. That is one reason why the pope was not even invited to a gallery ticket in the League of Nations. Clemenceau would not have him around. He thought it would be hard-enough going without loading up with a lot of sanctified hypocrites that hate nothing on earth so much as a "government of the people, by the people and for the people".

Their own repeatedly published statements prove that the Hierarchy abominates and hates above all things freedom of speech and freedom of the press. And when they speak of "freedom of religion", what they mean, and only that, is freedom of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy to practice its tomfoolery and

teach its blasphemies without competition and at State expense. Some colossal nerve!

Briand was an ardent striver for peace. He believed in the League of Nations, and when Germany joined, in September, 1926, he welcomed her in these words:

No more war! No more shall we resort to brutal and sanguinary methods of settling our disputes, even though differences between us still exist. Henceforth it will be for the judge to declare the law. Just as individual citizens take their difficulties to be settled by a magistrate, so shall we bring ours to be settled by pacific procedure.

Poor man! How little he knew of the long memories and the infinite viciousness of the Jesuits! Along with Mr. Kellogg, he was responsible for the so-called "Kellogg Peace Pact". You heard about that pact, which outlawed war between nations. But in almost no time the pope was using Adolf Cardinal Schicklgruber and Benito Cardinal Mussolini to blow the Spanish Republic to pieces on the false ground that it was "Red", i.e., had Russia's aid.

### ***Dodging the Vital Truth***

It is hard for a blind man to see anything, and so not much should be expected from the otherwise bright men and women that act as columnists. Few of the daily papers would have the courage to mention that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is directly and squarely behind and responsible for present conditions in France, even if they knew such to be the case. But they do not know, and have not the courage to know the truth on this subject. And why? Because "the god of this world hath blinded the minds" (2 Cor. 4: 4) of almost all the people on earth. The people, who "love to have it so", are carried away with the bluff, the pretense, the absurd titles, the peculiar dress, the horsecollars, the processions, and the smells, which they mistake to be the smells of sanctity, and so most of them

never learn much more than mother taught them; and that wasn't much.

Now there is the columnist William Philip Simms. He has yet to learn that it is better to die for the truth than to live without it. On last Bastille Day (July 14, 1942) he made the following statement as to the causes for France's fall at the hands of Germany, which skillfully avoids any mention of the Jesuit forces that were and are at the bottom of the whole deviltry now on in Europe:

The fact is the Frenchman is the world's greatest individualist. He is its greatest grouch. He freely criticizes his government, his books, his theater, his art, his food—everything. He prizes his independence of soul and body no whit less than we do ours. Certainly he is no less interested in preserving his own way of life, free from all the "isms". Certain observers abroad say France fell because of "treason" in high places. Or because the French people or somebody or other preferred Hitler to democracy. They hint at all sorts of dark things. France fell because of weakness and lack of ability in high place, not treason. She fell because she had too many politicians and too few statesmen. She fell because her politicians thought about votes first and country afterward.

### **Another Real Statesman**

Referring again to the truthful statement in the *New York Times*, "*The Clerical party was also the Royalist party, and for the most part those who supported the claims of the church were also advocating the overthrow of the republic*," it is in order to notice another real statesman, Leon Blum, who dared to follow in Aristide Briand's footsteps, to seek the paths of peace, to try to do something for the common people, and who thereby brought upon his head the wrath of the "Clerical party (that) was also the Royalist party", as it is everywhere.

Briand had been dead but a few months when representatives of this group (that even in these United States

is even at this moment conspiring to put Otto Hapsburg on the throne of the "Holy" Roman Empire) attacked Blum outside of the Chamber of Deputies and tried to kill him. Three of their "fronts", the Action Francaise League, the National Confederation of Royalist Students, and the Camelots du Roi, were immediately disbanded by the government, but all the gang had to do was to adopt a new name, move across the street, or up to the next floor, and start all over again their life job in every land of "advocating the overthrow of the republic" if they chance to live where there is one.

Within a month Blum was back in the Chamber of Deputies and as premier was presenting a \$1,000,000,000 defense bill to try to give France adequate protection against the aggression which even then (March 13, 1937) was foreseen as liable to come from the Jesuit front of the "Holy" Roman Empire at the hands of Adolf Hitler, then getting into his stride on money put up for him by Thyssen and other financial backers of the brains of the Empire located at Vatican City.

Up in the gallery chic Mme. Blum was listening to her man's eloquent speech with rapt attention. Near her sat the wife of one of the advocates of the "Holy" Roman Empire (now slowly lifting its "seven heads and ten horns" and getting ready to be the saddle horse for the Old Lady styled in the Scriptures as the "MOTHER OF HARLOTS"). The other femme made a derogatory remark. Mme. Blum went to bat and in a voice that could be heard far and wide shouted, "Shut up. This is no place to make remarks like that." In a moment the gallery was in an uproar, and both women, and all the rest of the listeners, were ejected. But Blum's defense bill was passed. It was a typical French scene.

In the same year, five months later (and that is a long time in the political history of a French premier) the same man made a defense of the democratic



system, from which a few expressions are taken which ought to be of interest to every person who has confidence in the principles that have made the French people and the American people fast friends. He said:

France believes in political liberty. She believes in civic equality. She believes in human fraternity. She professes that all citizens are born free and equal before the law. Among the fundamental rights of the individual she places liberty of thought and conscience in first rank.

Without the civil liberty that the French Revolution proclaimed, the authoritarian states of Europe would not today have at their heads men risen from the depths of the people and drawing from that origin their titles and their pride.

France can cite her own example. For three months the government has been carrying out important social reforms. It has done so with the widest popular movement of expectation and hope. But it has done so without a single clash between citizens, without order having been disturbed in the street a single time, without a single institution having been overthrown, without a single citizen having been despoiled.

Is it not thanks to democracy that the United States has been able to bring about a prodigious economic renewal in a few years without compromising legal order for a single instant, without going outside the framework of the Constitution elaborated just after the War of Independence by American disciples of Montesquieu and Rousseau?

France remains faithful to democracy. Although she keeps her full confidence in the age-old power to spread her influence, France does not claim to impose on any people the principles of government that she believes wisest and most just. She respects their sovereignty as she expects them to respect hers.

France rejects utterly the idea of wars of propaganda and wars of reprisal. The causes of war that weigh on the world are already heavy enough without her wanting to add to them with a doctrinal crusade, even for ideas that she believes right and just, even against systems that she believes false and evil. She

wants to live in peace with all the nations of the world, whatever may be their internal regime.

You Americans outside of Little Rock, Klamath Falls, and a few other places, who claim to believe in democracy, what do you think of these words by this Socialist who tried to steer France in the right way at the very moment that in Germany "the Clerical party (which is also) the Royalist party" was running the munition plants day and night with the ultimate object in view of planting Otto Hapsburg (descendant of a tax collector) back on the throne of the "Holy" Roman Empire? Within less than three years from the time Blum said these things "the Clerical party (which is) the Royalist party" and which was at that moment "advocating the overthrow of the republic" of which he was premier was in control of France and Hitler and his generals were in Paris, depriving the French people of every single one of the liberties which they gained in the French Revolution and which Leon Blum so much admired. Blum, often twitted with being a "millionaire socialist", came from a Jewish family of Alsatian origin. What is wrong about that?

Nothing much. But this would be a good time to recall the statement quoted regarding the Zola trials and the Dreyfus case, that, according to the *New York Times*,

there the line of demarcation between the two schools of patriotism was being definitely drawn—on the one side, the Monarchists, Catholics and super-Nationalists under the spell of anti-Semitism and the "honor of the Army" fetish; on the other, Republicans, Protestants, Jews, and radicals of every persuasion.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy has steadfastly and consistently and successfully worked for the destruction of the French Republic. It soon ousted Blum. And the pope rejoiced inordinately when the republic went out and Hitler and Petain took over.

## Dove or Raven, Which?

**T**HOSE only bear the title of Monsignor who are *familiares summi pontificis*, those, who, by virtue of some distinction bestowed upon them, belong as it were to the family and the retinue of the 'Holy Father'. These *familiares* are entitled to be present in the *cappella pontificia* (when the pope celebrates solemn mass), and to participate in all public celebrations purely religious or ecclesiastical in character, at which the pope, the cardinals, and the papal retinue assist. It is assumed that they will appear in the robes corresponding to their respective offices."

This quotation from *The Catholic Encyclopedia* aids us in recognizing the fact that the "Rt. Rev. Msgr." Fulton J. Sheen occupies a favored and important position in the Catholic Hierarchy. The monsignor recently delivered a series of addresses on PEACE. He said, significantly, in the eighth of the series:

I profoundly believe that he [Pacelli] whose name is rooted in peace will be the one who will restore peace to the world, for when peace

does come it will come not in the way the world expects or plans it, but in an utterly unsuspected way. And, perhaps this very pontiff who was the first pontiff in the long line of pontiffs ever to fly, may be the one, who, in the midst of the deluge of blood of this awful war which has drowned millions and devastated homes and ruined the world, will himself, like a dove, fly out from the ark of St. Peter over devastated areas and come back bearing, for a weary world, the olive branch of peace, as the rainbow appears in the sky attesting to a new covenant of man with God. We shall see!!!

In the same discourse he said:

... a day will come when the "Church" will sing a requiem over the graves of her persecutors as her children once more climb out of catacombs to preach Christ and Him crucified.

Mr. Sheen does not say so, but he knows that the Roman Church is back of the present world-wide scheme to reinstate coercive totalitarianism, and to wipe out every form of freedom the world over. The thing is known. Positively, Mr. Sheen.

---

## "Blessed Are the Merciful"

**M**AN was intended by the Creator to exercise mercy toward even the lower animals, and the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals has the good wishes of all the best citizens in the countries where it is domiciled. The black sheep of any farming community is any man who does not properly look after the welfare of his livestock. Many a man has been fined or jailed, or both, for cruelty to horses, dogs or other of the animal creation that chanced to be in his care.

It is with a good deal of astonishment, therefore, that one learns that one of the principles of Nazism is that mercy should be withheld, not merely from the lower animals, but from fellow creatures, made in the image and likeness of God.

Thus, after Hitler entered Poland, in September, 1939, an official Nazi spokesman, Gauleiter Forster, issued this diabolical manifesto:

The German cause has been entrusted to our keeping by the Fuehrer, with the very clear mission to reorganize this country. It will be our highest and most honorable task to do whatsoever lies in our power so that in a few years everything that can in any way be reminiscent of Poland shall have disappeared. This applies most particularly to the racial cleansing of this country. Whosoever belongs to the Polish people must leave this land. We trust that in this struggle for the triumph of our German cause we shall never become merciful.

All Poland was divided into two parts, the "Incorporated Territories" and the

"Government-General". In the first and choicest of these two areas there were, at the start, 9,000,000 Poles and 600,000 Germans. It was decided to dispose of the 9,000,000 Poles (and of their property) by moving them all over into the second and least fertile and least desirable area. In the first year after the overrunning of the country about one-sixth of these Poles were shifted.

When the farmers saw that they would be liable at any time to lose their farms, they refrained from digging their potatoes and sowing their winter wheat. Cattle, pigs, chickens, ducks and geese were killed. Pillow cases and featherbeds were ripped open and their contents dumped into wells. Windows were broken, ovens were smashed, and doors and floors were hewn to pieces.

It still remains true, "Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy"; and the corollary is also true, that 'Cursed are the merciless; for they shall reap as they sow.' Just now it would suit Hitler and his comrades very well to have a high agricultural production

in Poland. It would help to feed his armies in Russia. But throughout Poland there has been a 30-percent to 35-percent decrease in the stocks of cattle and pigs and a 35-percent to 40-percent fall in agricultural production.

The result is that slavery and the slave trade have been re-established. Polish farm hands shipped to Germany are treated as if they were slaves. The farmers assemble at the slave markets and select their men, examining their muscles and teeth as if they were animals for sale.

All potential Polish leaders have been executed, but this has brought no benefits to the "New Order". Polish boys in every land seek to avenge the loss of their fathers and brothers. It seems never to occur to the Nazi leaders that being merciless is a game that two can play. And, also, that in forcing other men into desperation they are destroying all chance of such ever becoming component parts of the "New Order" of cruelty and rapine, which, after all, as the pope admits, is not new.

---

## SPECIAL OFFER BY "CONSOLATION"

---

<p><b>GOOD ONLY DURING THE WATCHTOWER CAMPAIGN</b>  <b>ENDING APRIL 30.</b> <i>Consolation</i> magazine is regularly offered at \$1.00 for one year's subscription. <b>BUT</b> during the present campaign, with each new yearly subscription for <i>Consolation</i> there will be given, <b>FREE</b>, the constructive 384-page book <i>THE NEW WORLD</i> and the current 32-page booklet <i>PEACE—CAN IT LAST?</i></p>
--

<p>If you are not receiving the <i>Consolation</i> magazine regularly, subscribe now and receive this special premium; also extend this notice to your friends, so they may arrange to have this priceless companion, <i>Consolation</i>, coming to their home every two weeks. The present evil days bring darkness and fear; <i>Consolation</i> magazine brings light and comfort.</p>
--

**WATCHTOWER**

**117 Adams St.**

**Brooklyn, N. Y.**

For the enclosed \$1.00 remittance please send me the *Consolation* magazine regularly for 1 year. Also please send to me, prepaid, the premium *The New World* and *Peace—Can It Last?*

Name ..... Street .....  
 City ..... State .....

## Otto the White Hope

IT IS a big job trying to re-establish the "Holy" Roman Empire, and to make it seem both holy and Roman. A favorite suggestion seems to be that, when the due time has come, one of Hitler's doubles will be bumped off in public, Hitler will disappear in a monastery, and then forth will come some man who had parents or ancestors and be given the nominal job of ruling the empire. The Jesuits will do the actual ruling.

It is argued that Otto Hapsburg had both parents and ancestors and this should make him qualified to rule. It seems to be his principal qualification. Bishop Boyle, of Pittsburgh, is pushing this, and with some success. He had a big dinner not long ago at which Otto was put up as the white hope. He can prove that a recent ancestor was Franz Joseph, emperor of Austria, and some centuries back he had ancestors that were tax collectors. And there is a distinct connection between tax collecting and government, as everybody that ever paid any taxes knows full well. So his ancestors' old job awaits him.

Dorothy Thompson, able columnist, is considerably disturbed about Otto. Over the radio on Sunday night, December 13, 1942, she thought millions of Slav workers in American war industries were not enamored of Otto, and drew attention to the fact that, as long ago as last April, 2,500 delegates to the American Slav Congress had protested to the State department about any proposed hookup with Otto.

They think that Otto has never done anything but eat and breathe, while they have done that and a lot of honest work besides. Now there is something to that argument. The Slavs have about as much use for Otto Hapsburg as the average American has for Hitler or Mussolini. However, the Hierarchy is strong for Otto. The argument is that, next to the pope, he has the best claim to the

right to rule the "Holy" Roman Empire.

Another favorite, but not so much so, is the duke of Guise, one of the many pretenders to the French throne. He claims that he also had a father and mother; and this may be true. He advances that as a reason for condemning the French parliamentary system, and other systems which he names, and sticking to a monarchy as the only solution for internal disorders and foreign dangers. This, he thinks, would give him a nice job and he would not have to do any work or worry about where his meals are to come from. This might appeal to some. These monarchists are not all wrong; maybe not more than 99.44 percent.

Still another is referred to in the *London Catholic Herald* of September 19, 1941. With true insight into the clerical-military-big business hopes it labels the story "Monarchy: a Focus for French Patriotism"; but if you can see in the following anything that smacks the least bit of patriotism for the French Republic, then you should at once hook up with Bishop Boyle, of Pittsburgh, who has been doing most of the prancing in front of Otto Hapsburg, boosting him as the only living heir of the "Holy" Roman Empire:

The baptism of the twin sons of the French Pretender, the Comte de Paris, in the Cathedral of Rabat, Morocco, on July 26, has acted as a convenient inspiration. The Vicar Apostolate of Morocco, Mgr. Henri Vielle, O. F. M., who officiated, congratulated the parents on having chosen godparents from workers and peasant families to reconcile the alliance between people and monarchy. The godparents were from various French provinces, including, significantly, Alsace, Flanders and Savoy. They included a mother of thirteen children. It was noted that the date of the birth of the Princess was the anniversary of "the grievous armistice". After the ceremony the crowds shouted "Vive la France! Vive le Roi!"



## Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"

### Cruden's Concordance

A BIBLE concordance is an alphabetical index of the words contained in the Bible and showing the book, chapter and verse where each of such words is found. An exhaustive concordance is one that is thorough in considering all the elements of the Bible, thereby enabling the searcher to locate each of the principal, essential or key words of the Bible either in its original tongue or in the translation thereof into another language, or both.

In the English language, since October, 1737, the Bible concordance produced by Alexander Cruden, of England, was the nearest to an exhaustive concordance for at least one hundred and fifty years, during which time it maintained its popularity and was recommended by most eminent Bible scholars. Cruden's is an alphabetical index of the words in the King James Version of the Holy Scriptures. Being less expensive, it is doubtless the concordance in most common possession by students of the Bible in the English translation. It is well, therefore, to consider how the possessor thereof can get the most value and help in Bible study from Cruden's.

The simplest help that should be common to all exhaustive concordances is to enable the searcher to find in the Bible any desired text, one or more words of which text he remembers, not omitting a single text of the Bible or even one occurrence or location of the word or words remembered. Cruden's offers several facilities for quickly locating such. The complete edition provides three alphabets: first, an alphabet of the common names or nouns of the Bible; second, an alphabet of the proper names or nouns; and, third, an alphabet of the common names of the Apocrypha. More recent editions of Cruden's omit this third alphabetical index. So then, in looking up a text including the name of any Bible character, one turns directly

to the second alphabet, listing all proper nouns of the Bible; and in running down the particular name one does not have to skim over all the common nouns which would come in between if common and proper nouns were all in one general list in consecutive order alphabetically. Furthermore, Cruden's carries a complete table of all proper names with the meaning of each name according to the original Hebrew or Greek language. The student can refer to this for ascertaining the meaning of the name of any Bible character or place when the Bible helps in the back of the Watchtower edition or other edition of the Bible do not give an exhaustive table of Bible names or no table at all.

Cruden's provides an aid to quickly locating common names or nouns in that the texts containing a key word are not all listed merely under that word; but where the word occurs frequently or repetitiously in a common expression or combination with another word or words, then all texts containing that expression or combination are listed together under it as a subheading. For example, the word "held" heads first a list of texts including "held" in general settings. Then there is a subheading "held peace", under which are set out in book, chapter and verse order all texts where the combination "held peace" occurs. If wanting that combination, look at once in that list. Under "hold" Cruden's lists first texts in general, then those containing the expression "hold fast", and then those containing "hold peace". Under "able" one can locate texts containing that word in general, then those containing "be able", then "not be able", and then "not able". Under "abominations" one finds texts grouped under the subheadings "their abominations", "these abominations," "thine and thy abominations." Sometimes a word form is both a "noun" and a "verb". Hence Cruden's divides texts under "help" into two

groups, one with texts having "help" as a noun or substantive, and all the other texts under "help" as a verb. Likewise texts under "abode" are grouped according to whether "abode" is a noun or a verb.

Cruden's lists even such pronouns as "him", "me," "thee," "them," etc., where they occur combined with the prepositions "above, about, after, against, at, before, behind, beside(s), between, by, for, from, in, of, on, over, to or unto, toward, under, with, within, without". It also lists prepositions and adverbs, such as "about". Hence, to find the text, "Without me ye can do nothing," one could look up the pronoun "me" and trace the text under the subheading "without me". Cruden's also shows the locations of words which do not occur in the regular text of the King James Version, but which do appear in the margin where a Bible edition has the marginal references. These particular verses Cruden's indicates by an obelisk, a dagger-like sign, before the verse number. For instance, to find those texts where the word "hell" occurs in the text, but the margin says the Hebrew or Greek word is the word for "grave", one simply looks up the word "grave", and the obelisk before the verse numbers show the texts one wants. To find texts which contain the word *grave* but where the margin says *hell*, merely look up the word *hell* and trace down the verses marked with an obelisk. When wanting instances where the marginal reading shows the name "Jehovah", then hunt for the obelisk-marked verses under the heading "Jehovah".

There are many parallel passages in the Bible, that is, verses reading alike. To show these Cruden's lists the first instance of such passages, quoting part of the passage with the key word, and right thereafter cites the locations of all parallel passages without quoting any part thereof. For instance, under the word "abased": after listing Matthew 23:12 and quoting part of the text, "whosoever shall exalt himself shall be

abased," Cruden's then follows up this quotation with the citation of Luke 14:11; 18:14. Cruden's also has cross references to related words. For example, under the word "air", after listing all the texts containing that key word, it gives the cross reference, "See *fowls*"; since fowls are associated with the air.

Cruden's does not show the original Hebrew, Chaldee, or Greek words from which the English translation is made. It is well known that oftentimes one Hebrew, Chaldee, or Greek word is translated by different words in different texts in English. For instance, the Hebrew word *Sheol* is translated three ways, as "hell", "grave," and "pit"; or vice versa, one English word is oftentimes used to translate several individual Hebrew, Chaldee, or Greek words. Cruden's recognizes this fact, and tries to offer some help in that behalf. In the case where an English word translates several original words, Cruden's first cites a number of texts where the key word occurs but where the meanings vary according to the different Hebrew or Greek words from which the one English key word is translated. These citations have the key word explained according to the meaning of the original word, but, in the list of scriptures underneath, Cruden's does not show in which particular texts the English word is translated from the one or the other original word. Examples of such treatment are the words "abide" and "abomination"; which see.

Finally, Cruden's last department is a Compendium of the whole Bible, which gives a brief summary of every chapter of every book or epistle in the Bible. This is more complete than the terse summary which some Bible editions give at the head of each chapter of each book. Cruden's Bible Compendium might therefore prove useful, especially where the whole Bible is being studied, as an outline or memory aid for the discussion of the contents of a given chapter or book of the Bible.

# Rightly Dividing the Word of Truth

Observe how these two persons are learning to rightly divide the word of truth.



And where are they finding the word of truth? In God's Word, the Bible, and Bible helps.

**WHAT** are these two persons using to **RIGHTLY DIVIDE** the word of truth?

The timely Bible aids published by the Watchtower Society.

You may receive two of these Bible aids **FREE** during the **WATCHTOWER** CAMPAIGN, February 1 to April 30. Here is how you may obtain them: Send in now a year's subscription (at the regular rate, \$1.00) for the **WATCHTOWER** magazine, a 16-page, semimonthly journal devoted entirely to "rightly dividing the word of truth". You will then receive as a premium, **FREE**, the 384-page book *THE NEW WORLD* and the timely 32-page booklet *PEACE—CAN IT LAST?*

**You need this information NOW! So why not act during this WATCHTOWER CAMPAIGN by taking advantage of the above special offer?**

---

**WATCHTOWER, 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y.**

"Study to shew  
thyself approved  
unto God, . . .  
rightly dividing  
the word of truth."  
—2 Timothy 2:15.

I wish to subscribe for *The Watchtower* for 1 year, for which I enclose \$1.00. On receipt thereof please send to me, prepaid, the book *The New World* and the booklet *Peace—Can It Last?*

Name .....

Street .....

City ..... State .....

# CONSOLATION

A JOURNAL OF FACT, HOPE AND COURAGE

## New World College

A larger campaign of education before Armageddon the goal

---

## Humility in Action

The only basis for an enduring peace and prosperity

---

## Why the Jews Are Being Slain

The age-long sufferings of Israel reach a climax

---

## Missing Abundance on Earth by a Hair

Unbelievable prosperity for all might be possible if—



# Contents

New World College Is Dedicated	3
Its Name and Location	4
The Main College Building	6
Registration	8
Dedication Exercises	10
Other Training Features	15
Student Reactions	16
"Thy Word Is Truth"	
Humility in Action	17
Why the Jews Are Being Slain	19
The Jews Are First in Line	19
Conditions Get More Gruesome	19
Jesuits Get Busy Everywhere	20
"Latin-American Jews Attacked"	21
Shatterproof Light Bulbs	21
Slave Labor for the Reich	22
Missing It by a Hair	23
Things That Already Are	23
Killing Off the Chinese Republic	25
Against Every Republic	25
Entirely Pagan	26
Demonism in Phoenix	26
America's Menace	27
Catholic Bus Bills	27
Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"	
Coherence	29
Here and There	31
The Columnist and the Clergyman	2

Published every other Wednesday by  
**WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, INC.**  
 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

## OFFICERS

<b>President</b>	<b>N. H. Knorr</b>
<b>Secretary</b>	<b>W. E. Van Amburgh</b>
<b>Editor</b>	<b>Clayton J. Woodworth</b>

## Five Cents a Copy

\$1 a year in the United States  
 \$1.25 to Canada and all other countries

## NOTICE TO SUBSCRIBERS

**Remittances:** For your own safety, remit by postal or express money order. When coin or currency is lost in the ordinary mails, there is no redress. Remittances from countries other than those named below may be made to the Brooklyn office, but only by international postal money order.

**Receipt of a new or renewal subscription** will be acknowledged only when requested. **Notice of Expiration** is sent with the journal one month before subscription expires. Please renew promptly to avoid loss of copies. **Send change of address** direct to us rather than to the post office. Your request should reach us at least two weeks before the date of issue with which it is to take effect. Send your old as well as the new address. Copies will not be forwarded by the post office to your new address unless extra postage is provided by you. **Published also** in Greek, Portuguese, Spanish, and Ukrainian.

## OFFICES FOR OTHER COUNTRIES

<b>England</b>	34 Craven Terrace, London, W. 2
<b>Australia</b>	7 Beresford Road, Strathfield, N. S. W.
<b>South Africa</b>	623 Boston House, Cape Town
<b>Mexico</b>	Calzada de Melchor Ocampo 71, Mexico, D. F.
<b>Brazil</b>	Caixa Postal 1319, Rio de Janeiro
<b>Argentina</b>	Calle Honduras 5646-48, Buenos Aires

Entered as second-class matter at Brooklyn, N. Y., under the Act of March 3, 1879.

# Notandum

## The Columnist and the Clergyman

◆ Columnist George E. Sokolsky, in the Zanesville (Ohio) *News*, of October 2, 1942, defends his use of the Bible's wisdom, in his writings, against a critical minister. He says:

Many clergymen these days devote their sermons to current literature and current events.

The particular clergyman resents . . . my using the Bible to make a point. Yet, it is as natural for me to turn to the Bible as it is for him, perhaps, to turn to a modern writer. I find a wealth of analogy there.

After all, five thousand years of human experience is of greater value than a world which commenced in 1933 and has never been right since.

I am sure that one of our major difficulties—and when I say "our", I mean the whole of mankind—is that we have lost guidance, moving rapidly but without compass.

The end of the nineteenth century threw God over as a guide and accepted Science, but Science offered only facts but no guidance, knowledge but not wisdom, details to the minutia of the electron but no philosophy of life.

And in the twentieth century we accept the great teachings of economics and sociology and our prophet was Karl Marx—and where are we? We are confused and perplexed. We are like madmen, hating each other.

Every miserable prejudice and pettiness of the most primitive savage has become a way of life adopted by millions of people, and praised as an ethical procedure.

Two thousand years of slow, painful effort to lessen the bestiality of man, to civilize him and soften his nature, has been wiped away by the resurgence of brutal materialism.

And yet, it is a clergyman who says in a letter, "The bringing the Bible to bear evidence for him, [struck me] as disreputable." Where shall one turn these days for guidance? To politicians who deceive? To clergymen who have become politicians?

I turn to the wisdom of the ages and find there a transcendent comfort.

# CONSOLATION

“And in His name shall the nations hope.”—Matthew 12:21, A. R. V.

Volume XXIV

Brooklyn, N. Y., Wednesday, March 17, 1943

Number 613

## New World College Is Dedicated

A NEW WORLD of righteousness is at hand. As one of the visible evidences of its imminence a college of the highest learning was dedicated the first day of February, this year. The opening of this college in the midst of a world engaged in total war resulting in destruction of many institutions of higher learning and the closing down of others is quite in the opposite direction from the course of the old world. While yet at war the governments of nations, states and cities are planning for the postwar period of this same old world. The new college, however, has not been established to aid in such postwar arrangements. It represents entirely the New World which God himself will establish when the postwar setup of men goes down.

The warring nations are already on the march to a still greater conflict, the battle of Armageddon. After the present global war ends with victory for the United Nations as it is hoped, and the postwar “new order” sets in, the nations will keep on with their march to the grand climax, “the battle of that great day of God Almighty.” It marks the final end of the old world. Then comes the new world, with its Theocratic Government of everlasting life, happiness and prosperity on earth in an enduring peace.

All persons of good-will who discern the “signs of the times” and who desire to survive the great world cataclysm and to enter into the unspeakable blessings of the righteous new world need now to be informed concerning

these tremendous events which face us all. Being enlightened and given the opportunity to act intelligently, such seekers of life and happiness can make a choice and take their stand for God and his Theocratic Government before Armageddon’s fight. The new college is dedicated to the work of educating the people in these matters affecting their eternal destinies. Hence the establishment of the college is not an indication that the battle of Armageddon is farther off than has been believed hitherto by students of Bible prophecy and the times, but is a strong indication that the time till that battle is short. By inaugurating the college its backers are not seeking to extend or lengthen the time until Armageddon, but are striving to speed up the campaign of education which must be carried on world-wide before the great tribulation, breaks.

All engaged in this work of enlightening humankind concerning the new world must intensify their efforts because of the shortness of the time that remains. To this end the New World college has been set up at this late date. During the sixteen centuries of “Christendom’s” existence, and now particularly since World War I, religion has failed to give the people the needed information. The New World college is not a religious affair, but is Christian, and hence meets the people’s greatest need of the hour.

Study of sacred prophecy indicates that God has a fixed time to begin His fight at the battle of Armageddon; as it is written in the maxims of the wise man Solomon: “To every thing there is

a season, and a time to every purpose under the heaven: a time to love, and a time to hate; a time of WAR, and a time of peace." (Ecclesiastes 3:1, 8) Therefore, whatever any creatures on earth now do could in no wise move forward the date of Armageddon or push it back. At most, students of the Scriptures can only take cognizance of the evidence of Armageddon's nearness and can then apply themselves to the utmost and in the most effective manner to get the allotted work done on time. The interim between the close of World War I in 1918 and the beginning of the battle of Armageddon constitutes the time period by which Jehovah God Almighty shortens the days of tribulation. Concerning this the great Master prophesied, saying: "For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved; but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened." (Matthew 24: 21, 22) It is therefore urgent that all who want life in the new world avail themselves of God's provision for salvation which He causes to be published during this period of shortening the days. Thereby such ones may be hid in the day of His anger and may be of 'that flesh which is saved' during Armageddon.

It is plain, then, that the establishment of the New World college is not by men, but is the provision of Almighty God at His due time and according to His infinite mercy to mankind. The college is no matter of passing interest, but should command the attention of all persons seeking the way of life on earth under God's kingdom. Such will therefore read with keen interest and enjoyment this account of the dedication and opening activities of the WATCHTOWER BIBLE COLLEGE OF GILEAD.

### ***Its Name and Location***

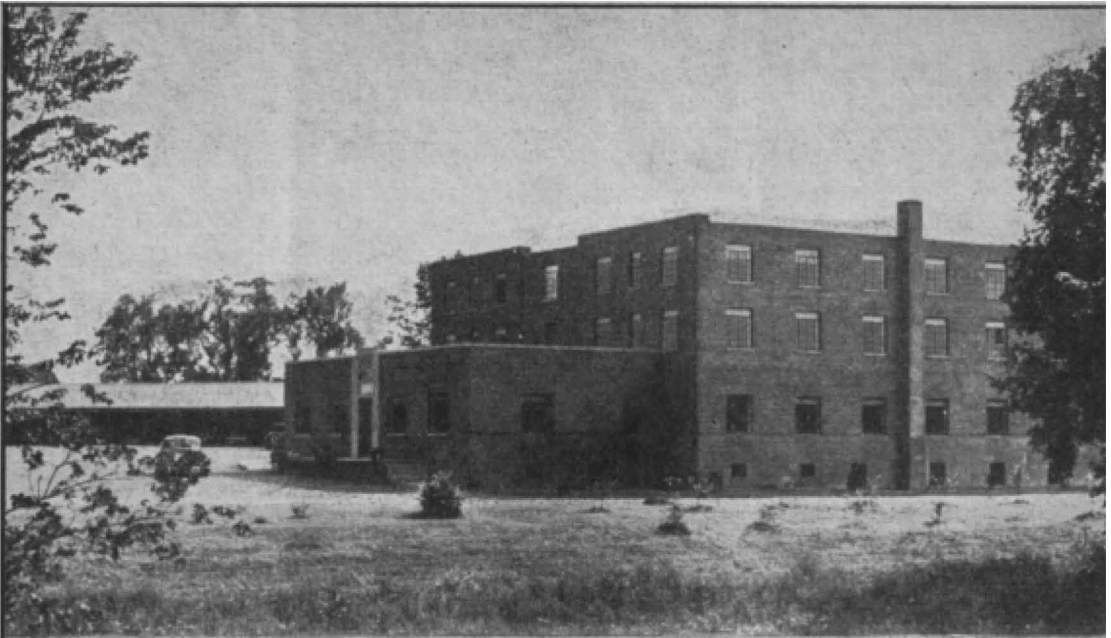
Why this institution ranks as a college, and why it has been so named, we

leave to the president thereof to explain, as follows:

The word "college" appears in the Bible record at 2 Kings 22:14 and 2 Chronicles 34:22, in connection with the typical Theocracy over the Israelites. It was at the capital city, Jerusalem. The word "college" is here translated from the Hebrew word *mishneh*, which means literally "doubling or repeating". If the word here means an institution of learning, where the prophetess Huldah dwelt, then it marks a "college" as a place where instruction on special subjects is repeated but in an advanced and more intensified way so as to increase one's familiarity, capacity and efficiency therein, and thus doubling one's ability. It is a secondary institution, and hence farther advanced than a primary one. Such, indeed, is the Watchtower Bible College of Gilead. It is so called because it is operated and maintained by the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society, Inc., of New York, and the college faculty of instructors are ordained ministers who are representatives of the Society. Though listed according to the law of the land as a "religious institution", it is in fact a Christian college for Bible training.

The name "Gilead", which marks the main building of the institution, is significant. It means "heap of witness". The first time a place was named "Gilead" was when Jacob gathered stones into a large heap and called it "Gilead". There his father-in-law Laban said to him: "This heap is a witness between me and thee this day." "Therefore was the name of it called Galeed [Gilead]; and Mizpah; for he said, The LORD watch between me and thee, when we are absent one from another." (Genesis 31:48, 49) There a heap of witness was made of stones, symbolizing a covenant between Jacob and Laban. Jacob had served his time under Laban to receive Laban's two daughters in marriage and he was leaving Syria, never to return; and this heap of witness was a testimony to an agreement that Laban would not pass by there unto Jacob's territory, nor would Jacob pass by it unto Laban, for harm.

It was later at Gilead, and in Mizpah (meaning "Watchtower"), where Jephthah



- (1) Summer view of the college building, Gilead, from the northeast.
- (2) Looking northward from the receiving platform of Gilead on the opening day of the college.  
Four hundred yards up the highway is building No. 1, where classroom C is located.



assembled his troops and began to drive back the Ammonites and won the fight for the right of Israelites to worship Jehovah God in spirit and in truth. Jehovah's witnesses are engaged in a like fight now against totalitarian forces of encroachment.

Two years ago this building was named "Gilead". Today we see it being used in the preparing of ministers who, by the Lord's grace, will, in all parts of the world, pile up a HEAP OF WITNESS for the Kingdom and for the vindication of Jehovah's name.

This is a college of the highest learning, Theocratic learning concerning the Most High God, Jehovah, and His capital organization under Christ, and the operation of its visible part now on the earth. Hence it is not a college of so-called "higher learning" according to the standards of this world.

The original Gilead lay in mountainous territory east of the Jordan river. Gilead, as the main building of the Watchtower Bible College is named, is located in the highlands east of the southern end of Lake Cayuga, a lake forty miles long and three miles wide, one of the "Finger Lakes" famous in Indian lore. It nestles in the beautiful south-central section of New York state. The mountainous region of ancient Gilead was highly adapted to cattle raising. The college building of Gilead is located on a 701-acre area called "Kingdom Farm", and where a considerable number of cattle are raised, together with other livestock. The land is very fertile, and was acquired especially for the purpose of raising food for the headquarters family of the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society at Brooklyn, N. Y., and also to support and feed the student and faculty personnel of the college, a total of approximately 375 persons. Hence it has been operated in behalf of educational interests, in harmony with the chartered purposes of the Society. Gilead is ideal for a place of study and concentration; it is quiet and far removed from the distractions of the noisy city, and allows the utmost to be obtained from the lessons studied.

The many magnificent and most modernly equipped farm buildings that spot the entire countryside on both sides of the main highway through Kingdom Farm present a very pleasing landscape.

### *The Main College Building*

The building Gilead faces the direction of the sunrise. It houses a farm family, and also the teachers and most of the college students. It is a fireproof brick-and-concrete building, of three stories in height, with a commodious basement, 130 feet long and 80 feet wide. It is plain-looking on the exterior, but within is replete with all up-to-date conveniences contributing to the needs and comforts of those it houses. At the front there is a broad concrete receiving platform, with steps at each end. A main central doorway marks Gilead's facade, and over it is a copper plate on which is engraved the name "GILEAD", and underneath, in a marble block, is "Kingdom Farm 1940". As one enters Gilead, to the left of the broad hallway is the farm servant's office, behind sliding glass windows. To the right is a beautiful partition of frosted glasswork, with two windows, one for the farm commissary, and the next for the college registrar. By a swinging gate one enters into the registrar's department. Immediately next thereto is located the college library, the shelves of which contain valuable reference books needed for the use of the faculty and students.

Passing to the end of the corridor one enters into the college assembly room, 65 feet by 48 feet, and large enough to seat 300 persons. At the eastern end is a large carpeted podium, of two steps up, on which stands an ornate walnut table, six feet long, on which is a golden damask throw. On the wall immediately behind are gorgeous damask drapes of golden brocade. In the center thereof, overhead, is a banner of like material, with gleaming golden block-letters reading "GILEAD". On pulling a cord the central drapes part, revealing, under-

neath, a blackboard for the service of any instructor or lecturer demonstrating on the platform. On the ceiling, just in advance of the speaker's table, there is a battery of four long, fluorescent illuminating tubes that produce a power light without glare. Other lights with elegant refracting mantles are so spaced as to give evenly distributed light throughout the auditorium. Natural light is allowed by large French-style casement windows which swing outward when opened. A huge fireplace with sloping shoulders also adorns this northern wall. The seats are not fixtures, but movable, and are put in place in such number as occasion requires.

Flanking the assembly hall to the left, or south side, are classrooms A and B, with a spacious lounge parlor in between. This parlor has a corresponding fireplace and is provided with settees, lounges, rockers, tables, floor lamps and bookshelves for the comfort of the students and for quiet study. Classrooms A and B are of the same size. In addition to electric light fixtures and steel-framed windows in each room the interior walls are topped with a glass frame two feet high just below the ceiling, to admit of maximum radiation of light. On the western wall, alongside the instructor's desk, is a blackboard, twelve feet long. Each room is also equipped with thirty-four chairs, each having a flattop right arm on which students can rest their writing material to take notes during class periods. A frame underneath the seat holds their



The podium in the assembly hall of Gilead.

books. Thus each room is designed to accommodate a study class of the maximum number considered to be the best for each student to receive the proper individual attention.

A college must eat. A partition at the western end, with like glass topping, separates the assembly hall from the dining room. Here are ten lengths of tables, sufficient to accommodate 150 persons at one time. A large motto, "Jehovah Is Our God," graces the western wall. The large kitchen, with adequate equipment such as dishwashing machine, refrigerators, etc., is to the right of the dining room, and to the left are the college stockroom and a linen room.

From the dining room one stairway leads to the basement, and another to the dormitory on the second and third floors above. The basement is of sturdy concrete work, with the same floor dimensions as of the first (or ground floor) above, and takes care of several departments, such as a hospital, storage,

laundry, etc. The second and third floors are divided into two wings with an open court between the wings, so as to permit each room of the dormitory to have outside illumination and ventilation. Each floor of each wing is equipped with adequate baths and toilet facilities for the students. Each room accommodates two students, and has a lavatory with running hot and cold water, and steam-heat radiator units. Comfortable single beds and other necessary furniture for student activities make each room a cozy place.

A third classroom, C, is located in what is called "Building No. 1", about four hundred yards north of Gilead, on the opposite side of the highway. This requires students to get out-of-doors in order to pass from this classroom to those at Gilead, or vice versa. Building No. 1 also contains a number of rooms occupied by young men. As classroom C is where public Bible speaking is taught, the instructor has arranged the 34 seats in two concentric circles, so that each student speaking always has to face and speak to an audience when reciting.

### **Registration**

Ever since the announcement was made, in the 1943 *Yearbook of Jehovah's witnesses*, of the Society's purpose to open up a Bible college at Gilead the eyes of God's people throughout the country have been turned thither, and their prayers have arisen for the divine blessing and guidance upon all the preparations and arrangements.

Early in January the Watchtower office at Brooklyn began sending out detailed questionnaires to all full-time ministers, pioneers, in the United States whose record showed they met the minimum requirements for qualification as students. One requirement is that they must have been full-time Kingdom publishers preaching the gospel from house to house for at least two years. From among the number of question-

naires filled in and returned a further selection was made of those showing the greatest fitness for the college course and the work in other fields for which it would train them. The one hundred selectees constitute twenty married couples, twenty-nine young single men, and thirty-one young single women. From the expression made later by these tried and tested pioneers their joy was exceeding great on receiving notice of their selection and invitation to enter the college. These devoted men and women are all ordained ministers direct from the firing lines, where they have been valiant fighters for the New World. In the course of their years of action afield in declaring God's name and advertising His King and kingdom they have endured hunger, cold, storm, perils, uncertainties, and all manner of hardship and privations in order to reach the people with the Kingdom message. They have faced demonized mobs and have been assaulted, arrested, taken into courts, and have suffered imprisonments, just as the apostles of Jesus Christ themselves experienced in their work as Jehovah's witnesses.

All provisions were made by the Society for these pioneers to travel from their various territories to Gilead. This is in harmony with the arrangement for the Society's conducting this Bible college at absolutely no expense to the students. January 28, the first of the four registration days, experienced low temperatures and a heavy fall of snow in New York state, making travel very difficult and inconvenient. For days previous to this the pioneers were on the trek from all sections of the country, all faces turned toward Gilead. On the first registration day 26 put in appearance, from far-distant California, Michigan, and other states. This number increased to 67 on the second day, including arrivals from New Mexico, Arizona, Nevada, Louisiana, Texas, Missouri, Maine, etc. The third day the number climbed to 91; and on Sunday the last two arriving to



- (1) In the assembly hall of Gilead at the opening exercises. President Knorr is addressing the faculty and student body.
- (2) Part of one of the three student groups at the first study in classroom A, at Gilead.

MARCH 17, 1943



complete the full quota of 100 put in appearance within the hour preceding the evening's *Watchtower* study in the assembly hall. The college entrants arrived at all times during the day and night, even as late (or early) as 3:30 a. m., at Ithaca's railroad and bus stations. They came by private automobile, in spite of ration restrictions on gas and tires; because they were making trips vital to Kingdom interests, and not for pleasure jaunting, the ration boards gladly granted the necessary gas and oil to complete the trip. They made the trip without accident, although encountering blizzards and other extreme conditions along the road. Others came by bus and train, over long distances, to reach the college in time. All made it on time!

Each arrival was required to fill out and sign a registration blank in the registrar's office. He was then given a pink card with the class schedule of the college printed thereon, and naming the instructors of the faculty, and indicating the eight subjects for study, also the three study groups, the class periods of each day, and the order of studies of each of the three student groups daily. Having registered and received a study-group assignment, each student was then assigned a room in the dormitory, and also a definite seat in the dining room. The college term not yet having begun, they were then given various chores and duties to do about the college and Kingdom farm.

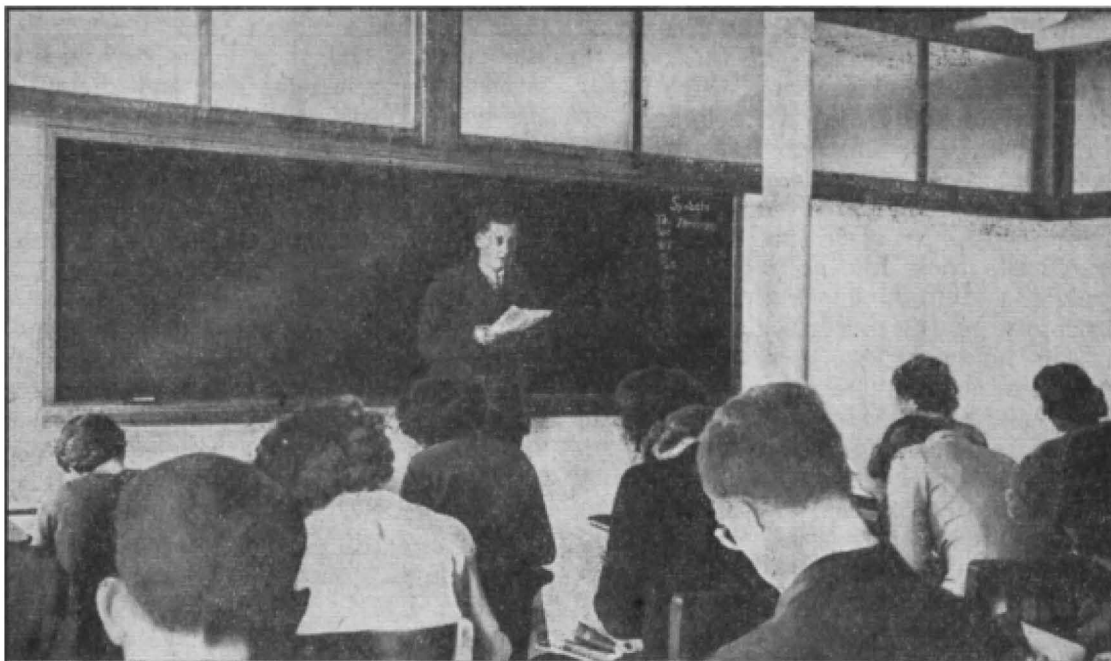
The daily regimen for the students is to rise at 6:30 a. m., when the first bell of the day sounds. This allows a half-hour to prepare for the morning assembly in the dining room. Here the day's instruction really begins. From 7:00 to 7:20, approximately, there follows a discussion by the college students and the Kingdom Farm family on the daily text published in the *Watchtower's Yearbook*. The chairman, who, in the absence of the Society's president, is the Kingdom Farm servant, calls on the various

young men for questions and comments based on the text. Following the reading of the printed comment thereon, prayer is offered in behalf of the day's activities at the college and farm and by all Kingdom publishers throughout the earth. Breakfast is served immediately thereafter. Dinner comes at 12:15 p. m., and supper at 6:00 p. m. The foodstuffs, vegetables, meats and dairy products in ample quantity, are provided largely by the Kingdom farm; and all rationed articles are purchased according to Government regulations. Evening meetings or private study in the rooms occupies the evening hours till retirement. At 10:30 p. m. all must retire and lights must be extinguished in the rooms. Sunday night all dormitory rooms of Gilead and adjacent buildings were filled to capacity by college and Kingdom Farm personnel and visitors.

### ***Dedication Exercises***

Monday, February 1, dawned cold, with heavy leaden skies and snow-clad fields at Kingdom Farm. The sun was not yet up when the college dedication exercises began, at 8 a. m. War Time, the hour which thereafter begins the daily class sessions of this institution of learning. In Gilead's assembly hall all was earnest and eager expectation on the part of the 161 there gathered. Everyone sensed the importance of the occasion, realizing that here was an epochal event which would mark a decisive step in the advancement of the interests of God's kingdom of the New World. It reminded one of the assembly of the 120 faithful Christians in the upper room at Jerusalem on the day of Pentecost, A. D. 33, as they awaited God's outpouring of His holy spirit on them, which would equip them to preach the good news of His Righteous Government, beginning at the sacred city and spreading to the four corners of the earth.

The radiant faces of the one hundred college students were especially an



- (1) The instructor in Theocratic field ministry outlines the course of study, in classroom A.  
 (2) In classroom C the instructor in public Bible speaking details the study course. Note the students are seated in two concentric circles.

inspiring sight to behold. In the front row of seats were ranged the college faculty and also directors of the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society, Inc., of New York, who were to have part in the morning's program. Promptly at 8 a. m. the college president, Mr. N. H. Knorr, who is also the Watchtower president, took his stand behind the speaker's table on the podium, the vice-president being seated to his left. There was no noisy fanfare to inaugurate the program, no pompous procession led by solemn-faced college faculty heads garbed in long black robes and square-topped, tasseled college hats marching down the aisle of the assembly hall to blaring music. No, there was nothing here in evidence to glorify or to call attention to human creatures and their attainments.

### ***The President's Speech***

The thoughts of all in attendance were fixed upon Jehovah God and His King, Christ Jesus, who are the Founders of this college and to whose glory and service this college was now to be dedicated. In recognition thereof, the president, Mr. Knorr, first called upon the instructor in Bible research to offer prayer to the great Theocrat, Jehovah. Then followed an absorbing dedication speech, delivered in a most sincere and forceful manner by the president. He first pointed out that it is not to the credit of any man that the college is established. He showed the purpose of the college, making it very apparent that it is no theological seminary for the incubating of priests of religion. Addressing himself directly to the student body, he said, among other things:

In your case, you are being given further preparation for work similar to that of the apostle Paul, Mark, Timothy and others who traveled to all parts of the Roman Empire proclaiming the message of the Kingdom. They had to be fortified with the Word of

God. They had to have a clear knowledge of His purposes. In many places they had to stand alone against the high and mighty of this world. Your portion may be the same; and God will be your strength thereunto.

There are many places where the witness concerning the Kingdom has not been given to a great extent. The people living in these places are in darkness, held there by religion. In some of these countries where there are a few witnesses it is noted that the people of good-will hear readily and would associate themselves with the Lord's organization, if instructed properly. There must be hundreds and thousands more that could be reached if there were more laborers in the field. By the Lord's grace, there will be more.

It is NOT the purpose of this college to equip you to be ordained ministers. You are ministers already and have been active in the ministry for years. This is a requirement for entrance into this college. You have received your ordination from Jehovah God. Because of your works, your faithful activity, your fighting as good soldiers, you have proved your ordination and the Society recognizes you as ordained ministers. The course of study at the college is for the exclusive purpose of preparing you to be more able ministers in the territories to which you go. Your curriculum here, conducted by select, competent instructors, will include a course in college arithmetic, instructions on shipping and use of the Society's forms and reports; manner of dealing with government officials; the required international law; a course in English and grammar to improve you therein so that you will be able to present the Kingdom gospel commendably. You will also be taught the essentials of the needed foreign language, enabling you to master the language quickly when you get to the fields to which you may be sent. You as students will get the most out of the course only as you put your best into it. You should put into the course everything that you possibly can, because you want to be fully equipped for Theocratic field ministry and the missionary service in which you will engage.

All of the above-named subjects must be

studied carefully by you, but your principal training will be in Bible research and public Bible speaking, and the understanding of Theocratic organization instructions. You are not being trained to become "Branch servants" or to direct the work in certain countries as the Society's special representatives; but some of you may be appointed as such in due time, if that be the Lord's will, and the work warrants it.

Your principal work is that of preaching the gospel of the Kingdom from house to house as did Jesus and the apostles. When you shall have found a hearing ear, arrange for a back-call, start a home study, and organize a company of all suchlike ones in a city or town. Not only will it be your good pleasure to organize a company, but you must help them to understand the Word, strengthen them, address them from time to time, aid them in their service meetings and their organization. When they are strong and can go on their own and take over territory, you can depart to some other city to proclaim the Kingdom. From time to time it may be necessary for you to return to build them up in the most holy faith and straighten them out in the doctrine; so your work will be that of looking after the Lord's "other sheep", and not forsaking them. (John 10:16) Your real work is to help the people of goodwill. You will have to use initiative, but looking to God's guidance.

The speaker then referred to the Master's words at Mark 10:28-30: "Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's, but he shall receive an hundred-fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life." Tears welled up in the eyes of many as President Knorr, from a full heart, showed how those words of the Master have applied and will further apply to the college students after graduation and when launching out on their service in

foreign fields. He concluded by saying:

Ahead of you now are five months of intensive study and work. During these five months you will undoubtedly have a most blessed fellowship one with another. . . . Your conscientious ministry here at Gilead along with your study will be a blessing to you and your brethren. Seek the wisdom which is from above. Use all your talents, your faculties, and your abilities to the best advantage during your study here. Jehovah says: "Ye are my witnesses." Therefore you may be confident that Jehovah's rich blessing will be your portion during these twenty weeks according to the efforts you put forth to be such witnesses, to the honor of His name.

### *Watchtower Directors Speak*

Mr. Knorr then introduced the vice-president, who is also counsel for the Society, and who addressed the assembly for ten minutes. He pressed home the point that Jehovah does not do things such as establish a school through His earthly organization in vain; and that His purpose could now be clearly seen in acquiring the property and constructing the building where the college is operated. The college was established to give the highest training in the law of God and a necessary acquaintance with the laws of the land to equip the students to represent The Theocracy in those countries where they will be sent. They were likened to ambassadors of one nation in another country, and which high office as ambassadors for The Theocracy will of necessity require of each a good knowledge of the language, laws and customs of the country where the ambassador is stationed. The training course at Gilead would provide the necessary polish and education to thoroughly qualify them to discharge their duties as such ambassadors. The supremacy of God's law over the law of worldly nations being emphasized, the college course would enable them to determine the right in conflicts between



the laws of men and of God and to act accordingly. The facts show that the standards of this college would, in the eyes of God, be much higher than those of worldly colleges of "higher learning", so called.

The secretary-treasurer of the Watchtower Society was then invited to speak. This tall, aged gentleman, an octogenarian who has served in this official capacity under three successive Watchtower presidents, first called attention to the college as the provision of the Lord and to be maintained entirely at the expense of the Watchtower Society and without any cost to the students. He gave them straight fatherly advice in the "admonition of the Lord" about faith and the importance of attending to their own business and applying themselves undividedly to their studies. His concluding remark amused everyone, when he said that his only regret was that he himself could not attend the college. Then with a "God bless you all" he stepped down off the podium.

Another of the Watchtower Society directors was asked to speak. "The Watchtower Bible College of Gilead is no experiment," he began; "Jehovah God does not indulge in experiments." Quoting Acts 5:38, 39, he emphasized that this work was not of man, but of God, and therefore could not be overthrown by those who fight against God. In A. D. 1914 the heavenly Kingdom of the Greater-than-Solomon, Christ Jesus, began, and in the fourth year thereafter He came to God's temple for judgment. The twenty-year period beginning in spring 1918, and ending 1938, paralleled the twenty years of Solomon's reign in which he built the temple of Jehovah at Jerusalem and also his own palace and judgment hall, after which Solomon carried on a great constructive program throughout the nation. Corresponding to this, it was the Lord's due time for the Watchtower Bible College to be established now, after A. D. 1938. Its establishment, rather than indicating that the

battle of Armageddon is farther off than we had believed, is actually a proof that the fixed time for that battle to begin is near. Hence the need of increasing the efficiency of God's organized people to accomplish His work in the brief remaining time. The Bible text for February 1 was from Judges 11:34, regarding the daughter of Judge Jephthah; and the speaker pointed out that, whereas only eighteen of the college student body professed to be anointed members of the "body of Christ", the Greater Jephthah, eighty-two of the one hundred students were of the modern Jephthah's daughter class.

Next President Knorr called upon his secretary to read a letter addressed to him and the faculty and students of the Watchtower Bible College of Gilead. It was from the headquarters family of the Watchtower Society of Brooklyn, N. Y., and they, the Bethel family, expressed their rejoicing over what was now taking place. They also called attention to the prophetic picture of Jephthah's daughter and said: "May this day begin the sounding forth of the high praises of our God from Gilead, which will go to the uttermost parts of the earth and ring to the highest heaven." An assurance of their daily prayers in this behalf concluded the letter. It was much appreciated.

### *Study Classes Open*

President Knorr then introduced the college dean and other members of the teaching faculty and described their courses of instruction. Each teaches two subjects. On account of the dedication exercises the study periods of the day, regularly 40 minutes in length, with a 10-minute intermission, were to be curtailed. Then he dismissed the assembly by offering a fervent prayer to the Most High God, the supreme, invisible Director of this Bible college. Within ten minutes, namely, at 9:35 a. m., all the students and their instructors were at their places in their respective classrooms.

During the day President Knorr conducted the directors on a tour of inspection of the study classes while in session. Everything was proceeding in a most gratifying manner. It was noteworthy what enthusiasm and keen interest in the progress and attainment of the students all instructors displayed. In turn, the students made due response, showing the greatest desire to co-operate with their instructors and to improve their golden opportunity of learning and fitting themselves for enlarged service in God's visible organization. The instructors demonstrated a different approach to their subjects of instruction from that of college professors and teachers in a worldly institution. The course of instruction, therefore, promises to be most helpful and to make for the speediest progress in learning during the college term of twenty weeks' duration. It was manifest that the spirit of the Lord God was upon both instructors and students, and they all certainly need it, because the course is a "very stiff" one. There are eight periods of instruction a day, for five days a week.

### ***Other Training Features***

All study, with no diversion or physical exercise, is not a good thing. Instead of providing for such exercise in the way of gymnasiums and athletic events, concerning which the apostle Paul says, "Bodily exercise profiteth little; but godliness is profitable unto all things" (1 Timothy 4: 8), the weekday schedule calls for three hours (3-6 p. m.) of productive work by each student, at some essential chores and duties about the college and the Kingdom farm. Some students are assigned to serve in the dining room, others in the housekeeping, and others in the egg department, the barns, the fields, landscaping, etc. Such helping to maintain the college and the productivity of the Kingdom farm for their own support is not for the purpose of exploiting the students, but is to enable them to receive valuable training

and to relieve the additional strain of the greatly increased number on the farm and to provide partially for their own sustenance from the yield and conveniences of the farm. Furthermore, on this work they will be graded by the college faculty as well as on their studies and behavior, as to their efficiency, co-operation, neatness, reliability, initiative, and tact.

Each Monday evening all students are required to attend the Advanced Course in Theocratic Ministry, conducted in the general assembly hall, and in which the members of the Kingdom Farm staff also participate. All receive the half-hour instruction talk and a quiz on last week's lecture, the assembly then dividing up to go to four halls. Here the male students deliver short Bible talks, followed by constructive criticism by the instructors. Each Thursday evening the weekly service meeting is held, and on Sunday evening an hour's study of *The Watchtower*, the people of good-will in the surrounding community being free to attend this. At each of these meetings the college students are given practical training in the matter of conducting study meetings and addressing assemblies. There is a rotation of chairmen of these meetings, also of those who read aloud the questions for study and the paragraphs of the lesson and who deliver speeches at the service meeting.

On Saturdays there are no regular study classes, but students who desire to consult their instructors for help and information may do so in the morning. They have the afternoon off to attend to personal matters or to engage in the field service then as well as in the evening, particularly in offering the magazines, *The Watchtower* and *Consolation*, on the streets and in the stores of the near-by cities, such as Ithaca, of 30,000 inhabitants, Cortland, and others. Every fifth Saturday will be an examination period; and any student failing to make the grade required at the first mid-semester examination will be discon-

tinued from the college and returned to regular pioneer work in the United States. For grading students, the point system is used: "A", for excellent, equals 3 points; "B", for superior, 2 points; "C", for average, 1 point; "D", for passing, 0; and "E", for failure, -1.

Sundays are not left open for idleness. The curriculum calls for "applied missionary service" during the day, putting into practical effect the things which they have learned at the college as to preaching the glad tidings from house to house, making return visits upon the interested people, and conducting model Bible studies and book studies in their private homes. This is important, because the student grading takes into account their records made in this Sunday activity.

### ***Student Reactions***

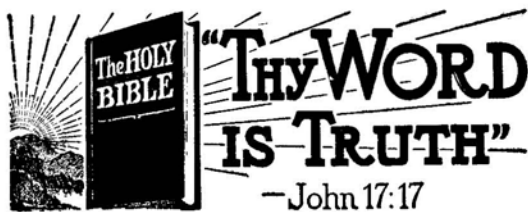
At the noon and evening meals of this memorable Monday the students effervesced with joy and appreciation over their privileges of study, and the method of instruction, and the comprehensive course of study ahead of them. "Attending college is just wonderful!" exclaimed one young lady. Quite a number enrolled at Gilead are also graduates of worldly universities and colleges, and several of these remarked upon the superiority of the training and education they were beginning to receive here at Gilead. The faces of the instructors themselves mirrored great pleasure and elation at the day's accomplishment. Said the dean of the college, who is a graduate of Tulane University and also a licensed lawyer of experience: "I've taught schools in Louisiana, and also taught in college, but I have never had any classes of students like these here." That night, at the Advanced Course in Theocratic Ministry, the dean delivered the talk of instruction on "How to Study", which was the closing exercise of the opening day. Then, after the usual Bible talks by the students concurrently in the four different lecture halls, the students and

Kingdom Farm family reassembled in the main hall. There President Knorr gave them some final words on college life, as to rules governing their conduct in group association, mutual helpfulness and consideration of one another, and the Lord's organization, which they represent.

It was going on ten o'clock when the assembly was dismissed, making it a full day indeed. With great joy and gratitude to the loving Giver of all good and perfect gifts those present then retired to their rooms and other places of abode to take a blessed night's rest, to refresh them for the greatly anticipated next day's round of privileges.

The Watchtower Bible College of Gilead is now a reality, a going concern. It is in verity a New World college. Being devoted to the purposes and service of the Theocratic Government of the Most High God, it is an institution of learning of the highest standard. This college is no mere accident; it is a divine provision. Already it has begun to make its influence felt in its locality as the students unitedly go forth on week-ends and take the cities and towns by storm, publicly and from house to house declaring Jehovah's name and advertising the King and the Kingdom, and proving themselves able ministers of the gospel.

It is to be expected that the influence of the college, under God's blessing, protection and guidance, will make itself felt to the ends of the earth through the sending forth of its graduates. In view of the impending battle of Armageddon signaling the old world's dismal end, the work of Gilead's Bible college is one of immediate necessity and of defense of the people against destruction in that battle. Hence the college work is an essential work of the highest type and is of public convenience and interest. It is certain to serve, under Christ Jesus the King, for the vindication of the glorious name of Jehovah God, its Founder.



## Humility in Action

**T**HE claim that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, or any of its representatives, can bring a lasting peace or reconstruct the world for man's happiness or benefit, when all students acknowledge that the Papacy is the most notorious war-fomentor of all time, would ordinarily be discounted as a ridiculous insult to intelligence, were it not for one thing: such claim is made in the Lord's name. It therefore becomes the height of blasphemy, as well as the human utmost in self-exaltation. Such usurpation of God's name by an organization with the longest criminal record found in history's annals will not be overlooked by the Great Leveler when punishment for her other crimes is duly exacted. "Though they dig into hell, thence shall mine hand take them; though they climb up to heaven, thence will I bring them down."—Amos 9:2.

In contrast with the vain, presumptuous conduct of earth's great ones, observe, if you please, the humility of the Lord's servants in action. The humblest class of men upon earth are His witnesses. Faltering not from the buffetings and assaults of hoodlums and rabble-rousing priests, they rejoice in the privilege of calling at the lowliest hut with Jehovah's message. They ask nothing in return. If those who love the message wish to contribute to the work, that is their privilege; but it brings no personal gain to Jehovah's servants. His witnesses are kind to those who hate them, and continue to call on many who spitefully use them. (Luke 6:27, 28) It is humility before the Lord that causes Jehovah's witnesses to bring the

good news to all, because they surely could have no personal reason to submit to abuse and beatings. The human tigers who pounce on the sheep of God's fold would, except for God's command to His witnesses, be avoided by a wide margin. (Matthew 24:14) But when any misguided ones turn from their course of evil and wickedness, as did the apostle Paul, then Jehovah's witnesses gladly forgive and forget anything done in the past, and thereby acknowledge the rule of the Humblest of men, to wit: "Forgive us our debts [trespasses], as we forgive our debtors."—Matthew 6:12, 14, 15.

They are the humble friends of the people. They serve the best interests of the people in this, that they warn them of the coming disaster that they might save themselves from that disaster. Surely to deliver God's warning of the approaching calamity of Armageddon is a service of kindness and good-will; and when met, as often, with sticks and stones from the very ones who are most endangered and most in need, the faithful ambassadors of Christ are rendering a service of mercy, humility, and self-abasement. Less humble men and women would long ago have abandoned a task so frequently thankless.

It should be remarked that the greatest blessing of all, The Theocracy, may be grasped only by the humble. "Blessed are the poor in spirit; for theirs is the kingdom of heaven." (Matthew 5:3) "Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world." (Matthew 25:34) The test of humility is therefore upon all who apply for life. One's diversion from this supreme human blessing will result from scorning God's messengers. O men of good-will, do not forfeit the opportunity for endless bliss because the Devil has caused the finger of reproach to be pointed at His people, who alone are commissioned to inform you of that happiness ahead. Jehovah permits that



test on you. His blameless witnesses have done nothing wrong; and if you join their haughty persecutors, such will exclude you from "lovers of righteousness". Seek the Kingdom, though knowledge comes by way of His witnesses. —Matthew 6:33.

You who love right, mark well this hazard which must be successfully passed before receiving the Lord's blessing: "Not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think." (Romans 12:3) Elevate and praise Jehovah, while subordinating all else. (Isaiah 46:9) Envision clearly these world disasters warned of in the Bible and which may largely be blamed on creature exaltation. For example, might not humility have prevented the unfeeling disregard now so prevalent for the rights of others? A man who knows he is no better than another would have compassion for the sufferings of his fellows. He would not recommend that the other do what he is unwilling to do. Remembering that he is flesh, he would sympathize with the infirmities of other flesh. (Matthew 9:36; 8:17; Romans 15:1) He would not want others to starve or be shot, when he demands to be well fed and protected himself. The practice of humility and love would relieve the world of much trouble and desolation and would turn the eyes upon God's benevolent provision for relief, His Kingdom. —Luke 1:33; Daniel 2:44; 7:27.

All men who are meek enough to listen Jehovah now informs that His deliverance is extended to everyone who desires it and accepts the single condition of humble obedience to His perfect will. "The meek will he guide in judgment; and the meek will he teach his way." (Psalm 25:9; Hebrews 5:9) It is the dawn of a new day, ushering in the New World. Staggering under the load of total war, men of righteousness welcome The Theocracy. Do not be afraid to grasp it! It is yours for the acceptance on God's terms! (Revelation 22:17) Your past matters not at all if you now

take His prescribed way. (Isaiah 1:18) Look with compassion upon the humble ministers who bring the Lord's announcement, and He will not forget you in the brilliant days of "hope fulfilled". "For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward." (Mark 9:41; Matthew 10:42) Doing so, you have already set forth upon the road to life.

Jehovah has purposed to have a class of men on earth who will maintain their integrity in humble obedience to Him. (Exodus 9:16; Isaiah 43:12; 46:11) Individuals once in that class, however, if they do not also continue to observe God's admonition to humility, would fail. There are no exceptions to the Lord's statutes governing human conduct. In fact, Satan, who was once the mighty Lucifer, shall be debased because seeking to "be like the Most High". (Isaiah 14:14) It is therefore a time for careful regard to conduct. "Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall."—1 Corinthians 10:12.

The apostle stated the faithful rule for the followers of Christ, at Philippians 2:3: "Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves." (Ephesians 4:2) With their eyes ever upon The Theocracy and putting its interests above self, Jehovah's witnesses may look to the blessed operation of the rule in their behalf. In the not far distant future the tables will be completely turned upon the wicked, whose portion will be abasement and reduction to dung on the ground. On the other hand, the converse of the law will bring the blessings of life in a faultless world for God's humble witnesses. Only the meek and humble before the Lord shall find favor in His sight, and a place everlasting upon the paradise of earth. Is it not, therefore, foolish to choose the suicidal course of self-exaltation? "God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble."—James 4:6.

## Why the Jews Are Being Slain

**W**HEN the New York *Times* had occasion to publish a biography of Colonel Dreyfus, French patriot, a Jew, falsely accused of treason, it said, as a matter of course:

There the line of demarcation between the two schools of patriotism was being definitely drawn—on the one side the Monarchists, Catholics and super-Nationalists under the spell of anti-Semitism and the “honor of the army” fetish; on the other, Republicans, Protestants, Jews and radicals of every persuasion.

The Jews persist in using their own brains. In doing so they accumulate property and influence, i.e., loot. Hence the word has manifestly gone forth that the Jews must be butchered and their property seized. But an air of sanctity is maintained meantime.

Deeds that will not bear investigation are done in the dark; and it was in the dark, on the night of June 17, 1940, that Marshal Petain, without the consent of the French people, was suddenly catapulted into power. In less than four months, i.e., on October 14, 1940, this man, after being lauded to the skies by the organ of the Vatican, *Osservatore Romano*, issued an order that henceforth all Jews in France were banned from public office. All this despite the fact that Leon Blum, the so-called “Millionaire Socialist”, and a Jew, one of France’s ablest premiers, had been out of office only three years when Petain came in.

### ***The Jews Are First in Line***

It is easier to pick on the Jews than on anybody else. They are in a minority. They do not defend themselves. They have property. They are not too popular, and, worst of all, they are thinkers, and thinking is not permitted in the totalitarian state, which is the Jesuit idea of heaven on earth.

So it was only two months after the decree of Vichy that the Jews must not

engage in any business or profession where they might come in direct contact with the people, and Jewish lawyers must not constitute more than two percent of the legal profession, till along comes a decree from Alsace that the property of all Jews is confiscated and distributed to the conquerors. Those of the faithful who attended the auction sales of the homes of the dispossessed were told exactly what they must bid to get possession of the property. The finer furnishings of these Jewish homes were sent to Germany by the trainload to be passed out to those on papa’s side in the big fight. The headlines in the New York *Times* of December 17, 1940, told the whole story quite well in a few lines: “Property of Jews in Alsace Seized; It Will Be Distributed Either Gratis or at Low Prices to Necessitous Evacuees; Furnishings Go to Reich; Auctions Attended Solely by German Immigrants, Who Are Told What to Bid.”

### ***Conditions Get More Gruesome***

Not to be outdone in meanness, General Otto von Stuelpnagel, commander in chief of the Nazi military forces in Occupied France, made a decree (December 12, 1941) putting a fine of 1,000,000,000 francs on the Jews inhabiting the occupied territory. It is so nice, when one wants a billion francs of spending money, to “fine” somebody who has the cash, rather than try to collect from some poor poilu whose possessions are limited to an undershirt and a pair of patched trousers.

It seems to be a certain sort of law or custom among gangsters that after one has been robbed of all his property it is best to go ahead and kill him. First, it destroys the evidence; and, second, it is a sort of conscience-husher. Dead men tell no tales, and it is inconvenient to have in one’s range of vision anybody that he has stripped of everything possessed.

In the roundup of Jews in Occupied France, preparatory to their dispatch to the horror lands of eastern Europe, three hundred Jews in Paris took their own lives. Women were seen to throw their babies out of sixth-story windows and to jump after them, screaming wildly. A patient was ejected from the Rothschild hospital who had been operated on for cancer only twelve hours previously. Talk about the Inquisition, and German efficiency! Similar short shrift was given to a woman only a few hours after the birth of her child. Police stood by while the child was born, and then ejected the woman. The evacuation of the hospital of Jewish patients (it was personally built for them) was accomplished by a Gestapo agent with a whip in his hand.

When the time came for these slave battalions to be emigrated thousands of them were tightly packed into the Velodrome d'Hiver, where Parisians used to watch bicycle races. One would have to be in such a jam to appreciate the amount of human suffering which this involves, especially in the disposal of bodily waste. At the same time (says the *Manchester Guardian* of September 4, 1942) four thousand Jewish children were rounded up, all documents and proofs of identity were taken away from them, and orders were issued for their sterilization. Thus made into eunuchs and slaves, they were at one and the same time deprived of their parents and of all possibilities of ever becoming such.

There is no letup, and there dare not be. The Clerical anti-Semites, eager for the total destruction of all republics, Spain, China, Russia, Germany, United States, Mexico, and France, could see that it would never do to have in Unoccupied France twenty-five thousand alien Jews, innocent men that had fled from central Europe. So these were arrested and confined in a huge concentration camp at Lyon, and, beginning August 7, 1942, they were being sent every three days in cattle cars for forced labor in Germany or territories to the

east thereof which have been occupied by German troops.

### ***Jesuits Get Busy Everywhere***

The word has gone out that Jews must be gotten rid of. The news gets around and the politicians soon learn what they must do if they want to have a big pail of milk with plenty of cream on it. Switzerland announced that it had reached the saturation point and could receive no more Jews. The Chamber of Deputies of Bolivia approved a proposal barring future immigration of Jews into their country.

Migrations from Antwerp, Belgium, to "unknown points" became so severe that in "News from Belgium", October 31, 1942, it was recorded that in seven streets of the city formerly inhabited by Jews there were then 552 empty flats in which more than 5,000 Jews once lived.

It makes one sick at heart to read what happened to 14,000 Jews in Estonia in April, 1942, but only got around into the "News from Belgium" issue of October 10, 1942. The story leaked out through Palestine, also, confirming the following account of the new methods of the Inquisition, found necessary in the re-establishment of Otto Hapsburg's and Pacelli's "Holy" Roman Empire on a world-wide basis:

Immediately upon his entrance into Esthonia, when he proclaimed himself its liberator, the commander in chief of the German army of occupation announced that special measures would be taken against the Jews, who would not be regarded as members of the national community but rather as a group of "parasitic excrescences" of which the country must be freed as soon as possible.

His first measure was a census-taking of the Jews, followed by requisition not only of their homes but of their household belongings and even their clothes. This done, the Jews were put in a ghetto, organized almost like a concentration camp except that the ghetto members had permission to go out at certain rigorously fixed days and hours. Under these

circumstances, it was no longer possible for merchants, lawyers, druggists, etc., to work; only doctors, and very few of these, were authorized to practice, but in a strictly temporary capacity.

Good or bad, life in the Estonian ghetto was functioning in an organized manner when suddenly these unhappy people were ordered to Riga under the guard of an Estonian military battalion in the pay of the Germans. There they were thrown into city jails.

After a few weeks in Riga, toward the middle of April, the order was given to the commander of this battalion to send a company of his men to one of the town's prisons. A portion of the prisoners, made up of men women and children, even the very young among the latter—some of them being only two or three years old—was handed over to the commanding officer and his company. These prisoners were marched into a wide field where a big trench had been dug.

The head of the Gestapo directed the proceedings and gave the order to the Jews to disrobe completely. An indescribable scene followed, with men and women crying, crawling on their knees, begging the German executioners for mercy, but without any effect. These unfortunates who, I repeat, included little children, were lined up at the edge of the ditch and mowed down with machine guns. The execution over, the ditch was filled without anyone's bothering to ascertain whether some of the victims were still alive.

One of the Estonian officers was unable to stand this spectacle and suddenly went mad.

These executions continued for fourteen days, and it has been estimated that the number of executed reached about 14,000, among whom were several hundred Dutchmen and fifty to a hundred Belgians.

The executions, which took place during the day, were filmed.

### ***"Latin-American Jews Attacked"***

New York's paper *PM*, issue of December 14, 1942, has a dispatch from Ray Josephs, its staff correspondent in Buenos Aires, that during the past six months anti-Semitic sentiment has been on the increase throughout Latin Amer-

ica. It is seen in its fullest force "among wealthy and influential reactionaries in Argentina, Chile, Brazil, and Peru". As a matter of course, though not mentioned specifically by *PM*, these reactionaries are all under the control of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, and in league with them to put an end to all republics, and to establish the "abomination that maketh desolate", the totalitarian monstrosity, world-wide, in their room and stead.

The Jewish populations of South American states are not great, only about a half million all together, but they will make rich picking in the days that are ahead. Thus far only the usual preliminary steps have been taken, of smashing the windows of Jewish-owned shops and defacing of synagogues. But the prophecies are sure of fulfillment, and, without any question, hard times are ahead not only for the true Israelites, Jehovah's witnesses, but for those who in the Scriptures went to make up the typical Theocracy which passed away in 606 B. C. Perhaps some of these Jews in South America and elsewhere may have ears to hear the message of "present Truth", and may find their way into Jehovah's organization, the true Theocracy, before the storm of Armageddon breaks and all will be lost for those who are not by that time firmly on God's side.

---

### **Shatterproof Light Bulbs**

◆ Shatterproof light bulbs are coming. Made of Garinol, they can be crumpled in the hand without injury to the one who does the crumpling. This invisible paint, applied to bottles, windowpanes, or anything else made of glass, has the peculiar quality of preventing the glass particles from flying when they are broken. Brushed on the inside of a windowpane, the side next to the room dries in 48 hours, but that next to the glass takes more than a year to dry out and lose its adhesive power. A coat of Garinol is thus effective for about one year.



## Slave Labor for the Reich

**W**HEN the pope said that the "New Order" is old, he stated it mildly. It is a rejuvenation of slavery in one of the meanest forms in which that great injustice has been practiced. Thus, in the Netherlands, which, as a result of the war, is cut off from all its markets, the order has gone forth that 250,000 conscripts are demanded for the German army. It seems hard to believe that many of the Dutch would fight enthusiastically for their own perpetual enslavement. Who wants to fight with a rope around his neck? That is what the Dutch would be doing.

Thus far, it does not appear that any of the French have been conscripted to fight against their old allies, the Russians, but some are said to have volunteered to do so. A United Press dispatch from Vichy maintains that French volunteers were enrolled to fight against Russia, both in the occupied and the so-called "Free Zone".

It is rather surprising that any French could be found that would be willing to line themselves up against their best friends and help their age-long enemies. It must be supposed that those volunteering to fight against Russia would be persons under the control of the Big Business crowd, the Big Politicians and the Big Church crowd. These, at all times, have sought the destruction of rule by the people.

The French people themselves, the common people, hate the thought of German masters, and most of them look with longing eyes toward the west. Thus, in its issue of December 14, 1942, the periodical *PM* tells of a young Rumanian physician and his wife, who left Unoccupied France on the day that the Germans moved in. This doctor made the statement that the French went wild with joy when they learned that the Americans had landed in Africa. A woman in his presence burst into tears when she heard the good news.

That does not look much as if the French people have any heart for this "New Order" humbug.

The Jesuit plan for the establishment of Hitler's "New Order" in France calls for the shipment to Germany of three able-bodied French citizens to replace each sick, wounded and enfeebled prisoner of war that is released by the Reich. As Germany is still holding 1,200,000 French war prisoners, that means that by the time they are back in France, the Reich will have 3,600,000 French slaves, who will do the hard work while their "master race" skims off the cream. Some of the French see through the scheme and do not rejoice in it. Five hundred of them had been gathered to be sent as laborers from the railway station at Saint Malo. They resisted being deported to Germany, stoned the German troops that were herding them into the cattle cars, and eleven were reported killed or wounded.

An attempt was made at the watch-making centers of Cluses, Marnaz, Scionzier and Marignier to give medical examinations to the recruits supposed to be volunteering for work in Germany. Not a volunteer showed up. Word got around that the "volunteers" would have to work sixty hours a week, would have to eat at their benches, and that the exchanges for prisoners of war were trickily worded. When the war prisoners did come back to France they were registered as "on temporary leave, which is renewable".

At these and other towns, women, young and old, mothers, wives, sisters, sweethearts, formed barricades around the city halls where the medical inspections were supposed to take place. The men designated by the factory owners as selected to go to Germany simply quit work. Though it was right on the edge of winter, they preferred to run the risk of starving rather than to be parties to such an ignoble arrangement.

## Missing It by a Hair

**A**T A time when the globe is plunged into war, and many of the nations are stripped of even the bare necessities of life, and while stark famine and dreadful pestilence stare the whole earth in the face, somebody in *The Reader's Digest* has to come along with this startling reminder:

Only twelve percent of the world's land area is under cultivation. If this land (12 percent) were all tilled by the most advanced methods, twice the present world population could be fed without adding a single acre.

Since the totalitarian beasts started howling about not having enough "living space" (*lebensraum*), and the Japanese entered Manchukuo, September 18, 1931, upward of 30,000,000 people have died a bitter death, and the ruthless extermination of life on earth spreads by cold, hunger, disease and outright slaughter, until men find themselves thousands of miles away from their own countries, filling even the blazing empty deserts with their carnage.

How horrible and strange that men should be fighting each other to the death in those vast regions of earth's most utter emptiness, the deserts, at the very time in their existence when they have come into the knowledge of how to make the deserts blossom like the rose! *The Reader's Digest* goes on to relate that men now know how to make plants grow in nothing but water and sand:

The new soil-less agriculture, in which plants are chemically grown in water and sand, is already capable of broad-scale application by any government which sincerely feels that its neighbors are not giving it sufficient breathing space.

By "scorched earth" destruction, plus the present mad rate of consumption, oil for making gasoline will be exhausted in a very few years. Even before the war, optimists were estimating that Uncle Sam's wells would run dry in thirty years. But when one reflects that there

is enough oil in common shale rock to last 3,000 years, and that gasoline can be made from almost anything containing carbohydrates, such as molasses, corn, wood, seaweed, leaves, then nobody but baldest idiots would start grinding millions of men to pieces over such obsolete things as oil wells.

There is more coal than men can burn and waste in a thousand years, no matter how hard they try. They can also turn coal into edible fats. Sugar can be made out of wood. Peanuts can be converted into milk. Fruits and vegetables can be made to grow enormously fast, perhaps a thousand times as fast as they now do. There is no rightful reason why you and every other person should not be enjoying strawberries and blackberries double the size of any present species, and superior to them in flavor.\*

### *Things That Already Are*

If things that already exist in the laboratories could be brought into everyday life, then Norman Bel Geddes' "Futurama" exhibited at the New York World's Fair, with its vast network of super-highways, its spacious, airy cities, its double-decked thoroughfares, representing actual knowledge of city planners and traffic experts, would give little more than a hint of the marvelous world you would find around you.

Of course, if Uncle Sam, with his unparalleled communications system, started to translate such a vision into reality, one of the first things he would have to do would be to put \$15,000,000,000 into a highway project alone. Naturally, none of the nations nowadays is in position to bring forth the kind of world

\* Sources for all statements in this article, *The Men Who Make the Future*, by Bruce Bliven (Duell, Sloan and Pearce), 1942; *Science Today and Tomorrow*, by Waldemar Kaempffert (Viking), 1939; *The Reader's Digest*, March, June, November, 1941; *Free World*, September, 1942, war casualty estimates; *The American Freeman*, October, 1942, war cost estimates.

that science has already revealed and demands of men.

Poor mankind! Transformed society dangles right there in his test tubes and blueprints. But man, being such a devout and timid little creature, would not dare to try to order his existence except religiously; and, religion being nothing but superstition, man, in other words, is just too superstitious to enter into the scientific possibilities.

Scientists are just as superstitious as ordinary men, and generally have wilder notions than anybody else; but, just the same, they know that there is no rightful reason why men should not live in decency and prosperity on the earth. In that kind of society, one's home would probably be built from standardized mass-products parts, assembled in any shape and size that one desired. Probably it would be a steel house; or it might be made of plywood, and, if so, it would be even stronger than steel. At any rate, it could be erected or dismantled in one day's time, moved about to any place, and would be proof against fire, hurricane and earthquake (except Amageddon) and would depreciate slowly. How soon do you expect to have such a house?

Thoreau had twenty things which he regarded as essential to his house at Walden Pond; but, in a really decent house in a decent world, the scientists figure that one ought to have nearer 9,000 essentialities. The walls between the rooms would be a set of super-filing cases which would hold all these 9,000 things, all put away systematically and instantly accessible.

The walls, ceiling and floor of one's house would be heated either with a mass of hot-water pipes or with electric wires laid in the plaster. Steel strips, curved into parabolic shapes of interesting pattern, would reflect heat from one spot into an entire room or any part of it. Radiant heat, from such sources, will warm a room comfortably in a minute or two, and does not dry the air and encourage colds and sinus trouble. One's

bathroom floor would be made of "medicated" cement which, when wet, gives off minute quantities of copper that have a strong bactericidal effect, killing germs. The air entering one's rooms would be cleaned of all dust and smoke by electron filters.

Lucite, one of the new plastics, can make light "go around a corner". Thus one would have the sunlight "piped" from the roof down into any part of the house. One's lamps would give forth germicidal light, cool light from fluorescent lamps, polarized light with no glare. One would also use black light, invisible rays which cause fluorescent chemicals in carpets and other furnishings to glow with beautiful iridescent colors and guide one down the hall at night.

In such a home as that, one would have a television set receiving images in full color. Almost all these 9,000 things in one's home would be made of the simplest materials: air, water, coal, limestone; every plastic thing, created on order, elastic or rigid, translucent or opaque. One's favorite armchair, soft and resilient as one may please, might look as if it were made of pure glass. And, of course, one's rugs would be mothproof. One's blankets would be unshrinkable. One's draperies would be of woven glass, and therefore fireproof, unfading and practically everlasting. One's clothing would probably be made of the same material.

The men of facts and figures, who have already actually made all these things, cannot tell you how you are going to get your share of them. Some scientists say you will get them under a "New Order based on moral principles". Others say you will get them under a 'New Order based on four freedoms'. But one scientist, doubting that you will ever get them at all, sounds pretty lugubrious about the whole thing. He says:

Man is an overspecialized animal by reason of his brain. And it is overspecialization that dooms him to ultimate extinction.

## Killing Off the Chinese Republic

ON THE evening of November 27, 1942, this writer was so fortunate as to have as a traveling companion for a journey of several hours an unusually intelligent and amiable former missionary to Japan, a master of six languages. He had served as such in India. He is now a teacher in one of America's largest universities. He requested that his name be not published.

He had gone into the missionary business in order to uplift his fellow men. He is an evolutionist. He regards the Bible as of human origin but as folklore of the highest sort. He admitted that there is not the slightest foundation in the Scriptures nor in reason or common sense for the doctrines of "eternal torture" and "purgatory" which are the basis of all teachings of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and the Protestant sects.

He mentioned one Japanese as having remonstrated to a missionary who tried to teach him that his ancestors were being roasted, baked alive to all eternity ("Saint" Francois Xavier\* was the missionary), that he felt it his duty, if

that were possible, to exchange places with such. *He* would prefer to be tortured forever, if these ancestors might have a chance for eternal life, rather than himself have the promised blessings and these be forever deprived of them and kept alive merely to be tormented.

This returned missionary was one of the big lot that was cast out of Japan within the past few years. He told why he was cast out. Tax collectors came to him and asked for a percentage of his income, to be used to assist the campaign in China. When he declined, the tax collector remonstrated: "Why should you be different from the Catholics? Every Catholic priest and every Catholic nun in Japan give a fixed percentage of their income to help carry on the civilization campaign we are waging in China." The collector explained that the Catholic Church is out to put down "Bolshevism" in every part of the world.

### *Against Every Republic*

That makes it perfectly clear, and anybody with an ounce of brains can see what is going on in the world. It is only a few years since the Spanish Republic was put to death. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy instigated the murder; Hitler and Mussolini committed the crime; Uncle Sam, John Bull and La Belle France acted as honorary pall bearers,—all guilty together. The German republic had just been put to death. Now come China, France, etc.

This campaign for the overthrow of every republic has been and is a fundamental policy of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. Thus, when the New York *Times* had occasion to publish a biography of Premier Aristide Briand, of France, it said as a matter of course:

The Clerical party was also the Royalist party, and for the most part those who supported the claims of the church were also advocating the overthrow of the republic.

\*Xavier on "Eternal Damnation" . . . "One of the things that most of all pains and torments these Japanese is, that we teach them that the prison of hell is irrevocably shut, so that there is no egress therefrom. For they grieve over the fate of their departed children, of their parents and relatives, and they often show their grief by their tears. So they ask us if there is any hope, any way to free them by prayer from that eternal misery, and I am obliged to answer that there is absolutely none. Their grief at this affects them wonderfully; they almost pine away with sorrow. But there is this good thing about their trouble—it makes one hope that they will all the more be laborious for their own salvation, lest they, like their forefathers, should be condemned to everlasting punishment. They often ask if God cannot take their fathers out of hell, and why their punishment must never have an end. We gave them a satisfactory answer, but they did not cease to grieve over the misfortune of their relatives; and I can hardly restrain my tears sometimes at seeing men so dear to my heart suffer such intense pain about a thing which is already done with and can never be undone." (LXXXVI), Coleridge, Vol. II, p. 347.



## Entirely Pagan

RECENTLY one of Jehovah's witnesses was instructively amused at the dazed but unadmitted astonishment of his mother as she described the antics of her preacher at a special "service" in her "church". It seems that in trying out the new furnishings of his "sanctuary" his exercises were interspersed with bursts from the choir, as he stunted here and there to read or pray. And then he capped the climax by mounting some new steps to pray before a becardled cross, mounted in a niche on the wall. Since there was no door to this closet, he could not shut the door as Jesus instructed, and so the audience could see and hear the whole show. It really seemed intended that way. Swallowing a bit hard, the mother accepted it as "nothing wrong, but just different".

If further evidence be needed to show honest people that the derelict hulk of "Protestantism" is being scuttled in heathen idolatry, it is furnished by *The Christian Advocate*, issue of June 11, 1942, official organ of the Methodist Church, "Protestantism's" strongest branch in America. Here, editorially, the father of pasteurized milk bending over his microscope, and the priest across the street bending his knees before an image in his "church", are eulogized as equally true servants of God. Thus without "protest" this "Protestant" organization disappears beneath the Stygian waters of pagan darkness.

Furthermore, glorying in such shame, the *Advocate* contained a full two-page article by one Thos. A. Stafford on the subject of "Christian Symbols". Damagingly that dominie admits that his symbols originated "long before [his] church forsook evangelical simplicity and hardened into a rigid ecclesiastical organism with great concern for form",—that is, just a lifeless shell. Still further belying his claims, and betraying his trust, he adds: "Protestants are realizing . . . that . . . the Reformation was so severe that

it went to extremes in the rejection of valuable ancient symbols . . . We are now engaged in restoring the worthy and venerable symbols to their ancient place of honor in the furnishings of the sanctuary."

As "worthy" of "veneration" and "honor" by "Protestants" (!!!) twenty-five of these pagan idolatrous symbols are reproduced and commended as "Christian", though contrary to God's law, and of heathen origin. Included are images or symbols of: God's hand; Mary's sinlessness; the star of Bethlehem; a sacred *fish* which means "Jesus Christ, God's Son, Saviour"; the shamrock and other trinity-fake symbols; the likeness of a dead goose hung up by the tail and called a "dove" is for the holy spirit; a "phoenix" bird is for the resurrection (in which they do not believe); a sailboat is for the "church"; several crosses, dating back to heathen use before Christ, and—horrors and shades of Hitler withal—the swastika, an ancient "emblem of Christ, 'the Sun of Righteousness'", says the preacher!!! Could a Jesuit say worse?

Why will men thus connive at the blasphemy of God? (For the answer see the book *Religion*.)—Roy D. Goodrich, Florida.

---

### Demonism in Phoenix

◆ Demonism broke out in Phoenix, Ariz., where a boy who cannot read has become an ordained minister of the Pentecostal church. He carries a Bible with him to the platform, glancing at it now and then, whenever he falters. Sometimes the Bible is upside down when he glances at it. He is said to sometimes spend two hours a day praying. His themes are hell-fire and brimstone. He is six years of age. Nothing that he says could possibly be of the slightest benefit to anybody. He sometimes teases his younger sisters and gets spanked for it. He is thin, moody and spiritistic.

## America's Menace

IT IS the same menace that wrecked and ruined nations in the past centuries. It comes to us clothed in the garb of RELIGION, but inwardly it has the parts of a tyrant. It comes to us with divine unction in one hand to mollify the ills of humanity, while it holds in the other the chains to bind our intellects and enslave our consciences. It comes to us as a direct oracle of Almighty God, while under the cloak is the carcass of Beelzebub. It comes to us as the vicegerent of the Son of Man, while it conceals the implements of the Inquisition under the folds of its religious garb.

It comes to us as the embodiment of that which uplifts humanity and imbues it with those attributes which grow toward a high civilization, but its withering blasts warp and wither those nations coming under its consuming spell. It comes to us as the consummation of philanthropic zeal, but the almighty dollar is its god.

It comes to us as the purifier of morals, but its teachings and influence have debased and debauched the morals of every country under high heaven over which it has exerted an influence. It comes to us as the purveyor of salvation to mankind, but it has proved beyond any shadow of doubt that it is a gigantic grafting political system seeking to acquire power in order to acquire wealth.

It comes to us crying peace on earth and good-will to men, while it is alleged that it is now training more than three hundred thousand men in this country in the use of firearms in order to be ready to do its bidding. It comes to us as the promoter of intellectual development, but we find its pupils groveling in abject ignorance, squalor, moral degradation and superstition. It comes to us as the direct successor of Peter the apostle, but not one single one of its rites and ceremonies but has been borrowed from its ancestors, THE PAGANS.

It comes to us wholly a religious system, but its sole ambition is graft and political power. It comes to us in all the humility of the Son of Man, but its arrogance and intolerance have caused more bloodshed, its hands are stained with more crime, than all the wars of history. This is our MENACE in this glorious twentieth century. It is the ROMAN CATHOLIC HIERARCHY.

It, like its ancestors, comes to us clothed in the garb of religion—mark you, we did not say *Christianity*, we said *religion*. Under the cloak of religion not a few of the most destructive parasites and damnable grafts of past ages have injected their virus into the corner-stones of governments and poisoned their vitals until they tottered and fell.—*America's Menace*, by C. W. Bibb.

---

## Catholic Bus Bills

JOSEPH LEWIS, president of the New York League for the Separation of Church and State, 319 East 34th street, New York, in a letter to the Passaic (N.J.) *Herald-News*, regarding the Catholic Bus Bill, then before the New Jersey legislature, and now before many other state legislatures, said, in part:

We urge your assemblymen, as liberty-loving Americans, to defeat this pernicious measure. Innocent though it may seem, it

is a dangerous entering wedge which will destroy the fundamental American principle of the separation of church and state. When a similar measure was under consideration in New York, the papers were flooded with letters of protest. We quote one typical letter published in the New York *Times*:

"The *Times* did well to bring to the public's attention . . . the proposed 'Catholic Bus Bill', I have never seen or heard a convincing argument for it. The one most

often seen or heard, that sending children to parochial schools relieves the expense of their attending the public schools, applies as well to private schools, or to schools of other religious bodies, to schools run by Socialists or Communists. Parents who send their children to private schools help to support the public schools by taxes, although they may never have had a child attend the public school. To compel them to pay additional taxes for the support of schools not public and where their children may never attend seems fundamentally 'unconstitutional'. We have provided a school system where all may go, irrespective of race or creed, and those seeking advantages not given by the public school should pay for them."

Here is another:

"Complete separation of church and state is the only practical course for a democracy, and the results of departing from this policy are evident in Mexico, Spain, and other European countries. It is a tenet of my own creed (Presbyterian)

that government aid should not be given to churches, and this bill will force me as a taxpayer to violate my own religious beliefs, which I deeply resent."

In addition, this bill is but the first step in the demand for support of the entire parochial school system by our secular government, as everyone knows who has been following events throughout the country. The procedure starts with buses; the next request is for textbooks, school furnishings, medical services, and finally the support of the priests themselves.

Religious pressure groups are working overtime throughout the country, taking advantage of the nation's concern with and absorption in national defense. Already these groups have succeeded in pushing through their insidious measures in several states, and the people of those states are just awakening to the dangers into which they have been tricked while they were concerned with their country's welfare. We urge you—defeat this unconstitutional, un-American measure.

## IT SHALL STAND FOREVER

### A NEW WORLD of righteousness!

But who can create such a world?

What will it be like?

According to whose ideas will it be made?

Will it suit everybody that lives?

How may one enter therein?

Why shall it endure forever?

The right answer, backed by authority that cannot be questioned, comforts those that mourn because of present wicked world conditions, and quiets all fears of the future that is shrouded in darkness and uncertainty. It fills the heart of righteous persons with hope.

These right answers can be found in the new Bible study aid entitled *THE NEW WORLD*. This 384-page book is bound in attractive, peach-colored cloth, with embossed planetary design, and will be mailed to you, prepaid, on your contribution of 25c.

**WATCHTOWER**

**117 Adams St.**

**Brooklyn, N. Y.**

Yes, I want to read that book; please mail me a copy. I am enclosing herewith a contribution of 25c to aid in additional printing.

Name .....

Street .....

City .....

State .....

## Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"

### Coherence

**C**OHERENCE means a sticking together within, between all the parts making up a composition or talk. Coherence exists where there is a showing of connection between all such parts, thereby making manifest that they all together make up a unified whole. No detail is wasted or out of place, and hence no detail sends the mind off into other directions and sidetracks the course of thought from the mental conclusion to which the author or speaker is desiring to lead his readers or hearers. All the word picture derives strength from every detail worked in, and it is not diluted by the admixture of an unneeded, foreign matter. When one tries to make such unrelated matter adhere to his composition or talk it prevents the true and proper parts from cohering together between themselves. Good coherence never permits breaking the thread of thought by excursions off the main track, no matter how interesting such excursions; rather the progress of thought from one part to another is smooth, natural and logical, without jogs, breaks or diversions.

There must be cohesion between the larger parts of the talk, the introduction, body and conclusion all cohering one to the other. Besides these general parts of the talk there are subdivisions, particularly in the body of the talk. Between these there must be coherence or proper continuity of thought. These larger parts are made up of sentences. Of necessity, then, there must be a sticking together of all the sentences in their order or thought progress will be detoured and it will be difficult to establish it again. Sentences are themselves made up of the elements of thoughts, namely, words. Hence the sense of coherence must be carried into the sentence itself, showing the true relationship between the words, phrases and clauses thereof.

What, then, are the practical rules or

methods for putting coherence into a talk? First of all, stick to the subject throughout; brush aside everything that has no necessary relationship thereto. Then there are the binders that make for coherence, the words or phrases that show connection between the parts of the talk. The binders also include words that show the relationship between any new part and its antecedent so as to throw the mind back to what was stated before; and words or phrases which bridge over from one part to another, that is, make transition of thought. Examples of such transitional words and expressions are however, nevertheless, therefore, in addition, on the other hand, etc. The surest means of coherence is the use of words or phrases that show the relationship between new ideas and what has preceded.

To illustrate coherence without the use of transitional words or expressions the Testimony card for the book *The New World* is used. The opening sentence says: "Victory will bring in a new world, it was long ago foretold at Psalms 96 and 98." The outcome of victory is stated to be a new world, thus preparing the reader's mind for the title of the book, to view it with some understanding. The reference to Psalms 96 and 98 restricts the victory and new world, not to what the United Nations mean, but to what the Bible means.

The second sentence reads: "Lovers of right and truth may hope to see that victory and new world of righteousness." The coherence is established not merely by repeating the words "new world" and "victory", but by using also the demonstrative pronoun "that" before those words, thus throwing the mind of the reader back to the antecedent, that is, the victory and new world mentioned in the first sentence. To such theme a new thought is added for later reference, namely, "righteousness," but, instead of sidetracking the mind, it merely enlarg-



es on the kind of new world to be.

Without a connective or transitional word the next sentence reads: "It is of vital interest to you to get the facts on it now." This last pronoun "it" reminds the reader of "victory and new world of righteousness" stated in the preceding sentence. By this device the connection or tie-in of this new sentence to the former is made. Please note the viewpoint that is shown by the word "you", namely, that the presenter of the Testimony card is addressing the reader. Since this "you" occurs after the mention of "Lovers of right and truth", it shows that the reader is being addressed as one of such and understood to be such. Note that this viewpoint is not changed, but is continued to the end of the testimony, so making for unity and coherence of the testimony as to viewpoint. Shifting of the viewpoint would confuse.

Here a new paragraph begins. For proper coherence there should be an easy transition or bridge from the first paragraph to this one. How, then, is it bound to the first paragraph? Note: "The desirable information you will find in this 384-page book entitled *The New World*." The word "information" is the cohesive word, because it binds this sentence to the words "the facts" just mentioned and which facts are "of vital interest" and hence "desirable" for one to be informed on. Now the one thus addressed knows by the mentioning of the title of the book why the words "new world" were used in the opening sentence.

The next sentence proceeds to give the reader more information, saying, "From God's prophetic Word it shows the destruction of Nazi-Fascist-totalitarian rule, and the freedom from oppression, fear and want under the Righteous Government long promised." In that sentence the coherence is sustained by using the pronoun "it", which has as its antecedent the term "book entitled *The New World*." In like manner the next sentence is made to cohere to this one by the repeating of the pronoun

"it", which again refers to the book: "It [that is, the book] helps you understand why wickedness has been permitted till now and its final end is at hand."

A new paragraph now begins. There is no transition word or phrase to open it up, but the self-evident connection of it with the foregoing paragraphs is made by repeating the title of the new book and stating the purpose of its publication, as follows: "*The New World* is published to give courage and hope, and to comfort all that mourn." This statement and the preceding sentence show the book to be charitable as well as educational, and so the coherence of the Testimony is helped by next noting that fact in the closing sentence, which reads: "Your contributing twenty-five cents for this copy will help in this educational and charitable work." The words "this copy" binds this final sentence to the preceding one, as does also the re-use of the same demonstrative pronoun in the final words, "*this* educational and charitable work."

If you were to put any sentence or part of the above analyzed Testimony out of its logical order and in a place where it does not belong, it would mar the coherence of the delivery. While the closing sentence of the Testimony has a connection with the whole, and while it coheres to all that goes before, yet to put it at the beginning of the Testimony or in the opening paragraph would break in on the continuity and thereby destroy the hanging together of the subject of the Testimony and the introductory remarks. It is thus seen that while a detail may fit in with the general theme, nevertheless it must come in its proper place to make sense and it must be preceded by that which clearly leads up to it. Then it will be understandable and seem reasonable when it is reached, and its due relationship to all that went before it will be grasped easily. Additionally, it will be a bridge between what was said up till then and what words or action may follow thereafter.

## Here and There

### **"Recognized Racial Aptitudes"**

◆ For some reason the huge Babcock and Wilcox Company, manufacturers of boilers for America's largest enterprises, had no Negroes at their Bayonne, New Jersey, plant, though they did have 830 of them in three other plants, where, all together, they employ 6,500 men. The counsel for the company tried to raise the point of "recognized racial aptitudes" when his company was called upon the carpet for the Bayonne discrimination, but then finally admitted that he did not believe, himself, that there is any such thing, and that the company will be glad to at once remove from its application blanks questions as to race, as it has already done with questions on religion.

New York State has passed a law making it a crime for any corporation engaged in defense work to refuse employment to any person, otherwise qualified, because of the national origin or the race, color or creed of such person.

### **Mining Logs in Southern Jersey**

◆ New Jersey has the distinction of being an area from which have come in recent years trees that manifestly grew in the days before the Flood. These cedar trees, bowled over by the winds, are found from 15 feet to 90 feet deep in the Yockwock and other swamps, and, as cedar does not rot, the lumber made from them serves an excellent purpose. Modern methods have been installed for getting these logs out of their long sleep and putting the lumber where it will serve human needs.

### **Amelia Picked Up a Million**

◆ Amelia Mildred Everts, America's outstanding confidence woman, went about the country under eight aliases, and at length, after a half century of crime in which she picked up a million dollars, married J. Clarence Carr, chairman of the Roseville (N. J.) Methodist church trustees, and settled down to her

regular line of business until she got caught once again. Maureen McKernan [guess her "church"] writing in the *New York Post*, and a fit representative of that now decadent publication, distinguished herself by writing up Amelia as "a delegate to a conference of Jehovah's witnesses". How anybody could be a Methodist saint like Amelia, and at the same time be a delegate to a meeting of Jehovah's witnesses, only a chambermaid of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy could understand or believe.

### **The New Foods**

◆ The new foods are milk powder, sometimes de-fatted, which can be kept almost indefinitely in any climate; butter which does not melt in the sun; dried soups, oysters, meat, potatoes, eggs, lemonade and pumpkins; dehydrated vegetables of all kinds; and boneless beef, which saves labor and promotes sanitation about the field kitchens where all these foods are made ready for the use of the soldiers. In 1941 Uncle Sam sent 200,000,000 pounds of dried milk to Britain alone.

### **All Out for War**

◆ Nearly 2,500 British factories producing goods for civilians have been closed for the duration of the war. Out of the 1,250,000 workers who were engaged in these factories, 250,000 are now engaged in war work, and 50,000,000 square feet of the space in which they worked is now used either for production or for storage of war goods.

### **The Block Bombs**

◆ The block bombs (used by the British when they sent their expedition of 1,130 bombers and fighters against Cologne, are so called because, weighing up to 4,480 pounds each, they can demolish a city block and can damage property 1,600 feet away. The British dropped 6,720,000 pounds of bombs on Cologne in that single raid.

# SPECIAL OFFER YET AVAILABLE

THE WATCHTOWER CAMPAIGN CONTINUES UNTIL APRIL 30

*Are you having a part in it?*

IT IS CHEERING to know that a new and better, free world is on the way. Now, therefore, as never before, trustworthy information is needed to guide those hoping to see and enjoy it. Bible prophecy on our day gives the needed guidance, and for your benefit the *Watchtower* magazine publishes it twice a month.

You will also be helped to rejoice in this hope, in spite of the present hardships, by reading the book *The New World*. How far the postwar "new order" will succeed, and who will make this a warless world, is set out in the booklet *Peace—Can It Last?*



16-page journal  
Printed semimonthly  
24 issues per year, \$1.00  
Devoted exclusively to  
Bible education

**THESE THREE PUBLICATIONS** will mean so much to you NOW. Hence during the WATCHTOWER CAMPAIGN a special offer is made, of giving, FREE, the 384-page book *THE NEW WORLD* and the 32-page publication *PEACE—CAN IT LAST?* with each yearly subscription for *THE WATCHTOWER* at the regular contribution of \$1.00. If you haven't already taken advantage of this gracious provision, do so before the premium offer expires.

**HAVE YOU INFORMED YOUR FRIENDS ABOUT THIS SPECIAL OFFER?**

**WATCHTOWER, 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y.**

For the enclosed contribution of \$1.00 please place my name on the *Watchtower* subscription list for 1 year, and send to me, prepaid, the book *The New World* and the booklet *Peace—Can It Last?*

Name ..... Street .....  
City ..... State .....

# CONSOLATION

JOURNAL OF FACT, HOPE AND COURAGE

## Whither, O British Commonwealth of Nations?

Where is earth's greatest democratic power heading for?

## Civilization and the Missions

Accomplishments in Europe, Japan, Philippines, and China

## Praise from Youth

Children also are entitled to freedom of worship

## Religion in the Public Schools

Why do religionists seek to enter the public schools?



# Contents

Whither, O British Commonwealth of Nations?	3
Independence from Papal Rome	4
Rise of Bible Societies	5
Final Judgment of Commonwealth Is On!	8
The Dark Continent	11
Last of All Britain Succumbs	12
World-wide Hunger Blockade of Christians	14
"Walking in the Fear of the Lord"?	14
Civilization and the Missions	16
Winning the Heart of China	17
Praise from Youth	18
Must Practice What They Preach	19
"Suffer Little Children to Come"	20
Food Restrictions in the Netherlands	21
Expelled from School for Being Conscientious	22
Religion in the Public Schools	23
The Parochial School	24
'Versed in Schemes of the Devil'	24
The Church and Education	26
Gradually Undermining the Schools	27
Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"	
Theocratic Tactfulness	29
Take Care of Your Rubber	31
The Negro Question	31

Published every other Wednesday by  
**WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, INC.**  
 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

## OFFICERS

<b>President</b>	N. H. Knorr
<b>Secretary</b>	W. E. Van Amburgh
<b>Editor</b>	Clayton J. Woodworth

## Five Cents a Copy

\$1 a year in the United States  
 \$1.25 to Canada and all other countries

## NOTICE TO SUBSCRIBERS

**Remittances:** For your own safety, remit by postal or express money order. When coin or currency is lost in the ordinary mails, there is no redress. Remittances from countries other than those named below may be made to the Brooklyn office, but only by international postal money order.

**Receipt** of a new or renewal subscription will be acknowledged only when requested. **Notice of Expiration** is sent with the journal one month before subscription expires. Please renew promptly to avoid loss of copies.

**Send change of address** direct to us rather than to the post office. Your request should reach us at least two weeks before the date of issue with which it is to take effect. Send your old as well as the new address. Copies will not be forwarded by the post office to your new address unless extra postage is provided by you.

Published also in Greek, Portuguese, Spanish, and Ukrainian.

## OFFICES FOR OTHER COUNTRIES

England	34 Craven Terrace, London, W. 2
Australia	7 Beresford Road, Strathfield, N. S. W.
South Africa	623 Boston House, Cape Town
Mexico	Calzada de Melchor Ocampo 71, Mexico, D. F.
Brazil	Caixa Postal 1319, Rio de Janeiro
Argentina	Calle Honduras 5646-48, Buenos Aires

Entered as second-class matter at Brooklyn, N. Y., under the Act of March 3, 1879.

# Notanda

## Ashamed to Mention the Creator

◆ Man dearly loves life for the many things that make it desirable. With admiration he gazes at the rugged grandeur of the wild places of the earth, at the imposing mountain rearing its inaccessible peaks to the skies, at the tempestuous and foaming sea. By the banks of a stream which winds its shining course through the willow trees and meadows he finds keen joy in disporting himself amid the tender grass. In impassioned terms he speaks of the intoxicating scent of the forest, of the thousand rustlings of life which stir in the branches of the trees, and under the carpet of leaves. And the greater part of these fervent admirers of the marvelous wonders of creation are ashamed to pronounce the name of the great God who has so generously lavished these numberless blessings on man. Through His prophet the Lord said of Israel, "I have nourished and brought up children, and they have rebelled against me." Is not this representative of the attitude of practically the whole human race to the loving Creator?—From French *Consolation* (now suppressed).

## All Nations of One Blood

◆ Working at Harvard University and the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, two scientists have discovered that all human creatures have in their skins five pigments, two forms of hemoglobin (which is the coloring matter of the blood), carotene (which is found in carrots), melanin, and melanoid. Difference in skin color is simply the different proportions in which these five pigments occur. Whites have the least melanin, and then Japanese, Hindus, mulattoes, and Negroes, in the order named. More women than men are blondes because more women have more carotene, and very blonde persons do not tan, but burn, because of that fact.

CONSOLATION

# CONSOLATION

"And in His name shall the nations hope."—Matthew 12:21, A. R. V.

Volume XXIV

Brooklyn, N. Y., Wednesday, March 31, 1943

Number 614

## Whither, O British Commonwealth of Nations?

WHITHER walks the British Commonwealth of Nations? On February 11 Prime Minister Winston Churchill in the House of Commons declared the joint resolve of Britain and America to make the Nazis "burn and bleed" on other fronts besides the Russian. Then he added: "Great Britain and the United States . . . are now warrior nations, WALKING IN THE FEAR OF THE LORD, very heavily armed and with an increasingly clear view of their salvation." That is Bible language, immediately calling to mind Acts 9:31. It shows that the prime minister is acquainted with the Holy Bible. It reflects that from earliest times the English people have been associated with the Sacred Scriptures and keenly interested therein. It harks back to the Anglo-Saxon king, Alfred the Great, of the ninth century, who saved England for the English. Not only was he a great warrior, but he devoted himself to advancing the intellectual interests of his people. As part of this task he translated into English over one-third of the book of Psalms, namely, Psalms one to fifty-five, inclusive.

This same England is the site of the Magna Charta, of June, 1215, which was an early but important step toward the constitutional form of government which the nation has enjoyed. It should not be forgotten, though, that just two months thereafter Pope Innocent III published a bull which declared Magna Charta null and void, because it had been extorted from King John by force; and the pope followed this up by excommunicating the barons who had obtained

it. In the autumn of that year war followed between king and barons, but Magna Charta survived. Its Chapter LXIII repeats the promise of freedom to the English church and of their rights and liberties to all. From that document dates definitely the great struggle between the Romish arm and the secular arm, and between the aristocratic and the popular rights, which struggle has characterized English history so markedly.

The following century brought forth the noted John Wycliffe, who has been called "the morning-star of the Reformation". An eminent scholar and preacher, he was the first translator of the entire Bible into English, making his translation, however, from the Latin version thereof. Forty-four years after his death, it far from displayed the spirit of Christianity and rather magnified the contemptible conduct of religion when the Roman Catholic Council of Constance, which on May 5, 1415, had condemned Wycliffe's doctrines, had his remains dug up in 1428 and had them burned and then had his ashes cast into the adjoining Swift river.

A hundred years after Wycliffe's death William Tyndale was born, destined to become a martyr for his persistent efforts at translating and circulating the Holy Scriptures. He declared it was "impossible to establish the lay people in any truth except the scripture were plainly laid before their eyes in their mother tongue". This moved him to translate and print the "New Testament" in the familiar spoken English of

his day. He had declared he would produce a version that a plowboy could read and understand. Because of the power and influence of Roman Catholicism in England Tyndale was obliged to leave the country and do his work on the continent of Europe. Copies of his translation of the "New Testament" from the original Greek early found their way into England. In 1526 the Roman Catholic bishop of London thundered out his prohibition of them. In 1528 a number of copies of this "New Testament" version were collected, yes, some copies of which had been purchased by the Hierarchy just to be destroyed, and were burned at St. Paul's Cross, in London. Cardinal Wolsey was dreadfully enraged; and Sir Thomas More, whom the Vatican has in recent years canonized as a saint, was employed to denounce Tyndale. Still the printed English "New Testament" continued to enter England and find its way to eager hands and readers. Religion failed to suppress God's Word.

Tyndale also translated the first four books of Moses and put copies in circulation. His educational work was interrupted by his betrayal, imprisonment and martyrdom, in 1536. While being fastened to the stake, at which he was first strangled and then burned, he cried out: "Lord, open the eyes of the king of England." The work on the English Bible went ahead, however, and in 1535, while Tyndale was in prison, Miles Coverdale put out the first printed English Bible. Its printer's name being unknown, nobody knows where it was published, apparently not in England, because of the religious powers there. Coverdale made use of the work Tyndale had done, translating the rest of the "Old Testament" from the best German and Latin versions at hand, thus producing a complete English Bible.

### ***Independence from Papal Rome***

Before Tyndale's death things changed in England, now under King Henry VIII,

upon whom religious intrigue had forced a Spanish wife incapable of bearing child. Unlike other political rulers of today both within and without the British Commonwealth of Nations, Henry VIII had the rare courage to defy the pope and his screeching bulls of excommunication, and to explode the papal claim that abject submission to the Roman *papa* is absolutely indispensable to salvation of humans, whether British or of other nationalities. The Anglican church, or "Church of England", resulted.

Henry VIII avowed as reasons for supporting the Protestant reformation "the desire of removing usurpations, establishing the ancient rights of the church and the crown, correcting abuses prejudicial to true religion". Hence the English church could not refuse to take into consideration the subject proposed for examination nor refuse to sanction proper reforms. Whether the liberty from papal bondage resulting from Henry's bold move was beneficial to the British nation let every impartial observer judge from its history thereafter. This makes pertinent the question, Shall now Britain and her sister nations return to that bondage in the coming postwar world?

Before Parliament dissolved on July 18, 1536, to end its six-year term under which Henry VIII had carried out his innovations, one of its last acts was to petition the king that a new translation of the Scriptures be made by authority and set up in the churches. Since Henry's reign Britain has been one of the sturdy bulwarks of Protestantism. Hence it was that, at the coronation on May 12, 1937, at Westminster Abbey, London, King George VI declared himself "a faithful Protestant". To the question put to him by the archbishop of Canterbury, "Will you to the utmost of your power maintain the laws of God and the true profession of the Gospel? Will you to the utmost of your power maintain in the United Kingdom the Protestant Reformed Religion estab-

lished by law?" the king replied: "All this I promise to do." After his crowning there followed a rite first introduced at the crowning of the Protestant William and Mary in 1689, namely, the presenting of the Bible. The words accompanying this presentation were: "Our gracious King, we present you with this Book, the most valuable thing the world affords. Here is wisdom. This is the royal law. These are the lively oracles of God." Upon this Bible the king put his right hand, and he kissed it before signing the oath and thereafter declaring himself a Protestant who will maintain the Protestant accession to the best of his power, according to law.

Such procedure cannot be brushed aside lightly, even if but a ritual of long-standing tradition. Why not? Because it is openly done in the name of God and before His sight. It therefore entails a heavy responsibility upon H. M. King George VI, from which he cannot escape before God. It put him in a peculiar position with respect to certain events of 1942, as we shall shortly see.

Not by the pope's indulgence was it that, four centuries after Henry VIII, a monarch of Britain could take the above oath. To keep their necks free of the Vatican's yoke the British have had to put up a valiant fight. In 1588, during the reign of Queen Elizabeth, daughter of Henry VIII, came the Spanish armada of King Philip of Spain, "blessed" by the pope; but the hardy, resourceful British stood it off and defeated it. Not less so in the epic struggle of 1940 did their descendants hold out under the devastating attacks of the Nazi air armada of another "sword of the pope", namely, Adolf Hitler. In both instances the pope lost out, and so many of the British owed so much to so few. During the reign of the virgin queen Elizabeth the British Empire was born, when she chartered the English India Company, in A. D. 1600. Within seven years after the beginning of the empire, to wit, May 13, 1607, the first permanent settlement of

the British was made at Jamestown, Virginia. This marked the beginning of the thirteen colonies of the British Empire in America. For 169 years thereafter these colonies were an integral part of the British Empire.

It was that same England that gave to these colonies such men of tolerance as William Penn, who refused to take off his hat even to the king but nevertheless was spared alive to found, later, Pennsylvania; and also Roger Williams, the founder of Rhode Island and who has been called the "pioneer of religious liberty". Before his death in 1684 Williams had organized and built up a political community with absolute liberty of religion as its chief cornerstone. To this Britisher and colonist more than to any other man is due the American system of a "free church in a free State".

### *Rise of Bible Societies*

Early in the reign of Elizabeth's successor, King James I, that most beloved and popular book was produced, the translation of the Holy Bible known as the "King James Version" or "Authorized Version". Even to this day it is the best seller. It was based mainly on Tyndale's translation. It is the version from which primarily the scripture quotations are made in all publications of the WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, whose books and booklets on the Bible since 1920 have gained a circulation of over 400,000,000 copies, in 88 languages; which circulation is exceeded only by that of the King James Version Bible itself. Despite its popularity with Christians, which has continued for three centuries, this Bible has been and is condemned by the pope and his hierarchy. Such is exactly as foretold in the dedicatory foreword of the Bible, which is addressed to King James and which says concerning popish disapproval (paragraph 5): "Humbly craving of Your most Sacred Majesty, that since things of this quality have ever been subject to the censures of illmeaning and discontented



persons, it may receive approbation and patronage from so learned and judicious a Prince as Your Highness is, whose allowance and acceptance of our labours shall more honour and encourage us, than all the calumniations and hard interpretations of other men shall dismay us. So that if, on the one side, we shall be **TRADUCED BY POPISH PERSONS AT HOME OR ABROAD**, who therefore will malign us, because we are poor instruments to make God's holy Truth to be yet more and more known unto the people, whom they [the Popish Persons] desire still to keep in ignorance and darkness; . . ."

It was in the stronghold of Protestantism, in London, that the great educational organization was founded on March 7, 1804, the British and Foreign Bible Society. Its attention was first turned to Wales, where the demand for God's Word was then extremely urgent, and 25,000 Bibles and Testaments were printed in Welsh and distributed. Since then and down to the close of 1928 it has published and circulated Bibles to the number of 385,000,000 copies. From England it turned its energy to Continental Europe, where great quantities of Bibles were put in the hands of the spiritually hungry people. Bible Societies were soon formed on the Continent. In India the Bible Society found a permanent foothold. In the western English-speaking world the New York Bible Society was founded in 1804; the Philadelphia Bible Society in 1808; the American Bible Society in 1816; and the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society in 1884.

All this has not been without great opposition from fanatical religionists; and the sanctimonious ruler of the Vatican has denounced them as "pestiferous Bible Societies" and has made it a religious sin for children of the Roman Catholic sect to have in possession or to read the Bibles thus issued. After 1817 the operation of the Bible Society in the Austrian empire, homeland of Adolf Hitler, was rendered illegal by restric-

tions enforced by the Roman Catholic government. Where the Vatican has been unable to prevent the circulation of the Bible it has viciously opposed, hindered and tried to suppress the distribution of literature explaining the Bible. The latest proofs thereof will be forthcoming in this article.

With the spread of the British Empire the circulation of the Bible has spread. The title "Empire" officially dates from 1876, when Queen Victoria became Empress of India. By the so-called "Statute of Westminster" the British Empire nominally came to an end on November 26, 1931, being superseded by a federation of self-governing British states or commonwealths, and the Parliament of Westminster at London ceased to be the Imperial Parliament. Thus the British Commonwealth of Nations came into being. All commonwealths, together with the colonies and protectorates, have as their binding tie their joint fealty and allegiance to the king of Britain. This erstwhile "Empire" is the largest body of land and people found under any one jurisdiction on earth. It takes in about one-fourth of the earth's surface, with more than one-fourth of the estimated number of the human family. Vast portions of it lie in each of the five grand divisions of the earth, in Europe, the Americas, Asia, Africa, and Australasia. Its organization differs entirely from that of any other empire in history.

Control by the central government in Britain over the outlying parts runs from autocracy to a merely nominal control. In such a way Britain is the heart of a vast world-power or imperialism, which has belted the globe. It has long stood as a barrier to world domination by its traditional enemy, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, whose heart lies at Vatican City. It must be remembered that it was the London treaty of 1915, made with the kingdom of Italy, that barred the pope from having any part in the negotiation of the peace treaty of World War I, the pope's connections

with the Teutonic allies having been so notorious. It is all too evident, therefore, that the non-Catholic British Empire, or Commonwealth now, has ever been a thorn in the side of the Papacy, whose ambition has been for a "total" Catholic globe or earth, with headquarters at the Vatican.

Being of such earth-embracing dimensions, the British imperialism has therefore been the foundation and backbone of a civilization independent of Roman Hierarchy domination, for three centuries. The scheme of the Papacy has been and yet is to break up that liberal, constitutional, non-Catholic world power. Failing in this, it then aims by crafty means and subtle to cast a spell and weave an entangling net of control about it and to victimize it to do its bidding. Which method shall it now be? In that anguished year of 1940 it appeared for a time as if the Papacy, by its concordat partners, Hitler and Mussolini, would tear the very heart out of the British Commonwealth of Nations; but the courage of the British again bore them up and the Island fortress held out under assault by air and sea.

Now, in this year 1943, it seems that the pope's conquest by direct onslaught has been blocked for a long time to come. He sits on his artificial fence of loudly-advertised "neutrality" waiting for more definite developments to guarantee that victory shall go to the United Nations in order that he may shine up to the sure victors and snatch a victory out of their victory. His own "voice", the Catholic press, declares that he is "for Victory after victory". Said a distinguished monsignor of his over a nation-wide broadcast from America's capital during "The Catholic Hour", January 3, 1943, while speaking on "War and Revolution":

A far more important question than "Who will win the war?" is the question: "Who will win the revolution?" In other words, what kind of ideologies or philosophies of life will dominate the world when this war is finished?

... Pray for victory? Yes! We will win that, there is no doubt! But the peace, the restoration of the moral law, a new order based on God's justice—that will come only by a return to the mind and spirit of the Church during the first few centuries. . . . We have a war to win; and we have a revolution to win. A war to win by overthrowing the power of the enemy in battle; a peace to win by making ourselves worthy to DICTATE IT. . . . This is the true revolution! All the other revolutions of the twentieth century have been from *without*; this time we want a revolution from *within*.

This planned Catholic revolution therefore means they will henceforth work from within the British Commonwealth, to capture control of both it and America. The Hierarchy is doing so now, notably since 1940, and will do so more energetically in the postwar "new order". It is already dictating to all parts of the British Commonwealth and its colonies and protectorates. The situation is too critical now for prejudice to cause you to disregard this warning. Read the substantial evidence given below. Face the FACTS. Act!

Dominating the earth for these three hundred years past by a control over 13,000,000 square miles of the earth's surface and 500,000,000 of its inhabitants, the British Empire or Commonwealth bears a heavy responsibility before Almighty God, earth's Creator. Who is He? The King James Version of the Bible, at Psalm 83:18, answers for men wanting to know: "That men may know that thou, whose name alone is JEHOVAH, art the most high over all the earth." Furthermore, at Psalm 24:1,2 it is written: "The earth is the LORD's, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein. For he hath founded it upon the seas, and established it upon the floods." Not to the pope, then, but to the LORD, JEHOVAH, must the British Commonwealth, and particularly Britain its seat, render an account for the way she handles the earth and the seas whose vast waters her ships ply.

The British Commonwealth, long

attached to the Holy Bible, is unavoidably answerable to the "Most High over all the earth" for her treatment of the peoples in her territories as well as those who come under her sphere of influence. Having assumed imperial dominance over such multitudinous populations, she makes herself liable to God for the education of such peoples in that knowledge which is essential to their eternal salvation, to wit, the knowledge of Jehovah God and the Kingdom of His Son. (See John 17:3.) Such knowledge includes not merely the text of the Bible, which British Bible Societies have published to the millions of copies, but also the explanation of the Bible that the peoples may understand the meaning of the text. In this year 1943 is the British Commonwealth advancing such knowledge? or suppressing it as Hitler did?

### ***Final Judgment of Commonwealth Is On!***

From world events since 1914 and from the Holy Bible it can clearly be proved that the judgment of the nations, and particularly of "Christendom", has been on since 1918, when World War I ended. The British Commonwealth is the outstanding part of "Christendom" and cannot escape the judgment. Jehovah's King, Christ Jesus, is on His heavenly throne as Rightful Ruler of the New World and as Judge. Through the proclamation of His established Kingdom from and after 1914 by His witnesses, all nations have been gathered before Him for judgment, and not one of the Commonwealth nations, colonies and protectorates is hid from His judicial scrutiny. His division of the people as "sheep" and "goats" with respect to God's Kingdom is proceeding irresistibly, as described in the parable of the end of the world, at Matthew 25:31-46. How does the British Commonwealth of Nations stand in the judgment? Can she justify herself to a prolonged existence? Will her "salvation", of which she has an "increasingly clear view", be unto endless world domination in a postwar "better

world" of human creation? Her acts now must determine.

The Bible, which King George VI kissed at his coronation, sets out the rule of judgment. At Psalm 9:17 it is written: "The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God." As shown in the English Revised Version Bible "hell" here is *Sheol*, which Hebrew word means the death state and hence national extinction for all God-forgetting nations. You will say, "Surely the British Commonwealth has too many Bibles to forget God; why, in Britain there is one in practically every home." Well, then, turn to Proverbs 10:27 and read: "The fear of the LORD prolongeth days: but the years of the wicked shall be shortened." Note that, at Acts 9:31, the churches of the early Christians are described as "walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the holy ghost", and hence being "multiplied".

Prime Minister Churchill, you told the House of Commons that 'Great Britain and the United States are now warrior nations, walking in the fear of the Lord'. We now ask, Which "lord"? You must know that Roman Canon Law addresses one pontiff as "Our Lord God the pope John XXII"; and that Pope Boniface VIII, in the bull *Unum Sanctum*, declared: "What can you make of me but God?" And Pope Leo XIII, who died in 1903, declared: "We hold upon this earth the place of Almighty God." And his predecessors in office, such as Innocent III of Magna Charta days, and Leo X, Alexander VI, Pius VII, and Pius X, all claimed to be God on earth. Are you sure, Mr. Churchill, whether Britain together with her sister nations of the Commonwealth is walking in the fear of the pope as lord rather than in the fear of Jehovah God Almighty? Not words spoken in Parliament, but the acts of Government committed in the Lord God's sight must be let speak, in order to get at the naked truth. Probe honestly and calmly into the facts, because times are too serious to deceive self.

The Judge of all men, Christ Jesus, knows the facts fully and cannot be deceived. He lays the judgment to this rule: "He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth." "Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me." (Matthew 12:30; 25:40) Note that He judges by what is done even to "the least" of His brethren. Who, then, in "Christendom's" eyes, rates as the "least"? The British Government took knowledge of such "least" ones in its White Paper (Cmd. 6120) issued October 30, 1940, and entitled "Treatment of German Nationals in Germany". Mark the following extracts from that report compiled by Sir Neville Henderson, former ambassador to Berlin, concerning those in Nazi concentration camps:

There were 1500 Jews and 800 Ernste Bibelforscher (International Bible Students) . . . Each man wore a badge—Jews yellow with the star of David, Bible Students violet, etc. . . . Jewish prisoners wrote and received letters twice a month. The Bible Students were allowed no communication with the outside world, but, on the other hand, their rations were not cut down. Herr X spoke with the highest respect of these men. Their courage and religious faith were remarkable, and they professed themselves ready to suffer to the uttermost what they felt God had ordained for them. [Page 10]

The next group were the "Bibelforscher", a religious sect taking its doctrine from the Bible and having a considerable membership in every part of the country, but proscribed by the Gestapo since its members refuse military service; these unhappy people were almost as badly treated as the Jews. [Page 35]

In Britain and America these International Bible Students are known as "Jehovah's witnesses". From the very rise of Hitler to power by papal intrigue these Jehovah's witnesses have refused to "heil Hitler" or salute his swastika or exalt the State above Jehovah God. Immediately after Hitler signed his con-

cordat with Pope Pius XI in 1933, just as his Axis partner Mussolini had done in 1929, Hitler banned Jehovah's witnesses, seized their property, dissolved their organization, and burned their books, 50,000 on one occasion. Finally he rounded up 6,000 of them and subjected them to unusual treatment in concentration camps. Many were shot, beheaded, and tortured to death. Can Hitler be said to be walking in the fear of the Lord in such treatment of these faithful Christians, Jehovah's witnesses? He is indeed walking in the fear of the pope in the discharge of his concordat, but not in the fear of the Lord God Almighty, Jehovah, nor of His Son, Christ Jesus.

Not alone in Nazified Europe and Japan are these Jehovah's witnesses despised and downtrodden, but in all "Christendom" they are harried and oppressed. This agrees fully with Jesus' prophecy to His faithful followers concerning the "end of the world": "Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake." (Matthew 24:9) Are you skeptical that "Christian" Britain and her sister nations are included in those "all nations" manifesting such hate of Christ's followers? It is proudly said that "the sun never sets upon the British Empire". Follow now the sun's course as it throws light upon the things done in the British Commonwealth of Nations with respect to Jehovah's witnesses. Let us also see who is back of these things since Nazism gained control in Germany in 1933 and deployed its "fifth column" throughout the earth.

### **Australasia**

In Australia the International Bible Students, or Jehovah's witnesses, have been active for more than forty years, distributing the literature published by the WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, including its magazine *The Watchtower*, which announces Jehovah's Kingdom and Christ's presence as His King and Judge. In the spring of 1938



the president of the Watchtower Society visited that "land down under". The religionists under the lead of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and its religious press sought to prevent even his being permitted to land. The Society's branch at Sydney (Strathfield) had arranged for him to speak at the Town Hall on the subject "Warning". Before he arrived, the city council canceled the engagement for the Hall, and the authorities refused other halls; the postmaster-general's department refused to supply land wires and facilities for the broadcasting of this Bible lecture, and insisted on censorship of the speech lest there be any expose of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. Finally, the speech was delivered in the open air, at the Sydney Sports Ground, where 25,000 attended, which was six times as many as the Town Hall could have accommodated. Thereafter Jehovah's witnesses in Australia and New Zealand circulated the booklet *Freedom or Romanism?* which included the speech "Warning" and other data of interest.

Religious opposition to Jehovah's witnesses increased as their numbers and activities increased. The next year the total war began and Australia entered. The religionists, who honeycomb the government offices and strategic places of power, sought to use the war emergency as a pretext for crippling and suppressing Jehovah's witnesses. The premier of New South Wales led in the fight against them. In October, 1940, he caused the public press to publish many unfounded allegations against these Christians and made the threat that as the federal government had not taken action, the state would set in motion the necessary legal machinery giving them power to act against Jehovah's witnesses.

On January 16, 1941, Prime Minister Menzies prematurely announced in parliament that he proposed to ban Jehovah's witnesses, his last job before leaving for London. On January 17 an order in council was gazetted wherein the

governor-general declared to be UNLAWFUL those "organizations known as Jehovah's witnesses or the Witnesses of Jehovah; the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society; The International Bible Students Association; The Adelaide Company of Jehovah's witnesses; and Consolation Publishing Co." Previous to this, on January 8, the naval department had ordered the four radio stations used by Jehovah's witnesses for broadcasting God's Kingdom message to shut down. Now seizures and arrests followed the ban, even murder being attempted against Society representatives. But with what result? Have these witnesses stopped witnessing for Jehovah God and His Kingdom? No; they obey God rather than men. Although stocks of the Bible held by the Society were confiscated and locked up, these Christians, these 'least of Christ's brethren', have gotten other supplies locally and have concentrated on witnessing to the people with the Bible alone. Despite the official ban and persecution, this work has not come to nought. It is increasing, and Australia and the Hierarchy's tools there are learning joltingly that this work is not of men and cannot be overthrown, but that the religionists are found to be, not "walking in the fear of the Lord", but FIGHTING AGAINST GOD.—See Acts 5: 38, 39.

In all Australasia eight lands have now outlawed Jehovah's message and the messengers of His Kingdom. New Zealand preceded Australia and banned them as a "subversive organization", on October 21, 1940, so naming them for the purposes of the Public Safety Emergency Regulations, and allowing them no chance to prove Jehovah's witnesses are not subversive. Their conviction without trial was in direct violation of Clause 30 of the Magna Charta, the basis of British justice. Due protest was made by cable to King George VI at London. Then Malaya, or the Straits Settlements, banned the Lord's message, on January 17, 1941, and was followed by Burma on May 26; this was before the Japa-

nese invaded the land, on January 18, 1942. Even the Netherlands East Indies caught the spirit and proscribed the work of Jehovah's witnesses, in March, 1941. The British Crown colony of Hong Kong also ordered out Jehovah's witnesses, and thereafter fell to the Nipponese. The British possession of the Fiji Islands has allowed no shipments of WATCHTOWER literature to Jehovah's people in that colony since 1936. British-held India has likewise prohibited importation of spiritual food for the Lord God's servants there.

### ***The Dark Continent***

Swinging westward with the sun to the vast continent of Africa, we note the Hierarchy's black hand in operation there, particularly since the Copper Belt rioting in Rhodesia in 1935. At the investigation held thereon by a Royal Commission there was no evidence whatsoever to connect Jehovah's witnesses with the trouble. Nevertheless, although the ringleaders were all Roman Catholics, no mention was made of this fact by the British government. In Northern Rhodesia and Southern Rhodesia there is now a total ban on importation and distribution of the Kingdom message of the Most High God.

The Union of South Africa imposed its total prohibition of importation of WATCHTOWER literature in 1941, having withheld the *Watchtower* and *Consolation* magazines already from October, 1940, onward. West Africa likewise took adverse action in 1941, whereas in Gold Coast there has been a prohibition since 1936. Nigeria distinguished itself in similar anti-Jehovah fashion beginning February 4, 1941.

### ***The Americas***

What, now, does the sun disclose as it beams down upon the Americas? Nought but the same God-defying action in lands adhering to the British Crown. In 1936, in Trinidad, the governor in Executive Council issued a proclamation

under the "Seditious Ordinance" prohibiting the importation into this British colony of all *Golden Age* [*Consolation*] and *Watchtower* publications. Jamaica began banning WATCHTOWER literature in 1940 and then enacted a total prohibition in September, 1941. British Guiana took like action in January, 1941.

In the Dominion of Canada, which trembles under the shadow of Catholic Quebec and its Francophile Cardinal, the Hierarchy early got in its work, using as its tool a Quebec Catholic, Ernest la Pointe, then Minister of Justice. In that northern land nobody has exposed the schemes of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy for world domination and subjugation of the British Empire as have Jehovah's witnesses; and it was the witnesses the Hierarchy were after. Immediately after the arrival of the new governor-general from England into Canada, they dealt a swift blow. Their lackey, using his high Dominion post, caused to be passed, on America's Independence Day, July 4, 1940, an order in council declaring ILLEGAL the "Jehovah's Witness Organization". This was meant to sound the death knell of God's witnesses who are "walking in the fear of the Lord" in Canada. The fact that these Christians still continue to carry on their witness work with only the Bible, which is "the sword of the spirit", and the further fact that their numbers and work increase, does not relieve the Canadian authorities and the vexed Hierarchy of guilt in fighting against God, whose work they are unable to overthrow in Canada. The anti-Jehovah ban continues there to date. Condign punishment at Jehovah's hands waits to be meted out upon such unrepentant forgetters of God in the terrible "battle of that great day of God Almighty".—Revelation 16:14.

Without warning another blow was struck against those who feed at the table which the great Shepherd Jehovah spreads for His sheep in the midst of their enemies. (Psalm 23:1, 5) This time it was off-shore from the United States,

namely, in the Bahama islands. On September 8, 1942, this Crown colony placed all WATCHTOWER publications under ban, not merely for the duration of the global war, but perpetually. Protest was cabled from America to the governor-general, the former King Edward VIII, who abdicated the throne to "marry the woman I love"; but without avail. The ban will doubtless continue to stand, but not perpetually; at the longest only till the execution of Jehovah's judgment at the battle of Armageddon.

### ***Last of All Britain Succumbs***

The above anti-Theocratic movements of the enemies of divine truth in the periphery of the British Commonwealth of Nations, finally left the Island fortress of Britain standing isolated as the sole surviving region where the printed message of Jehovah's Theocratic Government could be freely circulated and enjoyed by Christians and by all persons of good-will who hungered for truth and righteousness.

But sinister forces were at work. Like Hitler, who first attacked the weak territories such as Poland, Norway, and others, and then closed in on the core of resistance, Britain itself, so now these same forces, under central control from the Vatican, closed in on the main and strongest Commonwealth stronghold. Although the "Catholic population" of Britain numbers only 2 percent of the entire population, yet prominent members thereof occupy influential and strategic positions in the Government. To shield these, Cardinal Hinsley, of Westminster cathedral, has been playing up to the Government with great protestations, and has set in motion the so-called "Sword of the Spirit" movement to round up all religious denominations and to lull them to sleep in the arms of the evil-designing plotters for world domination. Certainly with his knowledge and approval the London *Catholic Herald* published the editorial, as of July 12, 1940, shortly after the French Republic

fell with a "stab in the back" from Hitler's fellow warrior. From that religious editorial the following is quoted:

It is not impossible, as the well-informed Diplomatic Correspondent of the *Observer* suggested last Sunday, that something in the nature of a Latin-Catholic bloc, comprising France, Spain and Italy, may shape itself on the Continent. This bloc would endeavor to act on the Catholic populations of Germany and Austria in the hope of at least diminishing the influence of the anti-Christian elements in the Reich so that ultimately an anti-Bolshevik Christian-authoritarian bloc may be formed in Western Europe in OPPOSITION TO THE LIBERAL-SECULARIST-PROTESTANT-FRONT TENDENCIES OF GREAT BRITAIN, AMERICA, RUSSIA, and even Prussia.

Ever since Canada, New Zealand and Australia proscribed the activities of Jehovah's witnesses, the opposition forces in Great Britain have caught up the false charges and cried out that the witnesses are "subversive" to the interests of the state and should therefore be controlled or muzzled. On Sunday, January 19, 1941, two thousand Londoners, being gathered together, passed and published a resolution exposing the said false charges; and "that as Jehovah's witnesses we commend the stand of the British Government against the religious-totalitarian combine and appreciate their kindness in permitting us to faithfully carry forward our Christian work of preaching the Gospel and in continuing to grant us the right of the freedom of assembly and worship; that as Jehovah God's servants we champion His name". Copies of this Resolution were sent to the governments of Canada, New Zealand, Australia, and to the Home Office, London.

Thereafter millions of copies of the paper *Kingdom News* were distributed, issue No. 8 thereof being entitled "Jehovah's Mandate to His Servants—Witness Against Papal Rome-Nazism-Fascism Enemies of Christianity". The booklet *Conspiracy Against Democracy* was also widely circulated, and the book-

let *Theocracy*. In January, 1941, the Government's Import Licensing Department refused the London Branch office of the Watchtower Society any more import licenses, thereby cutting it off from its source of supply in Brooklyn, N. Y., while at the same time the Government at Whitehall granted priorities for the shipment under convoy of millions of quarts of beer 18,000 miles from Canadian breweries around to northeast Africa. Along came the May 28, 1941, issue of the magazine *Consolation* (No. 566), with a leading article on "Hitler's Religion". A prohibition was at once clamped down on this WATCHTOWER publication; but after appeal the ban proved to be just temporary.

Then there was a shift in the Government's Ministry of Information, and complaint made itself vocal that a Protestant had been turned out of office to make way for a Catholic as Information Minister. Much dissatisfaction has followed his taking office. In a long article headed "Writers See Harm by London Censor", the *New York Times*, as of January 24, 1943, says concerning criticism by the Council of the Empire Press Union in its annual report:

It was the opinion of the council, representing correspondents in London from all parts of the British Empire, that the remedy proposed by Brendan Bracken, Minister of Information, was worse than the abuse it was designed to cure. What the Empire correspondents regarded as LEGITIMATE EXPRESSIONS OF OPINION HAD BEEN CURBED since last March 26 [1942] when Mr. Bracken announced in the House of Commons his decision empowering cable censors to prohibit the cabling of dispatches 'calculated to produce ill feeling between the United Nations or between them and a neutral country. The council pointed out that the Empire correspondents, like the Americans, protested that the retention of such a rule would undermine confidence in the war effort and create mistrust even in the actual news given out in this country.

Shortly after the Minister of Information's obnoxious decision of March, 1942,

official efforts were made to cripple the personnel of the London Branch office of the Watchtower Society. Then the Branch manager, an American who is an ordained minister of the gospel and who had been managing the British branch since 1937, was ordered to go back to the U. S. A., and that with no reason being assigned by the London Government. Finally, after vigorous but vain efforts to remain at his post of Christian service there, this American was served with a deportation order. His appeal to Mr. Herbert Morrison, the Home Secretary of Britain, was refused. Finally, he was arrested, jailed, forcibly put on a ship and sent back to America through submarine-infested waters. All of which caused a Scotland paper, *The Vanguard*, to feature in its October, 1942, issue a full-page article headed "HAS THE POPE GOT MORRISON? The Deportation of a 'Jehovah's Witnesses' Official".

As to the magazine *The Watchtower*, of which more than 800,000 copies are printed each month in America, it is a magazine devoted exclusively to discussion and explanation of God's Holy Word and is now in its sixty-fourth year. Beginning with the August 15, 1942, issue featuring the article "Atonement for the New World", *The Watchtower* failed thenceforth to reach its British subscribers, although mailed out. It was evident that the Minister of Information's censors were on the job. Then, on November 2, 1942, the Minister of Information caused to be published the government order that "no person shall send or convey, or have in his possession for the purpose of sending or conveying" and "no person shall despatch by post from the United Kingdom to any destination outside" the WATCHTOWER publications, namely, *The Watchtower*, the *Kingdom News*, the *Informant* [instructions for home missionary work], and *Consolation*.

Cable advice to the above effect reached the president of the Watchtower Society at Brooklyn, November 28.



Forthwith the following cablegrams were sent that afternoon:

Nov. 28, 1942

His Royal Highness King George VI

London

Government Order banning Watchtower magazine deprives thousands Britishers necessary spiritual food. Does your Government wish to take responsibility before God? Consider Psalm Two verses Ten to Twelve. We pray Your Majesty will countermand Order in behalf of Christianity.

WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY.

Hon. Winston Churchill

Prime Minister

London

Government Order banning Watchtower magazine violates Atlantic Charter and will cause millions of American Christians to protest against un-Christian action. We petition you use good office for revocation of Order, thereby providing British Christians necessary spiritual sustenance.

WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY.

### **World-wide Hunger Blockade**

#### **of Christians**

Neither have these cablegrams been acknowledged by those appealed to, nor has any action of relief been extended, to this day. Is not this matter of higher importance than to deserve such disdainful treatment before the Lord God? Behold! the powers of the British Government have now joined the other members of the Commonwealth in encircling these Christian Jehovah's witnesses, "the least of these my brethren," with a spiritual blockade to starve them into submission to the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, if that were possible. These Christian brethren of Christ must now go hungry. But what about those who deny them the spiritual food and drink? Let all the Commonwealth governments and the Colonial governments take notice that Christ Jesus, Jehovah's Judge, denounces those responsible for this spiritual hunger and terms them *goats*, unto whom He says: "Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and

his angels: for I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in [but deported me]: . . . in prison, and ye visited me not. . . . Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me." (Matthew 25: 41-45) Be warned, you rulers of the earth; you are not dealing with but a mere organization of humble, inoffensive, Christian men and women, but with representatives of Jehovah God of hosts and with Christ Jesus, the "King of kings and Lord of lords".

### **"Walking in the Fear of the Lord"?**

In the face of such overt acts against Jehovah's covenant people, where is this vaunted "walking in the fear of the Lord" on the part of Great Britain? Is this deprivation of the witnesses of the Most High God an act in keeping with the best traditions of Britain for toleration, free worship of God, and free Bible instruction of a distraught people? Nay; it is a surrender to Vatican City, and to the fear of man. Solemnly sounds the warning of God's Word: "The fear of man bringeth a snare: but whoso putteth his trust in the LORD [Jehovah] shall be safe." (Proverbs 29: 25) Britain's conduct now follows the example of the Nazis, who burned the WATCHTOWER publications; but Britain's is on a wider scale, for what the British Commonwealth does extends over a vaster territory than Nazified Europe and affects Christians throughout the world.

In 1942 the prime minister was reported as saying: "What we have we hold. I did not become the King's first minister to liquidate the British Empire." However, full freedom of worship and freedom from spiritual want have not been held, though included in the "Four Freedoms" and backed up by the Atlantic Charter. They have been sacrificed by yielding to the religious grudge and malicious designs of the Vatican. Does any government official of the British

Commonwealth think, since such un-Christian restrictions upon Jehovah's witnesses, that for such reason victory over the totalitarian enemy is now certain? During the terrific Nazi *blitz* against Britain from September, 1940, to May, 1941, did the Island fortress of Britannia fall because the witnesses of Jehovah were free to offer WATCHTOWER publications from house to house and on the streets? Was not British morale strengthened rather by their quiet courage under air alarm and attacks? Why restrict them now at this late date, at a time of round-the-clock air raids on the Nazi-Fascists?

Though military victory over the totalitarian foes outside be gained, yet true victory must mean also triumph over the totalitarian enemies within and who are the fifth-column agents of that foreign power, the Vatican, the most totalitarian power of all time. Military victory may be won, but not peace with the Lord. There can be no peace with God as long as His witnesses are hated of all nations of "Christendom" and oppressed; there can be only wrath and destruction in store, awaiting the outbreak, in Jehovah's due time, of His "battle of that great day of God Almighty".

Read Revelation, chapters 13 and 16, and ask yourself, "Is the British Commonwealth delineating itself as the symbolic 'two-horned beast' there described? Is London, the heart of the Commonwealth, proving and marking itself as 'the seat of the beast'?" "We cannot escape history," said President Abraham Lincoln in 1862. And the British Commonwealth cannot escape the history written in advance in the symbologies of The Revelation, which must have fulfillment in those who conform to the exact descriptions therein given. It is time for the prophets of Four Freedoms and of a "much better world" beyond the total war to beware. This is no trivial matter simply because Jehovah's witnesses are few. It is most important,

because destruction everlasting is prescribed for the modern-day "beast" and the "false prophet", in Revelation 19:19, 20.

Not only Jehovah's witnesses are damaged, but all the British people, and all freedom now and for the postwar period is jeopardized. By restricting Jehovah's witnesses, who are staunch, uncompromising foes of all Hierarchy totalitarianism and world domination, the Commonwealth governments are clearing out of the way the last obstacle to being overreached by the Hierarchy of that "god on earth", the pope. The Hierarchy deals with dictators and authoritarian governments. By its Jesuitic methods it is relentlessly building up all nations to that desired condition where the people's rights are nil and the dictator decides and makes deals without popular approval or consent, and pays off his obligations to his backers. Revelation 17:1-14 foretells beyond fail that the Babylonish harlot of "organized religion" will ride the "beast" in the postwar federation of nations. She will drive you to your destruction at the hands of God.

Fighting against Jehovah's witnesses is antagonizing Jehovah God himself. It is all part of the Devil's scheme to get all nations of "Christendom" lined up against the Theocratic Government of Jehovah under Christ His King. Then nothing will prevent the liquidation of the British Empire; all will be lost. The Devil's scheme is to blind the people and keep them ignorant of God's righteous New World and His way thereto, and so bring about their destruction at Armageddon. Governments, particularly those of so-called "Christian nations", stand specially responsible to Almighty God Jehovah and His King for acts against His witnesses whereby the people are spiritually starved and kept in darkness concerning His kingdom of life and peace unending. You are walking, yes, but whither, O British Commonwealth of Nations?

## Civilization and the Missions

ONE of the first dispatches that came from the Philippines after the attack on Pearl Harbor was the news that two Catholic priests had been apprehended for fifth-column work, sending signals to the Japanese, to assist them in seizing the islands. Through a fluke, this somehow got by the Catholic censor employed on a San Francisco paper and was there published. Probably the man responsible for letting this cat escape out of the bag lost his job thereby. Men should be more careful.

It was probably to offset this correct bit of news that within a very short time thereafter the "Reverend" Thomas B. Cannon, director of the Jesuit Philippine Bureau, was granted the privilege by the Columbia Broadcasting System (February 8, 1942) of telling his listeners about the great things the Jesuits are doing in the islands. It would help to take the taste out of the mouth of those who chanced to see that San Francisco item, which, by the way, was reproduced in photostat form in *Consolation*.

Anyway, "Father" Cannon got on the air, with no cost to the wealthiest "church" organization in the world, and, through the kind intercession of Hon. Martin J. Kennedy, of New York, his speech found its way into the *Congressional Record* of March 4, 1942. There isn't anything that a Roman Catholic congressman would not do to please a Jesuit and get a few lines of publicity for the greatest possible enemy the United States could have. Mr. Kennedy quotes "Father" Cannon as having said, in part:

Ever since the beginning of the war in the Philippine Islands I have been constantly called upon, as director of the Jesuit Philippine Bureau, to supply information concerning the safety of our 251 Jesuit missionaries now laboring in that vast archipelago. And, of course, the news has been very scarce. What little news we have had up to now, we are happy to say, has been good news; and we

hope for further good news from time to time. The spotlight of the world press is on these missions of the Philippines today. [It certainly was when that dispatch was published in that San Francisco paper.] The war has served to call attention to a work too easily forgotten, because it is so far away. I am anxious, in this brief talk, to explain the essential value to the world, apart from a strictly religious value, of our Christian missions. [In the item in question, this involved betraying the noble, kind, generous, uplifting work of the people of the United States in behalf of the people of the Philippines, into the hands of the ignoble, cruel, selfish, degrading totalitarianism of the Japanese military megalomaniacs.] I say to you members of the radio audience, whoever you are, and however preoccupied you may be with the affairs of the day—whatever your creed or occupation in life—that you cannot ignore the missions of the Catholic Church. [He said something that time.] Today more than ever before in history, strange though it may seem to say this, the missions of the Catholic Church are of primary importance to the world. [How else can all the republics of the world be overthrown and the "abomination that maketh desolate" set up?] I propose a rather startling thesis: The missions of the Catholic Church have civilized the world.

One really appreciates what the Catholic missions are doing when one gets the inside news from Japan that every Catholic priest and every Catholic nun in Japan contributes to the Japanese war chest, and the Protestants were run out who would not go along with the scheme to civilize China by butchering some millions of its population in war and disposing of other millions by pushing the sales of opium in the same way as it has been pushed by other civilizers elsewhere. And in China too, in years gone by. Do you know who first shoved opium upon China at the point of the bayonet?

"Reverend Father" Cannon, S. J., and Hon. Martin J. Kennedy and the *Congressional Record* take time off to refer

CONSOLATION

to "the adoring of idols of brass and stone as practiced by the overwhelmingly pagan population of China". That's good. Suppose some time you visit Barclay street, New York city. It is on the north side of the United States post office and runs from Barclay street ferry to Broadway. You can't miss it. And when you get up opposite the post office you will see the greatest assortment of idols of brass and stone or terra cotta, or wood painted to look like something expensive, that ever your eyes were set upon. There is usually a "Virgin Mary" and a "Baby Jesus" in every window, and enough more in the back of the store to fill a freight car. It is the American center for "church" goods, or, as one might say, if he dared, "idols of brass and stone as practiced by the overwhelmingly pagan population of China," Vatican City and other places north, south, east and west.

Then follow three columns of fulsome self-praise, which is the first, greatest and only valuable asset of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, and then this reference to the infamous bigot, Hilaire Belloc:

Hilaire Belloc, the great historian, wrote a scholarly book, *Europe and the Faith*, proving this one point: his last words sum it up completely: 'The faith is Europe, and Europe is the faith.' He shows that the Roman Empire never really perished but was transformed. In the full maturity of the Empire it accepted the Catholic Church, and the Church has caused the Empire to survive in a finer and better form. In this we have the secret and soul of western civilization. Without the church, therefore, there is no understanding of this civilization of ours.

Now, kind reader, you know why all is so sweet and lovely in Europe and in the rest of the world. It is because "the Church has caused the Empire to survive". Look at Otto Hapsburg. Isn't he something? Doesn't he survive? Look at the pope. How about him? He survives, too. And so, believe it or not, i. e., believe the "Reverend Father" Cannon, S. J., director of the Jesuit Philippine Bureau,

and Hon. Martin J. Kennedy of New York, and the Columbia Broadcasting System, and the *Congressional Record*, that—

Like it or not, we must admit that our civilization, the civilization we worry about today, is that Christian, Catholic civilization built up by the work and the worry and study and sweat and blood and tears of Catholic missionaries [and Japanese and German and Italian soldiers]. No matter how far afield you may go, you will, if you are honest, get back to this fact as an axiom: The missions of the church have civilized the world.

And that, kind reader, explains just why the world is in such a fix. It is because this old Roman Empire that Jesus refused to accept from Satan even as a gift has revived in the form of a "church". If you don't believe it, get the morning paper and see the oodles of free advertising that the Singing Harlot has handed to her on a silver platter.

#### Winning the Heart of China

◆ Madame Chiang Kai-shek, wife of the president of China, thinks the countries of the West made a big mistake when they tried to win Chinese confidence by kicking the Chinese in the ribs; she believes with President Roosevelt that after incomes reach a certain size the excess should go to the people as a whole; and she finds pleasure in the fact that though China is at war, and has been for many years, there are more Chinese children in school than ever before, and thus some blessings are arising out of the war conditions anyway.

#### Prices in Chungking

◆ Raymond Clapper says that in Chungking a man's shirt worth \$2 costs \$8 in American money and up to \$160 in Chinese dollars, with shoes three times the price. Moreover, the prices are rising so rapidly that the Chinese merchant would rather not sell his goods. They are worth more to him than the money he gets for them, because they grow more valuable all the time, while money gets less so.



## Praise from Youth

WITH the spread of regimentation plans of the Devil to drive into his camp every person and to destroy those who do not yield comes the never-ending question: Shall we obey God rather than man? No creature who expects to get life eternal in God's kingdom can avoid this question. Children, youths and their parents cannot escape a decision of the question. The question cannot be answered in favor of obedience to God by mere words alone. It requires action dictated and approved by the Word of God. The taking of such affirmative stand by children and the young through preaching the gospel exposes children and their parents to the reproach of the enemy. The agents of Satan on earth today oppose the ministry of praise by children in the same manner as they fought children and the young followers of Christ nineteen hundred years ago.

Hitler seizes the young from the parents at a very early age and puts them under state control and teaches them what he considers to be to the best interests of the state, ignoring the rights of parents and the Word of God. The spread of the totalitarian spirit by the same crowd that backs Hitler has caused their religious agents in America to advocate the breaking up of homes and taking children away from their parents and their worship and service of Almighty God.

In every instance where such family relationship has been broken up in the United States, it has been by framed and misapplied laws because the child of God refused to quit preaching as the ambassador or minister for God's Theocracy. The responsible officials fail to recognize that one who is in a covenant with Jehovah cannot quit or discontinue preaching without violating God's law, which would brand the violator as a practitioner of idolatry, to be destroyed for ever. One must choose to obey either the law of man or the law of God, and

those in a covenant with God must obey the law of God.

The state has no authority to intervene in the effort of the parent to teach a child righteousness. Marriage and childbearing is God's provision for all humankind that shall live on the earth. It is beyond the power of the state to interfere with or abridge the right of all persons within its bounds to procreate. This right cannot be denied even to criminals.<sup>1</sup> For greater reason the state cannot interfere with and encroach upon the parents' right to bring up a child in the way acceptable to their own judgment consistent with the law of God.

It has ever been the law of the Lord to place the inescapable responsibility upon the parents to teach their children from infancy the requirements of the Lord. "O God, thou hast taught me from my youth: and hitherto have I declared thy wondrous works." (Psalm 71:17) "Remember now thy Creator in the days of thy youth." (Ecclesiastes 12:1) Upon all parents who are in a covenant to do God's will there is laid the duty and specific obligation to teach their children the Word of God, and it is the duty of the children to obey their parents who give such instruction. The parent will be diligent to bring his children to congregations where the commandments of Almighty God are studied and discussed. The children are permitted to participate therein so that they may learn the way of righteousness and how they may receive life everlasting. When Moses stood before Jehovah's typical covenant people on the plains of Moab and delivered the instruction from Jehovah he knew that soon thereafter the children would take the place of their parents in the ranks of God's army. Forcefully he urgently reminded the parents of their duty to teach their children. He urged upon them diligence and faithfulness in teaching the truth to their children. That

<sup>1</sup> *Skinner v. Oklahoma*, 316 U.S. 535.

was important then; the fulfillment thereof is of greater importance now. "And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt bind them for a sign upon thine hand, and they shall be as frontlets between thine eyes." (Deuteronomy 6:5-8) See also Deuteronomy 4:9, 10; 11:18-21; 12:28; 32:46. The apostle of Christ Jesus also states the command thus: "And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord." (Ephesians 6:4) The children also are commanded: "Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. Honour thy father and mother; which is the first commandment with promise; that it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth."—Ephesians 6:1-3.

"Nurture" means to discipline and train the child in the way of righteousness; and such way of righteousness God has marked out in His Word. The words "right" and "righteous" are from the same root and mean the same thing. "Admonish" means to teach and instruct; to counsel and advise the children of and in accord with the expressed will of God set forth in the Bible. Parents who failed thus to instruct their children would be provoking their children to do wrong or to wrath.

The so-called "churches" of organized religion constantly baptize infants, which ceremony, although a formalism, means that such child is impliedly dedicated to do the will of Jehovah God. Therefore such "churches" recognize none as too young to be consecrated publicly for service of religion. Thus the recognized religions advocate and practice child consecrations. Jehovah's witnesses as faithful servants of Almighty God recognize the importance of per-

mitting the understanding child to enter into a covenant with Jehovah; but such faithful parents do not stop there. The duty of such parent does not end with instruction. If the child indicates a willingness to do the will of God, the parent is under obligation to aid the child in taking the necessary steps to serve the Lord by doing the overt act of participating in obeying the positive command to preach the gospel of God's kingdom to others.

### ***Must Practice What They Preach***

To permit the child to *believe* in righteousness and to refrain from *practicing* right is entirely wrong. "For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also." (James 2:26) "Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven." (Matthew 5:15, 16) It is therefore the duty and privilege of parents and children to *practice what they preach* by consistently acting as Jehovah's witnesses before men. This the parents and their children do from house to house and on the streets in every city in the land by distributing the Watchtower publications to persons of good-will toward Almighty God.

This greatly enrages the clergy in the same manner as the Pharisees were overcome with violent anger against Jesus because the children followed after Him and cried out hosannas to the King. They do not want to extend the principle of "child consecration" (*un-Scripturally* used by them) to the faithful servants of the Lord, whose children are unquestionably dedicated to Jehovah. They object to Jehovah's witnesses' teaching their children, and transform their objection into violent action in many instances where Jehovah's witnesses' children are permitted to practice what their parents teach them. At the same time such religionists violate the same *child labor* or *delinquency* and other laws that are frequently mis-

applied against such faithful parents. Such clergy are known to use "altar boys", "choir singers" and many other youthful employees whose lives are exploited for the sake of the *un-Scriptural* activity of such clergy.

It cannot be said that the children are too young to be permitted thus to worship and serve Jehovah God by preaching. The government has no authority or power to tell a child at what age he can begin practicing the requirements of Almighty God taught him by the parent. The government does not have the authority to intervene where conscience is involved. Thus to allow the government to intervene would for ever destroy and end the inalienable American heritage of the right to maintain a home, raise children, and follow generally the pursuits of happiness enjoyed by a free people. The government can intervene with respect to the care and education of the child only when the parent "neglects" or "misuses" the child to such an extent as to endanger its welfare and the interests of the state. As long as the parent does not violate this fundamental rule, the state cannot interfere with the "religious" practices of the parents and children.

The children are preaching, ministering the gospel message, and are not violating any law. Preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God is the proclaiming to others the Scriptural truths of and concerning Jehovah God and His kingdom, The Theocracy, under Christ Jesus. From the Scriptural standpoint it is not unusual that a child should teach and preach the gospel at a very early age. When Jesus was twelve years old, long before He was anointed with the holy spirit, He preached and taught as one of Jehovah's witnesses in the temple, where He confounded the wise men and astonished them with His wisdom and statements (Luke 2:46, 47); and other children followed in His steps. Timothy, long before he reached the age of maturity, while yet a small child,

also taught and preached. He accompanied the apostle Paul, who preached publicly in the market places, on the streets, and from house to house. See Acts 16:1-3; also 1 Timothy 4:12, where Paul, writing to his 'son of faith', Timothy, said: "Let no man despise thy youth; but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity." Samuel was consecrated for service in the temple when very small and of tender age.—1 Samuel 1:24; 2:11, 28. See also Jeremiah 1:6, 7.

### ***"Suffer Little Children to Come"***

Christ Jesus condemned religionists because of their effort to prevent and ridicule the following of little children after Him. He said: "Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God." (Luke 18:16) See also Luke 11:52; Matthew 18:1-6; Psalms 8:2; 148:12, 13; Proverbs 8:32.

Therefore it is unreasonable and un-Scriptural to contend that it is not proper for a child or youth to engage in publicly giving praise to Jehovah God by acting as His minister or witness, explaining Bible prophecy and present-day fulfillment thereof. It should be borne in mind that this is the primary way that Jehovah's witnesses worship and serve Almighty God and to deny this right to the children or youths through punishing the parent, breaking up the home or taking the children away, because the children exercise such right, is to deny to them freedom of worship of Almighty God, which freedom alone gives freedom from want and from fear. Such denies them as ministers the equal and same protection enjoyed by the recognized clergy.

It is not for the courts or any agency of the state to say that because of his youth one is not entitled to praise and serve the Lord, nor can they contend that one is too young to be a minister of Jehovah God, entitled to legal pro-

tection of the exercise of his God-given Constitutional right. Thomas Jefferson said, "that to suffer the civil magistrate to intrude his powers into the field of opinion, and to restrain the propagation of principles on supposition of their ill tendency, is a dangerous fallacy, which at once destroys all religious liberty, because he, being of course judge of that tendency, will make his opinions the rule of judgment, and approve or condemn the sentiments of others only as they shall square or differ from his own."<sup>2</sup>

Such ones holding contempt against the youngster as a minister should consider the following searching question propounded by the apostle Paul: "Who art thou that judgest another man's servant? to his own master he standeth or falleth. Yea, he shall be holden up: for God is able to make him stand." (Romans 14: 4) Jehovah God, and not man, anoints and authorizes the preacher to act in harmony with Isaiah 61: 1, 2, and no man has authority to question his authorization or ordination. If children meet these requirements of God as His ministers, why and how can man demand more? They are God's servants, not man's. God is the one that must be satisfied that they are His ministers. (1 Corinthians 6: 19; 7: 23) The apostles were ignorant and unlearned men in the eyes of the clergy and worldly wise. They did not attend parochial schools or seminaries, and Christ Jesus did not teach them in such places.

Since Jehovah's witnesses have an earthly organization with which they operate, it is proper and necessary that they also possess and carry credentials attesting to the fact that they are ordained and authorized to represent such organization, the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society.

<sup>2</sup> Section 34 (Virginia Code as amended), commonly known as the STATUTE OF RELIGIOUS LIBERTY. See also *State v. Smith*, 127 P. 2d 518, 155 Kan. 588; *Barnette et al. v. West Virginia State Board*, 47 F. Supp. 251.

Regardless of what men may do or threaten to do, Jehovah's witnesses and their children will continue to preach "this gospel of the kingdom" until JEHOVAH God, not man, has said it is enough. Such young ones will not hesitate to rush forth joyfully to meet the requirements of God's Theocratic Organization, to preach "this gospel of the kingdom". In this they will dedicate their lives eternally to the service of Jehovah God and continue to sing songs of praise to Jehovah by carrying the Kingdom message to others as long as there is one person in the land to hear, and until "the land be utterly desolate".

Thus a victory will be given to them by Jehovah, and the Devil's challenge to put men on earth that will maintain their integrity will be further answered by showing that Jehovah has *children* and *youths* who immovably prove the Devil to be a liar.

"O sing unto the Lord a new song; for he hath done marvellous things: his right hand, and his holy arm, hath gotten him the victory."—Psalm 98: 1.

### Food Restrictions in the Netherlands

◆ Netherlands formerly appeared to be unusually well-fed, but they don't look so since the spring of 1940, when their country was seized by Hitler. They used to eat lots of cheese, because they kept many cows; now the cows are few and the butter and cream go to Germany. Dutch housewives have had to fall back on a combination of gelatine and starch that is about as much like butter as a religionist is like a Christian. Eggs used to be plentiful; now anybody who gets an egg once a week is considered lucky. Beef, pork and veal can be had at the rate of one pound per week, but the German-controlled radio is trying to popularize horse flesh, doped up with onions, rice and vinegar. Vegetables are scarce, because the bulk of the crop must go to the dehydrating plants, and thence direct to Germany.



## Expelled from School for Being Conscientious

**T**HIS page showing children expelled from school and denied an education (for which their parents are taxed) will interest *Consolation* readers. They are a few of many similar cases. (1) Roberta and Bonnie Groff, of Murphysboro, Ill.,

expelled for conscientious refusal to salute a flag. (2) A group who attend a private school at Tulare, Calif., most of them having been expelled from the public school. (3) The little miss shown here was expelled from a Lowell, Oreg.,



school. She devotes sixty hours a month to publishing the good news. (4) Denied education at Millville, N. J. (5) Cajon, Calif., also had a flag-salute case; expelled these bright youngsters. (6) Some others of Lowell, Oreg. (7) Barbara Castle, 13, and Fred Hurtado, 12, were expelled and committed to a Juvenile Home, but subsequently released on order of Judge Hartrick, who ruled that they had been committed without reason, there being no law requiring anyone to salute a flag contrary to his conscientious belief. (8) Faithful little witnesses of Bronaugh, Mo. The boy in the center stood his ground even though the teacher

threatened to get the police, in a vain effort to make him violate his conscience, something the teacher, not having a conscience of any sort, could not understand. (9) Robert Ginier, age 10, of West Virginia, also expelled for not saluting a flag. (10) Children at Sumas, Wash. (11) Iris Ackland, 6 years, La Salle, Ill., expelled from two schools, and using time off to good advantage in telling people about God's kingdom. Some of these were reinstated in school after presentation of the ruling of the 77th Congress that respect to the flag is sufficiently shown by simply standing at attention.

### Religion in the Public Schools

**T**HOUGH in America there are thousands of churches, as well as Sunday schools of some 200 different religions, that is not considered enough by the religious leaders. Of the 168 hours in each week there are twenty-four that are usually set apart for religion or for 'worship' of one kind or another. One can start at midnight, if he wishes, and some do, and can keep right at it until midnight comes again. And one need not stop then. Also, besides Sundays, there are Saturdays, and these can be made religious days also. That is done by some. But that is not considered sufficient. So the public school is being invaded by the people who are in the religious business, who insist that the children must be given religious instruction during the precious seventh of their time that is now devoted to their regular lessons and the acquiring of information that will prove of practical benefit to them in later life.

What is really the meaning of this proposition to introduce religion into the public schools? and why are those in the religious business so anxious to get a hold on these schools?

A consideration of the first point is important in order that this article may not be misunderstood to reject the value

of the Scriptural counsel to "fear God and keep his commandments: for that is the whole duty of man". But what do the chief proponents of religion in the public schools have in mind by the expression? Do they want to introduce the Bible and its teachings?

The evidence shows that there is no intention to introduce the Bible into the schools. The Bible was once read and taught in the classroom, and still remains in some isolated regions, but it has been generally abandoned. The religious leaders evidently do not consider the Scriptures of importance. To them it is far more important to teach religion. This is especially the attitude of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy; and so-called "Protestants", as well as Jewish religionists, have given in and agreed to drop the Bible.

The Hierarchy's first attack upon the public schools was the abolishing of the Bible, which was rejected as "an attempt to pervert the hearts of Catholic children". Bishop Spotswood of a previous generation said, "I would rather one-half the people of this nation should be brought to the stake and burned than one man should read the Bible and form his judgment from its contents."

Another spokesman for the Hier-

archy's attitude was the publisher of *The Freeman's Journal*, who said, "The Catholic solution of this muddle about Bible or no Bible in schools is: 'Hands off.' No state taxation or donation to any schools. You look to your children and we will look to ours. We don't want you to be taxed for Catholic schools. We don't want to be taxed for Protestant or Godless schools. Let the public school system go to where it came from—the devil."

Prof. Geo. T. Renner, of Teachers College, Columbia University, may be considered a non-Catholic authority. He said, "We must be a little more realistic about these things. I am skeptical about teaching the good, fundamental truths even if they have Biblical sanction."

From the foregoing statements and from the further fact that the reading or study of the Bible has been practically discontinued in the schools (chiefly as a result of Hierarchy pressure) it is evident that "religion in the schools" does not include the Bible, but means something different. What, then, is sought?

At an educational get-together of the New Jersey Elementary School Principals' Association, late in 1941, Professor Paul H. Vieth, of Yale University, proposed to teach religion on a nonsectarian basis. He said he would "expose children to all points of view". (As there are, as mentioned, over 200 different "points of view", this way of teaching religion would be even worse than the proposal to break up the regular classes and teach these 200 brands separately.)

The professor's proposition was probably induced by the demand of each of the 200-odd brands to be heard. He sought to satisfy these demands while still preserving the unity of the public schools.

Another comment on the proposal to teach religion in the public schools came from the editor of the *Protestant Digest*, Kenneth Leslie, who said, "What we are putting into the schools is church instruction—not religion . . . If we unite the

church to the state via the schools, we destroy the argument against helping parochial schools." It would likewise destroy the argument *for* helping the parochial schools.

### ***The Parochial School***

The mention of the parochial school raises the question about what these show as to the desirability of teaching religion in the schools along with other, so-called "secular", subjects.

Great claims have been made for the parochial schools, and a considerable amount of praise has been bestowed upon them by not altogether disinterested parties. Some consideration may be given to the subject here for that reason, as well as for the reason that between 2,500,000 and 3,000,000 Catholic children are receiving their education in such schools at present. These figures may be somewhat exaggerated, but they will serve the purpose of this survey.

It is claimed that the Hierarchy now has some 10,000 schools in the United States, which is a not inconsiderable number. Since the Catholic church has, moreover, been conducting such schools for well over a generation, the results, beneficial or otherwise, ought to be more or less in evidence.

### ***'Versed in Schemes of the Devil'***

A belligerent spokesman of the Hierarchy of a past generation based his agitation for parochial schools on the fact that the public schools did not suit him. He said:

The children of the public schools turn out to be horse-thieves, scholastic counterfeiters and well-versed in schemes of deviltry. I frankly confess that Catholics stand before the country as the enemies of the public schools. They are afraid that the child that left home in the morning would come back with something in his heart as black as hell.

In view of this charge, shared by other priests, the product of the parochial schools should stand out as shining examples of virtue. But let us see.

First, what is some of the religion taught in the parochial educational institutions? There is a volume, one of a series, entitled "Familiar Explanation of Christian Doctrine; Adapted for the Family and More Advanced Students in Catholic Schools and Colleges," published in 1875 by Kreuzer Brothers, Baltimore, and sanctioned by Archbishop [James Roosevelt] Bailey. Lesson XII is called, "No salvation outside of the Roman Catholic Church." The questions and answers run thus:

Q. Did Jesus Christ himself assure us most solemnly, and in plain words, that no one can be saved out of the Roman Catholic Church?

A. He did; when he said to his Apostles, 'Go and teach all nations,' etc.

Q. Are there any other reasons to show that heretics, or Protestants, who die out of the Roman Catholic Church are not saved?

A. There are several. They cannot be saved because, (1) They have no divine faith; (2) They make a liar of Jesus Christ, of the Holy Ghost, and of the Apostles; (3) They have no faith in Christ. (4) They fell away from the true Church of Christ. (5) They are too proud to submit to the Pope, the vicar of Christ. (6) They cannot perform any good works whereby they can obtain heaven. (7) They do not receive the body and blood of Christ. (8) They die in their sins. (9) They ridicule and blaspheme the mother of God and his saints. (10) They slander the spouse of Jesus Christ, the Catholic Church.

It is now proposed to introduce this type of teaching into the public schools. But what has been the result in the parochial schools themselves? "Fr." Jeremiah J. Crowley, himself a Catholic priest, and well-informed on the subject of the parochial school, said:

As to the secular instruction imparted to children in the parochial school I feel that I need say very little about its inadequacy in view of what I have said about the deficient pedagogic talents and training of the parochial school officers and teachers. Incompetent teachers in secular things cannot give the children the requisite instruction.

The fact is, the parochial school children are very inadequately instructed in purely secular knowledge, and the children of the public school enter upon the duties of life incomparably better informed and trained.

I have heard complaint after complaint from Catholic parents that the parochial school did not fit their children for life; that their training lacked the virility necessary to meet the multitudinous demands upon American manhood and womanhood of this aggressive age; and that the parochial school militated against the development [of the child]. I can readily understand how such ill effects should result from parochial school training received under the principalship of a drunken, sordid, or even worse, rector, and the teaching of incompetent teachers.

I have known intelligent Catholic parents to summon up enough courage to remove their children from the parochial school and send them to the public school, notwithstanding the threat of eternal damnation for themselves and for their children uttered by priests and prelates. I have in mind now the case of a bright child who was taken from the parochial school by her parents and sent to the public school. In the parochial school she was in the eighth grade but the public school found her only fit for the fifth grade. . . .

If an officer or a teacher of the parochial school teaches a precept and then practices the opposite of that precept I hold that the children are thereby trained for the kingdom of Satan and not for the Kingdom of God. The evil effect of such inconsistency in an instructor of youth is destructive when the offender is a secular teacher and does not wear the sacred vestments of religion; but when that instructor or officer is clad in religious garb the teaching of righteousness and the doing of iniquity mean moral and spiritual disaster to the pupils. Precept and practice are lamentably foreign to each other in the lives of the officers and teachers of the parochial school.

In view of this revelation from one in a position to know the facts, it is not surprising that the Catholic system of religion produces more criminals *in proportion to its size* in this country than



does any other religious organization. Parochial education may take its full share of the responsibility, and the charge that public school children turn out to be horse-thieves and well-versed in schemes of devilry proves to be a boomerang that hits the parochial school in a most vulnerable spot.

### ***The Church and Education***

In spite of these disconcerting facts, the Hierarchy continue to insist that only they can properly educate—that education is the prerogative of the “church”, meaning themselves. Parents may not send children to other than Catholic (parochial) schools without episcopal permission. On this point the Hierarchy’s canon law says:

Parents are under a most grave obligation to provide to the best of their ability for the education of their children. This education must be not only physical and civil but also religious and moral. (Canon 1113)

Catholic children shall not attend non-Catholic, indifferent [neutral], or mixed schools. The Bishop of the diocese and he alone has the right, and this in harmony with the instructions of the Holy See, to decide under what circumstances and with what safeguards against perversion the attendance at such schools by Catholic children may be tolerated.

On this same demand of the “Church” that parents educate their children through Catholic parochial schools, “Rev.” James Aloysius Burns, a former president of Notre Dame University, said:

We deny, of course, as Catholics, the right of the civil government to educate, for education is a function of the spiritual society, as much so as the preaching and the administration of the sacraments; but we do not deny to the state the right to establish and maintain public schools. . . . It may found and endow schools and pay the teachers, but it cannot dictate or interfere with the education or discipline of the school.

This shows that the Hierarchy of Rome will do the “educating” and the

state is graciously given the “right” to foot the bill. It should be observed, too, that the word “educate” is not modified in this sweeping claim. No one is to have any education, apparently, of any kind or in any field, unless it be received from the Roman Hierarchy, or with its sovereign approval. The Hierarchy is not backward about making such unbounded claims. Note, as another example, the following, a statement by the “Most Reverend” Michael J. Curley, archbishop of Baltimore and Washington, in an address at Bethesda, Maryland:

. . . the parochial school alone can bring the child to Christ. . . . It and it alone is America’s greatest bulwark in this, her hour of trial.

Since the parochial school reaches only a minority of the children of America (Catholics comprising only a sixth of the population), those words are obviously exaggerated. When one considers further what “Fr.” Crowley says of the parochial schools, which he knew only too well, one is forced to the conclusion that the archbishop hardly expected to be taken seriously. He was just throwing out something with the assurance that at least some of it would stick. But even the Catholic population does considerable thinking for itself. “Fr.” Crowley says:

The Catholic *people* did not want the parochial school. [They still do not want it.] Why did the priests and prelates adopt it, and why do they champion it today? The answer is fourfold. First: because they saw and see that there never can be any union of Church and State in this [American] Republic as long as its citizens are the product of the public schools. Second: they saw and see that the indoctrination of Catholic children with liberal and progressive ideas is impossible in schools wholly under Catholic clerical influence. Third: they saw and see that the parochial school gives ample opportunity to train Catholic children to close their eyes, ears and mouths to clerical drunkenness, grafting and immorality. Fourth: they saw and see in the parochial school an immense opportunity for graft.

No one will deny that the parochial schools are religious, and they, therefore, furnish an example of what is meant by the proposal to introduce religion into the public schools. The editor of the *Protestant Digest*, quoted foregoing, sums up the matter when he says that it is in reality an effort of the churches, and their dogmas, to get into the public schools. Among the churches interested in this scheme the Hierarchical church of Rome takes first place. Its chief spokesman, the pope, only recently stated,

We are grieved that in so many schools in the United States Christian religion is ignored. . . . This cannot continue without dread consequences.

It must not be overlooked that when a member of the Hierarchy refers to "Christian religion" he means Catholicism only. Quotations can be multiplied (and examples have been given) to show that this is true. For the present, however, at least in America, the Catholic Hierarchy is willing to co-operate or permit co-operation with other religious groups in getting religion into the schools.

The so-called "Protestant" churches are as eager as is the Roman Catholic to get their religion into the schools, or to get the schools to recognize their religion in some way.

The International Council of Religious Education, which met in Chicago early last year, faced two considerations which left them anxious and dissatisfied. First, not more than half the American young people are coming under the influence of the churches. Second, the churches do not have anything positive to give, and merely raise questions—doubts. The professor of Christian ethics of Duke University said in that connection that "Jesus not only asked questions; he answered them".

This was a tacit admission that the churches do not follow Jesus. At the same time it gives a clue as to why the

churches are interested in getting religious teaching into the public schools. It is to use the compulsion properly associated with secular education to bring the children under their influence and that of their organizations.

It is because they have failed to persuade the parents of the importance of their institutions that the clergy now seek to get hold of the children. It is a confession of their failure to reach the people through their own religious setups: churches, catechism instruction, Sunday schools, and parochial schools. They seek the support of officialdom, or the semblance of it that would result from being admitted into the government-owned and -operated school system.

### ***Gradually Undermining the Schools***

*The Register* (Roman Catholic) boasts that the American public schools are now so far undermined that in 455 school systems the precious one-ninth of their time which is devoted to public instruction is taken away from the children, in part, so that they can receive instruction in religion (which is demonism).

The plan of getting religion into public schools is inherently coercive. The Chicago Civil Liberties Committee's statement herewith furnishes a good conclusion:

It is proposed to take time from the hours of instruction and permit students to attend religious classes of the parents' choice. It is proposed here that high school students may go to a religious class outside or remain in the school where presumably some substitute instruction will be provided. Suppose a student leaves the school but does not appear at the place of religious instruction? Is he to be considered a truant? His record of attendance must be kept or else the purpose will be defeated by truancy. Or is it possible that we shall see groups of students marched from the schoolroom to their respective churches? The conclusion is inescapable that compulsion is a part of the plan. In fact it would not be effective at all without compulsion.

The students who do not go to religious

instruction will be singled out in many schools for coercive treatment. Direct as well as subtle persuasion will be used by students and perhaps by teachers to get them to attend. Those who have church affiliations but who do not choose to take religious instruction will be especially coerced. Those who have no church affiliation will be particularly subject to subtle persuasion. The privacy of one's religious belief will be invaded.

If this plan is adopted, every religious opinion must be respected, or else the Bill of Rights will be violated. The plan cannot be confined to the large religious denominations. Sects and groups however small or curious must have the same rights as Catholics, Protestants and Jews. No public authority can say which religions are to be accepted, nor can any public authority distinguish among religions. Jehovah's Witnesses, Mormons, I Ams, and scores of other religious groups must be given equal opportunities under the plan. It would be clearly violative of the Bill of Rights to exclude any religious group.

The religious tenets or doctrines taught in these classes cannot be passed upon by public authority. Surely it must be clear that the

state cannot prescribe a religious curriculum. That would be setting the state up as a definer of religious doctrines. The state cannot tell a religious denomination what it shall teach or how it shall teach it. If the plan is put into effect the instruction must be left to the respective religious groups, without any interference, guidance, or suppression whatever.

The school authorities cannot pass upon the qualifications of instructors in these classes. What tests will be applied? College graduation? Soundness of religious views? Soundness of denominational affiliation? Any worthwhile test would bring state authorities into the control and guidance, not merely of religion but of each of the numerous denominations and sects.

We submit that no system of the kind proposed can be set up which will avoid infringement of the Bill of Rights indicated above. We think the proposal in any form, capable of effective application, would be clearly violative of the Bill of Rights. We hold that in the form proposed it involves participation of the state in religious instruction on a compulsory basis.

## *Learn of a New World*

Yes, a new world, a knowledge of which will give life an entirely new aspect for you. It is not something that by chance *may* come about, or something that imperfect man will bring in, but a fulfilling of the unfulfilling promise of Jehovah God to set up His kingdom to rule the earth. It will be a new and perfect world in every respect, from the most minute part of creation to those who shall rule it in righteousness. It will be a world free from sorrow, death and destruction, a world in which you will want to live.

The WATCHTOWER SOCIETY is now offering to the public the new book *THE NEW WORLD*, wherein you will find the answers to the many questions filling your mind relative to the new world. It is a beautiful book, bound in peach-colored cloth, and containing 384 pages of enlightening, instruc-

tive reading matter explaining thoroughly the subject of the new world, and will be sent to you postpaid on a contribution of 25c.

### WATCHTOWER

117 Adams St.

Brooklyn, N. Y.

Please send me the book *The New World*.

I am enclosing a contribution of 25 cents.

Name .....

Street .....

City .....

State .....

## Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"

### Theocratic Tactfulness

**H**OW to approach another is all-important. Too often, when presenting the gospel of the Kingdom, the publisher starts off on the wrong foot, so to speak. There should never be an occasion for rudeness, ill manners or abruptness on the part of the witness; but rather he should be kind, patient and tactful at all times.

Theocratic tactfulness does not mean that the publisher is going to deceive the listener or to compromise the Lord's cause. To be tactful one will present his message in such a manner that the listener will not become provoked or disagree with one from the start. Tact, then, is a sensitive mental perception; or an acute, keen discernment of the best course of action to take under given conditions; or the peculiar ability to deal with others without giving offense, so as to win good-will, especially in difficult situations. The best way to understand Theocratic tactfulness is to take from the Word of the great Theocrat illustrations that show these various conditions where one must be tactful.

The first, an instance of sensitive mental perception. (Luke 20:19-26) Christ Jesus had to be tactful in answering scribes and Pharisees who were opposed and trying to "get Him". The chief priests and scribes sought to lay hands on Jesus, but feared the people. They sent forth spies to take hold of His words and then deliver Him to the governor. It is recorded: "And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person of any, but teachest the way of God truly: Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cæsar, or no?" Jesus, listening to these men, had the mental perception that they were hypocrites, and that they were trying to lay a trap for Him; therefore it was necessary for Him to be tactful. He was. The record reads: "But he perceived

their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me? Shew me a penny. Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Cæsar's. And he said unto them, Render therefore unto Cæsar the things which be Cæsar's, and unto God the things which be God's."

Jesus, having a mental perception of their craftiness, used tactful language in answering these persons. His answer was so well framed and balanced that "they could not take hold of his words before the people: and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace".

Note that Jesus did not say much to these men. His example should be followed by all Christians and in harmony with Psalm 39:1: "I will take heed to my ways, that I sin not with my tongue: I will keep my mouth with a bridle, while the wicked is before me." To be tactful before the wicked, then, is to be extremely careful of what one says and how one says it.

Second, an instance of tactfulness in discerning the best course of action to take under given conditions. Here one must know or realize the conditions, as the prophet Nathan did when he approached David. (2 Samuel, chapters 11 and 12) David had looked upon another man's wife, and took her for his own pleasure. Then, to cover up his unrighteous act, he saw to it that the woman's husband, Uriah, was killed in battle. All this was a grave sin before the Lord, and in violation of God's law even though David was a king. Therefore the Lord instructed Nathan to tell King David of his wrongdoing. To approach the king and bluntly state the facts to the king would have brought forth the king's wrath. Nathan had to show David his wrong, and what the Lord would have David do to come back into the proper standing again with his Maker. It required tactfulness.

Nathan said to David: "There were two men in one city; the one rich, and



the other poor. The rich man had many flocks and herds; but the poor man had nothing, save one little ewe lamb, and it grew up together with him, and with his children. A traveler came unto the rich man. To feed the traveler the rich man did not take any of his sheep, but took the poor man's lamb.' On hearing this, David, "Thou art the man." Nathan had used a very aptly illustration. Thus David judged himself. This showed Nathan's keen discernment of the best course of action to take under given conditions. (Read Paul's tactful words as recounted in Acts 24 and 26.)

Then Nathan, the prophet, said to David, "Thou art the man." Nathan had used a very apt illustration. Thus David judged himself. This showed Nathan's keen discernment of the best course of action to take under given conditions. (Read Paul's tactful words as recounted in Acts 24 and 26.)

Now an example of the third manner of tact, the peculiar ability to deal with others without giving offense, and to win good-will, especially in difficult places. It is recorded at 1 Corinthians 9:18-23: "What is my reward then? Verily that, when I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel. For though I be free from all men, yet have I made myself servant unto all, that I might gain the more. And unto the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law; to them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ,) that I might gain them that are without law; to the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some." Here the apostle Paul points out how he dealt with others so as to cause no offense, that he might win their good-will.

In presenting this gospel of the Kingdom Jehovah's witnesses should do like-

wise. When approaching the Jew discuss the Scriptures as they appear in the Hebrew text of the Bible. Speak of those precious promises. When witnessing to Catholics and Protestants concerning God's kingdom and controversial subjects arise, deal tactfully. Do not bluntly state they are believing a lie, but point out scriptures bearing upon the issue. One might discuss their belief and show how it originated ("Purgatory," for instance). Show you are acquainted with their viewpoint. Acknowledge that both sides involved in the dispute believe in the Bible, then proceed with Scriptural evidence disproving their contention and, lastly, establish your position as the one in harmony with God's Word.

So with all persons whom you meet deal without giving offense, and win good-will. Don't close a person's ear with bombastic statements. Use tact and he will give you an ear. "He that hath ears to hear, let him hear."—Matthew 11:15.

Concerning their conduct Jesus admonished His faithful followers, "Be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves." (Matthew 10:16) A good Theocratic publisher has knowledge and wisdom, but he will use it with great care. Theocratic tactfulness would not mean to tell all that you know, but tell what is necessary, and at the right time. Proverbs 29:11 sums up the entire matter in these words, "A fool uttereth all his mind: but a wise man keepeth it in till afterwards."

Some Theocratic publishers attempt to tell the person to whom they are witnessing everything concerning the Kingdom at the first meeting. This is a mistake. Such minister forgets that he learned the Kingdom truths 'precept upon precept, line upon line, here a little and there a little', not all at once. The "other sheep" will learn likewise. There are so many things one wants the other person to know. Save them until a later time. Arrange for a back-call; begin a book study. Thus one uses tactfulness in presenting the gospel.

## Take Care of Your Rubber

**W**AR has made it imperative that we take good care of all the rubber articles, from bathtub plug to hot water bottle, that we own.

The three worst enemies of rubber are heat, light, and oils and greases. Copper is another enemy, but this doesn't give much trouble—but it should caution homemakers not to wear rubber gloves when cleaning the metal.

The higher the temperature, the more quickly rubber cracks, softens into stickiness, and loses its strength. Cold, however, does not harm rubber. Sunlight, combining heat and light, is especially hard on the kind of rubber used in many household articles, since this kind often is partly stretched.

Rubber swells and becomes weak if it is left in contact with oil or grease; traces of either should always be removed immediately. While the rubber used in tires is often specially treated to resist both oil and grease, the type of rubber in elastic fabrics (such as foundation garments) is especially apt to be damaged by them. Worn next to the skin, elastic fabrics, unless washed frequently, are weakened by body oils.

Most rubber goods can be kept clean with water or with soap and warm water. To wash sheet rubber or rubber-coated cloth, spread the article on a flat surface, scrub with a soft brush and mild soap and water, and dry with a cloth or hang to dry. And, of course, garments woven from rubber thread—foundation garments, suspenders, rubber webbing—demand tender care; they should be laundered in mild soap and water, rinsed thoroughly, and dried in a cool or moderately warm place, *never* near a radiator nor in direct sunlight.

If grease, oil, or tar are removed from rubber immediately, you can usually get the rubber clean with soap and water. In stubborn cases grease and oil can be removed with carbon tetrachlo-

ride or other dry-cleaning fluids. Lightly sponge the grease, oil, or tar with the fluid, and never leave it on rubber more than two or three minutes.

Rubber is stored best in a place that's cool and dark. The attic is usually the poorest rubber storage place in the house; the basement, the best. Rubber should be put away clean and dry. If the room isn't dark, wrap the rubber in thick paper, or put it in a covered box. Always try to store the article in its most natural position—a hot water bottle flat, for example—and if you have to fold, dust surfaces in contact with talcum powder or cornstarch. It's a good idea to stuff boots and galoshes with paper.

And in taking the best possible care of the rubber articles you possess, remember that they can be repaired if you're patient and if the rubber isn't sticky or hard. Rubber can be patched with self material or inner tube patching, aided by rubber cement, plastic rubber compounds, and adhesive or other tape. —*The Progressive*, March 21, 1942.

---

### The Negro Question

◆ The Negro question is social, not national; ours, not theirs. If any misguided person suspects the mass of Negro population to be disloyal, or more susceptible to disloyalty to the United States, the suspicion springs from conscience and not from reason. The Negro is by disposition happy, kind and friendly. Negroes like white people but that does not mean that they like to be shoved off sidewalks or hustled around. The Negro has been exploited by white and black fakers alike and worked on by radicals for radical, not Negro profit. He never has been unamenable to any decent and fair adjustment of the race question. —*San Francisco Chronicle*, March 19, 1942.

# the WATCHTOWER

## LOOK AT THE CONTENTS

of the February 15 issue of

Says the Authority governing man, "Behold, we count them happy which endure." To have knowledge now that will enable righteous-hearted persons to endure is *vital*. Study this, and succeeding issues of *The Watchtower* on the 1st and 15th of each month, and learn to be one of those 'counted happy which endure'. This 16-page journal may be obtained upon a subscription basis of \$1.00 per year.

During the *Watchtower* Campaign only, February 1 to April 30, the publishers will send upon each (new) year's subscription, as a gift, the Watchtower Society's new publication *THE NEW WORLD*. This book of 384 pages is a fitting companion to the *Watchtower* magazine. And you will receive, free, also the 32-page booklet *Peace—Can It Last?* setting forth postwar conditions.

For convenience use the coupon

**"They shall know that I am Jehovah"**  
—Ezekiel 35: No.

VOL. LXIV SEMIMONTHLY  
FEBRUARY 15, 1943

### CONTENTS

ENDURANCE AMID WORLD CRISIS .....	
Bowing at the Name .....	
The Jewish Crisis .....	
"Despots" and Domestics .....	
Called to Suffer for What? .....	
The Household in the Crisis .....	
WATCHTOWER BIBLE COLLEGE OPEN	
COLLEGE TRAINING .....	
LOYALTY .....	
"JEPHTHAH'S DAUGHTER"	
TESTIMONY PERIOD .....	
"WATCHTOWER" STUDIES .....	
1943 YEARBOOK OF JEHOVAH'S WI	
CALENDAR, 1943 .....	

**WATCHTOWER, 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y.**

Please send me for one year the *Watchtower* magazine, for which I enclose \$1.00. Send also as a gift the 384-page book *The New World*, and the booklet *Peace—Can It Last?*

Name ..... Street .....

City ..... State .....

# CONSOLATION

A JOURNAL OF FACT, HOPE AND COURAGE

## Case of [redacted] and Giraud

Some facts about the extraordinary French-African situation

## Petain and the Hierarchy

Just a case of old cronies working together

## Vindication of Bill of Rights

A courageous fight waged on the home front in its defense

## The Man Born Undeiled

The one and only case of a human born without sin

## The Mexico of Long Ago

The advanced civilization discovered and destroyed when  
the white man came



# Contents

The Strange Case of Darlan and Giraud	3
The Armada Surprise Party	4
From Prison to Honor	5
Petaín and the Hierarchy	6
Fulsome Praise at the Start	7
Old Cronies Working Together	7
The French Empire in the Sudan and Elsewhere	8
The De Gaulle Mix-up	11
Vindication of the Bill of Rights	12
Demonism Ruins the Mind	15
When America Ceases to Be America	16
"Thy Word Is Truth"	
The Man Born Undefined	17
The Mexico of Long Ago	19
The Terrible Huitzilopochtli	20
Priests Controlled Education	20
Gruesome Sacrifices	22
Two Worlds Meet	23
"The Tender Mercies of the Wicked"	24
A Gift from the Pope	25
Assembly of Truth-Lovers in Latin America	26
"Kingdom Halls"	26
Spelling in Junior High Schools	28
Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"	
Variety in Sentence Structure	29
"Christian" Superstitions in the Visayas	31
The Voices Were the Voices of Demons	31

Published every other Wednesday by  
**WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, INC.**  
 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

## OFFICERS

<b>President</b>	N. H. Knorr
<b>Secretary</b>	W. E. Van Amburgh
<b>Editor</b>	Clayton J. Woodworth

## Five Cents a Copy

\$1 a year in the United States  
 \$1.25 to Canada and all other countries

## NOTICE TO SUBSCRIBERS

**Remittances:** For your own safety, remit by postal or express money order. When coin or currency is lost in the ordinary mails, there is no redress. Remittances from countries other than those named below may be made to the Brooklyn office, but only by international postal money order.

**Receipt** of a new or renewal subscription will be acknowledged only when requested. **Notice of Expiration** is sent with the journal one month before subscription expires. Please renew promptly to avoid loss of copies.

**Send change of address** direct to us rather than to the post office. Your request should reach us at least two weeks before the date of issue with which it is to take effect. Send your old as well as the new address. Copies will not be forwarded by the post office to your new address unless extra postage is provided by you.

Published also in Greek, Portuguese, Spanish, and Ukrainian.

## OFFICES FOR OTHER COUNTRIES

<b>England</b>	34 Craven Terrace, London, W. 2
<b>Australia</b>	7 Beresford Road, Strathfield, N. S. W.
<b>South Africa</b>	623 Boston House, Cape Town
<b>Mexico</b>	Calzada de Melchor Ocampo 71, Mexico, D. F.
<b>Brazil</b>	Caixa Postal 1319, Rio de Janeiro
<b>Argentina</b>	Calle Honduras 5646-48, Buenos Aires

Entered as second-class matter at Brooklyn, N. Y., under the Act of March 3, 1879.

# Notandum

## Tension in Czechoslovakia

**T**HE revived Inquisition found the land of John Huss, forerunner of the Reformation, as determined to resist oppression as in the days of yore. The Czechs were reported burning down their granaries at night and forming angry hunger marches by day. They slowed down their arms output as much as 50 percent. The Czech women showed their opposition to the Catholic Hitler's rule by parading the streets with empty market baskets turned bottom side up. The lamp-posts were found in the morning with the word "Reserved" painted on them, meaning that when the day comes the Czechs will hang the Pacelli-Hitler Gestapo thereon. Mysterious fires broke out in munition shops and oil refineries. Railway tracks were torn up and trains wrecked. Telegraph wires were cut. Explosions took place in factories and chemical establishments. Strikes were prevalent and drawn out, even after the leaders were arrested. To try to correct the situation, one of the head Inquisitors, Reinhard Heydrich, was sent to Czechoslovakia to extend to that country the tortures he had so successfully applied to liberty-lovers and truth-lovers in Germany itself. He was a capable man, as torturers go. He is accredited with having tipped off Hitler to murder his friend Roehm, von Schleicher, and many others; also, this was the man that helped von Papen to obtain from Schuschnigg the documents covering Hitler's youth and war record. He it was that caused thousands of patriotic Norwegians to be thrown into jail. He was but 38 years of age, and, next to Himmler, the most dreaded man in Nazidom, when a bomb exploded in his car, killing the driver, wrecking the car and wounding Heydrich mortally. His death followed, and was cruelly avenged by numerous executions, including two entire villages, Lidice and Levzsky, and, mercilessly, many women.

# CONSOLATION

"And in His name shall the nations hope."—Matthew 12:21, A. R. V.

Volume XXIV

Brooklyn, N. Y., Wednesday, April 14, 1943

Number 615

## The Strange Case of Darlan and Giraud

THE people of the world had spread before them in the closing days of 1942 a story that has peculiar interest for humanity in these days of stress and trial.

Here is a man entrusted with one of the greatest fleets of war vessels upon the face of the earth; he is a Fascist in his sympathies, as are most of the military leaders of France. He is named (at one time) as the successor of Marshal Petain. He is well acquainted with another man, a general in the French army, who, at the time, is imprisoned in a fortress in Germany.

A few weeks elapse. The Fascist Admiral Darlan is captured by the American armada in Northwest Africa. He greets the Americans as friends. They in turn put him in control of the French possessions which they are liberating. The imprisoned general meanwhile escapes and makes his way to Africa. Darlan is disowned by Petain. Darlan makes the aforetime and twice-imprisoned Giraud his next in control. Then Darlan is assassinated by a Fascist youth who feels that he has betrayed the Fascist cause. He dies on the way to a hospital, meantime being "blessed" by a priest, and not at all unlikely (no information on this) by the same priest that "blessed" the gun of the murderer. (The assassin who murdered President Obregon of Mexico first had his gun "blessed" by a priest, to make sure the bullet would find its mark.) And so Giraud the oft-imprisoned steps into Darlan's shoes in Northwest Africa. Meantime the French fleet, by Darlan's

orders, was scuttled and went to the bottom of the port of Toulon. Now for a few more details of one of the strangest true stories ever told.

### *At First Glance a Fascist*

No one has accused Admiral Darlan of being enthusiastic for the French Republic. He looked upon the French fleet as his own possession, though it was paid for by the French taxpayers. It was considered capable of facing the Italian and German navies together. He was considered a valuable and capable man. On February 10, 1941, at Vichy, France, Marshal Petain appointed Jean Darlan (already minister of the navy and of foreign affairs) next in line of succession to himself as chief of state. Darlan hated Britain with the most bitter hatred because of the death of his son, whom he claims lost his life when the British blew up a bridge more quickly than was expected. Shortly after his promotion he claimed that the Germans were sometimes more generous and humanitarian than the British, and cited food facts in support of that contention.

In May, 1941, Admiral Darlan stated that France, in choosing collaboration with Germany, had chosen life in the "New Order" instead of national disintegration. He was accused in British papers of linking France's fate with that of Germany and insisting in carrying the French colonies along with him. Wythe Williams, usually well posted, had two pages in *Liberty* magazine, July 26, 1941, entitled "How Darlan Sold Out France to Hitler". That shows how

risky it is to be a commentator on the news of the day.

But it cannot be denied that Darlan visited Hitler May 9, 1941; that he then congratulated him on his "victories" in Greece and Africa, and stated that France knew she had nothing to expect from the British; and he seemed to be delighted with Hitler's generous treatment of a fallen foe. Later, he said he was merely trying to make the best of a bad situation. No doubt there was some truth in that statement. The following month the *New York World-Telegram* said of Darlan that he was "generally regarded as strongest of French proponents of collaboration with Hitler".

Darlan's friends described him as having a horror of France's parliamentary political system; i. e., he was a Fascist at heart and hated the French Republic. A poor kind of man to have full control of the French navy, but having some excellent personal traits. He had a ready smile, a great capacity for work, and initiative and courage. He may properly be described as a French military man, convinced, as many such are, of the wisdom of Fascism.

Early in 1942, French ships carried French war materials from French North Africa to the Axis fighters in Libya. The names of the ships are known, and the cargoes that they carried. Admiral Darlan knew of these shipments. Two of these vessels, leaving Marseille weekly for African ports, with aid to the Axis powers on board, were the *Sphinx* and the *General Metzinger*. In April of the same year, Vichy France made Darlan admiral for life. A week later he was given command of France's military forces. Hitler, Petain, Laval and the pope considered him safely Fascist.

### ***The Armada Surprise Party***

The landing of the American armada in Northwest Africa was one of the best planned and executed surprise parties in history. President Roosevelt, author of the plan, issued a stirring appeal to

the French people not to oppose his intervention in their behalf, promising them that as soon as the German-Italian peril is removed, the Americans, life-long friends of the French people, will at once withdraw from all their territories. As luck would have it, Darlan was in Algiers on a tour of inspection when the Americans arrived, and in two days was in their hands. One of his first acts was to broadcast orders to "his" fleet of 62 vessels at Toulon to beware of German attempts to seize it. The next day he announced, in the name of Petain, that he had assumed full responsibility for French interests in North Africa.

A week after the Americans had landed in North Africa, Petain figured out that he had made a mistake after all in heaping so many honors on Admiral Darlan; so he declared him outlawed. But as Darlan was in North Africa, and right at the center of things, and had the American armada back of him, the noise from Vichy was considered merely as the wail of an old man who had nothing left but his socks and his "honor". The Germans had everything else. Darlan said (truthfully, too) that Petain was dominated by the Germans and should not be heeded, as the things he was supposed to be saying might not have been said by him at all.

The American newspapers, most of them, having been wrong on everything else, thought to make it 100 percent by roasting President Roosevelt for permitting Darlan to make use of the power that was in his hands. But the president has no more use for the press than they have for him; so that makes it a fifty-fifty. It was comical to see the columnists trying to figure things out, and do their usual 100-percent-wrong prognosticating. William Philip Simms seems to have more common sense than most of them, and in the heat of the disputations he summed it up like this:

Whatever else one may say of the French admiral, he has been of tremendous service to the United Nations. But for him and his

followers we might still be fighting to hold on to precarious beachheads. Tens of thousands of our boys might have had to pay with their lives for the foothold which General Eisenhower's battlefield diplomacy gave us at so little cost.

Probably, without his knowing it, the fact that General Eisenhower's mother is one of Jehovah's witnesses has been of real benefit to his brains. He is, no doubt, fully aware that there is not the least shadow of truth in either the "eternal torture" or the "purgatory" myth, and certainly no human can reasonably who holds to either of those scarecrows of religion.

### *The Germans Were Confused*

It wasn't only the American newspapermen and the British politicians that were confused about the extraordinary events that took place in Northwest Africa. The Germans were as badly tangled as anybody. The Russians were chasing them in the Caucasus, and the British were chasing them in Libya, but they finally woke up and poured into Unoccupied France and made for Toulon, where the French war fleet of 62 vessels lay at anchor, and with most of the ships unable to go anywhere, as they were without fuel.

Darlan ordered them to escape to harbors of the United Nations or to scuttle. And though a very few submarines made a getaway, the rest of the vessels were scuttled, with the loss of many valuable lives. Rather than see their ships fall to the Germans, in numerous instances the vessels fired upon each other. The arsenal was blown up and most of the ships were destroyed.

The administration of affairs in Algiers is not that of a republic. The Jews there, 100,000 of them, have been disfranchised since September, 1870. And in the school of medicine at Algiers the Jewish students are kept at arm's length by the other students. So says Pertinax, in the *Baltimore Sun*.

It is to Admiral Darlan's discredit that

he was the man who ordered Indo-China not to resist the Japanese; also when he was with the clique at Vichy France he helped to establish the anti-Semite laws.

Just before he was assassinated, Admiral Darlan made the statement that he hoped to save French Africa and to free continental France by helping the United Nations, and, after that was done, to retire to private life. His assassination by a Fascist who apparently considered him a betrayer of the "Holy" Roman Empire cause was justly described by President Roosevelt as plain murder in the first degree.

### *From Prison to Honor*

The experiences of General Henri Honore Giraud, who now occupies the most important position of any Frenchman, are as singular as were those of Admiral Darlan. Taken prisoner in World War I, he escaped and was never recaptured. Again taken prisoner in World War II, he escaped a second time and was never recaptured. On the last occasion, having made his way back to Vichy France, the Germans offered to exchange 70,000 war prisoners for him if he would return to prison and show them how he got out, and they would give him his liberty in addition. But he said he would not trust the word of any German.

He promised Vichy France that he would not engage in any political activities if they would allow him to remain in his own country. Meantime he had got in touch with the United Nations and, with their assistance, escaped once more, this time to North Africa, and came near getting drowned, but escaped for the fourth time. Before Darlan died he named Giraud as his successor in North Africa, and all factions are now working with him for the deliverance of France from the German yoke.

Vichy France claims that before General Giraud made his escape from what was then Unoccupied France he



wrote a letter to Petain, concluding by giving his word of honor as an officer that I will not do anything that could in any way embarrass our relations with the German government or impede the work with which you have entrusted Darlan and Laval on your high authority.

Until he tells how he did it, the escape of General Giraud from the Koenigstein Fortress in Saxony into Switzerland and thence into Unoccupied France is regarded as inconceivable. The fortress is situated at the top of a rock 1,200 feet high, with extremely steep sides. The only entrance is blasted through one of these steep sides. He is supposed to have slipped down a rope. If he did, it must have been an unusually long one; and how did he get it? Moreover, he

is 63 years of age, and that would be quite a stunt for a man half that age.

Some features of General Giraud's rise from the state of a prisoner of war to that of supreme power in one of the greatest governments of the world remind one of Joseph, who went down into Egypt as a slave, and subsequently became a prisoner, and rose from that position to be, next to Pharaoh, the most important man in the then most important country in the world.

We remember also the thousands of imprisoned witnesses of Jehovah who are still in prison in Germany and Mississippi and other benighted lands, and who in God's due time are sure of an even greater deliverance than came to this worldly warrior that suddenly took the place of Admiral Darlan.

---

## Petain and the Hierarchy

IN HIS broadcast of a year ago (January 1, 1942) Marshal Petain, self-designated dictator of Vichy France, made the following statement:

The new order which is about to assume its place cannot be founded on anything but a severe internal order, one which demands from all the same discipline founded on the pre-eminence of labor, the hierarchy of value, a sense of responsibility, respect for justice and mutual confidence.

What he really meant by the word "hierarchy" is simple enough, though what he meant others to understand by it is not so clear.

It has been a regular love feast between Petain and the Vatican ever since the night when he was catapulted into his present job.

While the Jesuit net for the French Republic was being stretched, French ecclesiastics advertised, as a blind, that if Britain and France won out in the war against Hitler they would see to it that the French people pay for the victory by the erection of a church to

"Our Lady, Queen of Peace". But Hitler won the victory, and, as soon as they had been robbed of everything, word went out that the erection of the church would proceed as originally planned. Petain showed his sympathy with this barefaced burglary by being the first French president ever to make a visit to Lourdes, one of the main centers of Hierarchy hypocrisy in France.

French patriots, and there are many such, are taking notice of the fact that Petain never misses "mass" on Sunday and goes out of his way to show his respect for the Hierarchy. A comical statement of the Religious News Service, cabled to the *New York Times* (July 20, 1942), is that "from the upper ranks of the Catholic clergy he obtained a support which, at times, has been enthusiastic; at times, prudent and reserved". Naturally, he obtains a support from the people for whom he is working and whom he has helped to destroy the French Republic. The article continues, "As long as Marshal Petain stays, a certain sort of

clerical pressure can make itself felt." Naturally, he has to do what the boss says, whether he likes it or not.

### ***Fulsome Praise at the Start***

Now is a good time to remember once again the joy with which the Vatican organ *Osservatore Romano*, on the night of July 8, 1940, hailed the induction of Petain into office. In condensed form this first appeared in a copyrighted dispatch by John T. Whitaker in the *Cleveland Press* and the *Chicago Daily News*:

ROME, July 9.—The first political pronouncement of the Vatican since Italy's entrance into the war as Hitler's ally is a fulsome indorsement of Premier-Marshal Henri Philippe Petain's capitulation to Germany and his efforts to reorganize France along Fascist lines. This departure from the policy of self-imposed silence was offered in last night's issue of the *Osservatore Romano*, the official Vatican newspaper.

A letter addressed to Marshal Petain by Catholic Youth organizations in France, who pledged their support to his new government, was the occasion for the Petain comment. Of Petain they wrote:

"This brave and good marshal personifies, more than any other man, the good qualities of his race. The youths turn to this old octogenarian to invoke the rebirth of their country, displaying the happy intuition of perennial youth, an intuition which the religious, Christian and Catholic faith of the marshal can understand. Petain must obtain for his sick country a prodigious spiritual cure, for this is the best rebirth and the best dawn of a new, radiant day, not merely for France, but for Europe and the world."

At the time that panegyric was written, it looked very much as if the infamous Catholic Adolf Hitler would soon be boss of the entire world. Even yet he hopes to put across his "Holy Roman Empire" stunt, but probably by this time the man who wrote the foregoing drivel is sorry that he laid it on so thick. It is slightly embarrassing to boost in such unlimited fashion a man who has turned

out to be merely a scarecrow attached to a phonograph.

After waiting nine days, to see how the original panegyric would take with the public, word came from the Vatican that the pope had instructed the apostolic nuncio to France, Monsignor Valerio Valeri—

to support the government of Marshal Henri Philippe Petain in the French reconstruction. The Holy See is convinced Petain and Pierre Laval, "strong" man of the Petain government, will assure the reconstruction in line with policies meeting the approval of the church. [That is, Petain and Laval will do as they are told; and the facts show that they do.]

Have you ever noticed with what promptness the pope formally recognizes the death of any republic and the turning of its affairs over into the hands of a Catholic dictator? You might remember in this connection Portugal, Spain, France, and Germany.

If you don't want to believe anything else on this subject you will at least be interested in this skit from the magazine *The New Age*:

The Roman Church is also totalitarian in structure and intolerant in its ideals. Msgr. Fulton J. Sheen, professor of fundamental theology at Catholic University, Washington, D. C., even boasted of the 'intolerant, dogmatic and uncompromising attitude of the Catholic Church' in a sermon early this year (1940).

### ***Old Cronies Working Together***

The idea that he was going to act as accoucheur when the French republic was reborn as a totalitarian monstrosity of the new order made a big hit with Marshal Petain. After he had been in his new job five months he was given a great demonstration at Lyon, which has been a Catholic stronghold ever since the slaughter of the Waldenses and Albigenses. Petain was made honorary canon of Lyon cathedral, and said, "I have the impression that France has been reborn." He has a high opinion of Petain.

Vichy France's ambassador to the Vatican made the statement at Rome: "In our opinion there is a visible correspondence between the motives of hope, which derive from the action of the Marshal and of the charity of the Pontiff." This was after Petain had been in his new job seven months, and shows that up to that time he had been obedient and had done the work cut out for him as well as could be expected from a man of his advanced years. The language, of course, is diplomatic; i. e., the words are upside down and back end to and inside out, as is customary in that line of business. But you can see what he meant.

The London *Catholic Herald* contains a picture of "Marshal Petain seen in Vichy church when he was present at a mass said for the war victims of France". It is too bad that Hitler, who produced the victims, could not sit by his side, to make the picture complete. In that case the altar boy back of Petain should be shown with horns. Cardinal Gerlier praised Petain effusively.

Two months later the same paper contained a three-column scarehead reading, "Vatican radio praises Petain's efforts to heal breach between public and religious affairs." Whenever you see the Vatican making special efforts to pin a wreath of glory on somebody, all you have to do is to remember the great honors conferred on Martin T. Manton, who sold justice at so much per, and caused Judge Rutherford to do time in Atlanta penitentiary before justice got around to land Manton himself in the penitentiary at Lewisburg, Pa. Manton was made a knight of Saint Gregory the Great. Gregory, by the way, was the demonized inventor of the money-making "Purgatory" racket, of which the Bible, God's Word, says nothing at all, and of which Peter, the alleged first pope, never heard or said a word in all his life.

Archbishop Valerio Valeri says that Petain has carried out a national revolution, by which Valeri means that he has killed the French Republic. Even an archbishop will tell the truth once in a while.

---

## The French Empire in the Sudan and Elsewhere

THE territory that goes to make up French West Africa and French Equatorial Africa is larger than the whole United States and is filled with great possibilities; so much so that it is sometimes said that whoever controls Lake Chad, in the center, will control Africa and control the world. Of course, that is nonsense, but the politicians do not know that Christ Jesus has been commissioned for that position. They think it is theirs, to have and to hold, and to do with it as they will. Earth's most far-sighted and unscrupulous politicians are the Jesuits, and they are moving everything to gain their objective of world domination.

A hundred years ago the French and all the other maritime powers were help-

ing themselves to territory wherever they felt like it. Get a map of Africa, take a look at it, especially the west coast, and notice, one after another, Morocco (French), Rio de Oro (Spanish), Senegal (French), Gambia (British), Casamanca (French), Guinea (Portuguese), Guinea (French), Sierra Leone (British), Liberia (independent), Ivory Coast (French), Gold Coast (British), Dahomey (French), Nigeria (British), Cameroons (French), Rio Muni (Spanish), Gabon (French), Kabinda (Portuguese), Congo (Belgian), Angola (Portuguese), and South Africa (British).

The French were the first to appreciate the hinterland. They came in via the Senegal river about 1885 and finally

came over the divide into the magnificent region of the French Sudan to the south and west of Timbuktu, and visions of a great empire began to take form. Subsequently the French went around back of all the coast settlements except the three last named, cutting them off from further development, with the result that France is recognized in every atlas as the ruler of the vast country, aside from the Sahara desert, which stretches from Algiers to the Congo river and from Cape Verde almost to the river Nile.

This territory includes much of the valleys of the Senegal, Niger and Congo rivers, as well as the streams that flow into Lake Chad, and the lake itself. Without undue publicity the French went about the pacification and civilization of this great area, and, though much remains to be done, much has been done.

In Dahomey the French have 1,800 miles of modern highways on which, in normal times, automobiles flit back and forth. The natives take to them as a duck to water. Like Jehu, they drive furiously. It was in Dahomey, in bygone years, that the French had to conquer an army of 15,000 Amazons, women trained for warfare, quite as strong as and more ferocious than the men. Dahomey was at one time a great center of the slave trade.

#### ***Native Groups in French West Africa***

In their conquest of the hinterland the French had to deal with not less than fifty groups. They found some very extensive areas almost deserted, though only needing intelligent cultivation to support vast numbers of people. In other districts there is a dense population.

The Niger river, length 2,500 miles, rises within 175 miles of the Atlantic ocean, not far from the source of the Senegal river, and sweeps around a great semicircle back into the Atlantic. At the central point of the great arc described by the river's course, in the center of a fertile prairie, lies Timbuktu.

Immense and fertile plains and forests stretch away to the east and west and south; and from this territory now come enormous supplies of oils, gums, ivory, and ostrich feathers.

Timbuktu is at the head of navigation of the Niger, and a natural collecting and distributing depot for the products of the region. For generations the Arabs have carried the products northward to Tripoli, across the Sahara, making two round trips per year. The French have been taking most of their goods out by way of the Senegal, or down the Niger through British territory. They have built a railway across the Niger-Senegal divide, intended to be extended to Timbuktu and thence to Algeria.

The Arabs who make a living by carrying ivory and other treasures across the desert carry dates with them as their sole food, counting out just so many to be taken at each meal, and not varying the number. They know, in advance, to a certainty, how many meals they have provided for.

In the western part of tropical Africa coffee plants thrive so luxuriantly as to form thick woods.

#### ***Social and Sanitary Notes***

In the vast areas under their control the French have discouraged cannibalism, but it will be some time yet before it is extinct. Slavery is waning. Fetishism is greatly decreased. Some of the secret murder societies have been broken up. Tribal wars are at an end. Polygamy is much decreased. The people are learning to read and write; soon all will be like Europeans, but maybe not as savage.

It is claimed that the Hausa Negroes of the French Sudan have the most beautiful language in the world, and that these Negroes themselves are as stately as their language, spoken by some 20,000,000 throughout the Sudan and as far as the Mediterranean. As slaves they were prized as of the highest type. They are crossed with Semitic stock, and are Mohammedans, mostly.



There are four quite well defined rain belts. The Sahara averages under ten inches a year. The northern Sudan has from ten to twenty inches a year and stretches clear across the continent from Cape Verde on the Atlantic to Somaliland on the Indian ocean. Next is a great belt 500 miles wide, mostly in French hands, which has up to sixty inches a year and would support uncountable millions. The heaviest rains of all, ranging up to 120 inches a year, are in the heavy-forested Guinea coast and Congo regions, much of which is also in French possession.

The reason that the Guinea coast is so unhealthful is largely that the people there do not know how to live. The natives suffer terribly from constipation; they eat no greens; they know nothing of sanitation; they do not know how to secure pure drinking water. When sick, they go to a medicine man for some magic brew or incantation.

There are sacred groves where, occasionally, without the knowledge of their white rulers, young men are sacrificed, 'for the good of the tribe.'

Snake stew is a savory dish on the Guinea coast and tastes very good indeed; so the snake-eaters claim.

### ***French Equatorial Africa***

French Equatorial Africa is larger than the part of the United States east of the Mississippi, by several thousand square miles, and is laden with natural riches of every sort. It was entered and seized via the Congo and its tributary the Ubangi. At the big bend in the Ubangi the French started and built a line of forts through to Lake Chad, five of them, and from these, as centers, the whole northern part of this vast area was brought under control. Telegraph lines were installed to outlying points, and then the wireless, and the result, in a generation, was civilization.

There are cannibals in French Equatorial Africa, in some places. And the worst of it is that some of these canni-

bals are said to be fine fellows to meet. They are very pleasant, but they are fond of meat, and fresh meat is hard to get in the tropics. Some of the tribes buy prisoners of war, holding them in reserve, killing and eating them as they are needed. Others eat only their enemies; still others eat only because they wish to assimilate the strength and other good qualities of those that have passed away. It is all very hideous, almost as much so as the diabolical doctrine of "eternal torture" believed by some Aryan savages in America and Europe.

Like his white brother, the African native has often been deceived by demons. As in America, the black brother in Africa is easily misguided and misled; but for the most part he is an intelligent, simple-hearted, inoffensive man.

Portions of French Equatorial Africa have a rainfall of more than thirty feet a year. Python-worship is common, the people believing that the souls of dead people of high rank visit their relatives in the form of snakes.

Sleeping sickness, spread by the tsetse fly, has ravaged portions of French Equatorial Africa and given the French medical fraternity much concern. Another thing that gives the French doctors plenty of concern wherever French soldiers go is what is known in Africa as 'the Frenchman's disease', syphilis.

One whole tribe migrated from the healthful highlands into the notoriously unhealthful lands near the mouth of the Congo, in the hope that they might all die, on account of the ravages of liquor and of this white man's disease in their midst. Instances are on record where these poor natives have walked four hundred miles to a hospital for treatment.

It is believed that the women of the Sara Kyabe tribe, French Equatorial Africa, would be the finest looking in all Africa but for the disks, often eight inches in diameter, which are inserted into their lips. The Sara Kyabe women used to fetch the highest prices on the

slave market, and to preserve the tribe the elders decided the women must all be disfigured.

### *The Gift of Dakar*

At one time it was a common fear among the United Nations that Hitler, when he gained full control of France and her possessions, would use Dakar as a base from which to jump his planes to South America. Now that fear has passed; for Dakar, though it resisted attachment to the cause of General de Gaulle, and spilled some blood doing it, came over into the United Nations camp voluntarily when Admiral Darlan suggested it.

Dakar is not a large place (only 42,000), but that is no measure of its importance from a military point of view. In the winter season it is cool and healthful; in the summer it is beastly hot. There are occasional tornadoes, lasting perhaps not more than half an hour, but frequently leaving casualties and property damage in their wake. Of this phenomenon a memorandum says:

When the storm is over, hundreds of young natives, most of them completely naked, swarm into the flooded streets, laughing and singing, to bathe in the pools and streams that will be gone in another hour.

About six-sevenths of the population of Dakar are Negroes, tall, dark, and said to be excellent soldiers. Some of these are Catholic, but most of them are Mohammedans.

It seems incredible, but there are Negroes in French Africa that are so low in superstition that they talk like American and European college professors and doctors of divinity. The poor things seem to actually believe that they are descended from monkeys. How they could get into this confused state of mind without attending any college or university is hard to understand.

Here is something that would bother the professors. The pygmies of French Africa, from long acquaintance with the gorillas, have learned the meaning of all

the gorilla ejaculations and imitate them so successfully that they are safe in their midst, whereas the gorillas attack full-sized Negroes. Whites have not yet been able to master the significance of the various gorilla sounds or to imitate them.

Remembering that God hath made of one blood all nations on the face of the earth, the white college professors should not be downcast because the little black pygmy brothers in Africa can do things which they are unable to perform or even to understand. They can do things which the pygmies cannot do. Thus, they can read the books of Charles Darwin and others, which explain that they are blood brothers of the little blacks, and they can point with pride to the airplanes and tanks and other accouterments of civilization of which the pygmies must have very inadequate ideas.

### *The De Gaulle Mix-up*

Almost everybody knows about the De Gaulle mix-up, but that seems to have pretty well straightened itself out with the death of Admiral Darlan and the acceptance by the De Gaullists of General Giraud as Darlan's successor. De Gaulle himself is an ardent Catholic. The French islands in the Pacific, New Caledonia, New Hebrides, and Tahiti, rallied under him when Hitler established his Vichy front for breaking down the resistance of the French people. And French Equatorial Africa followed.

De Gaulle is an ultra conservative in French politics, and that would mean that he inclines towards Fascism. He had no sympathy with the Popular Front, when, in the days of Leon Blum, that was trying to rescue France from the 200 Big Business and Big Church families that finally helped cause her ruin.

De Gaulle has Churchill's confidence, who said of him:

His judgment has been found extremely sure-footed. Our opinion of him has been enhanced by everything we have seen of his conduct in circumstances peculiarly and perplexingly difficult.

The people of the United States seem to be pretty well pleased with the way their State department has handled French affairs since the seizure of continental France by Hitler. They have consistently stuck to the formula of dealing in French possessions with those in control on the spot.

An exception seems to have been made in the islands of St. Pierre and Miquelon, in the gulf of St. Lawrence. Fighting French forces seized these islands in

December, 1941. The people seemed pleased; 650 of them voted for De Gaullist government, while 10 wanted collaboration with the Axis. Uncle Sam was embarrassed because the apostolic prefect there, and the real boss of the islands, wanted collaboration. Because of this, Laval named him an officer of the Legion of Honor. In view of what Laval is and what he stands for, this is one of the worst disgraces that could come to any man.

---

## Vindication of the Bill of Rights

**A**MERICANS will rejoice at the courageous fight that is being waged on the home front in behalf of the righteous principles for which the flag of the nation stands. Those who abhor Fascist-religious mob rule will rejoice at every success in plugging up the breaches which un-American elements have made in the bulwarks of American rights and liberties in recent years. One such timely repair of the dikes protecting this country from the swelling tide of religious vindictiveness and contempt for law and persecution of minorities is the decision of January 6 of the United States Circuit Court of Appeals for the Fourth Circuit.

This exemplary decision was rendered in the case of Martin Louis Catlette, deputy sheriff of Nicholas county, West Virginia, the appellant, as against the United States of America, the appellee. The case was tried before Circuit Judges Parker, Soper, and Dobie, at Charleston, West Virginia, and the opinion was read by Judge Dobie. The opinion states at considerable length the circumstances leading up to the case.

June 29, 1940, in the exercise of their right as American citizens to circulate a petition appealing to established government for the redress of grievances, a number of Jehovah's witnesses, native-born citizens and residents of West Virginia, proceeded to Richwood

in said state to call at the homes of its residents and secure the names of all willing to sign a petition which was then being circulated all over the United States in behalf of freedom of assembly and worship of God Almighty. Because of threats made the previous week, and in the interests of law and order, these petitioners went to the Town Hall to present to the mayor a letter requesting police protection while carrying on their lawful work as Jehovah's witnesses.

They were met by the city chief of police, Bert Stewart, and the deputy sheriff of Nicholas county, M. L. Catlette. In view of the mayor's absence the letter was delivered to Police Chief Stewart that they might know of the intended activity of the group and might offer the proper protection which it was their sworn duty to render. The delegation of three who presented the letter were ushered into the mayor's office, which the deputy sheriff, Catlette, used in the collection of taxes. There Catlette detained these witnesses without due cause. He was wearing his official badge at the time, and Police Chief Stewart acted as doorkeeper. As to what followed we quote the opinion:

Thereupon a mob gathered estimated to contain upwards of fifteen hundred persons, and other members of the American Legion [of which Catlette is a member] arrived; that Catlette called other members of the American

Legion by phone, saying among other things, 'We have three of the S— o— B—'s here and we are rounding up the others'; that one Louis Baber, also a member of the local American Legion Post, brought the other four Jehovah's witnesses into the room; that the defendant Catlette thereupon removed his badge as Deputy Sheriff of Nicholas County, West Virginia, and stated in substance and effect, 'What is done from here on will not be done in the name of the law'; three of the Jehovah's witnesses were forced to drink eight ounces of castor oil and another, who protested and at first refused, was required to drink sixteen ounces of castor oil, after having been threatened by a doctor with a stomach pump; that said seven Jehovah's witnesses were thereupon tied along a large rope, each being fastened thereto by his left arm and some three or four feet removed from each other on the rope; that so tied they were marched to the front of the Richwood Post Office on the top of which was flying an American flag; the defendant Catlette read the preamble to the American Legion Constitution and all persons present saluted the flag, except the Jehovah's witnesses;

That said Jehovah's witnesses were thereafter marched through the streets of the Town of Richwood and out of its corporate limits, yet attached to the rope, and there, released from the rope, restored to their automobiles, which had been damaged, and their other property, which had been covered with castor oil and uncomplimentary inscriptions, and advised never to return;

That they entered the office of said Deputy Sheriff about 9:30 in the morning and were released between 3 and 4 o'clock P. M. in the afternoon of the same day, and except for said castor oil, none of said Jehovah's witnesses received either food or drink during said hours, nor was permitted to go to a toilet;

That between said hours no request for protection was made of the defendant Catlette and at no time did the defendant Catlette protect the Jehovah's witnesses from the acts administered to them, but actually participated in the infliction of the same, and the

only protest made during the time of such treatment was made by the Jehovah's witnesses who originally refused to drink the castor oil.

In due accord with the laws providing for the punishment of those who infringe upon the rights and immunities of a free people, and for the protection of Americans from like further violations of law and order and official misconduct, Jehovah's witnesses exercised their right and privilege as citizens and Christians to bring this serious matter into court. When, in due course, the case was prosecuted before the United States District Court and a jury of twelve men, it resulted in a prompt conviction of Deputy Sheriff Catlette and Police Chief Stewart. A summary of the case and details of the conviction have been published in a former issue (No. 597) of *Consolation*.

The two lawbreakers squirmed under the conviction, and subsequently the case was appealed to the United States Circuit Court of Appeals by Deputy Sheriff Catlette. The three-judge court's opinion was written by Judge Dobie and joined in by Judge Parker, the latter being the author of the West Virginia flag case opinion of October 6, 1942. (See *Consolation* No. 604, page 21.)

Deputy Sheriff Catlette's argument before this august court sprang from his ill-conceived notion that an officer of the law can "divorce himself from his official capacity merely by removing his badge of office before embarking on a course of illegal conduct, and thereby blithely absolve himself from any liability for his ensuing nefarious acts". Naturally he would refuse to arrest himself thereafter when he pinned his badge back on again, just as he refused to arrest any others of the mob. On such Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde transformations by a sworn law-officer the court declared:

We must condemn this insidious suggestion that an officer may thus lightly shuffle off his official role. To accept such a legalistic dualism would gut the constitutional safeguard



and render law enforcement a shameful mockery.

We are here concerned only with protecting the rights of these victims, no matter how locally unpalatable the victims may be as a result of their seeming fanaticism. These rights include those of free speech, freedom of religion, immunity from illegal restraint, and equal protection, all of which are guaranteed by the Fourteenth Amendment. In the words of the Supreme Court, they cover "... not merely freedom from bodily restraint but also the right of the individual to contract, to engage in any of the common occupations of life, to acquire useful knowledge . . . to worship God according to the dictates of his own conscience, and generally to enjoy those privileges long recognized at common law as essential to the orderly pursuit of happiness by free men". (Meyer v. Nebraska, 262 U. S. 390, 399 (1923))

Before the court Catlette further urged that the information filed in the case failed to make any charge of his commission of a federal offense in that the information does not state the statute, law, or ordinance which was violated. Here the court stressed the "due process of law" clause of the Fourteenth Amendment, saying:

However, the information alleges an affirmative invasion of the victims' rights under the due process clause, as well as a denial of equal protection of the laws in permitting the victims to be detained and mistreated. There appear to be no provisions in the constitution or the general statutes of the State of West Virginia respecting the powers of a sheriff with reference to preserving the peace or the making of arrests for breaches thereof. . . . We therefore take judicial notice of the fact that at common law a sheriff was charged with the affirmative duty of preserving the peace and enforcing the law—more specifically, protecting a prospective victim from an assault or illegal restraint in the officer's presence. And the deputy sheriff may discharge the duties of the sheriff. W. Va. Code, Ch. 6, Art. 3, Sec. 1.

The term "breach of the peace" has been defined in West Virginia as follows: "The

term 'breach of the peace' is generic, and includes all violations of the public peace or order or decorum; in other words, it signifies the offense of disturbing the public peace or tranquillity enjoyed by the citizens of a community. . . . By peace, as used in this connection, is meant the tranquillity enjoyed by the citizens of a municipality or community where good order reigns." (State v. Long, 88 W. Va. 669, 108 S. E. 279.)

Accordingly, the acts of Catlette in compelling the victims to submit to the indignities proved in the case constituted a breach of the peace. . . . And since the failure of Catlette to protect the victims from group violence or to arrest the members of the mob who assaulted the victims constituted a violation of his common law duty, his dereliction in this respect comes squarely within the provisions of 18 U. S. C. A. section 52.

It is true that a denial of equal protection has hitherto been largely confined to affirmative acts of discrimination. The Supreme Court, however, has already taken the position that culpable official State *inaction* may also constitute a denial of equal protection. McCabe v. Atchison, T. & S. F. Ry. Co., 235 U. S. 151; Missouri ex rel. Gaines v. Canada, 305 U. S. 337.

It is quite obvious in the instant case, however, that Catlette took very active and utterly unwarranted steps to subject the victims to affirmative indignities. It is equally clear that these indignities were inflicted on the victims solely by reason of their membership in the religious sect known as Jehovah's witnesses, and their practices founded on their beliefs, particularly their refusal, on religious grounds, to salute the flag of the United States. This, we think, very clearly brings Catlette within the prohibition of the Federal Constitution and the Federal criminal statutes set out above.

The court upset other contentions and objections of Catlette, and concluded their opinion with words in vindication of the Bill of Rights, to wit: "The judgment of the District Court is affirmed."

This decision is accepted as an evidence of the desire of some judges to

perpetuate and continue the liberties of the people and to sustain the spirit of fair play in this country. Law and order must be upheld in a righteous government if chaos and the breakdown of every protection afforded by the Constitution are to be avoided. Peace officers are not privileged to violate these fundamental personal rights. When they step out of their proper field of authority and invade the constitutional rights of others those officers then convert themselves into criminals, in fact, join up with the criminals against whom they are sworn to protect the people.

It is hoped that the Department of Justice will take this decision so forcefully presented by Judge Dobie as a token and suggestion to begin hundreds of other prosecutions against criminal officials in such places as Connersville, Indiana; Harlan, Kentucky; Jackson, Mississippi; Winnsboro, Texas; Waxahachie and Odessa, Texas; Drumright, Oklahoma; Muskogee, Oklahoma; Litchfield, Springfield and Harrisburg, Illinois; Little Rock, Arkansas; Klamath Falls, Oregon; and thousands of other places where similar and far worse indignities and violations of this federal statute have been perpetrated by so-called "public officials" and "peace officers" in conspiracy with mobsters.

Publication of this opinion should be notice to peace officers who have inclinations like those of the officials of Richmond, W. Va., that their continued conniving at the persecution of Jehovah's witnesses may bring upon them the wrath of the federal government and a similar conviction.

Besides the vindication of the Bill of Rights, the vindication of Jehovah's name is also involved. The reason for His witnesses' continuing to press on successfully in the work of preaching His Kingdom message from house to house and publicly in every city of this land is not that they have received protection by the government against such unlawful mob assaults. Their protection

has come solely from Jehovah God and His Son Christ Jesus. It is not in the strength of any man that Jehovah's witnesses have been able to survive this flood of persecution. Even though having American citizenship, a status advertised by this government as something worth possessing above all others because of the rights and privileges it carries, Jehovah's witnesses have, nevertheless, been abandoned by all "civil authority" and thrown to the lions, as it were, and been *forced* to face the beastly mobs and endure the same sort of beating that their brethren have received in Nazi Germany and other Axis-dominated lands for ten years.

Even with their native-citizenship rights impaired and stripped of all their protective value, Jehovah's witnesses have fearlessly fought and resisted the terrific onslaught of violent persecution and the terrible consequences. How? By continuing to sing the song of victory, God's victory; and this they do by carrying His Kingdom message to the people of good-will at their homes and on the public ways and streets, as did the Lord Jesus Christ and His apostles when on earth. Maintaining their integrity toward God by their faithful persistence in this course of action despite enemy hate and opposition, they have a part in the vindication of Jehovah's name.

#### **Demonism Ruins the Mind**

◆ Christianity is the spirit of a sound mind and never did other than bless its recipient; but religion, which is its opposite, i. e., demonism, works ruin to the reason. At Knoxville, Tenn., it was recently necessary to send to an insane asylum a man who twice permitted himself to be bitten by poisonous snakes. He did not know that the verses of Mark 16: 9-20 are all missing from the oldest and most reliable manuscripts of the Scriptures and there is absolutely no basis for the taking up of serpents. God protects His own from attacks by evil, but it is a different thing to invite the evil.

## When America Ceases to Be America

**A**MERICA ceases to be America when an honest and competent workman cannot get or hold a job because he has an honest difference of opinion with some other American as to the meaning of the second commandment of Almighty God. That was the situation at Clarksburg, West Virginia, when, in December, 1941, seven of Jehovah's witnesses were discharged by the Pittsburgh Plate Glass Company because of refusal to participate in a flag-raising religious ceremony.

The glass company admitted that the seven discharged men are competent workers. It stated that it had been warned by representatives of the Glass Ceramic and Silica Sand Workers of America (C.I.O.) and the Window Glass Cutters League of America (A. F. of L.) that certain of their members might seek to inflict physical injury on these men, or might refuse to work with them, thus paving the way for a walkout or shutdown of the plant.

Clarksburg has not been moved to Germany, not yet, and so, as good Americans, these faithful witnesses of Jehovah proceeded to render unto "Caesar" the things that properly belong to him. In other words, as law-abiding taxpayers, they requested the proper administration officials of the government to see that they received a fair deal, an opportunity to do their bit in the line of business with which they are familiar.

Their appeal finally came up before the President's Committee on Fair Employment Practices, and the committee, after considering all the facts in the case, issued a ruling which asserted the obligation and responsibility alike of the management and of the labor organizations to protect these workers from religious antagonisms. Quite properly no hint was made that some priest of the loudest-mouthed and most un-American of all religious sects was at the bottom of it. That is usually found to be the case in matters of this kind. What the com-

mittee ruled was that the seven men be re-employed immediately. Associated with the order for re-employment was this statement:

Threatened violence or work stoppage to obtain the dismissal of capable employes whose religious convictions are unpopular with their fellow-employes does not constitute a valid reason for such dismissal. Our government guarantees equality of rights and opportunity without regard to a person's creed. This is an integral part of our democratic way of life, one of our nation's proudest possessions for whose preservation we are fighting this war. This heritage shall not be lightly forfeited at the irresponsible behest of intolerant and misguided persons who seek to impose their will by threats and violence.

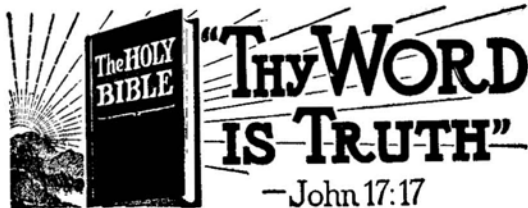
The president's committee instructed the Pittsburgh Plate Glass Company to obtain proper protection for these workers from the local law enforcement agencies and instructed the misled labor unions to exercise the necessary controls over their members.

It is a wonder that some of the narrow-minded people that think they are Americans don't take a little time off to learn something about what this country really stands for. If a man is left-handed or cross-eyed or has a double chin, is that any reason for knocking his brains out? What do they think the four liberties are all about, anyway? Is it necessary that all men, women and children have the same size of shoes? Can't an American be anything except a Roman Catholic? And if not, why not?

---

### And That's Why

◆ Now it comes out that the superintendent of Chicago public schools, William H. Johnson, who proposed to let all pupils off from classwork so that they could get parochial training, though nominally a Presbyterian, once held a professorship in the Jesuit Loyola University.



## The Man Born Undefined

**H**OW could there be such a man? Is it not written in Sacred Writ that "by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned"? (Romans 5:12) Further, Psalm 14:3 states: "There is none that doeth good, no, not one." These inspired texts being true, and since Jesus of Nazareth was born of a woman, was He not born like other children? And if so, was He not a sinner like the rest of us?

The Bible, God's Word, answers that Jesus was not a sinner. He was born pure, holy, sinless, without spot or blemish. (Hebrews 7:26) He was not begotten and born like other children. While He was born of the woman Mary, Joseph her husband was not His father. Joseph was espoused to Mary at the time, and before they were married or came together she was found to be with child. (Matthew 1:18) Mary was then a virgin, yet she was about to give birth to the babe Jesus; to whom she did give birth. (Matthew 1:20, 23) The holy child that was born of the Jewish virgin was and is the Son of God.—Luke 1:35.

The holy spirit is the invisible power and energy of Jehovah. God is holy; therefore His power and energy are holy, that is, devoted to righteousness. *Father* means life-giver. Jehovah is the Father of Jesus, because He gave life to Jesus; hence Jesus is called "The Son of God". The spirit or energy of Jehovah long ago operated upon earthly substance to produce earthly creatures. (Genesis 2:7; 1 Corinthians 15:47) The same holy power or spirit begat the child Jesus, who was born of His mother

Mary. Therefore the life of Jesus was without sin or imperfection. The life of Him who was born Jesus was transferred from the spirit realm to the virgin's womb.

"Jesus" was the human name of this Son of God. It implied His humiliation and lowly estate, in comparison with the glory which He had with Jehovah His Father before our earth was. (John 17:5) He existed long before He became a human creature. His prehuman name was "The Word of God". It means the spokesman, active agent, or messenger and executive of Jehovah. The apostle John, writing concerning this Word and His God and Creator Jehovah, says: "In the beginning [of Jehovah God's creative activity] was the Word, and the Word was with God [*the* God, according to the original Greek text], and the Word was God [*a* god, according to the original Greek]. All things were made by him [The Word as Jehovah's Agent]; and without him was not any thing made that was made."—John 1:1-3.

The beginning referred to above could not mean the beginning of God the Father, because He is "from everlasting to everlasting" and had no beginning. (Psalms 41:13; 90:2) Jehovah's work, however, had a beginning, and His creative work is clearly what is meant above. The Word was the first and only direct creation of Jehovah; and thereafter Jehovah's creation was performed through His Word. Hence Jesus "is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: for by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: and he is before all things, and by him all things consist".—Col. 1:15-17; Heb. 1:1, 2.

As further evidence of Jesus' prehuman existence, note His own words: "I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me." (John 6:38) "I proceeded



forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me." (John 8:42) "Before Abraham was, I am." (John 8:58) "I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father." (John 16:28) "And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was." (John 17:5) At Revelation 3:14 the glorified Jesus speaks of himself as "the faithful and true witness, THE BEGINNING OF THE CREATION OF GOD". Though being God's firstborn and being a spirit like God, the prehuman Jesus, "though being in God's form, yet did not meditate a usurpation to be like God, but divested himself, taking a bondman's form, having been made in the likeness of men."—Philippians 2:6, 7, *Diaglott* translation.

Religion has caused millions to believe that Jesus was God Almighty himself. But such conclusion is not warranted by Scripture. John said: "The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand." (John 3:35) That Jesus derived life from God, He said: "The Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son: that all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which hath sent him." "For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself." (John 5:22, 23, 26) "It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true. I am one that bear witness of myself, and [2] the Father that sent me beareth witness of me." (John 8:17, 18) Thus He shows that He and the Father are separate and distinct.

On a later occasion Jesus said: "My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand. I and my Father are one." (John 10:29, 30) Does not that statement prove they are one Being? It does not. Instead it does show that Jesus and the Father,

Jehovah, are one in harmonious action; just as Jesus subsequently prayed to the Father that the "church", His followers, might be made one with Him, saying: "Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; that they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one." (John 17:20-22) This shows what is meant by Jesus' being one with the Father.

If Jesus and His Father were one person, how could you explain Jesus' prayer to the Father, saying: "Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour. Father, glorify thy name"? "Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again." (John 12:27, 28) Jesus could not have been praying to himself here, but He was praying to another, Jehovah God.

That the Father is superior to the Son, Christ Jesus shows when He says: "I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I."—John 14:28.

Religion teaches that Jesus, on earth, was still a spirit and that His flesh was merely a covering or house in which that spirit resided, and that He was merely incarnated, and not wholly a man. This incarnation theory is erroneous according to the Scriptures. Indeed if Jesus had been merely an incarnated creature, He could never have redeemed mankind. John 1:14 positively asserts he was "made flesh", and not incarnated in flesh; and, His life forces being transferred from heaven to earth by God's power, He was therefore born a man undefiled. Thereafter, at thirty years of age, He was begotten of God's spirit at His baptism, thus opening the way for Him to return to life in the spirit in God's due time.—Matthew 3:16, 17.

## The Mexico of Long Ago

IN THE land today called Mexico there lived, long ago, a people of culture and progress. An advanced state of civilization existed which included many building projects of remarkable proportions. The people who lived in this beautiful land, then called Anahuac, were the Aztecs. Their government was a tribal one and had such institutions that absolute poverty was impossible. Surrounding every village was a great tract of land which belonged to everybody and nobody. Every year that people, by their elders in the town council, determined what portion of the land was to be worked by each family. Private property (as to land) was not known. None could become wealthy at the expense of another, nor could any become destitute if at all willing to work.

The government of the Aztecs made provision for the ill and aged. Rights of person and property were respected. Marriage was sacred. Intemperance was frowned upon. There were courts of appeal, so that any wrong done could be corrected. Even the emperor was held in check by a supreme court that protected the humblest subject against any attempted aggression. Great post-roads girdled the country. Trained runners relayed messages from one point to another. The remotest parts of the empire were thus in touch with its center and with one another, and the communications between them were accomplished in an incredibly short space of time.

Intensive gardening and farming, canals and irrigation systems made the land productive. The mines yielded unlimited treasures. The wealth of the remarkable nation was great. Gold, silver and precious stones were more plentiful with them than with any other nation before or since. It was a land of plenty and prosperity.

Yet, while thus acknowledging and commending the progress of the Aztecs

of ancient Mexico, it must be admitted that it paints the picture in the brightest possible colors. There was another side, as will be shown.

In the early accounts of the discovery of Anahuac there is mention of palaces. While these showed considerable skill and accomplishment in their construction, they did not possess the refinements of the palaces of Europe and oriental civilizations. Some of them at least were doubtless similar to the communal habitations of the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico and Arizona, accommodating large numbers of families each. These large buildings were constructed of stone, wholly without the use of iron, a fact which greatly astonished the discoverers.

### *The Great Temples of Anahuac*

The peoples or tribes of Anahuac also built wonderful temples, with pyramidal bases of immense size. The ruins of these temples and pyramids may still be seen in the vicinity of Mexico city and elsewhere. They are one of the wonders of the Western Hemisphere.

In connection with the remarkable temples of the Aztecs religious rites, ceremonies and sacrifices were performed which were awful and barbarous. Regarding these rites and the religion of which they were a part, Prescott says:

The civil polity of the Aztecs is so closely blended with their religion that without understanding the latter it is impossible to form correct ideas of their government or their social institutions.

In contemplating the religious system of the Aztecs, one is struck with its apparent incongruity, as if some portion of it had emanated from a comparatively refined people, open to gentle influences, while the rest breathes a spirit of unmitigated ferocity. It naturally suggests the idea of two distinct sources, and authorizes the belief that the Aztecs had inherited from their predecessors a milder faith, on which was afterwards

engrafted their own mythology. The latter soon became dominant, and gave its dark coloring to the creeds of the conquered nations—which the Mexicans, like the ancient Romans, seem willingly to have incorporated into their own—until the same funeral superstition settled over the farthest borders of Anahuac.

The Aztecs recognized the existence of a supreme Creator and Lord of the universe. They addressed him, in their prayers, as “the God by whom we live”, “omnipresent, that knoweth all thoughts, and giveth all gifts,” “without whom man is as nothing,” “invisible, incorporeal, one God, of perfect perfection and purity,” “under whose wings we find repose and a sure defense.” These sublime attributes infer no inadequate conception of the true God. But the idea of unity—of a being with whom volition is action, who has no need of inferior ministers to execute purposes—was too simple, or too vast, for their understandings; and they sought relief, as usual, in a plurality of deities, who presided over the elements, the changes of the seasons, and various occupations of man. Of these, there were thirteen principal deities, and more than two hundred inferior; to each of whom some special day of appropriate festival was consecrated.

### ***The Terrible Huitzilopochtli***

At the head of all stood the terrible Huitzilopochtli, . . . This was the patron deity of the nation. His fantastic image was loaded with costly ornaments. His temples were the most stately and august of the public edifices; and his altars reeked with the blood of human hecatombs in every city of the empire. Disastrous indeed must have been the influence of such a superstition on the character of the people.

A far more interesting personage in their mythology was Quetzalcoatl, god of the air, a divinity who, during his residence on earth, instructed the natives in the use of metals, in agriculture, and in the arts of government. He was one of those benefactors of the species, doubtless, who have been deified by the gratitude of posterity. Under him the earth teemed with fruits and flowers, without the pains

of culture. . . . The air was filled with intoxicating perfumes and sweet melody of birds. . . .

From some cause, not explained, Quetzalcoatl incurred the wrath of one of the principal gods, and was compelled to abandon the country. On his way he stopped at the city of Cholula, where a temple was dedicated to his worship, the massy ruins of which still form one of the most interesting relics of antiquity in Mexico. When he reached the shores of the Mexican Gulf, he took leave of his followers, promising that he and his descendants would revisit them hereafter, and then, entering his wizard skiff, made of serpents' skins, embarked on the great ocean for the fabled land of Tlapallan. He was said to have been tall in stature, with a white skin, long dark hair, and flowing beard. The Mexicans looked confidently to the return of the benevolent deity; and this remarkable tradition, deeply cherished in their hearts, prepared the way . . . for the future success of the Spaniards.

Aside from this interesting tradition, it would appear that a large part of the religio-political system of the Aztecs and their confederate tribes was well adapted to pave the way for the conquest by the religious Spaniards. The priesthood kept the people well in subjection, although showing, as indicated in the opening paragraphs of this article, a considerable degree of consideration for the basic needs of the people. The priesthood was practically in control and the civil rulers were generally such as showed suitable consideration to the religious hierarchy. This consideration enabled the priesthood to manage things in a manner agreeable to themselves without appearing to do so.

### ***Priests Controlled Education***

A factor which contributed largely to the influence and power of the priestly rulers was that of education, which these astute men of the cloth had relegated to their own exclusive authority. In this connection, Prescott is quoted again:

One of the most important duties of the

priesthood was that of education, to which certain buildings were appropriated within the enclosure of the principal temple [of a city]. Here the youth of both sexes, of the higher and middling orders, were placed at a very tender age. The girls were intrusted to the care of priestesses; for women were allowed to exercise sacerdotal functions, except those of sacrifice. In these institutions the boys were drilled in the routine of monastic discipline; they decorated the shrines of the gods with flowers, fed the sacred fires, and took part in the religious chants and festivals. . . .

At a suitable age for marrying, or for entering into the world, the pupils were dismissed, with much ceremony, from the convent, and the recommendation of the principal [priest] often introduced those most competent to responsible situations in public life. Such was the crafty policy of the Mexican priests, who, by reserving to themselves the business of instruction, were enabled to mould the young and plastic mind according to their own wills, and to train it early to implicit reverence for religion and its ministers; a reverence which still maintained its hold on the iron nature of the warrior, long after every other vestige of education had been effaced by the rough trade to which he was devoted.

This policy of the Aztec priests is like the policy of the Roman Hierarchy today, and particularly its Jesuit order. The vehement fight which the Roman system is putting up to control the education of its subjects, and to influence that of the people generally, is highly significant.

Another policy that shows a considerable parallelism between the Aztec and Roman Catholic religious systems is that bearing on the acquisition of land. The Aztecs had permitted the possessions of the priests to swell to a tremendous extent, who, in turn, were sufficiently astute to allow a semblance of popular control of them. The people were permitted, through their elders, to decide what portion of the land they would work, year by year, so that a family that was dissatisfied with the section

they had worked a preceding year might get another portion. The priests decided the distribution of the produce, and the first consideration was an ample supply for the religious leaders. The people, however, were not permitted to suffer hunger, and so, it appears, they were reasonably well satisfied, especially in view of the fact that the priesthood provided them with plenty of entertainment and thrills in festivals and ceremonies. As to these religious ceremonies, some of them were at once awful and thrilling. Here Prescott is quoted once more:

The Mexican temples—teocallis, "houses of God," as they were called—were very numerous. . . . The bases of many of them were more than a hundred feet square, and they towered to a still greater height. They were distributed into four or five stories, each of smaller dimensions than that below. The ascent was by a flight of steps, at an angle of the pyramid, on the outside. This led to a sort of terrace or gallery, at the base of the second story, which passed quite round the building to another flight of stairs . . . so that one had to make the circuit of the temple several times before reaching the summit. . . . The top was a broad area, on which were erected one or two towers, forty or fifty feet high, the sanctuaries in which stood the sacred images of the presiding deities. Before these towers stood the dreadful stone of sacrifice, and two lofty altars, on which fires were kept, as inextinguishable as those in the temple of Vesta. There were said to be six hundred of these altars, on smaller buildings within the enclosure of the great temple of Mexico, which, with those on the sacred edifices in other parts of the city, shed a brilliant illumination over its streets, through the darkest night.

From the construction of their temples, all religious services were public. The long processions of priests winding round their massive sides, as they rose higher and higher towards the summit, and the dismal rites of sacrifice performed there, were all visible from the remotest corners of the capital, impressing on the spectator's mind a superstitious veneration for the mysteries of his religion, and for



the dread ministers by whom they were interpreted.

This impression was kept in full force by their numerous festivals. . . . Many of their ceremonies were of a light and cheerful complexion, consisting of the national songs and dances, in which both sexes joined. Processions were made of women and children crowned with garlands and bearing offerings of fruits, the ripened maize, or the sweet incense of copal and other odoriferous gums, while the altars of the deity were stained with no blood save that of animals. These were the peaceful rites derived from their Toltec predecessors, on which the fierce Aztecs engrafted a superstition too loathsome to be exhibited in all its nakedness, and . . . one that had the greatest influence in forming the national character.

Human sacrifices were adopted by the Aztecs early in the fourteenth century, about two hundred years before the Conquest.

### ***Gruesome Sacrifices***

These human sacrifices included men and women, children and infants, and were performed by the priests with much awe-inspiring ceremony, in some measure suggesting the terrible autos-da-fe of Catholic Spain. Yet even these gruesome sacrificial spectacles had a side that would be called glamorous in present-day speech. The victim was feasted and toasted and indulged for a whole year preceding his finis. He was selected from among the most handsome captives of the nation and was granted the companionship, during the last thirty days preceding his immolation, of four beautiful maidens, bearing the names of goddesses. Contrast this with the somber horror of the fate of the victims of the Inquisition, which had no ray that relieved the impenetrable gloom. The funeral pyre was only the end of long woe.

The Aztec victim was, finally, marched up and around the sides of the temple pyramid, accompanied by a procession of priests. Slowly they progressed to the top, which was visible from all parts

of the city. As they ascended the devoted youth would cast away the crowns and flowers he had gained, one by one. His instruments of music were broken to pieces as he went on. On the summit of the pyramid six long-locked priests receive him, clothed in sable garments adorned with strange-looking and mysterious symbols. On a black jasper altar they stretch him, and five of them fasten his head, feet and hands. Then the sixth approaches, clothed in a bright red mantle and armed with a sharp stone instrument. On all sides the people prostrate themselves. Then, amid the chant of the priests, the red-robed one opens the breast of the beautiful captive, laying bare the heart. He inserts his hand and tears it from the breast, holds it aloft in offering to the sun, and casts it at the feet of the image.

Subsequently the body of the victim was delivered to the warrior who took him in battle. Then at a banquet of delicious drinks and viands that body was served up as the culmination of the program. This was the abominable practice of the Aztecs, which, being part of their religion, suggests the abominations of the nations which God cast out of the land of Palestine before Israel took possession.

Nor were these human sacrifices events that seldom occurred. They were frequent and widespread, so that the victims over the entire land of Anahuac were computed to total as many as twenty thousand a year! The Aztecs even refrained from entering into any permanently peaceful relations with certain other tribes, with a view to having wars that would supply captive victims for their altars. The historian remarks:

As the supply began to fail, the priests, the Dominicans of the New World, bellowed aloud for more, and urged on their superstitious sovereign by the denunciations of celestial wrath. Like the militant churchmen of Christendom in the Middle Ages, they mingled themselves in the ranks, and were conspicuous

in the thickest of the fight, by their hideous aspect and frantic gestures. Strange that, in every country, the most fiendish passions of the human heart have been those kindled in the name of religion. . . . In reflecting on the revolting usages recorded in the preceding pages, one finds it difficult to reconcile their existence with anything like a regular form of government, or an advance in civilization. Yet the Mexicans had many claims to the character of a civilized community. One may, perhaps, better understand the anomaly by reflecting on the condition of some of the most polished countries in Europe, in the sixteenth century, after the establishment of the modern Inquisition,—an institution which yearly destroyed its thousands, by a death more painful than the Aztec sacrifices; which armed the hand of brother against brother, and, setting its burning seal upon the lip, did more to stay the march of improvement than any other scheme ever devised by human cunning. Human sacrifice, however cruel, has nothing in it degrading to its victim. The Inquisition, on the other hand, branded its victim with infamy in this world, and consigned him to everlasting perdition in the next.

### ***Two Religions Meet***

Then, early in the sixteenth century, representatives of the Aztec and of the Catholic (Roman) religion met! One definite superiority the new arrivals had over those already on the territory in Mexico was that the white man had guns, and used them. Cortez came, saw, and conquered. He had brought with him, from Cuba, in eleven vessels, 700 Spaniards, perhaps the only Europeans of that time that would be a match for the Aztecs. He also brought eighteen horses and ten pieces of artillery. The peoples of Mexico were as much disconcerted by the appearance of the horses as they were by the effectiveness of the arms of the invaders. Cortez also brought two priests, to bring the Roman religion to the Aztecs, or else! When this motley company landed on terra firma at a point near the modern city of Vera Cruz a new chapter opened up in the history of the

Aztecs. It makes interesting reading, however terrifying to the Aztecs were the events that followed.

The Spaniards were nothing if not religious. They were the pets of the pope of Rome, and that is perhaps the meanest thing that can be said about them; for they had, and have, many redeeming qualities. In short, the Spaniards, like every other nation and people on the face of the globe, were human, descendants of Adam, and prone to sin. Among them, as among all peoples, there were potential "sheep" and "goats". Whether those who landed in Mexico were all fortune hunters, or whether they had some relatively noble objective, need not be finally decided here and now. The great Judge of all has the record in a form more accurate than human chronicles could hope to give it.

Cortez and his men—and horses—landed on "Good Friday", a religious date supposedly commemorating the death of the meek and lowly Jesus. The news of the arrival of these strange visitors spread like wildfire all over the land of Anahuac and its border lands. The rapid messengers doubtless ran faster than ever before!

From the site of the present city of Mexico, but then called Tenochtitlan, the emperor or chief of the Aztecs, Montezuma, having heard of the terrifying white visitors, sent messengers to Cortez—messengers and presents—gold, silver, and precious stones. He hoped thus to satisfy the unwelcome invaders and cause them to return to wherever they had come from. But these presents only stirred up the covetousness of Cortez and his associates. They wanted more, much more. They wanted all! The lure of gold made them bold. They pressed on into the interior, sweeping aside all resistance by means of their superior arms and equally superior ferocity. The valorous Tlascalans were defeated in battle. When an embassy from the interior came upon the Spaniards they were sent back with hands

severed at the wrists. Cortez suspected treachery. Some of the tribes that were conquered joined his forces to free themselves from the control of the Aztecs.

In seven months Cortez and his band reached Mexico city (Tenochtitlan) and were greatly amazed with what they saw. There were three great towns before them, situated on a lake in the outspread valley. They were the towns of Tenochtitlan, Tezcuco and Tlacopan. Tenochtitlan stood in the midst of the partly artificial lake and was the most powerful and most impregnable in position of the three. It was the residence of Montezuma and the seat of the confederate power. If the Aztecs were treacherous and unprincipled, Cortez was a match for them. Montezuma, not knowing what else to do, admitted the visitors, permitting them to come over the causeway and to enter the city. This placed the Spaniards and their native companions in a dangerous position, but Cortez prudently and insolently required Montezuma to reside with them in the palace or communal dwelling assigned to them. So Montezuma, the ruler of the Aztecs, was virtually a prisoner in his own domain, while his impudent guests ruled the place—supposedly in his name. The white “gods” had come, as predicted!

Cortez compelled Montezuma to agree to a pledge of vassalage and tribute to the king of Castile, and proceeded further to ‘clean up’ the religious habits of the amazed Aztecs. This is always a very dangerous thing to do; for humans generally cling to their religious crookedness more tenaciously than anything else. But Cortez and his priests were there to make “good Catholics” out of these benighted heathen. So he went boldly to work and removed the image of a god from the temple and substituted “the Virgin”. Just where he got the virgin, or whether he brought it with him, the present chronicler “wotteth not”. But this was going a little too fast for the Aztecs, and the people were so enraged that Cortez had Montezuma appear on an

eminence to speak to them. They shot down their emperor forthwith, without giving him any opportunity to explain. Had they listened to him, another story might have been written.

Then Cortez heard that an expedition from the governor of Cuba had arrived to arrest him as a rebel and take official charge of the situation. Without delay Cortez marched to meet them, leaving part of his force in Tenochtitlan. Surprising the oncoming Spanish force with one only a third its own in size, he took the commander captive, won over the rest, and returned to Tenochtitlan.

### ***“The Tender Mercies of the Wicked”***

The Spanish invasion and conquest destroyed in Mexico a civilization which, except for the horrible practice of human sacrifice and the still more horrible eating of human flesh in ceremonial festivity, was remarkable in a large degree. According to *The Catholic Encyclopedia* we learn that on the whole Cortez was kind to the Indians. This calls to mind the proverb (Proverbs 12:10), “The tender mercies of the wicked are cruel.” Draper the historian says of the Spanish conquest of America:

What Spain did to this continent can never be too often related . . . She acted with appalling atrocity to those Indians, as though they did not belong to the human race. Their lands and goods were taken from them by Apostolic authority. Their persons were next seized. . . .

It was one unspeakable outrage; one unutterable ruin, without discrimination of age or sex. . . . By millions upon millions whole races and nations were remorselessly cut off. The bishop of Chiapa affirms that more than fifteen millions were exterminated in his time. From Mexico and Peru, a civilization that might have instructed Europe was crushed out.

This was true of the advanced and relatively civilized peoples of Yucatan and Peru, and of the Aztecs of Mexico, now under particular consideration.

*The Catholic Encyclopedia* excuses all this by stating that such procedure was

not uncommon in those times. Well said; and those times were wholly dominated by Romanism. This is amusingly indicated by a fact recorded as follows by the historian Larned. He says:

As soon as possible, a grant of sovereignty over the countries already discovered or to be discovered in the west was obtained from the pope, whose authority to dispose of heathen lands was hardly questioned at that day. . . . To prevent conflicts between the two kingdoms [Spain and Portugal] the reigning pope, Alexander VI, issued edicts or papal bulls, on the 3rd and 4th of May, 1493 [shortly after Columbus' discovery], dividing the unexplored regions of the earth by a meridian line, drawn one hundred leagues west of the Azores and Cape Verde islands, giving all west of it to Spain and all east of it to Portugal, so far as concerned countries not occupied already by Christian powers. By agreement, however, between Portugal and Spain, in a treaty signed at Tordesillas in 1494, this dividing meridian was moved to a point 375 leagues west of the Cape Verde islands, which placed it at about 47° 32' 56" west of Greenwich. For a long period Spain and Portugal strove hard to uphold the validity of these papal grants, and to maintain exclusive rights of discovery and sovereignty in the unexplored expanses of the globe; but respect for such claims of papal authority were rapidly passing away.

### *A Gift from the Pope*

The "generosity" of the pope, however, backed by the efforts of the Portuguese and Spanish (of which the foregoing furnish an illustration), accounts for the fact that Latin America is roughly four-sevenths Spanish and three-sevenths Portuguese as to territory. Mexico lies in the Spanish portion. After its conquest by Cortez little of the ancient civilization remained. Its records and libraries were destroyed, together with its institutions. The capital was razed, and a new city, the present capital, was erected near the site of the old. But enough of the ancient records in stone and ruin remain to show how far ad-

vanced was this people of an unknown world and an unknown origin. Whence they had come no one knew or knows to this day. The most likely conjecture is that they came from somewhere across the Pacific.

The conquistadors having paved the way, Roman missionaries followed. Monks and friars in considerable numbers took up their activities in Mexico and, with the curious mixture of "Christian religion" and pagan tradition that is characteristic of the Hierarchy, began the conversion of the Aztecs and other American tribes in Mexico. Progress at first was slow, but after a while, from various motives, for religion was blended with social and occupational advantages, the converts became more numerous. Then, one day, an Indian lad had a fortuitous vision of the 'holy mother of God', or so he claimed. Whether the apparition was real (and therefore demonistic) or was a purely human invention, has not been satisfactorily determined. But popular fervor was aroused for the "Virgin of Guadalupe", and a great increase in conversions to Catholicism was the result. Superstition accomplished what other inducements had failed to bring about. And so Mexico became at least nominally Catholic. But Catholicism did not retain its hold without drastic measures, among which was the terrible Inquisition. As a result of its depredations Mexico was kept in bondage for three hundred years. But that is another story. What has been said suffices to give some idea of the ancient civilization that flourished and the relative advancement and prosperity that existed before European ever set foot on the shores of the Western world.

Today only the ruins remain, but these ruins have told much, among them the ancient Aztec calendar, cut in stone, more accurate by ten days than the one by which Columbus charted his course. Mexico was a land of unusual attainments, though shadowed by the dark clouds of superstition and religion.





### An Assembly of Truth-Lovers in Latin America

**L**ATIN AMERICANS appreciate freedom of worship and of speech quite as much as North Americans. They are no different when it comes to these fundamental questions, even though many of them are nominally Roman Catholics. Herewith appears a picture of the Theocratic Assembly of Jehovah's

witnesses in Brazil, September 18 to 20, 1942 (held at the same time with more than ninety similar gatherings the world over). The picture is taken at the release of the lecture "Peace—Can It Last?" in booklet form, and it looks as if the listeners had been given something to think about.

### "Kingdom Halls"

**T**HE first disciples of Jesus, the Messiah, assembled round Him on a mount or in the street or at the seaside. They listened to Him in the temple or in some home. They made use of every opportunity to learn the truth that makes free and to tell others also; for disciples are pupils, but they are also to be witnesses and publishers of the message of the Kingdom. The last gathering of Jesus with His apostles was in an "upper room", on which occasion He instituted the Memorial Supper still observed by witnesses annually.

After Jesus' death and resurrection the disciples continued to meet in "upper

rooms" (Acts 1:13, 14; 20:8, 9) and other places and to witness, publishing the good news of the kingdom of God from door to door.—Acts 20:20.

Today the followers of Jesus, "the faithful and true witness" (Revelation 3:14), still meet in homes and "upper rooms" and halls, generally referred to as "Kingdom Halls", for worship and study of the Word of God and for service arrangements that will enable them to further the Kingdom interests. Some of the halls and "upper rooms" are shown on the next page. In some cities there is but one such hall, while in others there are many. Those shown are typical.



1. Kingdom Hall and publishers at Springbrook, Wis., and (2) at Houston, Tex. (3) Hall at Lansing, Mich. "Upper rooms" at (4) Marietta, Ohio; (5) Brownsville, Texas; and (7) Milwaukee, Wis. (6) Hall and busy witnesses of Lancaster, Pa., and (8) Colored group at Harrisburg, Pa., in front of their Kingdom Hall. (9) Group and hall at Vancouver, Wash. (10) One of the units of St. Louis, Mo., at their hall. (11) Hall at Aberdeen, Wash. Window displays at (12-14) Redwood City, Calif., (15) Wenatchee, Wash., (16) Gary, Ind., and (17) Englewood, Colo.

APRIL 14, 1943

## Spelling in Junior High Schools

**I**N THE junior high schools of San Francisco, in a test on writing out the pledge of allegiance, some of the spellings of the word "allegiance" were as follows:

a legon	a legion
leagent	a legents
alegent	a legeaus
a legence	a legia
aligence	a ledgon
alliness	allegen
aligens	a ledges
the elegents	alegene
a Leigion	a lerongence
a lead gent	the leaguesnt
allegenst	

The word "republic" provided the following:

replice	public
republican	replies
republect	repupria
rerpublication	

The word "indivisible" became:

invisible	investable
in the visible	intervisabel
indivial	indivinal
ensivible	inveviba

"Justice for all" became:

just is for all	just afar off
-----------------	---------------

This information, taken from the San Francisco *Examiner*, October 7, 1942, which had nearly three columns on the subject, discloses how much benefit the children derive from reciting anything in poll-parrot fashion without knowing what it is all about.

### Latin Will Be the Language?

◆ Hitler has announced that for scientific relations the official language of the "New Order" being arranged between himself and Pacelli and Hirohito will be Latin. The Institute of Roman Studies is preparing modern Latin dictionaries.

### YOU WANT TO SEE A RIGHTEOUS NEW WORLD, DON'T YOU? DO YOU THINK YOU WILL?

The claim of men is that they will establish a new world. Do you think they can? God's Word sets forth the plain facts that men cannot set up a *new* world. Who then can, and will do so? and how? The answers to these throbbing questions will grip your attention as you read the *thrilling* new 384-page book

#### THE NEW WORLD

It traces the rise and fall of the first world, destroyed in the flood of Noah's day; and the next world, the present evil world, in which we now live, as it stands upon the brink of Armageddon before its fatal plunge into destruction. Then as you read on, through the black shroud of the future bursts forth upon the vision the *new* world.

*THE NEW WORLD* is beautiful in its binding of peach-color cloth and planetary-design embossing. For reference it contains a convenient subject index and a complete index of all Scripture citations used and explained within its pages. You may have a copy of *THE NEW WORLD* by sending in the coupon below together with 25c as a contribution to aid in the work of proclaiming the New World.

**WATCHTOWER**

**117 Adams St.**

**Brooklyn, N. Y.**

Please send me, prepaid, the book *The New World*. Enclosed is my contribution of 25c to aid in its distribution.

Name ..... Street .....

City ..... State .....

## Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"

### Variety in Sentence Structure

**M**ONOTONY is not tolerated by any audience nor by any readers. That means not only in delivery, if it is a speech, but also in structure, particularly in the structure of sentences.

There are four kinds of sentences:

- 1 - The simple sentence, containing one independent clause.
- 2 - The complex sentence, which contains one principal clause and one or more dependent or subordinate clauses.
- 3 - The compound sentence, containing two principal or independent clauses and no subordinate clauses.
- 4 - The compound-complex sentence, containing two or more principal clauses and one or more subordinate clauses.

One should not use all simple sentences, neither all compound or complex sentences, in making up his talk. Regardless of how good they may be, if all the sentences are the same they will eventually become monotonous and the attention of the listeners will wander. This means one must have well in mind the series of ideas that he wishes to present and that he must know the relative values of these ideas and properly subordinate them. For instance, if one were speaking of some of Jehovah's witnesses' being mobbed he might state: Jehovah's witnesses went out on the street and distributed magazines and were mobbed and arrested. There one gives the fact that they went on the street and distributed magazines the same importance as their being mobbed and arrested. If one wants to emphasize the part of being mobbed and arrested he might state it this way: While Jehovah's witnesses were distributing magazines on the street they were mobbed and arrested. Thus one subordinates the

first and makes it the relatively unimportant idea and emphasizes the mobbing and arresting.

One can vary the structure and vary the length of sentences. Some use all short simple sentences. This is characteristic of children. Many older persons have the habit of using all compound sentences having one independent clause after another connected by conjunctions such as and, but, or. Both, when properly used with variety according to the material on which one is talking, are good. Long sentences give weight and momentum to the flow of thought, but if one uses too many the style becomes heavy, laborious, ponderous, and too involved for the audience to follow. Short sentences well constructed are very effective. They are often used to advantage because they will flash out the thought suddenly in very few words and really put it across. These are especially good at the beginning of the talk, and also at the conclusion of a talk where one can enforce the idea he has fully developed in the body of the talk. These short sentences are stirring and persuasive, and the style of one using them is crisp and powerful. Too many, however, and the style becomes choppy.

Sentences may be loose or periodic. Loose sentences are those that may be ended before the period has been reached and still be grammatically complete. For example: Psalm 23 says, "He leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake." This loose sentence might be ended after "me" or after "righteousness" and still express a complete thought. The large majority of sentences are loose, being of a conversational and informal nature. A periodic sentence is one in which a complete thought is not expressed until the end. Its meaning is not completed until the period is reached. "Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will



fear no evil." This sentence is periodic. Such sentences are more emphatic, creating suspense by withholding the meaning until the last word has been reached.

Balanced sentences of parallel structure are emphatic and are used often in the Scriptures, especially in Psalms, Proverbs, and Isaiah. "Strengthen ye the weak hands, and confirm the feeble knees." "The eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped." (Isa. 35: 3, 5) One gains balance by bringing in two or more factors closely related to each other and putting them in clauses of like grammatical structure. Another form of balanced sentence uses antithesis, the setting of words of opposite meaning in contrast. This is constantly done in the Proverbs. "The curse of the Lord is in the house of the wicked: but he blesseth the habitation of the just. The wise shall inherit glory: but shame shall be the promotion of fools." (Prov. 3: 33, 35) "Curse" and "blesseth", "wise" and "fools", and "glory" and "shame" are contrasting words. "When the righteous are in authority, the people rejoice: but when the wicked beareth rule, the people mourn." (Prov. 29:2) The rejoicing seems greater when contrasted with mourning; likewise the righteousness of one group and the wickedness of the other are emphasized by speaking of them together. Romans 8: 17, 31, 35-39 uses antithesis, and is very emphatic. Balanced constructions not only are emphatic but also make for coherence and add to the pleasure of the listener or reader as the thought develops.

Repetition of key words which one wishes to emphasize gives force. Note 2 Corinthians 11: 26: "In journeyings often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by mine own countrymen, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren." All this repetition is not necessary so far as giving the meaning is concerned, but by repetition

of "perils" emphasis is gained. Also at 1 Corinthians 9: 20-22, the words "Jews", "law" and "weak" are stressed by repetition.

By rearranging the wording of a sentence, that is, transposing the natural word order, one gains emphasis and variety. This is known as transposition. For instance, John 15:13 illustrates this point, where the natural word order would be to say, 'No man hath greater love than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.' The text actually reads: "Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends." Emphasis is gained by placing the words "greater love" at the beginning. Again, in Matthew 7: 20: "Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them." That is more forceful than the natural word order, 'ye shall know them by their fruits.' One word of caution in this: Do not overuse it, because it is unusual and may sound artificial if the material is not worthy of the added emphasis this inverted order gives.

The principle of climax, that is arranging the words, phrases or clauses according to their importance, may be used to advantage within the sentence. Rather than say Jehovah's witnesses are killed, shot, mobbed and mistreated because of their stand for The Theocracy, one would say they are mistreated, mobbed, shot, and killed, leaving the more important words till the end of the series, and thus continually heighten the interest up to the climax. Isaiah 8:15 reads: "Many among them shall stumble, and fall, and be broken, and be snared, and be taken." The 'stumbling' is only the beginning, 'being taken' is the climax. See also Judges 5: 27.

After writing a talk, read it over aloud and see if it reads well, if the sentences have variety—some short and some long, some using balance, antithesis, and climax, some loose and some periodic. So doing, monotony of construction will be avoided.

## "Christian" Superstitions in the Visayas

REGULAR readers of *Consolation* know that there is no such thing as a "Christian" superstition. If it is Christian it is not superstitious, and vice versa. It will be of interest, however, to examine here the superstitions that have been confused with and attached to certain Christian teachings in the Philippines. The following is taken from an article by Angel V. Campoy in *Philippine Magazine*:

The Filipinos also have their Holy Week superstitions.

Holy Week begins with Palm Sunday, when devotees go to church carrying different kinds of palm leaves in commemoration of Christ's entry into Jerusalem on which occasion, according to the Bible story, the people met him singing and waving palm leaves. Palm leaves brought to church and blessed by the priest on this day are considered holy and are believed to possess mysterious powers. They are afterward folded into crosses and fastened on the walls or hung over doorways to keep evil spirits away. Sometimes they are burned with incense for the same purpose.

Fasting begins on the following Monday and lasts until the next Sunday—Easter Day. All meat is strictly avoided. The observance of the ceremonies in memory of the crucifixion begin on Wednesday. In the afternoon the people go to church to witness what in the Visayas is called the *tenebras*. Children look upon this as fun, for they are allowed to make as much noise as they can with their *matrakas* or bamboo buzzers to suggest the commotion during the search of the soldiers for Jesus. This ceremony is completed on Holy Thursday.

On Good Friday the ringing of bells, and singing and music in any form, is forbidden. People go to church in mourning clothes. One superstition is that if anyone commits some unreverent act on this day, he will be innerly compelled to commit the same act throughout every day of the year. Baking bananas on this day is believed to give one freckles.

On Good Friday, commerce with spirits is believed to be easier, and herbs gathered and

prepared on this day are thought to have the strongest curative powers. "Charm oil" is made only on this day. It is made from a mature, "lone" coconut that grew on the east side of a tree; that is, it must be the only nut that grew and matured of a whole cluster. The oil from such a nut is extracted early in the morning and it is brought to a boil exactly at noon and various herbs mixed in while the witch doctor mutters incantations. The oil is in great demand for the treatment of insect bites and for skin ailments believed to be caused by evil spirits. A certain cave on Siquijor Island is said to be the place where numbers of witch doctors go each year to concoct their oil and renew their supernatural powers.

The bell ringing on Easter Sunday is awaited with much interest by many people because they believe that young trees stunted in their growth will begin to grow and will bloom much earlier if they are shaken at the first sound of the bells.

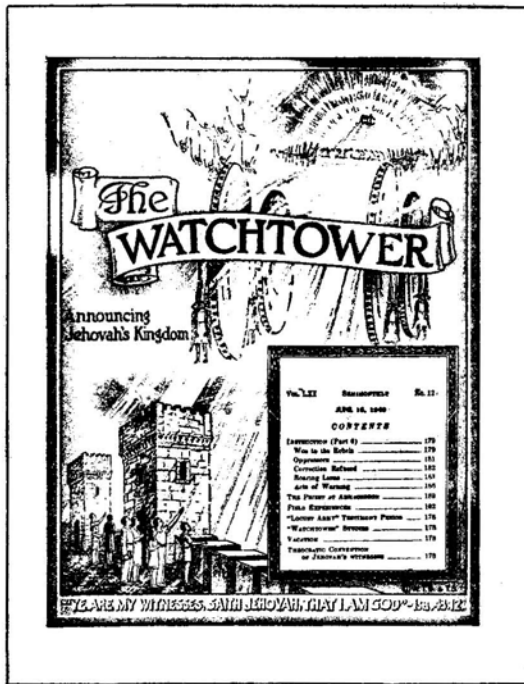
---

### The Voices Were the Voices of Demons

♦ To her family and her companions Joan of Arc seemed only "a good girl, simple and pleasant in her ways", but she brooded much over the disasters that had overtaken her country, and a "great pity on the fair realm of France" filled her heart. She saw visions and heard voices that bade her to go forth to the help of the king and lead him to Reims to be crowned.

The modern student of abnormal psychology may well suspect that behind these voices and patriotic ambitions lay a deep desire on Joan's part to be a man and consort with men instead of sheep and women. She longed to be a soldier and ride bravely on her horse. This explanation makes against the ugly aspersions cast upon her by Voltaire and more recent scandalmongers, for which there is no historical foundation.—*The Story of Our Civilization*, Vol. 1, page 253.

# NO OTHER MAGAZINE



THAN *THE WATCHTOWER*, in these days of sorrow and unrest upon the entire earth, heralds forth the comforting, heart-cheering message of a new and better world soon to replace this present evil world. True, hundreds of newspapers and magazines are to be found expounding the theories and dogmas of men and organizations; but all such have forgotten God and put their trust in the imperfect wisdom of men.

BUT *THE WATCHTOWER* has continually kept before the people the all-important, life-sustaining truths found

in God's Word, the Bible. *THE WATCHTOWER* is a beacon light piercing the spiritual darkness now enveloping the world, and guiding persons of good-will to Jehovah and His kingdom, The Theocracy. **SUBSCRIBE IMMEDIATELY for *THE WATCHTOWER*!** Don't be without this enlightening companion. If you act now, during the three-month *WATCHTOWER* CAMPAIGN, ending April 30, you will receive as a special gift, **FREE**, the 384-page book *THE NEW WORLD*, as described on page 28 of this magazine. Also the 32-page booklet *PEACE—CAN IT LAST?* relative to this timely subject.

**SPECIAL OFFER GOOD FOR ONLY TWO MORE WEEKS. DON'T MISS IT!**

**WATCHTOWER**

**117 Adams St.**

**Brooklyn, N. Y.**

I am enclosing \$1.00, for which please list me as a subscriber for *The Watchtower* for one year. Additionally, send me without charge the book *The New World* and the booklet *Peace—Can It Last?*

Name \_\_\_\_\_

Street \_\_\_\_\_

City \_\_\_\_\_

State \_\_\_\_\_



# ISOLATION

JOURNAL OF FACT, HOPE AND COURAGE

## The Papal Peace Offensive

Will the Hierarchy spellbinders succeed in winning the peace?

---

## Do Regional Dictatorships Impend?

The startling charge made by Colorado's retiring governor

---

## Why Not a "God Man"

Was Jesus, when on earth, both God and man in completeness?

---

## Protective Wall Holds - in Places

Cherished liberties of Americans threatened on many fronts

---

## Some Facts About Yucatan

A land of mystery and forgotten grandeurs



# Contents

<b>The Papal Peace Offensive</b>	<b>3</b>
Straddling the Fence	4
Papal Salvos on the Peace Front	5
The Pope Joins in the Offensive	6
Weakener of Morale	7
Spellman's Secretive Movements	9
Remember the Hierarchy's Record	10
The Coming Peace	11
Comeback of Religion Doomed	14
Tormenting the Conquerors	14
Do Regional Dictatorships Impend?	15
Is It Big Business?	15
Could It Be Religion?	16
The Vanishing Alesunds	16
"Thy Word Is Truth"	
Why Not a "God Man?"	17
Protective Wall Holds—in Some Places	19
'Greater Things Shall Ye Do'	22
They Get There Just the Same	25
Facts About Ancient and Modern Yucatan	25
The Builders of Yucatan	26
The Ruins of Mayapan	26
Modern Yucatan	27
Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"	
Parts of Speech and Their Use	29
Erratum	31
The Scorching of Borneo and Sumatra	31

Published every other Wednesday by  
**WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, INC.**  
 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

## OFFICERS

<b>President</b>	<b>N. H. Knorr</b>
<b>Secretary</b>	<b>W. E. Van Amburgh</b>
<b>Editor</b>	<b>Clayton J. Woodworth</b>

## Five Cents a Copy

\$1 a year in the United States  
 \$1.25 to Canada and all other countries

## NOTICE TO SUBSCRIBERS

**Remittances:** For your own safety, remit by postal or express money order. When coin or currency is lost in the ordinary mails, there is no redress. Remittances from countries other than those named below may be made to the Brooklyn office, but only by international postal money order.

**Receipt** of a new or renewal subscription will be acknowledged only when requested. **Notice of Expiration** is sent with the journal one month before subscription expires. Please renew promptly to avoid loss of copies.

**Send change of address** direct to us rather than to the post office. Your request should reach us at least two weeks before the date of issue with which it is to take effect. Send your old as well as the new address. Copies will not be forwarded by the post office to your new address unless extra postage is provided by you.

Published also in Greek, Portuguese, Spanish, and Ukrainian.

## OFFICES FOR OTHER COUNTRIES

<b>England</b>	34 Craven Terrace, London, W. 2
<b>Australia</b>	7 Beresford Road, Strathfield, N. S. W.
<b>South Africa</b>	623 Boston House, Cape Town
<b>Mexico</b>	Calzada de Melchor Ocampo 71, Mexico, D. F.
<b>Brazil</b>	Caixa Postal 1319, Rio de Janeiro
<b>Argentina</b>	Calle Honduras 5646-48, Buenos Aires

Entered as second-class matter at Brooklyn, N. Y., under the Act of March 3, 1879.

# Notanda

## Hitler in Mississippi

♦ So far as any one knows, Adolf Hitler's agents were not active last week in the State of Mississippi, but Hitler's work was being done there. It was being done by mobs which carried out three lynchings within that one week. The courts and police of Mississippi, whose authority was defied, are taking action. We may hope that it will result in arrests and convictions, but previous experience in similar cases does not make the hope a confident expectation. In the eyes of unfriendly foreigners the State of Mississippi, and with it the United States, must stand condemned as not practicing what our spokesmen preach. As this news goes round the world—and, let us be sure, it will do so—our cause will suffer. The Nazi propagandists will not add that the majority of the people of Mississippi detest lynching, nor that these murders outrage the great masses of the American people, though these things are true.

About 10 percent of our population are Negroes, and just as loyal as the other 90 percent to our cause in this war. We count on them to work and to fight for that cause. It is of national importance that they be guaranteed the civil rights to which, like other Americans, they are entitled, and the protection of their property and their lives. Any State in the Union, North or South, can insure these rights and this protection if its officials take the situation seriously.—*New York Times*, October 21, 1942.

## Learning German in a Hurry

♦ A Danish bookseller peeved the Gestapo with a sign, "Learn English in 30 hours, before the Tommies arrive." Forced to take the sign down, he offered another engaging sign, "Learn German in 50 hours before our guests depart."

# CONSOLATION

"And in His name shall the nations hope."—Matthew 12:21, A. R. V.

Volume XXIV

Brooklyn, N. Y., Wednesday, April 28, 1943

Number 616

## The Papal Peace Offensive

SCIENTISTS claim that many adults have the mentality of a child. The propaganda by the Hierarchy regarding her persecution in Germany and her antipathy to the Nazis is simple bedtime stories and swallowed by the child-like. To insure this the public press is doing its best.

By this propaganda offensive the Papacy is courting the democracies, flirting with them while carrying on her clandestine affair with her dictatorial paramours. The wider the breach between the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and Germany appears to be, the closer the Hierarchy and the United Nations seem to become, as though uniting against a common foe. She is trying to draw closer to the Allies. Why? So that the democracies will invite her to sit as chief arbiter in the coming peace conference, so that she may draw closer to the democracies and be enabled to more neatly slip the knife into their backs, thus destroying her old enemy brought forth by the Reformation and Peace of Westphalia and having her own bloody paw upraised in final victory! The champion comes back! That's her fervent aim and heart's desire.

Is the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, supposedly so cruelly persecuted and hated by the totalitarians, in a position to negotiate with them? The diplomatic relations maintained by the 'peace-praying' pope with the warmongering dictators answers emphatically Yes. Under the headline "Holy See Setting Up Peace Machinery at Vatican City" the *Boston Daily Globe*, May 5, 1942, said:

Reliable non-British reports from the Vatican state that the Holy See is systematically transforming Vatican City into a highly important diplomatic center and creating there the international machinery for opening peace negotiations at the opportune moment. . . . It was learned from Vatican City a few days ago that the Holy See and the Finnish government had agreed in principle to the exchange of diplomatic representatives. The Vatican simultaneously was reported considering sympathetically a similar exchange of representatives with Sweden. . . . Finland and Sweden never before have entertained official relations with the Vatican.

But they will now; for they are in the Nazi orbit, which is the papal orbit. These two countries have long been Protestant strongholds; now they are being drawn into the Catholic sphere of influence by crusading Hitler. It is very apparent that if the war is settled by a negotiated peace the pope hopes to be the central figure in the settlement and the main recipient of the favors extended. The 'old harlot' is going about the city of "Christendom" singing her songs and wooing the nations.—Isaiah 23.

All know of claims recently published that the German and Japanese gods are related. Both countries are likewise related by diplomatic envoys to the Vatican. And all three are related to the "god of this world". Although both Britain and the United States are alleged to have protested the appointment of the Japanese envoy to the Vatican, both were practically told to mind their own business.

The Japan-Vatican deal seems to be getting along splendidly. Matsuoka calls on the pope; the pope eulogizes him and sends his "blessing" to Japan. A deal is fixed up. The Japanese government recognizes the Roman Catholic religion as pure Shintoism (true, as both are paganism) and sends all the Protestant missionaries home. The war gets under way and results in favor of the Hierarchy become more manifest. Two hundred and fifty Jesuits in the Philippines report that they are safe and will "undoubtedly remain in the Philippines, no matter what happens". They are quite safe. It is further reported of the 1,273 Catholic missionaries in the Pacific war area that they "are in no serious danger". This is quite true.

After the Vatican had accepted a Japanese ambassador China wished the same concession. At present it has only an apostolic delegate from Harbin, which is in Japanese-dominated Manchukuo. The Vatican was "extremely reserved"; in other words, cold. Its consent was not given. The most it would agree to is that the papal representatives in China, not the Chinese government, might send an envoy. And when the ominous fact is considered that the papal representatives in China are actually stationed in Japanese-controlled territory, and none in that part of China ruled by Chiang Kai-shek, this magnanimous papal concession and "impartiality" becomes ludicrous and an absurd fiasco. China must learn she is not of the Aryan "master race".

### ***Straddling the Fence***

The Vatican also carries on its intrigues with those fighting her aspirations for a second administration of "Holy Roman Empire" dominion. The *Kansas City Times*, in a copyrighted article, said, on March 18, 1942: "It was learned from an informed Vatican source this evening that despite official denials Premier Joseph Stalin has sent Pope Pius XII a holograph letter which,

though it has caused some perturbation in high Vatican circles, is generally interpreted as an act of homage toward the church. . . . He [Stalin] ended with a request that the possibility of diplomatic representation with the U. S. S. R. receive the close and immediate attention of the Holy See."

The principal flirtation of the "old lady" in this respect, however, is with the United States of America. Roosevelt said he would establish diplomatic relations with the Holy See as soon as public opinion in this country could be brought around to it. The wheedling maneuverings were too slow, however, and Mr. Roosevelt sent a personal envoy, Taylor, to the pope. On January 3, 1942, a United Press dispatch from Buenos Aires was published in the *Detroit Times*, which read:

*La Prensa* reported from Rome tonight that the United States had entered into full diplomatic relations with the Vatican. The newspaper report said that Harold Tittman had been given formal rank of charge d'affaires accredited to the Vatican. Tittman was said to have been given an audience Monday by Pope Pius. "An unimpeachable source," said *La Prensa's* correspondent, "revealed to me that the development is the outcome of a great diplomatic game in which Pope Pius and President Roosevelt have sought to achieve rapprochement."

This "unimpeachable source" is probably wrong, since such establishment of relations must have Senate approval; but doubtless for all practical purposes they do exist. Possibly the report is made to help bring the justly suspicious 'American public around to the idea'. In September, 1942, Taylor was back at the Vatican talking to the pope, and many declared the conferences were concerning the coming peace. The *Arizona Republic* said: "Mr. Roosevelt wanted intimate relations with the Vatican because the latter *has trustful access to all belligerents in Europe*. . . . He certainly wouldn't have in effect recognized the Vatican just as an idle gesture. He

must be convinced the Vatican will be the instrumentality for the termination of the present war and he is eager to be in on the finals of such a big event."

### ***Papal Salvos on the Peace Front***

Papal stablehands brush and curry and groom the pope as peace arbiter. There has been a continuous stream of propaganda for the pope as peace arbiter from the year 1940 on, and now reaches floodlike proportions. In October, 1940, the *New York Times* published the following: "On this day, the feast of Christ the King, you have received the Prince of Peace in holy communion," Father Boland said. 'Think of his vicar, Pius XII, in his role as a possible peace-maker in a shaken world.' Citing the pope's five-point peace program, Father Boland said his holiness was ready to serve."

On September 4, 1941, the *New York Journal-American* attempted to put a high polish on this candidate, but, in its zeal to ingratiate itself, overdid the job, and the obviously affected sentimentality fails to give the desired shine. It said, in part:

A peace for the ages, a peace without rancor, without spoils for the victor and without punishment for the vanquished—this is the constant hope and hourly prayer of Pope Pius XII, the leader of Roman Catholic Christendom.

He is ready, this correspondent is able to reveal today, to lend the power and prestige of his church to ensure that the peace, when it comes, shall be one that may endure for generations, perhaps even centuries [like "Holy" Roman Empire I], instead of merely providing a respite between clashes of arms....

He is also prepared to make certain that the treaty which may eventually be signed shall have behind it the unassailable Sign of the Cross and the permanency of spiritual inspiration.

Many persons, the world over, have wondered why during months which have seen a terrifying extension of war, His Holiness

has remained silent, almost aloof. [Archbishop Spellman says the war has helped his business mightily. Could that be the reason?] They have wondered why no exhortations [or Hitler excommunication] have come forth from the Holy See during a period when the pope daily, almost hourly, has bent his fragile body under the crushing weight of personal anguish over human sufferings.

Now, behind the portals of St. Peter's, in his bare room, in the modest chamber of the unpretentious Vatican garden building where he chose to spend the sweltering Roman summer, the pope is working with almost superhuman [demons'?] vigor. This stems from the profound conviction that upon him—and him alone—depends the enduring success of whatever peace conference may close or follow the war.

From beginning to end it is a eulogy of the man who put Hitler in his present position, and whose hopes of "a peace to last through ages" is synonymous with his disciple Hitler's "new order to last a thousand years". It will be noticed that, after the usual bellyaching about the pope's "fragile body", "personal anguish over human sufferings" (for which he is personally responsible, since he, as papal nuncio in Germany, connived to put Hitler in power, in 1933), and his "modest chamber" next the Vatican (one of the largest buildings in the world), this "modest" mischief-making politician has "the profound conviction that upon him and him alone" depends the coming peace! Jehovah God says that He, through His King Christ Jesus, will bring the only lasting peace of ages' duration, but, like all totalitarian dictators, Mr. Pacelli is obsessed with the idea that he is the "indispensable man". At Armageddon all the wicked will be dispensed with!

In the year of 1942 the ballyhoo's tempo increased. Almost daily one could pick up a newspaper and see the 'virtues of Pope Pius as a peacemaker' extolled. A negotiated peace is openly advocated. "Reverend" John A. O'Brien, professor



of religion at Notre Dame, as reported in the South Bend *Tribune*, in February "urged the American government to ask Pope Pius XII to make a settlement". He said, "What more intelligent or constructive move could our government make than to appeal to the supreme pontiff to halt the plunging of millions of young men, made in the image and likeness of God, into the flaming volcano of war, and to settle the dispute in accordance with reason and conscience?" Isn't this a clear suggestion for a negotiated peace with Hitler to end the war? Don't the United Nations look upon all such advocates of a negotiated peace rather than a military victory as weakeners of American morale, enemies of democracy, friends of Hitler? Obviously a negotiated peace at this time would benefit Hitler and enable him to retain much of his conquests. But maybe O'Brien is the only one advocating such capitulation. No, here's another.

A mediated peace, with Pope Pius XII umpiring the rival claims in an effort to "establish a peace based on justice", was urged by Rev. Aloysius McDonough, professor of theology at the Passionist Monastery at Jamaica, Queens, in an address yesterday to 3,200 members of the Department of Sanitation Holy Name Society of Brooklyn and Queens at a communion breakfast in the Hotel St. George, Brooklyn.

Dr. McDonough declared: "Our Holy Father would not be so impractical as to plan a world order to be run on faith, hope and charity minus a police system. Even Vatican City has its jail."—*New York Times*, May 25, 1942.

That is true. The "holy father" is not impractical. The "new order" wouldn't be run on faith, hope and charity; and there would be a gestapo police system headed by some modern Torquemada, and the Vatican jail and all others would be packed with any who hinted dissatisfaction with "Holy" Roman Empire II. A man who heads an organization that practices Inquisitions and suchlike must be in harmony with it, or he wouldn't be

where he is. But you must not think about these things. You must consider his "sobbing heart", "personal anguish over human sufferings," and his "fragile body". "Fragile body," indeed! Rather than fret over the pope's "fragile body" the American people should lament the 'fragile head' of their public press!

The pope is a contestant in this fight for world domination; he would also like to be the umpire. That would make everything sure-fire, all sewed up, in the bag. What boxing commission or public fight fans would tolerate the manager of one of the fighters serving also as referee? The stakes involved are not to be compared. Will the democracies permit the pope to umpire this fight and hand the decision to his boy Hitler?

### ***The Pope Joins in the Offensive***

You may object to what you think is merely an inference that puts the pope in a position similar to that which his spokesmen take. That the pope favors a negotiated peace now, and not a later democratic victory, is no mere inference. This papal opportunist would call a halt now and salvage all possible from the gains of his Axis partners. He has so stated. The Vatican, as a previously quoted article said, has been silent, almost aloof. That was when Hitler was running wild over all opposition with blitzkrieg rapidity. Things are slowing up now, and the Vatican shows signs of life. It's the opportune time to start the salvage work. So the developing peace offensive begins to roll and the pope recommends a negotiated peace, which is so odious to the democracies.

If anyone aside from Hierarchy spokesmen would even hint at such procedure now his voice would be drowned with angry cries of "traitor" and "fifth columnist" and "Nazi", and he would be mobbed. But the pope's appeal for negotiations is eulogized and spread all over the newspapers. On May 14, 1942, all the leading newspapers published the full text of the pope's address in

celebration of his episcopal consecration 25 years ago. Leading up to the heavy artillery of this Nazi propaganda salvo, he mentions the "impenetrable designs of God" and the Lord's heritage as being "heavy and full of sorrows" on "our [his] weak shoulders". God's Word says to Jehovah's servants, "Ye, brethren, are not in darkness," and that they have the "joy of the Lord". But to the self-styled "Vicar of Christ" and leader of millions God's designs are "impenetrable", and by his covetousness and ambition he has 'pierced himself through with many sorrows'. (1 Timothy 6:10) If the blind ones, nations and individuals, continue to follow this admittedly blind leader, all will soon land in the ditch. He deplores descension to the "crudity of violence", not meaning the modern-day priest-inspired and priest-led mobs against Jehovah's witnesses or the stamping out of "heretics" by "death, if necessary", or Hitler's *blitzkriegs*, but democracies' defense by 'fighting back'. He recounts the glorious history of the church—skipping the Inquisition, of course. Then, toward the end and after a long and carefully planned introduction for his hostile audience (for he knows his next proposal is obnoxious to the democracies), he subtly states:

If, however, the present lining up of forces, of gains and losses in the political and military sphere, does not show any immediate practical possibility of peace, the destruction wrought by the war among the nations in the material and spiritual plane is all the time accumulating to such an extent that it calls for every effort to prevent its increase by bringing the conflict to a speedy end, even prescind from arbitrary acts of violence and cruelty against which, on former occasions, we raise our voice in warning. . . .

The cry that reaches us from the family front is unanimous—give us back our peacetime occupations. If one has the future of mankind at heart, if your conscience before God ascribes some import to what the names "father" and "mother" mean to men and to

what makes for the real happiness of your children, send back the family to its peacetime occupation.

As patron of this family front, from which may God keep far all open ways of misfortune and disastrous upheaval, we make a warm, fatherly appeal to statesmen that they may not let any occasion pass that may open up to the nations the road to an honest peace of justice and moderation, to a peace arising from a free and fruitful agreement, even if it should not correspond in all points to their aspirations.

The world-wide family front, which has at the war front so many hearts of fathers, husbands, and children, which, amid the dangers and sufferings, hopes and desires, are beating with the double love of country and of home, will become tranquil in the prospect of a new horizon.

The gratitude of mankind and the consent of their own nation will not be wanting to those generous leaders who, inspired not by weakness but by a sense of responsibility, shall choose the road of moderation and the field of wisdom when they meet the other side, also guided by the same sentiments.

### ***Weakeners of Morale***

Most people have a natural desire for peace. The above Nazi propaganda is to make them want it more, to cause them to weaken in their resolves for nothing less than total victory, to accept peace at any price. 'Prescind from arbitrary acts of violence,' he says. In other words, 'cease fighting, and negotiate.' Arbitrate now. Come to a "moderate", "fruitful" (for the Axis) peace agreement "even if you do not gain all your aspirations". In other words, says the pope, 'compromise; let the Axis keep some of its gains; be moderate in your demands.' Of course, the Papacy is well experienced in the use of honeyed words and 'by good words and fair speeches deceives the hearts of the simple', and the sample just quoted hides its claws in fair words of family, home and peace, things dear to the human heart, in order to deceive.

The next day, the munificent pope "blessed" the whole world. He spoke of an old world now passing away in pain (the present war), and a new one being ushered in. How completely the Devil and his dupes mimic Jehovah God! They refer to this war as Armageddon, an old world before it, and a new one to follow. Jehovah God will completely destroy this 'present old evil world' at His miraculously fought battle of Armageddon, still future, and thereafter His new world, Christ's kingdom, not the Pacelli-Hitler "new order", will have sole and supreme dominion throughout the earth, "from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth."—Psalm 72:8.

Peace feelers periodically come from the Axis, and here's one of the many emanating from the religious element of the combine. Roman Catholic bishops of Germany, according to the Washington *Evening Star* of July 28, 1942, follow up the papal peace salvo of May 13 with a plea for the pope to advance a peace program making definite proposals. The appeal was signed by all the German bishops. They said outwardly Catholic persecutions had stopped but there was still a subterranean war against Catholicism. Apparently there is still some purging out of liberal Catholics to be done within the "church". The bishops were reportedly distressed about British bombings and possibility of internal conflicts within the Reich and said that for these reasons "it becomes urgent for Catholics throughout the world to combine their efforts in favor of peace".

In 1942 it was reported that the pope was preparing a peace encyclical defining his "ideas of a basis for negotiated peace". It was said this encyclical "would contain provisions seeking to maintain the present Catholic authoritarian regimes in Italy, Spain, Portugal and France". It was first announced that this encyclical would come out in mid-August. But Hitler didn't make the expected progress in Russia. Stalingrad still held. So another report came out saying it

would appear at the end of August or beginning of September. Surely the crusade would have converted atheistic Stalingrad by then. But Stalingrad was stubborn; she didn't want to be "saved"; she continued to fight, and now the siege is broken and Nazi legions are swept far back by the Soviet offensive. And now things look black for the Axis in North Africa. So the pope's peace encyclical is still pending.

In a reshuffling of his government Premier Mussolini moved Count Ciano, his son-in-law, from the post of foreign minister to that of ambassador to the Holy See. The shift has aroused much speculation in diplomatic quarters, and the New York *Times* of February 9, 1943, comments:

It is viewed as a possible first step toward the "fundamentally realistic consideration of the situation" expected by many. All reports from Rome tonight insist on the Premier's desire "at this moment when the war is about to enter its crucial stage" to reaffirm in a "decisive manner" the increasing importance the Fascist regime attaches to its relations with the Vatican.

Most of the "peace offensives" since the war began have originated in the Vatican. This has led diplomatic observers to read into Italian comment a desire to examine potential "solutions" that might in the not distant future come up for discussion. . . .

It was also noted that while preaching total war the Premier was not neglecting the adage about putting all his eggs in one basket, for in the Vatican Count Ciano, the possessor of more inside knowledge of the exact status of Italy's chances in this war than any man after the Premier, is in a position to listen to take part in discussions on the Pope's peace hopes.

The same paper, on March 21, 1943, published the following:

The consideration which dictates Mussolini's present policy toward the church is most likely the political asset represented by the pope's potentialities as a mediator. A member of the Italian diplomatic service told the writer when

he was in Italy that Mussolini regarded the pope as the only man who, when all hopes for an Axis victory were lost, might soften Italy's defeat. . . . As for the pope, his supreme goal today is to bring about peace.

### ***Spellman's Secretive Movements***

And now Archbishop Spellman has just completed a series of very extensive conferences with the pope, the topic of discussion being shrouded in deepest secrecy. While the claim was made that only church matters were discussed, few seem to believe this, and speculate as to their real nature. The majority think they conferred on the war and the coming peace. This is doubtless true, and it is also just as true that this is a church matter, since the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has such high stakes in the present war. A United Press dispatch of March 15, 1943, published in the New York *World-Telegram*, confirms this now commonly accepted view of the activities of this religious politician. (Remember, Archbishop Spellman is a professional diplomat, having served in the papal Secretariat of State under Cardinal Pacelli, now Pope Pius XII.) It states:

Belief grew today that Archbishop Francis J. Spellman, who broadcast an assurance of victory to Allied troops in North Africa yesterday, was on an important diplomatic mission for the American government. The most likely subject of the mission, it was believed here, would concern possibility of a separate Allied peace with Italy.

This week he will confer with various Allied leaders in North Africa, including Gen. Dwight D. Eisenhower and the American Minister, Robert Murphy, before returning to the United States, where, it was understood, he will report to President Roosevelt.

The Archbishop has been extremely reticent about his trip.

Church sources in the United States have said Archbishop Spellman's visit to the Vatican concerned purely religious affairs, but if that were true, it was pointed out, it could

not account for his impending conferences here.

The New York *Times*, March 24, 1943, reporting Spellman's presence in England, says he would visit Ireland and "is expected eventually to extend his travels to cover China". The article commented:

The visit of the American Archbishop who came from Rome via North Africa has been fraught with a certain element of mystery ever since his stay at the Vatican. Rumors have been so persistent that his discussions with the pope concerned either some form of negotiated peace, the possible evacuation of the pope to Brazil, or some other sensational development related to the world at war, that at least one London newspaper has demanded a clear statement or explanation. But apparently there is not the slightest likelihood of that being forthcoming.

There is no likelihood whatsoever.

If this representative of the Catholic church is working for a separate peace with Italy, as above suggested, be it here noted that such peace at this time would be a negotiated peace, and not the "unconditional surrender" declaration of the Casablanca meeting of Churchill and Roosevelt. The wily Catholic church works in both the warring camps; she watches, and she waits. Should developments make it expedient that she desert her Axis paramours and align herself with a victorious United Nations, she will do so without hesitation. While supporting the Axis she has courted the United Nations. She has kept the way open for a last-minute desertion of the Nazi ship of state should she see it definitely sinking.

The Vatican peace front has been well planned. First the small fry, priests and prominent lay Catholics, form the spearhead. They are joined by the bishops and archbishops. At the opportune moment the pope jumps on the bandwagon. He prays for peace, offers a five-point peace program, offers the Vatican in which to hold the peace conference (with him, of course, thrown in to boot, as chief arbi-



ter), pleads for a negotiated peace, and has reportedly prepared a peace encyclical for early release. Archbishop Spellman goes to the Vatican for extended conferences, and from there meets with military leaders. The final push of the negotiated peace blitz is poised ready to strike at the psychological moment.

### **Remember the Hierarchy's Record**

Is the pope, the head of the Roman Catholic Church, acceptable to the democracies as a mediator of peace? Before answering, weigh the following facts:

On her intolerant attitude toward democratic liberties:

We demand liberty whenever or wherever it is denied us; but we object with all our might that it should be a necessary consequence or correlated obligation to grant the same liberty to those who oppose us.—From *La Lectura Dominical*, Madrid, quoted in the "Morning Star" (Roman Catholic), New Orleans, May 31, 1913.

She does not condemn at once, but 'after the first and second admonition,' as the apostle teaches. After that, however, if a man is still found pertinacious, the church, having no hope of his conversion, provides for the safety of others, cutting him off from the church by the sentence of excommunication; and, further, SHE LEAVES HIM TO THE SECULAR TRIBUNAL TO BE EXTERMINATED FROM THE WORLD BY DEATH."—"Aquinas Ethicus; or, the Moral Teaching of St. Thomas."

[Hitler has not received a first or second admonition, neither has he been excommunicated; hence the pope must not consider him 'unsafe to others'.]

On the anti-democratic "church and state" doctrine:

"Each (sword), therefore, is in the power of the church, to wit, the spiritual sword and the material. But the latter is to be used for the church, the former by the church; the former by the hand of the priest, the latter by the hands of kings and soldiers, yet according to the beck and permission of the priest. But one sword must be under the other sword, and the temporal authority must be

subject to the spiritual power. . . . Therefore we declare, assert, define, and pronounce, that it is necessary to salvation that every human creature be subject to the Roman pontiff."—From the bull of Pope Boniface VIII, *Unam sanctam*, issued in 1302, "Extravagantes Communes," Book I, title 8, chap. 1.

From John A. Lee's *Weekly*, November 12, 1941, Auckland, New Zealand, the following quotation is taken, showing the Hierarchy attitude on democracy:

### **DEMOCRACY CONDEMNED**

For a clear exposition of the Church's attitude we do not need to go past their own publications. The teaching of the Spanish Church is set out in a Catechism entitled "Brief and Simple Explanation of the Catholic Catechism", by R. P. Angel Marcia de Arcos, S. J. On page 404 we read as follows:

Q. Is every Liberal Government hostile to the Church?

A. Evidently, since whoever is not with Christ is against Him.

Q. What are liberal principles?

A. Those of 1789; so called national sovereignty; freedom of religious cults; freedom of the press; freedom of instruction; universal morality and other such.

Q. What consequences result from these?

A. Secular schools, impious and immodest periodicals, civil marriage, heretical churches in Catholic countries, abolition of ecclesiastical immunities, etc.

Q. Is there no grade of Liberalism which may be Catholic?

A. That is what its partisans claim; but the Church teaches that what is called Catholic Liberalism is not Catholic.

Q. Then there is no grade of Liberalism that can be good?

A. None; because Liberalism is mortal sin and anti-Christian in essence.

Q. Then whatever is liberal in politics sins?

A. Certainly; because in liberal politics there exists that liberalism which the Church condemns.

Here is an enlightening blast against democracy by John J. O'Connor, associate professor of history at St. John's (Catholic) University of Brooklyn, N. Y.,

CONSOLATION

one-time managing editor of *The Commonwealth* and Catholic editor of the *Religious News Service*. It was published in the Jesuit magazine *America*, May 17, 1941, and is as follows:

How we Catholics have loathed and despised this Lucifer civilization, this rationalist creation of those little men who refused to bend the knee or bow the head in submission to higher authority . . . Today, American Catholics are being asked to shed their blood for that particular kind of secularist civilization which they have been heroically repudiating for four centuries. This civilization is now called democracy, and the suggestion is being made that we send the Yanks to Europe again to defend it. In reality, is it worth defending? What's the sum and substance of it all? All the Yanks in America will not save it from disintegration. Unless a miracle occurs, it is doomed—finally and irrevocably doomed. The New Order in Europe will be either a Nazi or a British totalitarianism, or a combination of both—a planned economy based on the principle of brute force . . .

American democracy is disintegrating, crumbling from within. [Hitler once made the same claim.]

The growing anarchy can be resolved in only two ways: totalitarianism or Christianity . . . Leadership in this crisis will not come from the laity. It will not come from the bottom of the Catholic pyramid. It will come only from the top, from the Hierarchy. The Christian Revolution will begin when we decide to cut loose from the existing social order, rather than be buried with it, and release the dynamite that is stored up in the Christian Gospel. . .

So when the fanfare comes for the pope to mediate the peace, remember the centuries-old record of his organization and its opposition to liberalism and democracy. Ask yourself, "Why should the pope support Protestant powers fighting to preserve what his church terms the 'heresy of freedom'?" Setting this objection aside, reflect: The pope, the supposed "vicar of Christ", has been praying for peace for many years. No peace comes. His prayers are un-

answered. This is not so reassuring for placing trust in him as world peacemaker. Jehovah God's 'ears are always open to the prayers of the righteous'. (Psalm 34: 15; Proverbs 15: 29) Peradventure the pope's god 'sleepeth'.—1 Kings 18: 27.

Will democratic lands play the role of the poor simpleton of Proverbs chapter seven and go in unto the "old harlot"?

### *The Coming Peace*

What will be the product of the peace conference? No man can say. There are many prognostications. Only one will be mentioned, and that is the widespread talk of revival of the League of Nations. In view of facts to be subsequently presented, the following is significant:

BERNE, Switzerland, April 4—Woebegone and neglected by most former admirers, the League of Nations continues in existence without much animation, but with palpitating hope of eventual rejuvenation.

The 100 or so persons still connected with the League in Geneva are carrying on in skeleton staffs of various services so they can sometime hand over their records to normal complements without any important break or omission since the early days of September, 1939.

Moths in late 1940 threatened to damage upholstery and hangings in the Council Chamber and Assembly Hall—the only serious threat the building has suffered since it was "closed to business as usual," in August, 1940.

Meanwhile the reduced staffs hopefully await the day for the League to resume where it left off, and never more be abandoned.—*New York Times*, April 5, 1942.

The League was, and now is not, but expects a resurrection. The League was said to be the "political expression of God's kingdom on earth". The falsity and absurdity of that blasphemy can now be seen by everyone. The revived League will have a generous religious smear to make it attractive to its subjects. A Catholic prelate, Bishop Miquel de Andrea, of Buenos Aires, made the following

statement, according to the New York *Times*, concerning his meeting with President Roosevelt at the White House in August of last year: "At the close of the Inter-American Seminar on Social Studies I wish to tell what the president of the United States said to me during my conversation with him. The only aim, he said, worthy of mankind that can compensate for its sorrows is the speedy and world-wide establishment of the Kingdom of Christ among men, not only in word but in spirit and in fact." That's doubtless what the revived League will be labeled. Its former styling as "the political expression of God's kingdom on earth" will in substance be revived along with it. It is a religious war. There will be a religious peace. Everyone, except true Christians, wants "more religion". And they shall have it for a short time, say, "one hour."

How can one say the League in some form will be the postwar result? The statement was previously made that no man could predict what should follow. That is true; but Almighty God can and does so foretell. Through His organization He has illuminated the minds of His witnesses. His sure Word of prophecy seems to indicate a revival of the League of Nations; for that reason it was the only one of the many suggested postwar arrangements to be considered. The argument in support of this position taken is clearly and forcefully presented in the recently published WATCHTOWER booklet, *Peace—Can It Last?* Before referring to it, read Revelation 17:3, 8, 11: "So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and

is not, and yet is. And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition." Now, from the timely booklet *Peace—Can It Last?* read the following passages:

Note now the Scriptural answer to our question concerning peace as given by the great Revealer of secrets in Revelation, chapter seventeen. The World War was stopped in 1918. The implement that was then prescribed and provided to maintain the peace was the League of Nations with its World Court, which, eventually, was joined by fifty-seven nations of the world. . . .

The League of Nations, with world power and authority and fifty-seven members, was a scarlet-colored political creature, new and unusual but imaging in respects the seven world powers of human history. It combined also the living relics of all seven of them. It is therefore an added world power, the "eighth" one. . . .

As for its names of blasphemy, "blasphemy" here means the ascribing to men that which belongs to God or which Almighty God alone can do. In connection with this association of nations, it is noted that its creators and backers make for it promises that it will do what God's Word plainly declares only his Theocratic Government or Kingdom by Christ Jesus will do. Thereby these false political and religious prophets paste the beastly creature with "names of blasphemy". Thereby they cause it to "stand in the holy place", "where it ought not." (Matthew 24:15; Mark 13:14) . . . Concerning it [the League of Nations] God's Word says: "And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition." (Revelation 17:11) It can now be said that the League "was, and is not". . . . Though forty members still profess to adhere to the League, the League is in effect in a state of suspended animation, and needs to be revived if it is ever to live again. It has gone into the abyss of inaction and ineffectiveness. It "is not".

Will the League remain in the pit? Again the Word of God gives answer: "The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and is about



to come up out of the abyss, and to go into perdition. And they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, they whose name hath not been written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast, how that he was, and is not, and shall be present." (Revelation 17:8, *Am. Rev. Ver.*, margin) The association of worldly nations will rise again. The fight between "the king of the north" and "the king of the south", being for world domination, makes such an outcome of this total war unavoidable. The necessities of meeting the totalitarian aggressions and stopping them are forcing the nations to that final confederation of nations for the new order, whatever its form. . . .

But mark this: The prophecy shows that when the "beast" comes out of the abyss at the end of this total war it comes out with the woman "Babylon" on its back, or she climbs upon its back as soon as it gets out. That means that "organized religion", and this time the religious organization with headquarters at Vatican City, will ride and exercise guiding influence over the League beast.

Once again we ask the leading question,

"PEACE—CAN IT LAST?" and God's definite answer is, No! Man-made peace under religion's "blessing" will be very short-lived, and political kings and rulers will not long enjoy it. The record says they "receive power as

kings ONE HOUR with the beast". "One hour," with God, denotes a very brief time; and suddenly those ten horns and the beast will go into perdition, not peacefully, but violently, at the battle of Armageddon. This time the beast and its heads and horns will go, not into the "bottomless pit", but into the "lake of fire and brimstone", to be utterly consumed and destroyed.—Revelation 19:20; 20:10.

The pope, on May 13 last year, said, appealing for a negotiated



The beast and its rider in symbol.—Revelation 17:3.

peace with gangster Hitler, that "Christianity [meaning his 'Holy' Roman Empire church] will secure, in the hour prepared by God, a peace". So be it. That "hour" permitted by God for the existence of the 'peace beast' resulting from such negotiations means a very brief period of time, not a thousand-year reign of its "new order".



### ***Comeback of Religion Doomed***

The old slogan, "They never come back," will hold true in this case. The Catholic Hierarchy's liaison with the totalitarians would not be to the liking of the Catholic people generally were they aware of it. It will be apparent to all soon. If Hitler cannot win by a knock-out, if the pope is unable to arbitrate and hand his fighter the decision, then doubtless the wily religious politician will execute a neat change of horses to be on the winner. Should that come to pass his outward pretense of neutrality will stand him in good stead. He has not publicly put his eggs all in one basket. His adroitness in this ticklish maneuver may suffice to fool the people, but the papal masquerade will be over when Jehovah God, in due time, unmasks these cagey actors. Then will come the time of reckoning.

Do not be deceived when the League beast comes forth. Choose The Theocracy and everlasting life. Do you prefer to lean upon empty words and sophistries rather than the facts, some of which have

been here presented and are based upon the Scriptures? An honest person will say no, a thousand times. Unless one has shut his eyes that he may not see, and closed his ears that he may not hear, and blunted his mind that he may not understand, he will see and readily admit the facts presented. Many will remain in the class mentioned in Proverbs. To them it is said: "How long, ye simple ones, will ye love simplicity? and the scorers delight in their scorning, and fools hate knowledge?"—Proverbs 1:22.

The League beast will stand in the place of God's "Holy City", or Kingdom. Though this impostor "city" may have papal "blessing", and be hailed as destined to bring a peace through the ages, it is built and established by blood, and Jehovah says it shall not stand. (Habakkuk 2:12, 13; Micah 3:10) 'The heathen rage and imagine a vain thing.' "The king of the south" says, "We will dominate." "The king of the north" says, "We will dominate." Jehovah sits in the heavens and laughs. He knows who shall dominate.—Psalm 2.

---

### **Tormenting the Conquerors**

**E**VER since the Nazis conquered Holland the natives have been forbidden to listen to the Dutch broadcasts from London. But most of them defy the regulation, at the risk of their lives. . . . One Dutch woman, who was recently caught listening to BBC (the British Broadcasting Chain), was arrested. The infuriated Gestapo asked her what explanation she had to offer for her crime of tuning in on the *verboden* station. . . . "I wanted to hear Hitler speak," was her calm reply. "Hitler said he was going to speak from London last September and I'm still waiting for him."

A Hollander placed a wreath on a statue. . . . After the fellow had departed, the Gestapo agent walked by the statue and, noticing that a card was attached to the wreath, picked it up. On it was

written: "To the only man in Holland who doesn't listen to BBC!"

During the early days of the Nazi occupation of Paris, whenever German officers entered a café, the French patrons would promptly get up and walk out. This so infuriated the conquerors that they issued an edict forbidding Frenchmen to leave a café for at least fifteen minutes after the entrance of a German officer. . . . After that, whenever a German officer walked into a café, the Frenchmen present would reach into their pockets and pull out small alarm clocks, which they set and placed on the table. At the end of fifteen minutes, the alarms would go off all over the place, and the Frenchmen would rush for the doors!—Excerpts from Walter Winchell's column "On Broadway".

## Do Regional Dictatorships Impend?

THE retiring governor of Colorado, Ralph L. Carr, has made the public charge that by July 1 of this year, 1943, a series of regional dictatorships will be established which will regulate the lives of Americans in a way to make them think that all previous attempts in that direction were mere child's play. It is quite possible that Mr. Carr is correct, and it is also certain that nothing can be done about it. The whole world is going totalitarian. The democracies feel that they must fight the Devil with fire: that they must beat the Fascists and Nazis and the Mikadoists at their own game. So circumstances seem to indicate.

Governor Carr's statement was made in his farewell message to the Colorado State Legislature on Friday, January 8, 1943. In it he made these disclosures:

Surveys are being made over great sections of the country involving people who have little in common beyond the fact that they all breathe the same air and are American citizens. These plans seek to establish an average, educationally, economically and socially, over a series of sections which offer no common basis on which to draw comparisons.

While I am unable to furnish specific details, I know whereof I speak, and it is my purpose in this last official message to you and the people of Colorado to warn you so that you may prepare. The danger is real. You must do your duty.

If this social planning had for its basis any needed war effort, we should bow and fall into line. But such is not the case. This is social planning which cannot become effective until peace comes.

### ***Is It Big Business?***

The governor did not say whether or not the Big Business crowd are behind the impending dictatorships. They might be. If they are, Americans will hope that the Anaconda Wire and Cable Company of Marion, Indiana, will not have the drawing up of the final specifications. This firm had a big order for high-grade

wire used in military operations. When the time came to test the product a "button box" was secretly introduced which increased the apparent resistance of the wire to ten times what it actually was. The result was that Uncle Sam received wire only one-tenth as strong as it was supposed to be. It was shipped to the Russian front, where it was found to be practically worthless. Are you interested in the Russian front? You should be.

By the way, there is something touching about the way in which the Big Business crowd stand by one another when their thirst for profits leads them to acts of treason, as in the case of the Anaconda. The men who did this stunt deserve to be punished every bit as much as did those six Nazi saboteurs who were landed on American shores by submarines and who would have been glad to do work of this kind for the Anaconda company, without making any charge for their services.

But what happened? The Anaconda has so much money that it does not know what to do with it. So it bought big advertising space in the *New York Times*, *New York Herald-Tribune*, and *New York Journal-American*, telling how patriotic and capable it is, and none of these papers had anything to say editorially about one of the worst scandals ever pulled off in America. The editor of *In Fact* says scathingly:

No one can say that the ads were placed to prevent editorials denouncing Anaconda appearing, or to cause the newspapers to drop the scandal, but it is a fact that: 1, the ads were placed and, 2, the story was dropped and no editorials appeared.

If it is Big Business that is back of the dictatorship scheme, it is probably not the Power Trust: they have been pretty well taken care of. It might be the National Association of Manufacturers, which may be said to begin where

the Power Trust left off. The American Federation of Teachers, meeting in Chicago, identified both of these groups as follows:

During the nineteen-twenties the power companies launched a carefully prepared and well-financed campaign to mold the mind of the American people in support of their special interests. By more or less concealed methods they penetrated the various agencies of education and opinion, including the public schools, colleges and universities. They sought to influence the content of textbooks, the courses of study, and the thought of teachers. This conspiracy against the American people, for such it was, was finally and fully exposed by an exhaustive inquiry by the Federal Trade Commission.

Evidence is accumulating that their discredited pattern of behavior is now being repeated, in whole or in part, by another powerful business group. The National Association of Manufacturers is seeking to capture the agencies of education for the purpose of using them in the service of its special interests. It is preparing materials to be used in the schools—books, pamphlets, bibliographies, and even moving pictures—all to be furnished to the educational authorities without cost. It has even sought, already apparently with very considerable success, to form an alliance with teachers and certain teachers' organizations not altogether familiar with the facts of life. In return, contrary to its well-established tradition, it seemingly has offered to support the public schools.

The American Federation of Teachers unqualifiedly condemns this second effort within a single generation on the part of organized business to shape the program of the schools and then to impose its peculiar pattern of thought on the young of America.

### ***Could It Be Religion?***

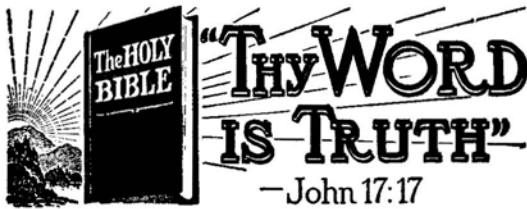
Could it be the religious crowd that aims at this regional dictatorship that Governor Carr fears? It does not seem likely. Still, there is nothing the religious crowd would not do to gain its ends, and there is absolutely no crime they would hesitate to commit. Any group of

men such as Judge Martin T. Manton (who peddled justice over the counter, and was responsible for denying bail to Judge Rutherford and his companions in 1918) or such as Gomez, dictator of Venezuela (who took it out on his enemies by resorting to "cuelga", a polite name for testicular suspension), would do absolutely anything to gain or retain power over their fellows. They were religious. And the men who "honored" them by conferring on them the same degree of papal knighthood are even worse than Manton and Gomez. If you think that this statement is hard on the religious gang, you simply do not know the gang. They have put it over on you the same as they have upon millions of your fellow men.

So the best conclusion is that stated in the first paragraph. If Mr. Carr's information is correct, it is probably the politicians that have this dictatorship bee in their bonnets. To be sure, if that is the case, they have consulted with Big Business as to the revenues to be obtained and used, and with Big Church as to how to give the whole affair the odor of sanctity. But if it goes through, the politicians will find that the Big Church crowd are better politicians than they themselves are: and the upshot will find the Old Lady sitting astride the governments of Colorado and the other states involved, and with her legs crossed across their windpipes like the Old Man of the Sea. If the governor is right, there ought to be something doing soon.

### **The Vanishing Alesunds**

♦ The persons operating the Norwegian government are perturbed over the vanishing inhabitants of Alesund. The fishermen go out with their crafts, but never come back; and, as they are expert navigators, the suspicion is slowly awakening in the minds of the Quislingists that they wind up in Britain because they don't like the government to which they have fallen victims. Seventy boats have disappeared.



## Why Not a “God Man”

**T**HE most precious thing possessed by any creature is life, because without life everything else would be useless and could not be enjoyed. Man with even but a small spark of life clings to that with desperation. It is only when a creature is perfect and enjoying complete life and the right to it that he can properly glorify his great Creator, Jehovah God.

The Creator made the first man, Adam, in His own image and likeness. He created him perfect; for all the works of Jehovah are perfect, says Deuteronomy 32: 4. He gave to man life and the right to life. Life means conscious existence; right to life means the full authority to maintain existence. Adam and his wife Eve in Eden were perfect in their bodies, without pain, without sorrows; and were beautiful creatures. They had not a scar nor a mark upon them anywhere. They enjoyed life and all blessings incident to it. Their home was perfect; and even all the animals and birds of Eden were subject to them, and they had absolute dominion and control under God. God gave them all these privileges to enjoy eternally, upon one expressed condition, namely, that they be obedient to His law and thereby honor Him. He informed man that a violation of this law would bring upon him loss of life, loss of the right to life, and loss of all blessings enjoyed in life.

When Adam and Eve disobeyed God and the divine sentence of death was passed upon them, it had an indirect effect upon their offspring. Before he was driven from Eden, and yet had the right to life, he and Eve had not exercised the

authority given to them by Jehovah to beget children on the earth. Only after being driven from Eden did they exercise this. They being now under the death sentence and undergoing that death penalty, it was impossible for their children, born under such conditions, to come into existence perfect. When the children were born, while they had a measure of life and the privileges accompanying that measure of life, they would have no right to life everlasting, because Adam had forfeited that for himself, and could not bring children into the world who would have greater right than he, their father, had. Hence it would take another perfect man, possessed fully of that which Adam had forfeited for his offspring, to redeem and recover that for them. For this reason the heavenly Son of God was “made flesh”, a perfect man.

Religionists insist that Jesus, when on earth, was both God and man in completeness. Some have been induced to believe that should they say that Jesus when on earth was a man, and not God Almighty himself, such would be a dishonor to God. For our own understanding of the truth we should not permit ourselves to be beguiled or misled by sophistry or theories, but should follow the plain teachings of the Bible and then reach a conclusion in the light of that revealed Word after a full examination.

The Scripture record as already presented in this magazine concerning Jesus' prehuman existence, His being conceived in a virgin's womb, and His birth, entirely disproves the theory that He was incarnated and that hence He was both a spirit and a human at the same time. Scriptures cited in a previous issue show that Jesus was conceived in the womb of a Jewess, Mary, by God's holy spirit or almighty power; that thereafter He was born in the same general manner that other children are born of a woman; and that He grew to manhood's estate and increased in wis-



dom and stature and in favor with God and man. (See Luke 2:9-11, 40, 52.) None of these things would have been necessary if He had been merely an incarnated person, a spirit inhabiting a body of flesh. The Bible records case after case where holy angels, who are spirit creatures, materialized human bodies instantly to appear in a form endurable to man's vision, and those angels were thus for the time of appearance incarnated or clothed with flesh.

But when the Son of God was "made flesh", as stated at John 1:14, it was a different matter or procedure, because it was not an incarnation. Until He was thirty years of age Jesus worked at the carpenter trade, at which age He began His ministry of announcing God's kingdom. First, however, He went to John the Baptist to be baptized in the Jordan river. Immediately after thus symbolizing His consecration to God He spent forty days and nights in the wilderness, fasting and studying Jehovah's purpose, and He got hungry, which would not have been the case were His human body a mere clothing over of His unseen spirit self. (Luke 3:21-23; 4:1-14) If He had been God incarnate, as religionists unscripturally claim, then this experience of fasting and study in the wilderness would have been wholly unnecessary.

Jesus up till then was not an angel or a spirit person; because there is the positive statement of the apostle to the effect that "we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels"; and the apostle there applies to the man Jesus the prophecy of Psalm Eight. (Hebrews 2:9) The apostle did not say that only as to His flesh was Jesus then lower than the angels. He goes on to speak about the children of Abraham, and then, at Hebrews 2:14, he says concerning Jesus: "Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same."

At 2 Corinthians 3:9 the apostle further states that Jesus was at one time

rich in heavenly power and glory but became poor for the sake of fulfilling God's will concerning humankind by taking upon himself the nature of man, becoming a real man. At Philippians 2:6-8 it is written of Him: "Who, existing in the form of God, counted not the being on an equality with God a thing to be grasped, but emptied himself, taking the form of a servant, being made in the likeness of men; and being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself." (*American Revised Version*) Note further how the apostle, writing under divine inspiration, speaks of Jesus as a man, and not as a "God man": "For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead." "The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven." (1 Corinthians 15:21, 47) "There is . . . one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; who gave himself a ransom."—1 Timothy 2:5, 6.

Had Jesus been merely an incarnated person it would not have been necessary for Him to be born as a babe and grow to manhood's estate. While He was born of an imperfect Jewish woman, yet He was without sin, because His life was from His heavenly Father, Jehovah God; for He was "holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners". (Hebrews 7:26) "He was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin." (1 John 3:5) He was without spot or blemish; therefore perfect and holy, as stated at 1 Peter 1:19 and Hebrews 9:14.

Had he not become a man as perfect as was Adam when created at Eden, there would have been no corresponding price to serve as a ransom to buy back that which Adam forfeited by sin and rebellion. There would have been no hope for any of the human race to get life through Christ Jesus. At Acts 4:12 the apostle Peter declares that there is no other name given under heaven whereby mankind can live.

## Protective Wall Holds—in Some Places

LIKE a rising flood, world events have swept through the year 1942 in the most devastating and sustained assault upon the rights of man ever recorded in the annals of human history. Hundreds and thousands of Americans—Jehovah's witnesses—with the protective constitutional wall dynamited by the decision of the United States Supreme Court in the *Gobitis* flag-salute case of 1940, and further blasted by the 5-to-4 decision in the notorious *Jones v. Opelika* license-tax opinion of June 8, 1942, saw their cherished liberties engulfed, stifled and drowned in the onrushing tide of totalitarianism, in many cases with approval of officials.

In the teeth of this sweeping tide, some judicial officers in lower state courts in two parts of the country have recently manifested their honesty and integrity and boldly refused to wash out the liberties of the people by following these mandates laid down by the Supreme Court. A brief consideration of the unusual facts in these two cases is now of great interest to those who are watching the crumbling of the old world government even while it is rising to its zenith of power in the earth.

On November 13, 1942, in the town of Virginia, Minnesota, five youngsters firmly carrying into effect their covenant of obedience to the law of Jehovah God were expelled from school because of their refusal to participate in compulsory flag-salute exercises originated by the local school board and sustained by a lengthy "opinion" by the assistant attorney general of the state, who relied on the *Gobitis* decision as the highest law governing the matter, notwithstanding Exodus 20: 3-5 to the contrary. The case then came on for a hearing before the six members of the local board of education, two of whom had previously voiced their dissent from the majority action in the expulsion of the children. After listening to an oral Theocratic

protest for one hour and a half, another vote was taken and it was found that the board was hopelessly deadlocked with a vote of 3 to 3.

To extricate themselves from the tangle, which by this time was drawing considerable attention from the public, the school board resorted to the unusual remedy of instituting a legal proceeding *against themselves* in the local District Court, to enjoin and restrain the enforcement of the compulsory flag-salute regulation which *they* had adopted and applied. The school board's attorney generously and fairly presented the argument of both sides of the controversy to the court without charge to the parents of the children, his fees being paid by the school board.

This unusual circumstance strikes us as being an instance of fair play by the school board, and one which hundreds of other school boards could profitably follow in settling controversies of this sort. In this manner, the issues were calmly and properly laid before a judicial officer, one who is highly skilled and trained under the law to determine just such matters. How definitely superior is this method of getting the case before the court when compared with the procedure used in many cases throughout the country where the parents and children have been criminally prosecuted for the inability of the children to attend school as required by the compulsory school laws!

Circumventing the usual lower-court litigation the case was tried before Martin Hughes, judge of the District Court of the Eleventh Judicial District of the State of Minnesota, who, under date of December 12, 1942, handed down his well-worded and brave opinion commanding that the officials of the Virginia public schools be forever enjoined and stopped from making compulsory, by pain of expulsion, the flag-salute rule.

The clear reasoning which characterized the opinion is evident in his words:

The pledge, if it means anything, must come from the heart, without mental reservation. A pledge given by one who feels that while taking part in the form in which it is given he is violating his own conscience does not add any respect to the flag nor increase any devotion to it.

Highly significant and of great importance now, when, for the first time since the *Gobitis* opinion in 1940, the flag-salute issue is pending before the United States Supreme Court in the *Barnette* case from West Virginia, is the treatment of the law in this case. Brushing aside with a few broad strokes the hairsplitting and admittedly "wrongly decided" opinion of the Supreme Court, Judge Hughes said:

It may seem somewhat peculiar that those who rely upon the Constitution for the guarantee of the protection of their rights as to religious liberty should refuse to give the pledge of allegiance in the required form to the flag of the country which symbolizes all the Constitution embraces, but it is not for the court to pass upon the question as to whether their actions are peculiar or not. It is not for the court to pass upon the question as to whether their belief that giving the pledge of allegiance to the flag as required is violative of conscience is reasonable or unreasonable. So long as they are conscientious in their belief and such belief is not inconsistent with sound morality, it is the duty of the court to protect them in the full enjoyment of their rights. If courts should indulge in the question as to whether a person's belief is reasonable or not, depending upon the view of the judge before whom the matter was pending, then we would have reached the end of religious freedom. There is no persecution more galling nor which wounds more deeply than does religious persecution. A conscientious person feels that any unwarranted interference with his right to worship God in his own way is the kind of wrong which is hardest for him to bear.

There is no question raised here as to the

plaintiffs being law-abiding citizens. There is no claim that by their refusal to permit their children to give the pledge of allegiance to the flag in the form required they are intentionally showing any disrespect for the flag.

Expressing an opinion under the Congressional limitation and regulation regarding respect to the flag, Judge Flannery, of the Court of Quarter Sessions of Luzerne County, Pennsylvania, in the very recent case of *Commonwealth v. Nemchik*, said:

. . . it might be well to call attention to the Act of Congress of June 22, 1942, Public No. 623, 77th Congress, 2d Session, by which that body codified the rules and customs regarding the use of and respect due the flag of the United States, Section 7 of that Act recites the pledge of allegiance to the flag and describes the accompanying gesture of salute, but significantly notes that full respect for the flag may be shown by civilians when the pledge is given by merely standing at attention [men removing the headdress]. . . . [Bracketed words added]

The Department of Justice of the United States, through its Civil Rights Section, calls attention to this provision in question such as the one before us and indeed *there is doubt whether any local regulation, ordinance, or statute prescribing a different salute as a measure of respect for the flag can be enforced.* [Italics added]

Construction of this statute under the applicable parts of the United States Constitution now squarely confronts the Supreme Court, and all persons await with keen interest that court's ruling on the matter.

Equally courageous and important is the opinion of E. H. Henderson, presiding judge of the Ninth Circuit Court of General Sessions of South Carolina, who had before him a criminal prosecution against a Christian woman who was charged with the heinous deed of "donating" publications explaining God's Word to the people, and at the same time securing rooming accommodations for conventioners who would attend the

branch New World Theocratic Assembly, at Charleston, South Carolina.

Judge Henderson stated the facts:

The defendant is a member of a religious group known as Jehovah's witnesses. The City's direct testimony failed to show that an actual sale of pamphlets was made, as all four of the City's witnesses stated that they refused to buy them. It does appear, however, that the defendant went from house to house and offered to sell for ten cents three pamphlets printed by the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society, and that if the persons were not willing to pay for them, in order to propagate her religious teachings she donated one of the booklets to anyone who was interested and wished to receive it. She did not have a license from the city. Contributions were received from other people, the Defendant stated. She testified that she is a minister of the Gospel. She said that, at the time of her arrest, she was engaged in her calling as a minister, and that she was not pursuing any commercial work; that the purpose of asking for contributions was not for personal profit to herself; and that she did not receive any part of which she collected. The contributions were sent to the Watch Tower Society so that more literature could be printed; that she supports herself from her own resources, from a farm owned by her; that she does this work in order to get the message to the people and not for any commercial purpose. She also told those upon whom she called that a convention was to be held in the city, and asked them for rooms to take care of the visitors; and she invited them to the convention.

Refusing to be made an accessory to the further sabotaging of the Constitution and fundamental rights of the people, Judge Henderson observed that although the Charleston ordinance was similar to those sustained in the cities of Opelika, Fort Smith, and Casa Grande, in his "opinion, the Judge of the Police Court should have directed a verdict of 'not guilty' . . .".

Courageously overruling and reversing the holding of the five justices of the U. S. Supreme Court in the *Jones v.*

*Opelika* case, who blundered on the basic assumption of their opinion that they regarded the work of Jehovah's witnesses "as partaking more of commercial than religious or educational transactions", Judge Henderson said:

In my opinion the Defendant was not engaged in the trade, business or profession of a dealer in books or other goods within the meaning of the ordinance. Her activity in selling or offering for sale religious books and pamphlets did not make her such a peddler as is referred to in the ordinance. The offering for sale of books and pamphlets setting forth her views of the Bible was merely incidental to the furtherance of her religious beliefs and her purpose of evangelization. Her work in the dissemination of religious teachings was not a business calling. Under the facts here, it was wholly unrelated to any commercial purpose. The collection of funds by her for the propagation of religion was a non-profit activity.

I do not think that the acts done by the Defendant were within the purview of the occupational license tax ordinance.

It is indeed strange and significant that, for the first time in the history of the American judicial system, the lower courts have so boldly refused to follow the precedents laid down by the United States Supreme Court, while that court itself displays hesitating and uncertain judgment in the application of the fundamental laws. But these things occasion no surprise or cause for concern to those persons who view the matter in the light of God's Word, which says with absolute verity: "And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are."—1 Corinthians 1:28.

This does not mean that the things "which are despised"—Jehovah's witnesses—themselves will accomplish this, but it is clear proof that Jehovah, by Christ Jesus, will guide His people according to His purposes.

These decisions should now be a



forceful answer to those who often charge that Jehovah's witnesses are "slackers", demanding the benefits of the constitutional form of government and then refusing to do anything to protect it. Let such ones take notice of the fact that these two cases are signal victories in defense of the "four freedoms", and a summary defeat of the forces against the "four freedoms". Against what appeared to be insurmountable odds in the form of adverse rulings of the United States Supreme Court, they pushed determinedly ahead in the service of their King, Christ Jesus, valiantly fighting the same issues through the courts time after time at their own expense *in the strength of Jehovah God and His beloved Son*. Enduring abuse, imprisonment, expense, and many other hardships, Jehovah's witnesses, pursuant to their determination to preach the gospel of Jehovah's kingdom in all the world for a witness, have admittedly taken the lead in the fight against the stealthy advance of the demonistic forces of the authoritarian conspirators. Hence these witnesses form the fighting front protecting the most vulnerable spot in America's resistance to dictatorship.

No reasonable, informed person can deny that fact.

Many persons labor under the mistaken idea that, once the Supreme Court of the United States compromises away a freedom guaranteed under the United States Constitution, no successful resistance may thereafter be made against encroachment on that freedom; but the freedom-loving people and judges take with little grace any invasion of these rights and find ways and means to avoid the decrees of the high court of the land.

Whether the other state courts will likewise stand solidly by their respective constitutions rests with the officials of the several states. Whether the United States Supreme Court will retract its hasty decision on the flag-salute and license-tax matters and preserve the dignity and profound goodness of the United States Constitution, rests with the court.

Motion for rehearing has been granted in the license-tax decision of June 8, 1942, and these cases, as well as the new flag case, have been argued in the United States Supreme Court. The decisions are awaited with great interest by all lovers of liberty.

### **'Greater Things Shall Ye Do'**

**T**HIS same Jesus, who opened the eyes of the blind, healed the lepers and raised the dead, said to His followers, 'Greater things shall ye do.' Obviously, He must have had in mind the work, on a far greater and more extensive scale, of opening the eyes of those spiritually blind, comforting those that mourn, and lifting up to a new plane those that are dead in trespasses and sins.

The experiences published from time to time in this magazine disclose that Jehovah's witnesses today, in the very presence of their enemies, are having Jesus' promises fulfilled in their behalf. These would be the very first to acknowledge that they are nothing in themselves, but that the power of Jehovah is mani-

festes through them to the praise of His name, because they know of The Theocracy, are loyal to it, and sing its praises at every opportunity. It is with real pleasure that there is set out below two experiences of one of the witnesses, granted to him because he is alive to every opportunity to 'let his light so shine before men that they may glorify his Father who is in heaven':

Have you ever had the thrill of witnessing to a group of blind people—I mean physically blind—and seen their faces light up with delight? Well, it was this writer's experience.

There are two factories in Brooklyn operated by the blind to semiblind, excepting the foremen. These factories are working on

defense jobs, such as sewing pillow cases and towels for the army and navy.

I introduced myself as from the Watchtower, and always wishing to learn how a blind person can operate a machine. I had read of such factories in the papers. I asked the foreman if he would be willing to show me through the factory. He said he would be glad to do so. It was a two-story building, with the two floors accommodating about sixty blind but busy workers. It was really amazing to see these blind folks running sewing machines, measuring and cutting towels, sheets and pillow cases, all by touch, and with real speed and efficiency.

After looking the place over, I explained to the Catholic foreman that I had something that would be of great comfort to these blind people so diligently toiling away at their tasks. In order that he might know what it is all about, I put the phonograph on the table and played "Comfort" and "Children". He was quite impressed by what he heard, took the book *Children*, and permitted me to play the records to the workers also and to witness to them as they left the factory.

It was a real joy to tell these patient, industrious, capable blind workers the good news of The Theocracy, the only government that can ever give them back their physical and mental sight. Many thanked me and accepted some literature which some one in their family can read for them. One of these blind workers told me that he attends one of the *Watchtower* studies in Jamaica, New York.

Not long after this experience with the blind, someone sent me an invitation to speak at a Communist rally in New York city. Thinking that it would be a good opportunity to practice the lessons learned in our Theocratic School, I accepted it and was scheduled to be one of the first speakers in a free discussion night on topics related to postwar conditions and what will be the best government, democracy or communism, and which government will gain the predominance.

It was my privilege to point to the indisputable facts that for six thousand years honest men have tried to govern themselves and to establish a righteous government that

would bring lasting blessings to man, and that all must admit that such attempts have been a failure. All kinds of different forms of government have been tried, monarchy, democracy, and, now of late, Communism, Fascism, Nazism, etc., with the result that the world is filled with jealousies, mistrust, hatred, wars and distress as never before.

I explained that the worst form of government that man can erect is a religio-totalitarian form; that we need only to look at Germany to see the results of that kind of government; that the best form of government devised by men has been and is democracy; but that even democracy cannot bring unending life and peace, which man so desires, nor can it vindicate Jehovah's name.

I drew their attention to the fact that the great need is for a central government, so strong, so just and so wise that all honest people can look up to it with respect and obedience; that it should embrace the whole earth; and that such a government not only is coming, but is already here; that such a government is the divinely-provided postwar Government, not only for America, but for all other nations as well; and that it will supplant all other forms of government, because it is righteous, because it is just, because it is heavenly, from Jehovah God through Christ Jesus, earth's rightful King, —The Theocracy, man's only hope.

Immediately there was general applause, and all the other speakers following me on the program became so enthusiastic over what I had said that instead of speaking about Communism and the postwar conditions from any human standpoint, they all spoke about Jehovah's witnesses, about Jehovah God, and wondered why Jehovah God did not stop this war and why He had not established His righteous government long ago. These questions were also answered. Thus in what had been intended to be a secular assembly, the name of Jehovah God, the great Provider for humankind, was made known in such a manner that the chairman closed the meeting by remarking that it was a blessed evening. The Lord is certainly giving us privileges and we must be on the alert to grasp them all to His praise.—A. Insberg, New York.



Gas rationing does not stop Jehovah's witnesses.

## They Get There Just the Same

**J**EHOVAH'S WITNESSES have good news for the people of good-will toward God and their fellow man. That good news Jehovah's witnesses do not keep to themselves. Gas rationing and other obstacles may inconvenience, but they do not stop Jehovah's witnesses from carrying on their work. They get there just the same. See here examples of some ways of solving transportation problems. (1) A youthful pioneer worker in Bay City, Texas, advertising The Theocracy by every means in his power, his bicycle ornamented with texts of

Scripture, such as "We ought to obey God rather than men." (2) Also Bay City. (3) An undaunted worker of Centerville, Calif. (4) Carrying their literature in baskets in the county whence cometh Worcestershire sauce. England. (5) Bringers of consolation at Weston super Mare, England. The one on the left was raised in a convent. (6) A wagon will do. This was somewhere out west. (7) Off to the field at Napoleonville, La. (8, 9) Frank and Roy McCluskey, Arkansas, go well supplied with food for thought.

---

## Some Facts About Ancient and Modern Yucatan

**I**N A previous issue consideration was given to the ancient civilization that existed in Mexico before the white man appeared and which he was instrumental in destroying. Yucatan, a peninsula in the extreme southeastern part of Mexico, housed a civilization and culture which were in some respects even more remarkable, the Mayan.

Yucatan includes the Mexican states of Campeche and Yucatan and the territory of Quintana Roo, and also takes in British Honduras and a part of the Guatemalan republic. It is mainly composed of tableland, but it is not sufficiently elevated to moderate the hot climate of the region. While there is deficient rainfall, the climate is comparatively healthful, although yellow fever occurs periodically. Yucatan must at one time have been very fertile, supporting as it did a thriving civilization with cities of great size and splendor. There are remains of great numbers of towns and cities, temples and palaces, that testify to the forgotten glories of the past. Many of these are found in the desolate region in the north of the peninsula. Much of the country is now a wilderness! The Maya peoples who were the builders of

the ancient civilization still comprise five-sixths of the present population of the territory.

The Spaniards are not responsible for all the ruins found in Yucatan. Many of the great cities and temples were already forsaken and their history all but forgotten when they came. A vast mystery surrounds them, however eagerly the historians and archeologists may search what remains and compare it with the half-mythical tales of the inhabitants, of whom there are some 500,000.

Uxmal, a great ruin, about sixty miles southwest of Merida, has remains of temples, cyclopean terraces, and other evidences of grandeur. They are said to date from what archeologists are pleased to call the "Stone Age", and are evidently extremely ancient and impressive.

The Mayas were the ruling race of Yucatan at the time of the Spanish conquest, and had been such for a long time. Their origin is still a mystery, although they are believed to have come into Yucatan from two different directions, a part coming from the Gulf of Mexico, and the remainder, probably a different race, from the west or southwest. Which one of these came first is not certain,



but the traditions tell that the first-comers were led by the "great hero" Zamna, or Itzamna, who was subsequently made a god, very much like Nimrod of old, but less culpably, for Zamna was an educator and governor of considerable merit. Not knowing the true God, Jehovah, he did the best he could with what light he had, aided by the knowledge that comes from the observation of "the things that are made". It seems, too, that Zamna combined in his own person both the offices of king and priest, being the ecclesiastical as well as the civil ruler. He lived to a venerable old age and his long rule contributed to the great respect the people had for him. When he died the Mayas were in secure possession of their "Canaan" and had extended their culture throughout the peninsula. They lived in close social and commercial contact with the other cultured peoples of the region, the Chiapas, Hondurans, and Guatemalans, having similar customs, language and religion.

Then came an invasion by foreigners from the north, headed, according to tradition, by Quetzalcoatl, of whom mention is made in the accounts of the Mexico of long ago. Apparently the newcomers were Toltecs in religion and they had come to stay, living on sufficiently friendly terms with the original inhabitants for the two races to carry on together. The architecture of the buildings throughout Yucatan indicates that there were two different peoples living there in harmony with the traditions, and that they spoke similar languages, if not the same language.

### ***The Builders of Yucatan***

All of the peoples living in Yucatan were great builders, as has been suggested by the fact of the numerous ruins of cities that remain. When the Spaniards came early in the sixteenth century the two peoples had become one, and were called the Mayas, or Itza.

Before this unification took place, however, there was recurrent warfare and

rivalry. For a time Uxmal was the greatest, mightiest and wealthiest city in Yucatan, as well as the most artistic. It was famous throughout the neighboring tribes and also those afar off. But it was ultimately overthrown and another city came into prominence, namely, Mayapan. Mayapan had enjoyed a great measure of distinction as having been founded by the great Zamna. He had divided the Maya kingdom among his chiefs, and their descendants formed the nobility of Yucatan for many a year. In later times the highest nobles, called the Tutul Xiu, became the ruling power under a sovereign, selected from their own number. Still later the coming of the Toltecs brought Mayapan under their control, introduced a new worship, and brought about a sort of confederacy with the rulers of Mayapan and Chichen Itza, representing another people.

### ***The Ruins of Mayapan***

If this account seems more or less vague it is because no clear record of the times now exists. Many of the ancient records were destroyed by the conquering Spaniards. When you conquer a people it is just as well, according to the 'morality' of the conquerors, to destroy their records, so that afterward you can lie about them more effectively. The Spaniards were following the Roman pattern, meaning particularly ecclesiastical Hierarchical Rome.

But that is getting ahead of our story. Returning now to Mayapan, which, according to some records, was destroyed by Uxmal, and, according to others, destroyed Uxmal. One fact now is certain: these great cities are both but ruins. Mayapan flourished for "several centuries", according to some chronologists, was once destroyed, apparently by Uxmal, and subsequently rebuilt.

The ruins of Mayapan, about 25 miles south of the present city of Merida, bear out the traditional story that this capital of the Mayas was entirely overthrown. Little of its past sumptuousness

remains. It cannot quite be said that not one stone was left upon another. Some badly ruined buildings still stand; others are covered with dust. Many terraces, pyramids and mounds, huge quantities of hewn stone and sculptured building blocks, are found scattered over a wide expanse of territory, testifying to the great size of a once great city in a land of which neither Europeans nor Asiatics had any knowledge. The ruins indicate that the city was some three miles in diameter, surrounded by a wall remarkably thick and high.

Many bloody wars raged against and around the city, and it was finally conquered, its wall razed, and its buildings mostly overthrown a hundred years before the Spaniards arrived.

One of the cities of ancient Yucatan whose ruins are fairly well preserved is Chichen Itza. The name means "At the mouth of the well of the Itza". It was this overflowing well that determined the site of the city. At first it was but a tribal settlement, but it grew to be a great city. It became a center of Itza learning as well as an important commercial town, extending its business connections with other cities and nations to Central America and southern Mexico. Great paved roads led from Chichen Itza to Campeche, Chiapas and Guatemala. It was the Rome of ancient Yucatan, and, like its greater counterpart in Europe, it could be said of this ancient American metropolis that all roads led to Chichen Itza. It was the "holy city" of the Mayas, or Itzas, and exercised a very powerful religious influence over the surrounding countries as well as over the Yucatecs. But today Chichen Itza is only a ruin and a memory, an all-but-forgotten dream of past glory.

### ***Modern Yucatan***

Today Yucatan is dotted with a variety of towns and villages, some modern, others still clinging to the bonds of the past. Merida, already referred to, is the large urban center of the peninsula, and

the capital of the state of Yucatan. It was founded in 1542, built on a plain. It has railway connections with all important points on the peninsula and Mexico itself. Steamers sail from its port, Progreso, twenty-five miles away, to Vera Cruz, New York, and other great ports. Merida lies in a district almost entirely devoted to the production of sisal hemp, which is exported in enormous quantities. Hides, chicle, sugar and indigo are also exported.

The first Spanish house built in the city is the municipal palace called the Casa del Conquistador Montejo. There is, of course, also a cathedral, as well as an asylum for maniacs. The population (of the city, not the asylum) is about 80,000. The streets are asphalt-paved, and the Banco Yucateca has a capital of \$8,000,000, and the Banco Mercantil de Yucatan a capital of \$6,000,000. All this seems a far cry from what was ancient Yucatan. But the difference is not as great as it may appear to be. It is only the externals and the details that have changed. Fundamentally it is still a civilization of religion, politics and commerce—that is, if the welter of poverty and wealth, ease and labor, sickness, warfare, death, and all the other heterogeneous elements can be called civilization. Are the Yucatecs better off today than they were half a millenium ago, before the white man appeared? It is doubtful. Are they the worse for the coming of the Spaniard? That, too, is doubtful. They have a little more knowledge along some lines, less along others. They may now pray to Mary, the "mother of God", instead of to Zamna or Quetzalcoatl, with equal intelligence or with less; for intelligence is not encouraged among the lowly subjects of Hierarchical Rome, whether in Italy, the land of the popes, or in Yucatan, the land of the ancient Maya civilization.

Modernity is also in evidence at Dzitas, important railroad junction of Yucatan. It is not as modern, perhaps, as the richer city of Merida, nor as

thoroughly Spanish. There is more Indian influence, less sophistication, but enough religion and too much.

Then there is Chan Kom, just a good-sized peasant town, not connected with any railroad, and which is an example of the less progressive centers of population. It knows relatively little of what is going on in the outside world.

As an example of a thoroughly ancient and Indian place, Tusik may be mentioned. It has as little as possible to do with modern ways and thought, including the government which operates from Mexico city. It wants to be let alone, to live with the past rather than the present. Yet the ruins of the past surround modern Merida, a startling contrast being presented between its throbbing life and the silence of the dead past as represented in half-buried Mayapan only twenty-five miles to the south.

Pictures of the modern Yucatecs show us a people of intelligence, with pensive looks that seem still to meditate

on the past. It is not difficult to believe that this people in the days of long ago were the builders of a magnificent civilization, one that vied with the civilizations of Babylonia and Egypt, of Europe and of Asia, for its attainments along many lines. It had a highly developed and intricate calendar system and entirely unique chronology. Some call the Mayas the Egyptians of the new world—America. They were in many respects like the Egyptians, including their pyramidal monuments, their serpent symbols, and their grain-raising agriculture. Yet this powerful and amazing civilization was destroyed by another that was its inferior in at least some respects. The chief reason for its destruction was internal strife. Civil war that continued over a considerable period of time weakened the power and tarnished the splendor of the Maya civilization. The Spaniards merely completed what had already been so effectually started by civil war.

## THE "SWORD OF THE SPIRIT"

The "sword of the spirit" is God's Word, the BIBLE; an essential possession of every person. To aid you in obtaining your copy of the HOLY BIBLE, the Watchtower Society is extending to you a special offer during May, namely:

**The Watchtower edition of the BIBLE, and the 384-page clothbound book *THE NEW WORLD*, will be mailed to you, postage prepaid, upon your contribution of \$1.00.**

This edition of the BIBLE is handsomely bound in a flexible maroon leatherette cover, embossed in gold, and is 7¼ by 5 by 1½ inches in size. The BIBLE text is that of the popular King James Version, unchanged, and printed in minion type on thin Bible paper, with handy marginal references, and maps. Among other features, it contains an extensive list of BIBLE names, expressions, and their meanings, together with a 59-page concordance. Such features make it excellent for private study. Send during May for your copy. Use coupon below.

**WATCHTOWER**

**117 Adams St.**

**Brooklyn, N. Y.**

Please send me the Watchtower Edition of the BIBLE and the book *The New World*, for which I enclose my contribution of \$1.00.

Name ..... Street .....  
City ..... State .....

## Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"

### Parts of Speech and Their Use

ARE parts of speech some of the higher learning to be shunned? Is it the excellency of speech Paul avoided? Is it the thing of which Peter and John were unlearned and ignorant? No. Correct speech is not what Paul avoided, but rather eloquence and oratory and high-sounding phrases were shunned. He didn't use the classical Greek, but the common. Peter and John were ignorant in the dead Hebrew language, but not in the Greek tongue used in gospel-preaching. Their writings in Greek are grammatically correct; so also are the Hebrew scriptures. The Lord's channel to instruct the people now, the Watchtower publications, uses correct English. We would hesitate to present them to the people if their pages were filled with grammatical errors. Good English becomes the gospel message.

Ungrammatical expressions, like mispronunciations, detract from the speaker's message. Some speak by "ear", thinking that if to them their speech sounds right it is correct. Not necessarily so. Their ear may not be properly trained. The speech their ear is accustomed to hearing habitually sounds right to them, though it may be actually incorrect. We must recognize error as such by our knowledge of parts of speech.

One often hears expressions similar to the following: He don't appreciate his service privileges. They arrested witness Smith and I for preaching the gospel. Who do you serve? Each one of the witnesses have gone to their assignments. I feel badly. All of these contain errors that might be easily avoided by having a knowledge of parts of speech.

Two of these sentences contain errors in number. One of the rules concerning verbs is that they must agree in number with their subjects. The use of *he don't* is very common, yet it is incorrect. *Don't* is a contraction of *do not*. *Do* is plural,

and *he* is singular. One would not say *he do not*, but *he does not*, or, *he doesn't* appreciate his service privileges. Another error in number was the statement, "Each one of the witnesses have gone to their assignments." *Each one* is singular, and takes the singular verb, *has*, not the plural, *have*. Also the possessive pronoun (here wrongly *their*) should agree in number with its antecedent, the singular *each one*. The singular possessive pronoun *his* should be substituted for the plural *their*. The sentence would correctly read: "Each one of the witnesses has gone to his assignment." An error in number of pronoun was made by the translators of the Bible, at Philippians 2:3: "Let each esteem other better than themselves." "Himself," not "themselves", should be used, since "each" is singular. A similar error is found at Exodus 21:33, 34: "If a man shall dig a pit, and not cover it, and an ox or an ass fall therein; the owner of the pit shall make it good, and give money unto the owner of *them*;" and the dead beast shall be his." It is the ox or ass, singular, that falls in the pit, not both. Therefore, to refer back to the one animal victim the singular pronoun *it* should be used instead of the plural *them*; that is, "The owner of the pit shall make it good, and give money unto the owner of *it*."

Then there is the matter of case. Two of the examples erred in its use. Pronouns, depending upon their use in the sentence, are in one of three cases—nominative, possessive, or objective. The personal pronoun in the first person singular, for example: *I* is nominative, *my* is possessive, and *me* is in the objective case. The sentence given, "They arrested witness Smith and I for preaching the gospel," has an error in case commonly made. *Witness Smith* and *I* are both the object of the verb *arrested*, and the pronoun should therefore be in the objective case. One would not say, They arrested *I*, but *me*. So "They



arrested witness Smith and me" is correct. In the example, "Who do you serve?" *whom* (the objective case form), not *who*, should be used. *Whom* is the object of the verb *serve*. You serve Him, meaning Jehovah. *Him* is the objective case of *he*. One wouldn't say "you serve he". *He* is in the nominative case, the same as *who* is in the nominative case. So "Whom do you serve?" is correct. Matthew 16:15 errs in case: "Whom say ye that I am?" It should be *who*. I am *who*? I am *he*, nominative case, not I am *him* or I am *whom*, which are in the objective case. The *A. R. V.* has it correct, using *who*.

Now for the last example mentioned. "I feel badly." If you intend to say you do not feel in good health, that you are indisposed, then to say "I feel badly" is wrong. *Badly* is an adverb. Adverbs modify verbs, not pronouns; so here the adverb *badly* would refer to the verb *feel* and not to the pronoun *I*. Adverbs show manner, not condition. Therefore to say "I feel badly" one actually is saying that his manner of feeling, that is his sense of touch, is defective. Now, adjectives describe condition and modify pronouns; so if you want the 'bad' to refer to you, describing the condition of your health, use the adjective form, *bad*, not the adverb *badly*. Say "I feel bad". Many persons confuse adjectives and adverbs, adding *ly* when it is not needed and omitting it when it is required. A knowledge of parts of speech would easily settle the matter for them. Genesis 40:7 so errs: "He asked Pharaoh's officers that were with him in the ward of his lord's house, saying, Wherefore look ye so sadly to day?" It was not their manner of looking that was sad, as would be indicated by using the adverb *sadly* to modify the verb *look*, but they were sad. To Joseph the looks or appearance of these men was one of being sad. The men were sad. One wouldn't say, "they were sadly." The *A. R. V.* correctly says, "Wherefore look ye so sad to-day?"

using the adjective form *sad* to modify and describe the pronoun "ye". So, from these few examples it may be seen how a knowledge of parts of speech will enable one to form correct speech habits; and, once they are formed, one will not have to stop and analyze his speech so frequently thereafter.

If correctness of speech were all that this knowledge accomplished, that would be enough to justify its careful study. But note these additional advantages: It helps in understanding, in pronunciation, in using the dictionary and new words, in writing, and in Bible study.

To explain briefly: In *understanding*: These eight parts of speech are words; these words are used by others in speaking and writing. *The Watchtower* has used them occasionally when explaining the use of a word in a Scripture text. *Consolation* has also used them. On page 75 the book *Preparation* refers to a part of speech, the preposition. To appreciate and understand the point these publications are making in such instances, one must know the meaning of these words (that is, nouns, pronouns, verbs, etc.) that they are using. In *pronunciation*: We read in Genesis 27:33: "Isaac trembled very exceedingly, and said, Who? where is he that hath taken venison, and brought it me, and I have eaten of all before thou camest, and have blessed him? yea, and he shall be blessed." Now, why are these two words, both spelled the same, pronounced differently? Because when it is a verb it is pronounced 'blest', and when an adjective it is 'bless-ed'. In "have blessed him" it is a verb, in "he shall be blessed" it is an adjective, describing the condition of "he". Other similar words are cursed and curs-ed, pre-sent and present, prec-e-dent and pre-ce'-dent. Knowing which parts of speech these words and many others are will enable one to pronounce them correctly. In *using the dictionary and new words*: After the dictionary lists a word it gives the vari-

ous parts of speech that word may be; and knowing how these parts of speech are correctly used, one is able to use the word correctly even though it be new to him. In *writing*: To illustrate this, note the expression *hook up*. Should it be written as one word or as two words? It all depends on the part of speech as used in the sentence. If one says the Nazis and the Hierarchy hook up with each other to gain world domination, it is two words. Why? Because *hook* is here used as a verb, and *up* as an adverb; and hence they must be written as the two words they are. The dictionary shows *hook* to be a verb or a noun, but *hookup* (one word) is shown as only a noun, and not a verb. If one were to say that the hookup of the Nazi-Hierarchy gangsters is an unholy alliance, he would write *hookup* as one word, since it is there used as a noun. Last, in *Bible study*: This is particularly noteworthy in the use of exhaustive concordances. The introductory matter in Young's mentions relative and personal pronouns, verbs, nouns, conjunctions, and adjectives. Many other related matters on grammar are discussed. To get the full advantage of Young's one must understand all these things. Let us examine Cruden's for a moment. In listing words, Cruden's often groups texts containing

a word according to the part of speech that word is in the various texts. For example, scriptures under "fast" are divided into three sections, listing separately texts where *fast* is used as a noun, as a verb, and as an adverb. (Cruden's uses the term "substantive" instead of "noun", a substantive being a noun or a word used as a noun.) If one wishes to find the text "Is it such a fast that I have chosen?" where will one look? If one recognizes *fast* here used as a noun, or substantive, one will immediately look under that grouping, and save time. If searching for "When ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance", look under the VERB grouping of the word "fast". Of if one desires to locate the text "If they bind me fast with new ropes that never were occupied, then shall I be weak, and be as another man", one will first look under the ADVERB group if one recognizes that "fast" as here used is that part of speech. In addition to concordances, different Bible translations (such as the *Diaglott* and the *A. R. V.*) discuss grammar and parts of speech in their prefaces. Therefore learn parts of speech, to speak correctly, to save time in using concordances, and to derive fullest advantage from exhaustive concordances and Bible translations.

## Erratum

**C**ORRECTION of a mistake made in the "Presenting 'This Gospel of the Kingdom'" article on "Theocratic Tactfulness", which appeared in *Consolation* No. 614, dated March 31, 1943, is here given. From the eighth line from the top of column one on page thirty to the end of that paragraph the article should have read as follows:

On hearing this, "David's anger was greatly kindled against the man; and he said to Nathan, As the LORD liveth, the man that hath done this thing shall surely die; and he shall restore the lamb fourfold, because he did this thing, and

because he had no pity."—2 Samuel 12:1-6.

### The Scorching of Borneo and Sumatra

♦ When the Netherlanders withdrew from the oil fields of Borneo at Tarakan and Balikpapan and the oil fields of Palembang, in Sumatra, they destroyed not only the wells, the machinery, the oil-tin factories, the printing works, the stores, the shops, and the clubs, but even the dwelling-houses. As a war measure, more than \$650,000,000 worth of property was wiped out as by earthquake.

# FIGHTING FOR LIBERTY ON THE HOME FRONT



## FREEDOM-LOVERS THROWN to the LIONS

your comfort, enlightenment and hope by showing the way to enduring liberty.

You may now get your copy by filling in the coupon below and mailing it together with a contribution of 5c per copy.

**WATCHTOWER, 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y.**

- ☐ Enclosed is 5c, for which please send me a copy of *Fighting for Liberty*.  
☐ Enclosed is 25c, for which please send me 10 copies of *Fighting for Liberty*.

Name ..... Street .....

City ..... State .....

**RELEASED APRIL 1**

**12,000,000**

**ALREADY DISTRIBUTED**

This 32-page booklet answers frankly, with Scriptural support, such timely questions as these:

Behind the front, who is the chief enemy of liberty?

Who are at the very head in the defense against this enemy?

When the firing ceases and peace comes, why will the fight for liberty have to go on?

Who will establish the four freedoms on earth in the perfect sense?

How have freedom-lovers been thrown to the lions?

The answers given in the new booklet *FIGHTING FOR LIBERTY ON THE HOME FRONT* are startling and sound a warning, but are priceless to

# CONSOLATION

A JOURNAL OF FACT, HOPE AND COURAGE

## Seattle Officials Fighting Against Liberty

These virulently oppose the main freedoms locally

---

## Bricker for President(!)

Is the governor of Ohio suitable timber for the presidency?

---

## The Oath-bound Covenant

Assurance of blessings for "all families of the earth"

---

## The Deflation of Marshal Petain

Puppet of Hitler and the Hierarchy loses his sawdust filler



# Contents

Seattle Officials Fight Against Liberty on the Home Front	3
'Framing Mischief by Law'	4
Shielding Religion from the Bible Spotlight	5
Trampling Underfoot the Constitution	6
Kirtley's Zeal Against Freedom	7
Persecution Defeated	8
Newspapers and Citizens Disapprove	10
"Seclusion" of the Society's President	11
San Diego and Los Angeles	13
Guerrilla Warfare on Huge Scale	15
Governor Bricker, of Ohio, for President (!)	16
Teapot Tempests	16
"Thy Word Is Truth"	
The Oath-bound Covenant	17
The Deflation of Marshal Petain	19
"Petain Was Joffre's Headache"	19
"We Are Whipped," "We Are Whipped"	19
Petain Hates Republics	21
A Traitor of the First Degree	22
"Catholic France"	23
Separation of Church and State	24
How About Joan of Arc?	25
Was the "Church" Persecuted?	27
Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"	
"Unlearned and Ignorant Men"	29
Why Leyden University Was Closed	31

Published every other Wednesday by  
**WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, INC.**  
 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

## OFFICERS

<b>President</b>	N. H. Knorr
<b>Secretary</b>	W. E. Van Amburgh
<b>Editor</b>	Clayton J. Woodworth

## Five Cents a Copy

\$1 a year in the United States  
 \$1.25 to Canada and all other countries

## NOTICE TO SUBSCRIBERS

**Remittances:** For your own safety, remit by postal or express money order. When coin or currency is lost in the ordinary mails, there is no redress. Remittances from countries other than those named below may be made to the Brooklyn office, but only by International postal money order.

**Receipt** of a new or renewal subscription will be acknowledged only when requested. **Notice of Expiration** is sent with the journal one month before subscription expires. Please renew promptly to avoid loss of copies.

**Send change of address** direct to us rather than to the post office. Your request should reach us at least two weeks before the date of issue with which it is to take effect. Send your old as well as the new address. Copies will not be forwarded by the post office to your new address unless extra postage is provided by you.

**Published** also in Greek, Portuguese, Spanish, and Ukrainian.

## OFFICES FOR OTHER COUNTRIES

England	34 Craven Terrace, London, W. 2
Australia	7 Beresford Road, Strathfield, N. S. W.
South Africa	623 Boston House, Cape Town
Mexico	Calzada de Melchor Ocampo 71, Mexico, D. F.
Brazil	Caixa Postal 1319, Rio de Janeiro
Argentina	Calle Honduras 5646-48, Buenos Aires

Entered as second-class matter at Brooklyn, N. Y., under the Act of March 3, 1879.

# Notandum

## Effect of Kindness on Animals

◆ If the law of kindness be applied by man to the government of the so-called "brute creation", it will be wonderful how easily they can be brought under subjection and control. The efficacy of the soothing word, the gentle touch, has only to be honestly tried to be fully appreciated. It may be set down as a fixed fact that whenever a horse or a cow or an ox is timid and shy—will not allow a person to approach or handle, unless it is so situated that it cannot escape—a wrong system of treatment has been pursued. The animals of the farmer are naturally disposed to be docile and affectionate. They recognize the voice and hand of a friend almost as soon as a human creature would, and manifest their affection in a variety of ways, which none but the kind master or keeper will observe. Have you not seen teamsters who could manage their teams by a soft word far better than others could do by blows and harsh words? Have you not seen a milkmaid approach a cow with a bucket without the slightest evidence of a disposition on the part of the animal to evade her? And have you not seen the same cow make every effort to escape from the next milkmaid who approaches her? And the reason was that the first had always treated her kindly and gently, while the latter had pursued the opposite method. Animals almost invariably partake of the character of their masters. The kind, gentle and considerate master will generally have kind, gentle animals; while the rude, impetuous and cruel master will rarely fail to have animals whose dispositions will mate his own. Is not gentleness the true method? God has given these poor brutes for our use, they minister to our wants, are patient and uncomplaining, and certainly deserve such treatment at our hands as will show that we properly appreciate the kindness of the Almighty in giving them to us for the purpose of adding to our comfort.—Selected.

"A righteous man regardeth the life of his beast: but the tender mercies of the wicked are cruel."—Proverbs 12:10.

CONSOLATION

# CONSOLATION

"And in His name shall the nations hope."—Matthew 12:21, A. R. V.

Volume XXIV

Brooklyn, N. Y., Wednesday, May 12, 1943

Number 617

## Seattle Officials Fight Against Liberty on the Home Front

**W**HAT ails Seattle? Why must she shelve democratic freedoms at such a crucial time, especially the freedom to worship God? Is it by popular consent, or have small-minded city officials overruled liberty on that home front while blood is shed for it on far-flung battle fronts? Why must Bible discussions, held in other cities without incident, be broken up in Seattle by the storm-trooper tactics of a local gestapo? And, after the cancellation of the contract for the Seattle Civic Auditorium under the flimsy pretext of enforcing a city ordinance that is unconstitutional on its face and as applied, why must the police follow through their persecution of Christians by intimidating and frightening other hall owners into similar contract-breaking practices?

Officials and police in key positions justify their autocratic rampage against Christians by saying that the delivery of a Bible lecture would cause Seattle citizens to riot. In effect, they contend that the people of Seattle are narrow-minded bigots that are not sufficiently educated in democratic principles and devoted to them to permit the exercise of free speech on God's Word, or free assembly for that purpose; that such Bible speeches would cause the Seattle populace to flare forth in anarchistic uprisings. The position taken by this handful of "spiritual policemen" is false to the core. And they know it is false. The facts prove their specious reasoning so. Note the events that give rise to the aforementioned questions and then

judge for yourself, in democratic style, and let the citizens of Seattle decide whether they wish to bear the nationwide odium brought upon their city by their official representatives, if they wish to be made the "fall guy" and take the "rap" for such freedom-haters, or let them decide to clear Seattle of the smirch brought upon it. Their decision will be evidenced by their future course: one of inaction, or action in the fight for liberty on the Seattle front to counteract the battle waged against it by misguided officials.

### *Fighters for Liberty*

The totalitarian tendencies of some of Seattle's leaders were brought to light by an unpopular minority group that is spearheading the fight for liberty on the home front, Jehovah's witnesses. They are hated of all nations for Christ's name's sake, and this even in democratic lands, despite their fight to preserve democratic processes. (Matthew 24:9) View them in whatsoever light you will, still the honest person devoted to freedom, be he religionist or atheist, will acknowledge and appreciate the service in the interests of freedom rendered by Jehovah's witnesses. The test of freedom is the extent to which it is granted unpopular minorities; and if Jehovah's witnesses fight for their rights, just remember they are your rights also. Citizens of Seattle, soberly consider the actions of your representatives on the days of March 20 and 21, 1943.

On February 8 a group of Seattle

citizens, the Watchtower convention committee, called on the manager of the Civic Auditorium and stated their desire to rent the building for an assembly of Jehovah's witnesses. The committee referred the manager to a previous contract with the witnesses in 1938. He examined those files, and entered into contract with the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society for their use of the Civic Auditorium on March 20 and 21, full rental price being paid.

More than a week before the assembly a tremendous advertising campaign began. A hundred thousand handbills were distributed, thousands of letters of invitation sent out, several thousand signs were prepared and made their appearance along the highways, on tops of cars, in store windows, etc. Everyone in Seattle soon knew Jehovah's witnesses were to hold a Christian assembly in the Seattle Civic Auditorium, including the city officials. But no objections were raised; the signal to strike down free speech, assembly and worship had not been given. The advertising work continued unhindered and reached its climax.

Saturday, March 20, dawned a beautiful warm spring day, ideal for Theocratic service. Approximately 1,000 of Jehovah's witnesses had assembled by 9 a. m. for the opening exercises. Shortly thereafter they spread throughout the city of Seattle to preach the gospel of the Kingdom from house to house as did their Leader, Christ Jesus, long ago. Officials sometimes complain of the house-to-house work of Jehovah's witnesses, and ask why they do not assemble in a building to worship. They rented a building for that purpose in Seattle, and while they were out doing good by inviting its citizens to come and meet with them and share their blessings, Seattle officials were doing the evil they had previously hatched against God's servants.

Charles C. Hughes, city building superintendent, led off the cowardly

offensive against democratic freedoms and started the "persecution ball" rolling. In a dither he declared over the telephone to the witnesses that they were not going to use the auditorium, there was an ordinance against them, the contract was worthless, and he was coming over to evacuate the building. A few moments later he appeared with a squad of police under the assistant chief of police, W. B. Kirtley, who subsequently distinguished himself as a proficient disciple of Hitlerian methods. Hughes demanded the witnesses leave the premises. To enforce a city ordinance, he said, they must be ousted. Brief mention of that ordinance and its birth is here appropriate.

### ***'Framing Mischief by Law'***

Judge Rutherford, a former president of the Watchtower Society, spoke at the Civic Auditorium in 1938 on the subject "Violence". Mobsters, goaded on by priests of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, violently opposed that assembly of Christians. A goodly percentage of the citizens of Seattle are Catholics (not in favor of such tactics, however) and the scheming Catholic priesthood uses their votes and completely controls the city's political machine. Hence, following Judge Rutherford's exposé of the totalitarian political ambitions of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy to dominate the world by cruel dictators, how she had used violence in the past to gain her ends, and was doing so at the present time (which facts then declared are now apparent to all awake persons), her loyal political tools in office 'framed mischief by law'. (Psalm 94: 20) It was an ordinance providing that "the rental or use of the Civic Auditorium . . . for any purpose . . . which will tend to engender religious or racial antagonism be, and the same is hereby, prohibited".

If such a Hierarchy-inspired hate-ordinance could have been enforced during the Middle Ages, there never would have been a Protestant Reformation,

with the subsequent growth of Protestant nations founded on democratic liberties, of which this country is one. The Hierarchy fought bitterly against these freedoms in their birth throes by the rack and torture chamber of the Inquisition; she still fights them, and advocates 'death for heretics [Protestants]' where she is strong enough to demand it. She has ever engendered religious antagonism. And as for racial antagonism, the bulls issued by her popes against the Jews, and the denunciations leveled against them by present-day Catholic priests throughout the earth, should convict her on that point. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy would be the first to be excluded from use of Seattle's Civic Auditorium under such a law if undiscriminatingly enforced; but no, the officials of this American city oppose the exposure of a totalitarian, Roman system that has fomented more religious and racial wars than all other groups combined since the time of man's creation!

Now Seattle becomes a second offender in opposing Christianity. After the widely advertised assembly had started, city councilman James Scavatto 'just happened to remember' this ordinance and sicked the pack on Jehovah's witnesses. The city council is fighting to legalize slot-machine gambling rackets to secure revenue for the city; but Scavatto deprived the city of legitimate funds by instigating the closing of the Civic Auditorium to Bible discussions.

### ***Shielding Religion from***

#### ***the Bible Spotlight***

This ordinance was framed to "get" Jehovah's witnesses, is applied discriminately against them, and used to protect the precious "sacred cow" of Seattle officials. Jehovah's witnesses only declare God's Word. If His Word reflects upon the actions of religionists, is that the fault of His messengers? The doctrine of Jehovah's witnesses is not their own. (John 7:16) The controversy of those offended is with God. Let such light-

haters alter their course if the shining of God's word of truth disturbs them. (John 3:19-21) If they do righteously, they need not fear free speech on God's Word; it is not necessary to muzzle those who disagree with you. Jehovah God favors free speech, and, in Isaiah 43:8-12, invites all to bring forth their witnesses and justify their course, or to hear His witnesses and acknowledge their testimony as true. Antagonistic differences on political and social and economic questions may be freely aired, but differences of opinion on God's Word, which contains the all-important message that means life or death to every creature, is stringently rationed and censored and suppressed. The vulnerable position of organized religion cannot survive a searching examination under the Bible spotlight; hence her political paramours come to her rescue and restrain Christians. Like the Originator of Christianity, Jehovah's witnesses will obey God and preach, thus making men free from religion; they will show God's Word to 'be true, even though it make every man [religionists included] a liar'. (John 8:32; Romans 3:4) Does a union of "religion and state" run Seattle to the exclusion of Christianity, as in the days of the Inquisition? Granting that Seattle officials have no respect for God's Word, let them at least spare the democratic liberties guaranteed by the Constitution.

It was under the pretext of enforcing that mischievously framed city law that pompous officials came at a belated hour to scatter Christians from the assembly place they had engaged and widely advertised. Hughes' demand to vacate was met by the statement that a legal, valid contract had been made. Pooh! just a piece of paper. What care demon-controlled men about integrity to contracts? They are willing covenant-breakers. (Romans 1:31,32) The doors of the auditorium were locked so far as Jehovah's witnesses were concerned, with two hundred on the inside. These re-



mained where they were, singing songs of praise to Jehovah, and many hundreds more continued to arrive and gathered on the outside. Seeing their failure to overawe and cow God's people by the displaying of the might of their strong-arm squad, the police cordon blocking the entrances was withdrawn.

This preliminary skirmish was the first intimation Jehovah's witnesses had that Seattle officials had taken the bit in their teeth and become "runaways" from the guidance of democracy. The blitz against freedom of worship had been devilishly timed. On this point the *Seattle Times* said editorially:

When a public meeting is planned, everyone is or should be aware of the purpose. If that purpose is deemed unworthy or likely to cause mischief, the use of public or semi-public premises should be denied in advance. To interrupt and disperse a meeting once under way gives cause for not altogether unreasonable protest.

It seemed impossible, due to the enemy's tactics of delaying their move, to take the necessary legal action to secure a restraining order. A lawyer was sought out to prepare the papers, and several judges were acquainted with the illegal and malicious interference. On one pretext or another, the judges denied relief and refused to fight for liberty on the home front. One gallant judicial gentleman side-stepped saying 'he had a date to go shopping with his wife'. One side, oath-bound duties of office. More binding on this man (?) are a woman's apron strings!

### ***Christians Under Surveillance***

However, with the auditorium temporarily reopened, the convention proceeded on schedule. The program was identical with the one held in Los Angeles the week previous, where city officials did not feel constrained to suspend democracy 'to prevent riots'. Present at the afternoon session in Seattle were Hughes, Kirtley and other so-called "public servants" obsessed with the dic-

tator spirit, as is so often the case when "little men" are given a measure of authority. Similar to the loathsome spies sent forth by religious priests that "they might take hold of [Jesus'] words, that so they might deliver Him unto the power and authority of the governor", these Satanic tools strained their ears for words from Christ's followers that might rouse their "religious hatred" and antagonize religious priests whose allegiance is to papal Rome. (Luke 20: 20, 26; Mark 11: 27; 12: 12, 13) As their prototypes failed centuries ago to catch Jesus in His words, so these Hierarchy dupes found no excuse to stop the assembly. The city ordinance had not been violated. Wholly unjustifiable, therefore, was the lockout ruled for Sunday, and such action must be regarded as discriminating, arbitrary, malicious, and Hitleristic. If the witnesses' use of the auditorium was a violation of their precious hate-ordinance, as they claimed Saturday morning, then they allowed it to be broken one day, and broke the contract the next. One course or the other, followed consistently both days, would have been only one transgression. But rely on Seattle officials to ferret out every sin possible, and to commit them all.

### ***Trampling Underfoot the Constitution***

At 7 p.m. Saturday officious Kirtley called some of the convention committee into an office to hear him rave. He had a stenographer there to record the proceedings. In his ramblings he amused the witnesses by saying, "Forty years have I served the Lord [he should read Matthew 7: 20, 21; 15: 7, 8]. I venture to say I know more about the Bible [pausing and turning to the Jehovah's witnesses present], with the exception of you three men, than any man present." (He feared his bluff would be called. He claimed to be a Protestant, but since he would not protest against the Hierarchy and 'stir religious hatred', he is one in name only. Those who are true protestants he persecutes.) Then he started a

tirade against what some of the speakers had said that afternoon. He isolated statements from their context, even cutting sentences in half, to distort their meaning. For instance, he claimed one speaker said "Jehovah's witnesses recognize no man-made law". On being 'pinned down' he grudgingly admitted the statement was: "Jehovah's witnesses recognize no man-made law which is in conflict with God's law."

One of the committee had the temerity to suggest to the mighty Kirtley that "we have the right of free speech under the Constitution"; whereupon Kirtley, fretting under the constitutional checks that so irk and hamper those desirous of usurping authority never vested in their office, fumed: "You and your constitutional rights!" And from this outburst he launched into a vicious denunciation of Jehovah's people, interrupting his railings only long enough to instruct his stenographer not to make record of his remarks. The vile language he used made the already "blue" air "bluer". The democratic pearls of freedom should never be cast before swine with the expectation of doing good; the brute beasts only turn and rend. Realizing this, the committee excused themselves and left, "Censor" Hughes giving the parting shot that if any remarks were made from the platform that evening that he didn't approve, especially respecting any religious organization, he would break up the meeting.

The evening program, including a discourse by the Society's president, N. H. Knorr, wherein the un-Scriptural practices of religion were fearlessly exposed, proceeded to its conclusion. Seattle's city building superintendent, Hughes, whose duties, at least the ones he has arrogated to himself, include the censoring of speeches delivered in Seattle buildings, stood nervously behind the platform curtain with his lackey Kirtley to halt free speech and worship and assembly if anything were said that did not suit him, or that might embarrass

his religio-political cronies of the Catholic cult. Like those sent by the chief priests to spy on Jesus, they failed to entrap Jehovah's witnesses in their words. At the close of the evening session announcement was made that this would be the last assembly in the Civic Auditorium, and that arrangements had been made for the use of the Masonic Temple on the morrow. As the conventioners left, one could not help but think of Jesus' words, "whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city, shake off the dust of your feet. Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment than for that city." (Matthew 10: 12-15) So Jehovah's witnesses shook the dust of the Civic Auditorium off their feet.

### ***Kirtley's Zeal Against Freedom***

As the Christians left, so did religious Kirtley and his gang. He had work to do. He had said to the Watchtower committee that the meetings could be held somewhere else. Maybe, but not if he could help it. He had unlawfully applied the city's unconstitutional ordinance (which related only to the Civic Auditorium) against Jehovah's witnesses; he had more than done his duty, but that was not enough. Maybe he is politically ambitious. At any rate, he had heard the announcement of the assembly's moving to the Masonic Temple; so, in Jesuitic style, he went to work on the Masons. According to the *Seattle Post-Intelligencer*, Kirtley that night addressed a letter to the trustees of the Masonic Temple Association telling of the banning of the assembly from the Civic Auditorium, and concluded:

During the meeting this afternoon at the civic auditorium, a speaker advertised on their program by the name of M. G. Henschel, stated, "Jehovah's witnesses recognize no man-made law" [still persisting in his misrepresentation]. This for your information and guidance.

He must "follow through" with his persecution campaign, and in pointed phrase brings pressure upon those who would grant free-assembly privileges to Jehovah's servants. Information given the Watchtower representatives by Ralph E. Barker, assistant secretary pro tem of the Masons, on the morning of March 21, was to the effect that 'the police called on them and told them if Jehovah's witnesses held their convention at the Masonic Temple there would be a riot and the police would be powerless and unable to furnish adequate police to protect the building, so the police recommended the Masons refuse to allow Jehovah's witnesses to have their meetings'.

Seattle citizens are not given to riotings as their police insinuate. The only disturbance at the Civic Auditorium was that caused by the officials, not the people. When the Sunday meeting was held despite the opposition, there were no riots by Seattle citizens. The local police cannot pass off the responsibility for their gestapo-like tactics on to those that pay them to uphold law and order and civil liberty.

The Masons, however, chose to believe the worst of the city's residents, and capitulated to pressure, not caring to fight for freedom. Harry Westfall, United States commissioner and vice-president of the Masonic board of trus-

tees, said regarding the backdown: "We did this in the interests of good government, and to prevent our temple from being desecrated by riots." He did not explain his conception of "good government". Obviously he could not have meant democratic, constitutional rule, which Jehovah's witnesses consider the best form of government ever established by men. Contract-breaking and refusal to fight for liberty of assembly certainly is not in its interests. Some freedomless tyranny must have been meant.

But the Lord's people did not quit; they continued to fight for liberty on the Seattle front. Saturday night arrangements were made to use the I.O.O.F. Hall for Sunday. Only the convention committee knew of it; stringent precautions must be taken to prevent "snooper" Kirtley from again using his pressure methods. The triumphs of Seattle's Inquisitors were at an end; the final victory went to Jehovah's witnesses, by God's grace.

### ***Persecution Defeated***

Sunday Jehovah's witnesses returned from their field service to the Central Unit Kingdom Hall in Seattle, at which point they had earlier assembled for the convention's morning session. While they had been out inviting the people of good-will to the afternoon lecture,



Assembly at Kingdom Hall, Seattle, connected by wire with I.O.O.F. Hall



Forced by Seattle officials to assemble in the street and empty lots

"Fighting for Liberty on the Home Front," those in charge of the assembly had worked feverishly to connect by direct wire the Kingdom Hall and the I.O.O.F. Hall. Installations were completed just in time. An hour before the lecture hundreds had gathered on the sidewalks outside Kingdom Hall, which accommodated only 500. These hundreds of witnesses still did not know of the I.O.O.F. Hall, such extreme precautions being necessary to forestall vindictive Kirtley and other officials from further venting their spleen against Bible discussions. At this point word of the I.O.O.F. Hall was passed through the throngs on the street and over a thousand immediately left for it. When the speech was delivered both halls were packed out and loud-speakers in the hall windows enabled those outside to hear. Upward of 4,000 thoroughly enjoyed the message so opposed by Seattle officialdom, headed by Mayor Devin.

As all in Seattle, and millions of others throughout the United States, now know, since 12,000,000 copies of the lecture had been prepared for distribution during the month of April, Seattle receiving special attention, as it particularly needs to learn about fighting for liberty on the home front, the message was a powerful blow in the interests of democratic freedoms. A fighting speech, it was delivered

in fighting style, and from time to time the speaker would depart from his manuscript to show the need of a local fight for liberty in view of the un-American acts of some Seattle officials. Uproarious bursts of applause proved the assembly's unanimous agreement with these extemporaneous observations.

Point upon point was piled up proving the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is the opposer of liberty the world over, all of which were amplified by the conditions existing in Seattle. It had been apparent throughout the battle for liberty there that it was the Hierarchy trying to parry the blow they saw coming. The same speech had been given in Los Angeles a week previous, and maybe they knew its contents. Even if they did not, whatever they have in place of a conscience must have bothered them. They know the long historical record of their organization that proves its continuous fight against liberty for anyone except themselves, and they would just as soon keep their evil-doings, past and present, in the dark. (John 3: 19-21) But they failed. (Matthew 10: 26) The president of the Society concluded the speech; a mighty cheer rose from the assembled thousands in appreciation thereof.

And there were no riots. Poor, disappointed officials! Seattle residents refused to live up to the black reputa-



tion their representatives gave them, and did not fulfill the dire official predictions as to what would follow if free speech on God's Word were permitted in Seattle. Intolerant officials, not people, is what ails Seattle.

At the conclusion of the lecture the full text thereof was released in booklet form. Ten free copies were offered to those wishing to distribute them in Seattle that afternoon. The response was instantaneous; over 25,000 copies were placed in the eager hands of Seattle residents. But that was not all. A special sticker attached to the front of each booklet read:

The mayor and city officials closed the Seattle Civic Auditorium to delivery of this speech. Are these men opposed to fighting for liberty on the home front?

READ THIS AND LEARN THE TRUTH

The distribution was made for the benefit of the people of good-will in Seattle. Their officials tried to keep this message from them; they failed. All events were maneuvered by Jehovah God and turned to a greater testimony and victory than would otherwise have been possible. "All things work together for good to them that love God."—Romans 8:28; Philipians 1:12-18.

### ***Newspapers and Citizens Disapprove***

The ire of Seattle citizens was not aroused by the delivery of the speech; rather they expressed sharp disapproval of the arbitrary course of the city officials. Hundreds of them had to stand in the street to hear the lecture because their officials would not let them hear it in the Civic Auditorium. Apparently representatives of the foreign power at Vatican City are more welcome at that auditorium than a mere taxpayer of Seattle. Here's what one Seattle resident wrote, as published in the *Post-Intelligencer*:

'WITNESS' MEETING

*To The Post-Intelligencer:*

The denial of the use of the Civic Auditorium

to the religious sect known as Jehovah's witnesses is a denial of the very thing we are asked to sweat and bleed and die for. It is worse than ironical; it is hypocritical, to talk of establishing freedom of speech in lands across the sea when we deny it in our own city.

The city ordinance upon which this refusal was based should be repealed in the interests of justice and democracy. It is so loosely drawn that any group could be denied the use of the Auditorium.

The attention of the city council is called to the words of Justice William O. Douglas to the American Jewish Congress: "Recognition of the smallest minority is written in blood as well as ink in our Bill of Rights. That precious document represents a great historic struggle to make men free. It is the cornerstone on which our cultural and spiritual values rest. It is a constant reminder to us that once we strike down the expression of ideas which we despise, we have forged an instrument for the suppressing of ideas which we cherish. . . . For history has shown that once persecution is unloosed on one minority, it spreads like a blight."—Fred W. Shorter, Seattle.

One Washington paper scored the disgraceful conduct of the city officials as follows:

### **KICKING THE BILL OF RIGHTS AROUND**

If there are any short-wave enemy broadcasting outfits in the United States they probably have pointed out to the Japanese and Germans some serious drawbacks in the American way of life. This information could easily be based on the week-end episodes in Seattle in connection with the effort of Jehovah's witnesses, a religious organization, to hold a national convention there. Because some persons objected to the attitude of the group toward the war and their manner of worship, the city authorities canceled the engagement of the civic auditorium for a Sunday afternoon meeting.

Jehovah's witnesses may be peculiar, and non-conformist, but that is the issue on which the Pilgrims left England to establish their homes in America. They came here so that

they might worship as they saw fit. The bill of rights guarantees that freedom. Our chief criticism of Russia has been the denial of certain freedoms of worship.

It looks as if the Seattle authorities made a serious blunder in the handling of the Jehovah's witnesses business.

It does seem that the city officials are alone in their un-American position and cannot drag in other company to share their misery.

The evening session of the assembly was concluded, still without any riots. The next day many of the conventioners remained to continue the distribution of the booklet. A special group of workers was organized to visit the city officials with the booklet, with the special sticker attached. The vast majority of the city officials graciously received the booklet, and many expressed regret that the mayor and other responsible ones had taken the action they did. Mayor Devin was not overlooked. He received his booklet, with sticker, and was informed of the wide distribution thereof now in progress throughout the state of Washington. He did not think the attached sticker necessary. "I am sorry to see that booklet go out with this statement on it," he remarked sadly. He did not say he was sorry for his liberty-depriving course of action. He dreaded repercussions that might jeopardize his political career. Jehovah's witnesses were sorry that he made such action necessary. But they will push the fight for liberty regardless of whose toes are trodden upon and whose spirits may be 'sorrowed' by it. The fight is bigger than the feelings of any man. Mayor Devin "asked for it". As they sow, so shall they reap.—Galatians 6:7; Matthew 18:7.

### ***Fight Not Over***

To push the fight for freedom to the benefit of all liberty-lovers, legal action is being taken in the federal courts. It may have the salutary effect of awakening Seattle's wayward officials to the fact that that city is still a part of America,

and that democracy is more than just something to make political speeches about. If some of these erring officials lent themselves as tools to perform dirty work for behind-the-scenes religious leaders, let them soberly reflect upon 1 Corinthians 15:33, 34, as given in the American Revised Version: "Be not deceived: Evil companionships corrupt good morals." To shield and curry favor with religionists, they fight against God.—Acts 5:38, 39.

It is hoped that the people of Seattle shake themselves loose from these officials who set themselves up as the "guardians of the souls" of the people of Seattle and as the ones to determine what spiritual provender may be put forward for their consumption. Persistent following of blind leaders results in disaster.—Matthew 15:14.

### ***"Seclusion" of the Society's President***

Of more than passing interest in connection with the Seattle convention is the fact that on its opening day the March 22 issue of *Newsweek* appeared on Seattle newsstands. Therein the people of Seattle could read, under the heading "Witness's Angle", a factless article that said the witnesses "keep the new leader, Nathan H. Knorr, in seclusion". Then they could pick up their afternoon and evening papers and see Mr. Knorr's name on the front page. The error-packed article is beneath serious consideration, and it is suggested to *Newsweek* that if it would live up to its claim as a "Magazine of News Significance" it must first employ an editor capable of distinguishing between truth and the rantings of a frustrated woman would-be reporter who must "manufacture" news. The following account of Mr. Knorr's recent speaking tour will demonstrate that apparently the editors and reporters of *Newsweek* were the ones "in seclusion"; certainly not Mr. Knorr.

Leaving the Society's headquarters early in February, the first stop was El Paso, Texas, where an assembly of

Jehovah's witnesses was held at the Kingdom Hall. The progress of the work of gospel-preaching, the necessity of unflagging zeal therein, the requirements of the future, and the unmistakable direction of the Lord in all these Kingdom activities were pointed out. Deeply appreciating the president's visit and refreshed and strengthened by the things discussed, the witnesses there renewed their determination to be faithful Theocratic ministers.

### **Mexico**

A two-day journey by rail from El Paso through the picturesque country of our neighbor to the south brought the travelers to Mexico city. There they were met by the Society's representatives from the Branch office and other Mexican Theocratists. The meetings between Jehovah's people are always joyful occasions, and this one was enhanced by the fact that this was Mr. Knorr's first visit with the witnesses at Mexico city.

Request was made that he address an assembly of Jehovah's witnesses while there, and, upon his acceptance, arrangements were made for a convention in Mexico city on February 21. With the dawn of that Sunday morning bright, smiling faces, eager with anticipation, put in their appearance, and new arrivals continued throughout the day till assembly time.

Three o'clock, and the assembly was called to order. Opening remarks by one who had been Branch servant for ten years reviewed the progress and increase of the work during that time, due credit therefor being given to Jehovah. He closed by announcing his choice to return to the United States. Next the conventioners were addressed, through an interpreter, by the president's secretary on the subject "The Lord's Organization".

The president of the Society then introduced the new servant in charge of the Branch office. This new servant discussed the "Educational Campaign"

being carried on in Mexico under the direction of the Society and pointed out how, by God's grace, it would be intensified during the coming months. Squarely before those assembled the requirements of each publisher relative to this campaign were placed; and announcement was made of the early provision of *Organization Instructions* in Spanish to aid in harmonious unity in action in the Theocratic work.

The 390 persons assembled in the auditorium were greatly stirred as the Society's president rose and addressed them, through an interpreter, on "Our Privileges". After expressing his gratitude for the privilege of being able to come to Mexico, he entered into a heart-to-heart talk with the assembled witnesses regarding the Theocratic witness work, stating that The Theocracy is not a national arrangement limited by the boundaries of any country, but that it is universal, and that Theocratic instructions apply with as much force in Mexico as in New York city, or any other part of the earth. The importance of each publisher's striving to further educate himself in God's Word and thus improve his service work was stressed. They must aid those of good-will of little education to likewise learn. All must prove integrity to the Most High, regardless of trials, and thereby be "more than conquerors through him that loved us". —Romans 8:37.

Though speaking different languages, the Lord's people are the same everywhere. Enthusiastic, zealous, faithful fighters for the New World, those in Mexico 'push the battle to the gate'. The assembly closed with request by the entire audience that their love and greetings be conveyed to their Theocratic co-workers in the United States.

February 25 was spent with the company of Jehovah's witnesses at Guadalajara, Jalisco, Mexico's second-largest city. These witnesses expressed the hope that the Watchtower Bible College of Gilead would some day provide some

American publishers to assist them in their large territory. Perhaps it may be the Lord's will that such be so.

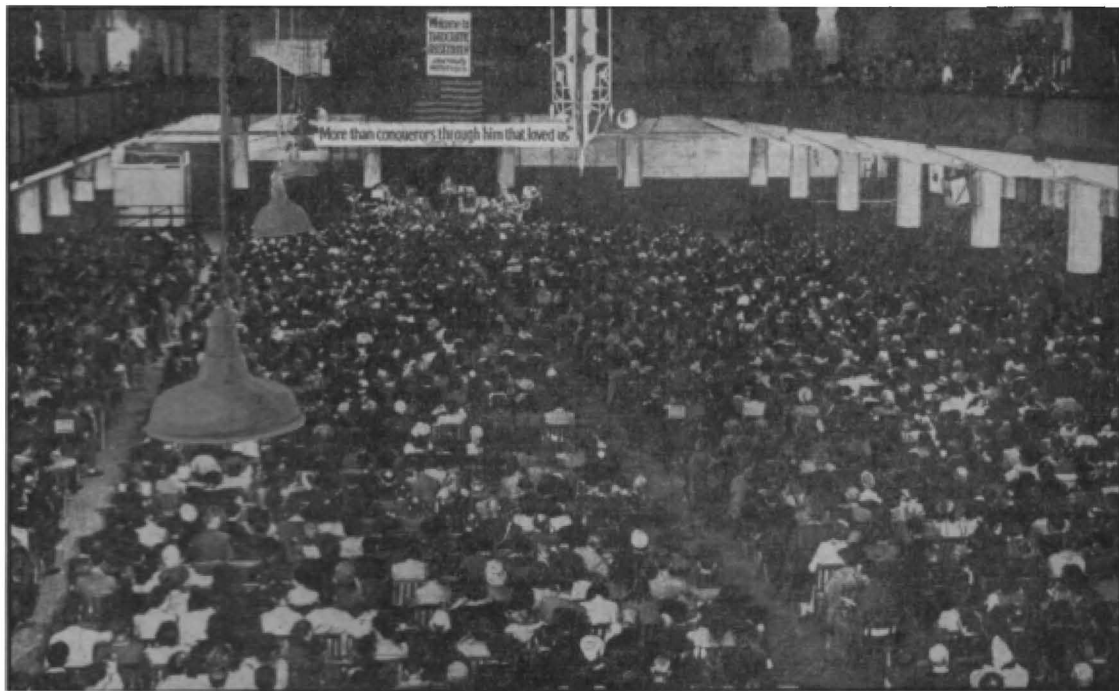
No other stopovers were scheduled for Mexico. However, when the train made a half-hour stop at Tepic, Nayarit, it was the good fortune of the president and his secretary to present a *Hope* booklet to a lad selling bananas. As he gazed at the cover of the booklet in the dwindling evening light his eyes grew wide, and he queried, "Testigos [witnesses]?" He was overjoyed to meet witnesses from the Society's headquarters, particularly the president. The feelings were mutual. Though not always too well understood in language, there is a tie between the Lord's servants that exists among no other persons.

### ***San Diego and Los Angeles***

After inspecting the premises at Beth-Sarim, the house in San Diego held in trust by the Society for the faithful men of old and dedicated to them, and after

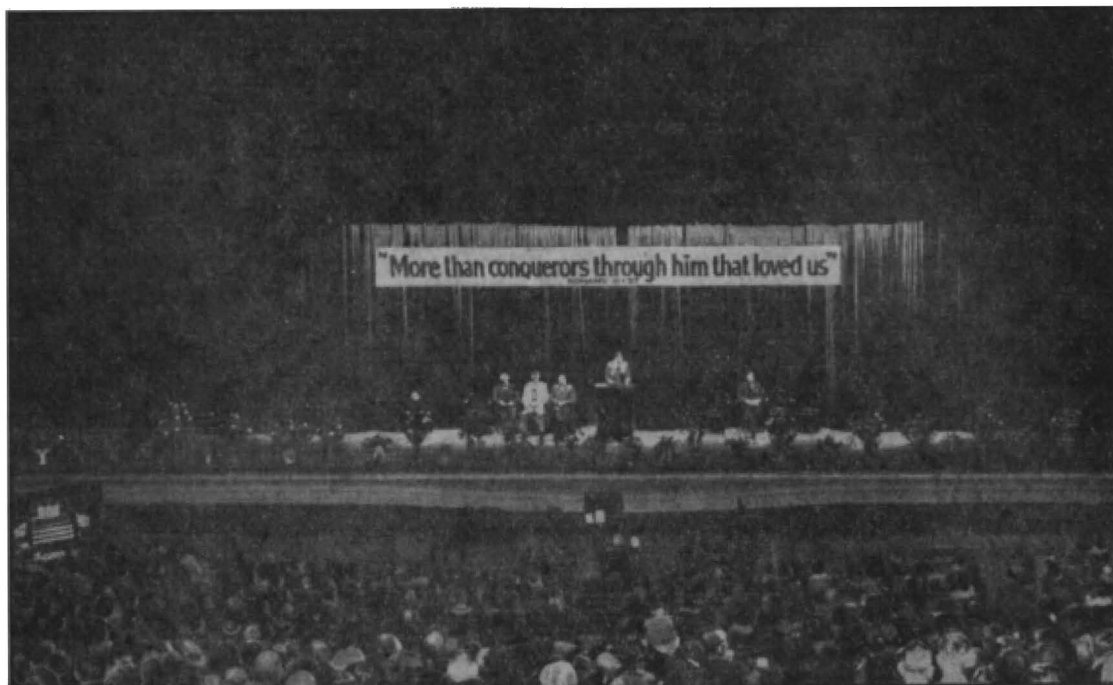
the delivery of a speech at the Kingdom Hall of Jehovah's witnesses in San Diego, the president arrived in Los Angeles March 12 to attend the convention that was to open the following day. It was to be a two-day assembly, the climax being the delivery of the speech "Fighting for Liberty on the Home Front" (the one Seattle officials "sand-bagged" the Constitution in a futile effort to prevent).

The opening day saw the arrival of several thousand witnesses from all parts of California, Arizona, and other western states. The day was spent in advertising the public lecture to be given on the morrow, and in listening to discourses in the late afternoon and evening at the Shrine Ballroom. Seven thousand were in attendance at the evening session, the highlight of which was the president's speech based on the fourth chapter of first Peter. Read it in the *Watchtower* magazine (May 15 issue) and you will appreciate to some extent



President of the Society addressing Assembly at Shrine Ballroom





Delivering address "Fighting for Liberty on the Home Front" in Shrine Auditorium, Los Angeles, California

the joy and satisfaction of those privileged to hear it.

The big day, Sunday the 14th, opened with the assembly for immersion. Thereat 143 symbolized their consecration to do the Lord's will, following which the witnesses preached the gospel and invited Los Angeles residents to the afternoon meeting. Long before three o'clock, the time set for the public lecture, the Shrine Auditorium was packed out by some 7,000 people. The adjoining ball-room was connected by wire and loudspeakers and an overflow crowd of 1,000 assembled there and heard the speech. Hearty approval of the talk was manifested by the repeated applause of the vast audience. Jehovah's witnesses' fight for liberty, the fearless exposure of the mortal enemies of freedom, in the vanguard of whose ranks tramps the totalitarian Roman Catholic Hierarchy, all supported by indisputable proof, thrilled the freedom-lovers there gathered. Freedom-loving Catholics in the audience ap-

preciated the distinction made between the Hierarchy and laity, otherwise called the "Catholic population", and saw that the things declared were in their behalf and uttered without malice. Tremendous applause at the conclusion of the lecture testified to its whole-hearted acceptance by the 8,000-listeners.

The convention closed that evening by the unanimous adoption of a resolution that reaffirmed each one's determination to carry out to the full his covenant obligations toward Jehovah God, and by parting counsel and admonition given in an informal manner by the Society's president. Faithful continuance in well-doing, regardless of how near Armageddon is, was the firm resolve each Theocratic publisher carried away in his heart.

From Los Angeles the two travelers journeyed to Seattle, where the democratic liberties enjoyed in other cities could not be realized till a strenuous battle had been waged. The city officials

of Seattle may or may not be able to justify their disgraceful conduct before their fellow townsmen; surely they will fail to justify before Jehovah God their persecution of His witnesses. Of Jehovah's servants it is written: "He that toucheth you toucheth the apple of his eye."—Zechariah 2:8; Romans 12:19; 14:12.

Homeward bound, after Seattle the president addressed 1,200 witnesses in Minneapolis, Minn. Then on to Chicago to attend to the Society's business there. The Watchtower Bible College of Gilead, near Ithaca, New York, was next on the itinerary. Here two busy days were spent with the faculty and students, including the delivery of an hour lecture. Three hours after that talk the travelers were on a train speeding toward New York city and the Society's headquarters, and home.

### ***Victory Sure***

All of Jehovah's witnesses lead a busy life, regardless of their position in God's organization. On each one rests the command given 19 centuries ago by their Leader: "This gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations." (Matthew 24:14) Jehovah's witnesses will obey that command by God's grace and in His strength. They will fight every inch of the way for their liberty to preach. Liberty to thus truly worship Jehovah is upheld by the Constitution of the United States, and, above all, is granted by the Almighty God of the universe. Puny man cannot prevent the fulfillment of Christ's words of Matthew 24:14. (Jeremiah 1:19) Jehovah's faithful witnesses will share in the final victory.—Romans 8:31.

---

## **Guerrilla Warfare on Huge Scale**

**R**EPORTS that trickle through from Yugoslavia show that guerrilla warfare has been conducted on a huge scale, despite the mass executions which the Yugoslavs calculate to have taken place to the extent of almost a half-million human creatures. In order to succeed, the Pacilli-Hitler conspiracy feels that nobody may be spared to continue the fight for liberty. It is the horrid old Inquisition all over again, with the Gestapo as the inquisitors and the Nazi troops as the executioners.

A Yugoslav spokesman in London, referring to the fact that at that time (October 31, 1941) there was a guerrilla army of 80,000 fighting the German and Italian occupation troops on a 125-mile front in the Serbian hills, made the statement that there was strong evidence of an attempt to incite a religious war between the Serbs and the Croats. He said that 24 members of the Orthodox (non-Catholic) Serbian Church had been condemned to die for sabotage in one

town. Massacres have been common occurrences.

Another London report has it that in six weeks the guerrillas wiped out 12,000 occupation troops, blew up nearly 200 bridges, destroyed 400 petrol, food and munition dumps, and wrecked 17 trains. In reprisals, in one instance, 2,300 Serbians were put to death for 26 German deaths, a ratio of almost a hundred to one. And reprisals continued into 1942 on a large scale.

Whole towns have been wiped out, dive-bombers and tanks being used in the work of destruction. Shootings and hangings have been the order of the day in Serbian sections.

One reporter stated that "more than 200,000 persons were deported from Slovenia to Serbia", and that there were more than 80,000 child refugees in the country. Shortage of food and other necessities has resulted in terrible hardship, and a greatly increased death rate among the Serbian population.

## Governor Bricker, of Ohio, for President (!)

**"REVEREND"** JOHN W. BRICKER, chaplain long enough to see him through World War No. 1 and thereafter an open politician, wants Good Friday hereafter made a day of prayer. This is also the desire of the Roman Hierarchy, whose choice for governor he is. John is very eager to do what the Roman Hierarchy wants done. He is all for "religion", particularly the Roman variety. He views with profound approval the opinion of his attorney general that religious instruction should be given in Ohio's public schools and by persons other than the school faculties. He knows that this proposition is unconstitutional on the face of it, but views it with approval nevertheless. He also smiles with approval upon mistreatment of little witnesses of Jehovah in the same public school. They have no business to become familiar with the Scriptures and to believe them, to rely upon them and shape their conduct accordingly; so away with all who refuse to bow down to images or salute "any likeness of any thing" in heaven above or in the earth beneath.

Thoroughly imbued with the totalitarian spirit, which he manifested to the full in 1940 in his total disregard of a petition signed by over two million fellow Americans asking him to safeguard the American rights of freedom of speech, worship and assembly, he can yet give lip service to these fundamental principles. In an address in New York, recently, he expressed his concern lest the United States government "destroy the precious American freedom which it professes to serve". He is judging others by himself. Why did he not do something about preserving these precious American freedoms in his own state and in his own city, Columbus, when he had the chance to do it? Because he wanted to please the Hierarchy, and made a good start for them when he turned away

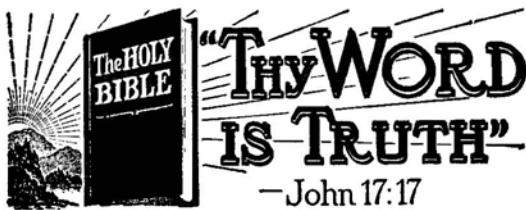
Jehovah's witnesses, who had arranged to meet in the Ohio State Fair Grounds in 1940, but were intolerantly excluded and forced to make other arrangements for a mammoth convention at the last minute. Bricker's hat is in the ring for the presidency and he has a good line, but when it comes to deeds he is found wanting. His tribute to American fundamentals is lip service.

---

### Teapot Tempests

◆ Every now and then—or ever and anon—we read where a great "to do" has been kicked up over the failure of some 8-year-old kid to salute the flag in school. On such occasion, the discoverer of such "treasonable" deportment is apt to get all wrought up and imbued with a sense of heroism—and usually with a keen appreciation of publicity to boot. Folks who never heard a shot fired in anger, and never expect to if there is any alternative, seize on such episodes for an orgy of righteousness and patriotic effusions. The proper authorities are heard from in no uncertain terms, the kid is probably expelled from school, the parents, usually members of some religious sect that seems eccentric to the neighbors, are made to feel the weight of popular indignation and virtue triumphant.

It does seem that vaunted American horse sense would teach us that there is no menace to our institutions in the existence of hard-headed non-conformists of the type referred to. A fifth columnist, saboteur or other insidious creature would be far too smart to make an issue of such a thing as saluting the flag. It might pay this country to take a little more interest in the doings of some folks who go right on saluting the flag, paying lip service to the things for which the flag stands. The best and most patriotic among us is not always the chap who salutes the snappiest or hollers the loudest.—Montgomery (Ala.) *Advertiser*.



## The Oath-bound Covenant

**D**OING the will of Jehovah God has never been popular on earth. Among those who long ago tried to do His will was a man named Abram, whose name was later changed to Abraham. "And he was called the Friend of God." (James 2: 23) Abraham's wife was named Sarah.

When Abraham was seventy-five years old Jehovah said to him: "Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: and I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: . . . and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed." (Genesis 12: 1-3) Abraham with his wife and others left Ur of the Chaldees for the land of Canaan. When they had reached a place in that land known as Sichem, the Lord appeared to him and said: "Unto thy seed will I give this land." There Abraham built an altar, and the place has since been known as Bethel, which means "house of God". Afterward Abraham dwelt in the plains of Mamre, just above the present location of Hebron in the southern part of Palestine. While there, God made a covenant or solemn contract with him, saying: "Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates." —Genesis 15: 18.

Thereafter when Abraham was ninety-nine years old, Jehovah God appeared to him and said: "I will make my covenant between me and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly, . . . and thou shalt be a father of many nations. And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed

after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God." (Genesis 17: 2, 4, 8) Some time later, when Abraham was sitting at the door of his tent, which was pitched in the plains of Mamre, there stood before him three men, messengers from Jehovah. Abraham prepared refreshments for his distinguished visitors; and "he stood by them under the tree, and they did eat". Here it was that the messengers of Jehovah told Abraham that he and his wife Sarah would be given a son.—Genesis 18: 1-14.

In due time a son was born to Abraham and Sarah, and his name was called "Isaac", meaning "laughter". (Genesis 21: 1-3) Afterward, when the son Isaac had grown up, Jehovah put Abraham to a great test, and in doing so He made a picture which foreshadowed the redemption of the obedient ones of humankind. God said to Abraham: "Take now thy son, thine only son Isaac, whom thou lovest, and get thee into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell thee of." (Genesis 22: 2) It is interesting to note here that Mount Moriah is inside of the walls of the present city of Jerusalem. It was the site of the temple built by King Solomon, and is supposed to be the very spot where Abraham was met by Melchizedek, king of Salem. It is the place where Abraham was directed to offer his son.

Providing himself with wood to be used for the fire, Abraham and his son and servants journeyed for three days from the plains of Mamre to Moriah; and, arriving there, he at once prepared for the burnt offering. Isaac was not aware of the purpose of his father to offer him; so he said to his father: "Behold the fire and the wood; but where is the lamb for a burnt offering? And Abraham said, My son, God will provide himself a lamb for a burnt offering." He then informed his son that he was to be the offering. Then Abraham bound Isaac



and laid him upon the altar and stretched forth his hand and took the knife with which to slay his son. This was a great test to Abraham's faith. Isaac was his only son by his beloved wife Sarah, and Abraham loved him dearly; but Jehovah had commanded him to offer up Isaac as a sacrifice, and because of his love for God Jehovah he proceeded to obey God's command. As he raised his hand to strike dead his only beloved son, "the angel of the LORD called unto him out of heaven, and said, Abraham, . . . Lay not thine hand upon the lad, neither do thou any thing unto him: for now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son, from me." When Abraham looked about he saw a ram caught in a thicket near by, and he took the ram and offered it up.

Then "the angel of the LORD called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time, and said, By myself have I sworn, saith the LORD; for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son; That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies: and in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed."—Genesis 22:15-18.

Here Abraham was a type or prophetic pattern of Jehovah God himself, while Isaac was a type of Jesus, the beloved Son of Jehovah. Abraham's offering his beloved son on the altar pictured how God in due time would offer His only begotten Son as a great sacrifice that men of faith might be redeemed from death and have an opportunity to live. Abraham did not, as indeed he could not, understand God's purposes, for the reason that Jehovah did not reveal them to him; but he knew that God had here confirmed His covenant with him and bound it with His oath. Abraham knew that by these two certain and unchangeable things, God's word and His oath, God would carry out His

covenant in due time, resulting in the blessing of all believing, obedient ones of the nations and families of earth.

The word "covenant" means "contract"; and it is the solemn form for expressing a compact, or agreement, or contract between parties, whereby each party to the contract promises to do a certain thing. With Jehovah a covenant or contract is sacred and inviolate; for Jehovah changes not. (Malachi 3:6) Having promised it, He will fulfill it. (Hebrews 6:18) It is always necessary that there be two parties to a contract; there may be more. Where one party thereto is the only one bound to do a certain thing that contract is called "unilateral", or one-sided; and where both parties are bound to perform certain things, it is "bilateral" (two-sided).

This oath-bound covenant which Jehovah made with Abraham contained no conditions or limitations. It was merely a promise by Jehovah bound by His oath, and is therefore properly called a "unilateral or one-sided covenant"; for the reason that God's purpose was and is to carry out His purpose to bless the human race, regardless of what anyone may or may not do. There was no need for Him to make any conditions to the covenant. He merely announced His purpose to provide a government whereby faithful ones of humankind should be blessed. This covenant does not even say that their blessing will follow on condition that Abraham should do a certain thing. It does not say every person will be blessed with life everlasting, but does say that the blessing will extend to those of every nationality or national and racial family; and other scriptures throughout the Bible show that such ones avail themselves of the blessing by accepting God's provision in faith and thereafter obeying Him faithfully and with integrity unto the final test. To this effect the promise reads, according to the Hebrew text: "So shall all the nations of the earth bless themselves in thy seed."—Genesis 22:18, *Rotherham*.

## The Deflation of Marshal Petain

**T**HE minute some human demands that you fall down and worship him, that minute you know he is of no good, can do no good, and could not be trusted to pound sand into a rathole. And that holds good for the cowardly, untrustworthy, idolized Marshal Petain, as this article will make clear. To start with, Marshal Petain got his power in the dark, and straightway disowned the source from which his power came, i. e., the French Republic, which is now in ruins because of his failure (for reasons best known to himself) to do his duty. How would you like it if some president of the United States who was asked by Congress to take the helm in an emergency would come out with a blast like this one only fourteen months later, which is what Petain stooped to do, by broadcast on August 13, 1941:

Authority no longer emanates from below. The only authority is that which I entrust or delegate. To my government I shall leave the necessary initiative, but in various fields I intend to trace for it a very clear line. This is what I have decided:

1. Activity of political parties and groups of political origin is suspended until further notice in the unoccupied zone. These parties may no longer hold either public or private meetings. They must cease any distribution of tracts or notices. Those that fail to conform to these decisions will be dissolved. (2) Payment of Members of Parliament is suppressed as of September 30th.

### ***"Petain Was Joffre's Headache"***

That's the title of a column story by Judith Robinson in *The Vancouver Province* of June 11, 1941. Lengthy quotations are given from Joffre's Memoirs regarding Petain's "pessimism" at Verdun, his repeatedly letting "himself be impressed by the enemy", his always seeing "the bad side of things", and his "foreshadowed withdrawals which it was dangerous to suggest to soldiers as possibilities". Quotations are also given

from the diary of President Poincare. He mentions that Clemenceau had (March 25, 1918) been to see Petain and "reproached him with making proposals which showed an exaggerated pessimism".

Clemenceau took me aside and said: "Petain's pessimism is distressing. He has said something to me that I do not wish to confide in anyone but you. It is this: 'The Germans will beat the English in this campaign; after that they will beat us too. Should a general speak or even think like that?'"

Clemenceau quoted Joffre as saying, "Petain has the same weakness he showed when he wished to abandon Verdun." Also, when Foch heard that Petain had said, "We must prepare to make peace offers," he replied to his informant, "It is insanity. We have had others like him."

There has been so much newspaper slop about this "good marshal", this "brave marshal" who said "They shall not pass", and who was supposed to represent the best there is in France, that maybe these facts will let a little air out of his tire and put him down on the rim with the rest of humanity.

In 1941 and 1942 Russia bore the brunt of the burden in the fight against Hitler's "Holy" Roman Empire, and therefore was actually fighting France's battles for her, yet this man Petain wrote to General Labonne, French commander at the front in Russia, standing alongside Hitler, and fighting his battles, and those of the pope, that he was upholding "a part of our military honor".

Some honor! Encourage those that stab your friends in the back, even while those same friends are fighting your battles.

### ***"We Are Whipped," "We Are Whipped"***

No man is licked until he admits it. Look at Eddie Rickenbacker. He has been killed and lost so many times that it has become a habit. But every time

he is dead he kicks the cover off the coffin and comes back as good as ever. A century ago, in one of the most famous prize fights on record, the winner in a 60-round fight fought the last 40 rounds with his right hand broken. But his opponent did not know it.

Pétain is always licked. When invited to address the twentieth anniversary celebration of the return of Alsace-Lorraine to France (this was in 1938) he started off, blue as indigo, telling his hosts that "the future that looked so fair in 1918 looks so much darker now".

When the Germans were closing in on Paris and the French premier Reynaud had to flee, he wanted to go to Algiers and take his government with him, and that would have been the sensible thing for him to do; but Pétain opposed it. Reynaud, when he should have been at his best, was at his worst, and gave in, but that does not excuse Pétain.

Whipped to start with, Pétain has been whipped ever since. When in the summer of 1942, a group of war prisoners returned from Germany, Pétain greeted them with this welcome to the sick and disheartened ex-soldiers:

A nation corrects itself only after an unhappy war. It is cruel, but it is true. A nation has to be whipped sometime. We were crushed; we were whipped. I pass my time trying to convince Frenchmen that we were whipped.

Do you see anything manly about that?

The British were not fooled. In less than two weeks after Pétain's puppet regime was set up in Vichy Great Britain repudiated its course of "complete capitulation" as a stab in the side of her British ally whom she had solemnly promised she would never conclude a separate peace with Hitler. The British have no use for Pétain.

### ***"France's Treacherous Pétain"***

If you wish to see a whole page of interesting information and pictures on this subject, you will find it in the *Herald*, Miami, Florida, Sunday, October 18, 1942. The Catholic censorship is rather

weak in Florida, and, anyway, in some way this page got through. This was written especially for the *Herald* by Ralph Goll, and Goll evidently knows what he is talking about. A few sample quotations give an idea:

There are two Pétains, one a mythical hero, the other an aged poltroon who straddles the neck of his abject people like the old man of the sea.

Lacking the courage to become an outright traitor to the democratic government of his fatherland before 1940, he waited with a horrible patience for an hour of national weakness when he could strike with safety—waited decade after decade while his contemporaries, good and bad, surrendered their lives and ambitions to the grave. Indeed, there is something about this reptilian ancient more inhuman than the most bestial qualities in the character of the German *fuehrer*.

Given the choice of fighting to the end or being tried and perhaps shot by a firing squad, Pétain hid himself in the subterranean galleries of the citadel (Verdun) and issued an order of the day containing the four deathless words, "Ils ne passeront pas!" ["They shall not pass!"]. It is to be doubted whether he originated the motto, for he never afterward demonstrated any aptitude at turning an incisive phrase.

It is a matter of record that the Old Tiger (Clemenceau), mistrusting all French military leaders except Joffre and Foch with good reason, was particularly suspicious of Pétain and Weygand. Some of his remarks about the pair are unprintable. Joffre thought that Pétain "lacked character". Foch thought that he "lacked a sense of responsibility". Poincaré thought that he "lacked faith in the Allied cause".

Here is something about Pétain's trip to America, from the same interesting story:

After the observances on the field where Lafayette and Washington had fought together, the wily Pétain, adept at fooling the press and public, put over a hoax which deceived some of America's keenest reporters. Announcing that he would return immediately to his home land, he was embarked on a

CONSOLATION

French destroyer at Newport News with great state. The vessel vanished. Days later reporters learned that Petain had debarked again at Boston in civilian clothes and had been making the rounds of New York's hot spots with Jimmy Walker, the mayor of that day.

It is said that Petain wishes to be buried at Verdun (where he himself was a failure, but became newspaper heir to the honors that should have gone to the real hero of Verdun, General Nivelle). Thus the monumental frauds of his life are to be continued after death. Probably "They shall not pass!" will be his epitaph.

### ***Petain Hates Republics***

It is plain from the record, and from his own statements, that Petain hates all republics, as every fanatical Catholic is bound to do. He denounced the French Republic just four months, to the day, from the time Hitler marched into Paris, and in that same message covertly denounced America, saying that France must "free herself from the so-called traditional friendships", in which he meant America and Britain.

The New York *World-Telegram* had a column dispatch from its Washington correspondent which conveyed this information, well known to everybody in the State department:

Marshal Petain himself is not only an arch conservative, but is completely surrounded by the men who are really responsible for the weakness and defeat of France.

He picked the kind of men he likes, and the kind of man he is.

The New York *Weekly People* has this about him:

Petain is a Fascist. He was a Fascist long ago, was the mentor of the Spanish butcher Franco. As France's ambassador to Spain he collaborated with his protege in destroying the republic. As Chief of State he proclaimed the "new order", the rule of the "elite", and announced that his regime would "decimate" radicals and Marxists. He demanded imperiously of the French people that they follow him "without mental reservation along the

path of honor [?] and national interest". Of the Nazi conquerors he observed: "When she [France] examines the principles which made her enemies victorious, she is surprised to recognize in all of them a little of her own self, her best and most authentic tradition." [The real reason for that is that both he and Hitler are under control of their common master, the Jesuits.]

Every reader of this magazine knows that one of the principal organizations working for the downfall of the French Republic was the Catholic organization Croix de Feu. As a matter of course, the founder of that organization, Col. Francois de la Rocque, has been entrusted with a special mission and attached to old Mr. Petain's secretariat.

### ***All Murderers Live in Trembling***

It is bad business, being a murderer, because murder will out. Shortly before the establishment of the Petain regime in July, 1940, Marx Dormoy, minister of the interior in Leon Blum's Popular Front cabinet, denounced Petain, predicted the ultimate defeat of Hitler, and declared that the Petain outfit, after being overthrown, would be regarded in French history as a government of cowards and traitors. He declared that he expected to be killed for declaring the truth, and told his friends that if he was killed they would know who did it. He was assassinated with a bomb, and the American Union for Democratic Action charged the Petain government with direct complicity in the murder. Of course, the Vichy government began an inquiry. If you kill anybody, it is best to at once investigate the matter and prove yourself innocent, so that there is no chance of the truth's coming to light.

The only organization that Petain tolerates is the French Legion, which corresponds to the American Legion in America.

Petain's Labor minister, Hubert Lagardelle, is regarded as an authority on the corporate state, the idol of all Fascists.



## ***A Traitor of the First Degree***

Everybody has seen in the papers how Petain has given France to Hitler, body and soul, but they have not been told the truth that this was done because these two Catholics are of one mind with the pope in the whole affair. If he was of any good, what was to hinder his taking a plane and flying to Algiers and thereby giving his friend Hitler something to really think about? And the people of France would have been benefited if the plane had dropped into the Mediterranean when he was halfway across.

Pierre Cot, former French minister of aviation, says that Petain is completely under the Nazi thumb. He is in position to know. Petain himself has broadcast that collaboration with Germany offers the only hope for France. It is hard to collaborate in zero weather with anybody who demands one article of your clothing after another until finally he insists that you give up your BVD's and your socks. Petain says that what he wants is "an authoritative hierarchical social state". What he really wants is to see a resurrection of the "Holy" Roman Empire with the pope riding on top of the whole crazy outfit.

A sickeningly clever feature of Petain's submission to Hitler is found in softly worded surface criticisms of Petain found in French papers but of German origin. The object, of course, is to gradually wear the French people out, leading them to believe, to their ruin, that Petain is defying and resisting the Germans, whereas he is doing nothing of the kind, but co-operating enthusiastically.

As a double-crosser, Petain has put it over in such good shape that even so well-informed a man as the columnist William Philip Simms describes him as "the most widely revered public figure in France". Revered for what? He has such consummate gall that the oath of office of all his henchmen is an oath pledging loyalty to the chief of state (himself) without any further specific

designation. Petain ought to take something for that malady. He has been imbibing too much of Babylon's wine.

It is known and admitted on Petain's behalf that he has had a lifelong contempt for the French Republic. It is known and admitted that while he was ambassador to Spain he was "tremendously impressed" with the pattern of government of Franco the Butcher. And every true American and every true Britisher who knows of the acts of this monster in turning over the officials of the Spanish Republic to Franco to be murdered can view him only with hatred and contempt, and consider him as what he is at heart, a beastly, cowardly murderer of his fellow men who had a right to the refuge they had found in France, and from which he expelled them to go to their doom.

---

## **Hitlerites in Louisiana**

◆ Hitlerites in the state of Louisiana passed a law modeled after a similar law in Mississippi, suggested by Vatican City's "fifth column", making it a misdemeanor for any person to advocate "an attitude of stubborn refusal to salute, honor, or respect, any flag, standard, color or ensign of the United States of America or of the State of Louisiana". It is admitted on all hands that this law was passed especially and particularly and solely to try to "get" Jehovah's witnesses, which makes it ridiculous on its face.

## **The Republic Thunderbolt P-47**

◆ The Republic Thunderbolt P-47, equipped with 2,000-horsepower Pratt and Whitney engines, is believed to be able to outfly and outfight any other known ship. It carries enough guns to generate at top firing speed an impact equal to that of a five-ton truck hitting a brick wall at 60 miles an hour. It has done 680 miles an hour in a power-dive test. It weighs 13,500 pounds and is 41 feet at the wing tips.

## "Catholic France"

QUITE frequently prominent churchmen speak of "Catholic France" or describe her as "Eldest daughter of the church", and other churchmen refer to her as a nation swallowed up in infidelity. Fulton J. Sheen, one of America's Catholic apologists, had the bad taste, after Canada was already in the war, to visit that country, after France was ruined, and tell how glad he was, because France had found her soul, or words to that effect.

Like every member of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, Mr. Sheen was and is glad indeed to see the French Republic in ruins. He figures that with such the case the Singing Harlot has a better chance of riding in triumph once more. The Hierarchy hates every republic and seeks its destruction, particularly France.

Spokesmen for the French people have often found occasion to give expression to the resentment they feel at their betrayal by Les Cagoulards, the Catholic secret society that planned surrender to the Germans long before it took place. In the New York *Times* Hans Habe told in detail how the entire French front was moved back in Belgium as a result of a conspiracy on the part of the generals, which conspiracy was well known among the men, as well as among the officers.

Later, the New York *Times* had the enfeebled courage to say that "as a matter of fact, the 'New Order' in France has been at pains to conciliate the Catholic Church". Of course it has. It is like a mother throwing her babies to the crocodiles. The minute she runs out of babies, down she goes into the cavernous maw herself.

### ***A Ravenous Appetite for Power***

There is not in all the earth, and there never has existed in the past, any organization so wholly selfish and so merciless in its search for power as the Roman

Catholic Hierarchy. And in this search it is wholly devoid of the slightest aspect of true Christianity. Thus, it is only a little way back to the summer of 1935 and at that time the Catholic-Fascist party in France (obviously representing the wishes of the Hierarchy) issued a manifesto in which it said: "The hour has come. Free-masonry must be struck down. A struggle to the death has been begun against it and the national forces (meaning all French subjects of the pope) must now fight without truce or respite." What was all the noise about? Well, the answer came five days later when the pope conferred the "Supreme Order of Christ" on Albert Lebrun, president of the French Republic. It was like, in its intent, to the medal of something or other, or Supreme Order of Gregory the Great, conferred on the murderer Gomez, dictator of Venezuela, and on Martin T. Manton, peddler of "justice" in New York, who fixed it up to send Judge Rutherford and his companions to Atlanta Penitentiary. The big idea is that if you wish to double-cross somebody, you confer the "Supreme Order of Christ" on the bird who does the dirty work for you. And what is more, it *works*. The pope says that the "New Order" is old; and on that one point he is right. It worked all right in the massacre of the Huguenots, didn't it? The pope gave a medal then, and Hitler is as sure of one as Franco and Mussolini.

*The Monitor* (Catholic paper, published in San Francisco) is authority for the statement that "only one-eighth of the people of France are practical Catholics". That means there are 5,000,000 who believe in it (or try to do so) and 35,000,000 who realize that there is something rotten, and not so far away as Denmark either.

There is no question about the accuracy of *The Monitor's* information. *The Catholic World* (issue of March, 1938) sadly acknowledged (and these facts,

though of no consequence in themselves, mean a lot to the Hierarchy):

Something like ten percent of the French people are unbaptized, not a quarter fulfill their Easter duties, and not quite a fifth attend Mass regularly on Sunday.

Richard Aldington, in the *London News Chronicle*, offers some explanations. Suggesting that the French are great individualists, and that the principal thing in which they agree is that they all eat chicken on Sunday, he adds:

The French townsman is often a Voltairian freethinker, while in the country there are large areas of bigoted Catholicism. . . . And religion is neither popular nor powerful. I have seen a notice in French churches to the effect that, for lack of candidates, ten thousand French parishes are without priests.

### ***Separation of Church and State***

A capable writer in the *Toronto Sentinel* (November, 1930), under the title "France Prospered when the Roman Catholic Church Lost Its Power; Public School System, Divorce of Church and State Strike Blow at Rome", makes the whole subject plain as to just how the French people actually feel toward this abomination going by the name of a "church", which, using Hitler as a tool, has now robbed them of all their liberties. Manifestly thoroughly familiar with this important subject, he says:

France owes her present greatness, her internal peace and prosperity and her ardent, fruitful spirit of patriotism in no small measure to the so-called *lois laïque*, i. e., that body of laws which ordains the absolute separation of Church and State.

Both the enactment and the enforcement of these laws had encountered the almost mad-dened hostility of the popes. The popes felt instinctively that after the fat centuries of concordats, Rome was in no position to face an absolute divorce from the secular power. Indeed, when the *lois laïques* went into effect the Church, strongly aided by contributions of wealthy American Romanists (among them the relatives of a great cable magnate), sent

millions of dollars into France to absorb the first terrific shock.

Rome found to be true what she had feared: the people of France turned away from the support of Romanism just as soon as the State had discontinued its functions as a tax-gatherer for the needs of the papal organizations. Although the French hierarchy, acting under orders from Rome, proclaimed free pews and special indulgences, the churches were emptied almost over night and the paying faithful dwindled to a very small minority. A great fact, which had long existed, now became most widely apparent. Rome had little hold on the people of France.

Within two decades of the enforcement of the *lois laïque* the revenues of the Roman church in France fell off more than seventy percent. Slowly but surely the other beneficial effects of the new laws were made visible. The political power of Rome began to wane, until today (1930) Rome has scarcely a single representative in the parliament of the republic. The France of the Bourbons and of the first and third empire has disappeared forever. [Within ten years from the time these brave words were written, Adolf Hitler and his armies were in Paris and the Jesuits were back in full control.—*Ed.*]

Compelled to stand entirely upon her merits as a spiritual force, the church of Rome all but collapsed. The number of her followers and her churches decreased steadily, her hierarchy, at one time a great factor in the public life of France, speedily lost its ancient prestige, her parochial schools were practically swept out of existence.

The new laws, placing the control over public education entirely in the hands of the State, had dealt a crushing blow to Romanism, a blow from which that system has never recovered and is not likely to recover. A new generation has grown up in France altogether free from the shackles of superstition and the debasing effects of priestcraft.

The indications of this mighty and salutary change are apparent on every side. A few years before the war (1914-1918) I rode in a horse carriage from Cherbourg to Lisieux, the heart of old Normandy. All along the road one could still see the ugly symbols of Roman-

ist superstition—little wooden posts with burning souls in purgatory, statues and statuettes of twisted, epileptic-looking saints, blood-smeared crucifixes, etc., etc. A few days ago I went over the same road in a motorbus and all these hideous objects had disappeared with but one or two exceptions. This is all the more remarkable when one remembers the centuries of Romanist influence and tradition in Normandy, especially the rural parts of it. Perhaps this is a small matter, but it surely is characteristic and significant.

### ***How About Joan of Arc?***

How about Joan of Arc? Don't the fetes to her, the statues, the basilicas, and **all** the other trumpery associated with her name, including seven cardinals at one mass in her honor, show how close the French are to Catholicism? Nothing of the kind. This is all newspaper and church palaver which has for its object the publicity of the Roman Catholic Church. These fetes, observed every year, make "copy" for the newshounds, and all the "news"papers fall all over themselves to boost the claims of the Hierarchy, whether there is a bit of sense to it or, as in this case, the whole thing is nothing on earth but pure demonism.

The newshounds do not know any better, and so in their stories they give the whole thing dead away. Thus, they tell of—

the Chenu Woods, where she heard the voices of St. Michael, St. Marguerite and St. Catherine.

But they don't tell, and they can't, how the demons (devils, the Scriptures call them) laughed and poked one another in the ribs at the way they filled her mind with their tommyrot.

One of the bishops went to bat for a candle which he had "consecrated" to this poor, demonized creature, and this was what he got out of his system:

In these critical days it is proper that our eyes, our minds, our hearts should turn to St. Joan, liberator of the French motherland.

And this is the purpose of this candle. [What a lie! The bishop lit that candle merely to whoop up business for himself. He didn't care any more about Joan of Arc than do you, and maybe not half as much.] As long as our globe exists, this candle will burn for France: it will evoke her simple faith, her ardent patriotism, her unfailing courage, qualities which we need more than ever today. May the rays from this candle illumine our hearts and guide our minds as we face the problems before us.

For the love of common sense! Can you see how reverence for a candle lit by some priest in France, in honor of a woman who was demonized, and has been dead 500 years, will do anything to "illumine our hearts and guide our minds as we face the problems before us"? Joan is supposed to have liberated France from Britain, but just now the French people either wish they had never been liberated or else wish that the British, whom the priests and bishops so much loathe, would come back to France and chase away the Germans. Joan was condemned to death by a Roman Catholic bishop, and later was made a saint by the same outfit that killed her. Some consistency! Hitler also hears voices, the voices of demons, and he also, like Joan of Arc, is a disciple of the Catholic "church".

### ***Mock Heroics***

Christ never encouraged the apostles to indulge in mock heroics. He was never in a cathedral in his life, nor were any of the apostles. He never built a cathedral nor asked anybody else to do so; so what do you suppose was the real intent of the following paragraphs taken from a tale entitled "The Soul of Fighting France", which appeared in *Harpers Magazine* while World War No. 1 was in progress? Answering the question, the real object is to glorify the Roman Catholic Church and to help perpetuate some of her errors, first proclaimed by the Devil himself to mother Eve, that death is not death—"Ye shall not surely die."



At Baccarat in the Vosges back of the battle-line I attended vespers in the roofless, windowless cathedral. Snow drifted down on black-robed women, and among broken pillars soldiers knelt, preparing their souls for a possible death on the morrow. From the broken altar where no lights gleamed the intoning voice of the priest rose and fell, invoking aid and comfort for those heroic and bereft people. The very spirit of France brooded there, surmounting horror, ignoring booming guns, rising triumphant to heaven [?—*Ed.*] whose august dome roofed tragedy. . . .

It is a common thing for these poilus to claim that they see visions, and very proud is the man who can recount his experience with the occult. In St. Die sector the Christ is said to pass through the trenches the night before the attack. That sacred Wraith in trailing, luminous garments, a glory about Its head, bends here and there touching men who smile in their sleep and awake convinced that their hour to die is near. And they arise and go forth under screaming shells with calm acceptance. Later in a first base hospital deep in some dugout, while a surgeon probes for a bit of metal in that mangled body, a feeble hand will wave protest and lips will plead: "Let me go in peace. The White Christ came for me last night." So well known is this superstition that a gaudily colored postcard is sold among the rear trenches, and many a woman has received one soon after the death of her husband or her son. . . .

One hears on every side such expressions as "When I go on," or, "Tell my wife that I shall remain near her, and to fear nothing," or, "The good God surely would not take me so far away that I could not watch the battle and know the result."

The writer, assisted by a one-legged hero in a weather-stained uniform, was caring for a lonely grave in the Somme. He had survived many Hun onslaughts; his wife was a slave in Germany, his home a blackened ruin, and his children, God only knew where. He contemplated the rough cross with a smile.

Madame, never believe that such as he are dead. No! they live and not far away yonder among the clouds, but here, close to us, part of us. Their souls mingle with our souls, lend-

ing them added strength. With each battalion of living men there is another battalion of souls which lead us to victory. . . . Does not every man know that the battle of the Marne was won by the dead?

The dame who wrote that probably got a good price for her story, but it doesn't fit together very well. If the dead soldiers were leading the live ones, one is tempted to softly inquire, "Where is hell or purgatory?"

### *What Do the Religious People Do?*

Accepting as correct (barring maudlin yarns such as last mentioned) that the French people began to make real progress as they broke away from Roman Catholicism, it might be wondered how those who are in the religious business managed to get along when the people began to get their eyes open to how they had been deceived and racketeered. The answer is that they get the politicians to squeeze them into every job into which a nun or a priest can be jammed. In that way they manage to make an intake of the public tax money, and, oh, how those in the religious business do just love to feed at the public trough!

Take, for instance, the dirty business of running concentration camps, wherein today is probably to be found more human suffering than in any other like areas on earth. The French camps at Francillon and Vernet are probably as bad as anything elsewhere. The women, hundreds of them, and they were only suspects at that, were housed in the Petite Roquette prison where they were not permitted to read or do any sort of work, and were compelled to sit on little stools from ten in the morning until four in the afternoon in one central room, and were watched to see that they did not talk to each other. And, pray, who had this job of watching these poor unfortunates, to see that they did not say one kind or encouraging word one to another? *Nuns*. Who else but the Devil would want such a job at any price?

There is nothing in the Scriptures,

nor in common sense, making it necessary to have funeral "services" conducted by a priest or other clergyman. These do not believe the Bible statement that "the dead know not any thing", and hence do only harm when they confuse the people's minds by their fairy tales about matters of which they have not one spark of actual knowledge. Nevertheless, the people have been led to believe that such "services" are necessary or at least desirable, despite the entire absence of any advice on the subject in God's Word.

But at Montlucon, France, Count de Marcilly, 83, and a Catholic all his life, was refused burial by a priest because a paper with which he was connected had published something at which the pope had taken offense. Jesus could stand it to be crowned with thorns, but the pope, the so-called "vicar of Christ", couldn't even take an imagined slight from an aged man, and one of his own followers at that. No wonder France has been overrun with astrologers and with demonism in other forms.

### ***Was the "Church" Persecuted?***

The "church" admits and the facts agree that she persecutes all who do not agree with her. She even claims the right to murder them. But when she is crossed in the least she yells through the newshounds, and over the radio, and in every other way at her command, that she is being persecuted. What else would you expect? Without any reason she complained of what she thought Premier Leon Blum intended to do regarding the establishment of secular schools in Alsace and Lorraine. No such plan was even contemplated, but it gave the newspapers something to talk about and helped keep the "church" in the minds of the people.

M. Clemenceau, who, with Lloyd George and Woodrow Wilson, made the Treaty of Versailles and organized the League of Nations, would have nothing to do with the "church", yet when he lay

unconscious, and therefore could not prevent it, a priest came, and, admittedly uninvited, stood in the doorway and "bestowed his episcopal blessing on the unconscious man". What a dirty trick! and all just so that he could get his name in the paper!

The "church" is supposed to have great influence in heaven, and when the Germans started for Paris, in the spring of 1940, public prayers for an Allied victory were offered, first for one day in the cathedral of Notre Dame and then for three days in the Basilica Sacre Coeur. Nobody in heaven would listen, and in a few days the Germans were in the streets of Paris. The idea seems to be that Mary, or somebody else in heaven, maybe Peter, is persecuting the "church".

How careful the American newshounds are *not* to persecute the "church" was disclosed in the fall of 1940, when—but let somebody else tell it:

Less than a month after France had declared war on Germany the French Government discovered, just in the nick of time, a pro-Nazi conspiracy in Alsace, which, among other things, aimed at the treacherous surrender of the Maginot Line. The conspiracy was easily traced to clerical sources, to ecclesiastics of high standing and the editors and publishers of Roman Catholic publications. France had to act quickly or run the risk of having the Germans cross the Rhine and march into Strasbourg, the capital of Alsace. In this emergency there was no time for investigation, the government had to resort to immediate and sweeping measures. It ordered the complete evacuation of over a million people. Literally the whole population of Alsace was forced to leave its homes for the interior of France, the province of Dordogne in the southwestern part of the republic.\*

\**The Monitor* (Aurora, Mo.), which published the foregoing under the title "Where Is the Conscience of Our Press?" draws attention to the fact that "these and similar facts the press in this country has either willfully ignored or suppressed or else minimized in a fashion to warrant the reproach of misrepresentation". And, by the way, did you ever hear anything about this before?

A year after this extraordinary event, the London *Catholic Herald* let fall the remark that in Lorraine the local Nazi political leader "is often billeted in the priest's house, even though there may be plenty of vacant accommodation in the town". Where else would he go? Do not all of the gang have to get together so that they can talk their plans over? And what other place would be as safe as that of the ringleader, provided he is a priest, with a smell of sanctity?

### **What About Religion?**

Well, what about religion? Isn't there anything religious going on in France? Oh, yes; why, certainly! The London *Catholic Herald* says that "Paris gets back her relics: thorns from Christ's crown restored". One would think that if the relics are bogus, as without a doubt they are, anyone would be ashamed to be a partner in such an act of infamy, and if the relics were genuine it would seem as if even the most stupid would

be ashamed to preserve anything so used to defame God's holy name.

Another item says that, for the first time, Mother's Day has been widely celebrated. Is there anything about that in God's Word? No, nothing at all. But it's religious.

Another says that there are 30 Catholic papers in France. None of them in America are of any good. Are they any better in France? Ah, yes; but they tell about the prophecies of Nostradamus and Madeline Porzat. Isn't that something? Certainly it is. It is religious, and is therefore demonism.

Several Protestant editors, taking note of the new French regulations, that all men must marry or become priests and all women must become mere human incubators or become nuns, have remarked that to date "the pope is the winner in France". Quite so. Quite so. But it is a sorry victory indeed, won by the shabbiest and most unscrupulous means. France is Catholic in name only.

---

## "The Truth Shall Make You Free"

**T**HE truth is the Creator's message as found in His own Book the Holy Bible. Therein is set forth the sure, reliable tidings of hope, comfort, liberty, and life.

The Watchtower Society is pleased to announce the new WATCHTOWER EDITION of the King James Version of the Holy Bible. As an outstanding feature this Bible contains a 59-page concordance enabling you to find key Bible texts on any given subject. In addition, there is listed a helpful index of proper names, with their meaning, as well as a further section headed "God's Word on Vital Sub-

jects", containing fully quoted Bible texts on practical subjects, showing what God's Word teaches on such topics. These many features make this new Bible an effective aid to the study of God's Word.

It is printed on thin Bible paper, and bound in a durable maroon leatherette cover, with an overall size of 5" x 7 $\frac{1}{4}$ " x 1 $\frac{3}{8}$ ". You may obtain this new-edition Bible upon a contribution of \$1.00. By sending in your order this month you will receive, in addition, as a gift, the valuable Bible-study aid the 384-page book *THE NEW WORLD*.

**WATCHTOWER**

**117 Adams St.**

**Brooklyn, N. Y.**

Enclosed herewith is my contribution of \$1.00, for which please mail to me, postpaid, the Watchtower Edition of the Holy Bible and the book *The New World*.

Name .....

Street .....

City .....

State .....

## Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"

### "Unlearned and Ignorant Men"

**T**HE subject chosen, "Unlearned and Ignorant Men", is based on the scripture of Acts 4:13: "Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus."

Peter and John had been fishermen and they worked together at this occupation. Undoubtedly they could read and write and spoke the Aramaic language well, which was the common language of that day. They were unlearned, however, in the Hebrew tongue, and it would be impossible for them to go into the temple or synagogue and read the Hebrew Scriptures. These two men, however, in addition to their knowledge of the prophecies, had walked with Jesus for three and one-half years and learned the Word of God from Him. Having consecrated themselves to serve Jehovah, they would apply their minds to the words that Jesus taught them.

After Jesus' resurrection, His followers were provided with a comforter, the holy spirit, and this brought to their remembrance those things Jesus had told them. In their talks among the people they would quote accurately the prophets and the words of Jesus. Because Peter and John did this the scribes and Pharisees marveled and they talked about it or "took knowledge" of it among themselves.

The Pharisees knew that Peter and John's vocation was not obtained because of study in the seat of higher learning such as they occupied. Jesus stated (in Matthew 23) to the multitude, "The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat." (Verse 2) The Pharisees knew the law but did not observe it. Therefore Jesus admonished the people that they should 'do not after the works of the Pharisees', but 'do as they say'. Peter and John, not being brought up

in Moses' seat, took a course of action altogether different from that of the Pharisees. They practiced what they preached. They were not like professional theologians. Peter and John had gone to no college of higher learning, but as fishermen they knew the simple truths that led them to Christ. Therefore they forsook their profession and took up a new vocation, that of preaching the gospel of the Kingdom.

Parkhurst's Greek and English Lexicon shows that the Greek word for "unlearned" is *agrammatos*, which literally means *illiterate* or *unlearned* and is applied to mean they were ignorant of the Hebrew Scriptures. This would not mean, however, that they were ignorant of the Word of God. You will recall that Andrew, Peter's brother, who would probably have the same education as Peter and John, said: "We have found the Messiah [Messiah]." (John 1:41) This shows he must have been sufficiently acquainted with the prophecies concerning the coming of the Messiah to recognize Jesus when he saw Him, even though he was unlearned as far as Hebrew is concerned. Those scribes and Pharisees who had the knowledge of Hebrew and were professional theologians did not recognize the Messiah, even after three and a half years of ministry on the part of Jesus. It is not the worldly-wise man that is chosen as the follower of Christ, but the Scriptures show that "God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise".—1 Cor. 1:27.

In John 7:15 the record states, "The Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned?" Here Jesus had been preaching to the Jews and He showed His familiarity with the Hebrew Scriptures, but they knew he had not taken a course under the Pharisees; He was a carpenter's son. But Jesus answered them and said, "My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent



me." In other words, He was expressing the will of His Father as revealed in the Scriptures, and not putting on a show, such as the Pharisees would when expounding the Hebrew. Jesus was able to read the Hebrew text, for it is said of Him, in Luke 4: 16, 17: "And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias [Isaiah]. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the Lord is upon me." Here it is shown that Jesus was fully acquainted with the Hebrew language and He could read it and expound it, but there is no record that it was necessary for Him to go to a school of higher learning in order to acquire this knowledge. Because He was devoted to Jehovah and desired to equip himself sufficiently He not only spoke the Aramaic, the common language, but learned the Hebrew as well, but not under the tutoring of the scribes and Pharisees that sat in Moses' seat.

As to the part of the text, in Acts 4: 13, which says they noted that Peter and John were "ignorant", this word "ignorant" comes from the Greek word *idiotes*. The word "idiot" in the English comes from this Greek word, but in the apostles' day the word *idiotes* had a very different meaning from "idiot" in our English language of today. The real meaning of the word, according to Parkhurst, is "a common man" as opposed to a man either of power or of education or learning; "a person in a private station." It has the meaning further of "being uninstructed, unskilled, unlearned". The apostle Paul admits that he may not have used the very best of speech in his expression of the Lord's Word, although he was not an "ignorant" man, for he makes the statement to the Corinthians, at 2 Corinthians 11: 6: "But though I be rude [*idiotes*] in speech, yet not in knowledge." Here it is shown that

the tongue in which Paul was speaking may not have been the classical, theological, or collegiate Greek, and therefore to those of much higher learning in the Greek it may have appeared rude, but he does say that he did not appear ignorant in knowledge, for this he had from God.

From the Scriptures it is shown that the obligation to preach the gospel of the Kingdom falls upon all creatures who have made a covenant to serve God. These are not the learned men, such as the scribes and Pharisees, but "the common man". It is not the all-wise, and men of high station, that are selected to be the ministers of the gospel, but the poor of this world. To the rich man Jesus said, 'Sell all that you have, and give to the poor and follow me.' It was not his position in this world that qualified him to be a follower of Jesus; the only qualification that anyone needs to follow Jesus is to have knowledge of the Scriptures. It makes no difference whether the individual speaks English, Greek, or Spanish well; it is his knowledge of God's Word that is all-important. He can improve his language if he will try, and he should, but one who is well versed in the Scriptures will be able to fulfill his covenant with Jehovah God and to comfort those that mourn. One should not be ashamed to represent the Lord because he does not have a better education, which education the world offers. Rather he should now study and improve his speech, and let his light shine. It will not be the gracious words that flow from your lips, or the smooth speech, that will attract the people of good-will, but it will be your knowledge of the Scriptures, not your knowledge of the things of this world, for in all the latter you may be ignorant, unlearned, just the common man. You may be classed as an "idiot" because of your ignorance in mathematics, science, and many other things of higher learning. But it will be noted of you in the courts, in your house-to-house witness-

ing, and in the home book studies, that you have walked with Jesus, in that you know God's Word and follow in the footsteps of Christ Jesus. It is the understanding of Jehovah's Word and His

purpose, and your expression of that in your simple phrase, that will make the wise of this world marvel at you, though in their eyes you will be considered an ignorant and unlearned man.

---

## Why Leyden University Was Closed

**S**MUGGLED out of the Netherlands comes the moving tale of why Leyden University, the oldest and most famous in the country, was closed by the German authorities. They had ordered the dismissal of the university's most famous professor of civil and international law, Eduard Mauritius Meyers, not because he was not competent, but because he was a Jew.

On the morning of the dismissal Professor Rudolph Pabus Cleveringa addressed the faculty and in well-chosen and carefully-phrased language stated the truth, that Meyers had been dismissed, after thirty years of fruitful labor, "by a power that has no other support in heaven or on earth than brute force alone"; that "the Netherlands constitution does not distinguish between creed or race and the occupying power was obliged by international law to respect the country's laws, except where the absolute necessity of safeguarding its own military interests prevented it from doing so," and that "there was in this case not the slightest reason why the occupying power could not have left Meyers where he was".

It was because of this courageous statement of facts that the university was closed. The low gangsters responsible for the closing also hustled Professor Cleveringa off to a concentration camp, and quite likely he has by now been tortured to death. Professor Cleveringa's wife knew of his purpose to deliver this valedictory, and approved it, though both knew it meant his imprisonment. It is impossible not to admire them both.

There are no other heights of satisfaction as great as those which come

from doing what one believes to be just and right; and this is true even if those acts lead to martyrdom. Who were the most truly blessed in the day of the fiery furnace, Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego or the contemptible gangsters who arranged what they thought was their undoing? The three Hebrews said to Nebuchadnezzar, when he demanded to know why they had not bowed to his golden image, "We are not careful to answer thee in this matter." It was a good answer, an ample answer, the answer of men who had determined to do right though the heavens fall.

---

## No Cheese and Few Newspapers

♦ The Netherlands usually make 124,000 tons of cheese in a season, of which they exported almost half. Now it all goes to Germany and the Netherlands have it only in memory. All their cream goes to the Reich, and so do most of the canned and dried vegetables. All leather has been requisitioned and the wearing of wooden shoes is almost a necessity. Clothing, even if second-hand, is rationed. The Netherlands are a reading people, but 53 of its 140 daily newspapers have been closed down and 470 of its 600 other papers are also suspended.

## Washing Machines for Churns

♦ To step up the Netherlands butter production the Nazis sealed up all the privately owned butter churns. But now the yarn is that the Netherlands have discovered that they can make just as good butter with an American washing machine as they can with a churn; and so the battle goes on.

# FIGHTING FOR LIBERTY ON THE HOME FRONT



NOW, more than ever before, it is necessary for all lovers of liberty and truth to rally to the defense of these precious things. With millions of men on many fronts battling the totalitarian aggressors against freedom, liberty and truth, it is necessary that a vigorous and ceaseless fight for these same things be carried on on the home front. To this end the Watchtower Society has published a timely 32-page booklet entitled

## *Fighting for Liberty on the Home Front*

Never before has such an applicable and forceful fighting message been printed. Every liberty-loving person should read this new booklet. Send for your copy today; also for some additional copies for your friends. Your copies will be mailed to you prepaid upon your contribution of 5c each, or 10 copies for 25c.



12,000,000 copies  
already printed.  
It was released on  
April 1.

**WATCHTOWER**      **117 Adams St.**      **Brooklyn, N. Y.**

- ☐ Please mail to me a copy of *Fighting for Liberty on the Home Front*. Enclosed find 5c.
- ☐ Please mail to me 10 copies of *Fighting for Liberty on the Home Front*, for which I herewith contribute 25c.

Name .....

Street .....

City ..... State .....

# CONSOLATION

JOURNAL OF FACT, HOPE AND COURAGE

## Returning to American Fundamentals

The people of the United States are the sovereign power still

## The Depopulation of Norway

Hitler's systematic, deliberate plan to exterminate a nation

## Race Degeneracy, Why?

Provision for counteracting its downward course

## Letter to Seattle's City Council

Liberty-lover writes courteous letter to Seattle officials

## Is Mary the First of All Saints?

What the Scriptures say of Mary's place in God's kingdom



# Contents

Returning to American Fundamentals	3
They Believed God	4
The Servants of the People	5
The People the Sovereign Power	6
God's Law Changes Not	7
Jehovah's witnesses Have Rights	8
Constitutional Rights Inviolable	9
Glad to Obey the Law	11
Steps in the Depopulation of Norway	12
Exterminating Others Also	12
Other "New Order" Bestialities	13
Norsemen Take It Bitterly	14
Tyrants Can't Take It	16
"Thy Word Is Truth"	
Race Degeneracy, Why?	17
To Seattle's City Council	19
"Universal Super-Government Advocated"	20
Is Mary the First of All Saints?	21
"Never but One Shadow"	22
The Celebrated Guibord Case	22
If Hitler Should Disappear	23
From Cyprus, "The Corner of the World"	24
"I and My House"	24
"Blameless in the Day of the Lord"	26
The Assembly at Johannesburg	26
Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"	
History of the Bible	29
Cargoes by Air	31

Published every other Wednesday by  
WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, INC.  
117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

## OFFICERS

President	N. H. Knorr
Secretary	W. E. Van Amburgh
Editor	Clayton J. Woodworth

Five Cents a Copy  
\$1 a year in the United States  
\$1.25 to Canada and all other countries

## NOTICE TO SUBSCRIBERS

**Remittances:** For your own safety, remit by postal or express money order. When coin or currency is lost in the ordinary mails, there is no redress. Remittances from countries other than those named below may be made to the Brooklyn office, but only by international postal money order.

**Receipt** of a new or renewal subscription will be acknowledged only when requested. **Notice of Expiration** is sent with the journal one month before subscription expires. Please renew promptly to avoid loss of copies.

**Send change of address** direct to us rather than to the post office. Your request should reach us at least two weeks before the date of issue with which it is to take effect. Send your old as well as the new address. Copies will not be forwarded by the post office to your new address unless extra postage is provided by you.

Published also in Greek, Portuguese, Spanish, and Ukrainian.

## OFFICES FOR OTHER COUNTRIES

England	34 Craven Terrace, London, W. 2
Australia	7 Beresford Road, Strathfield, N. S. W.
South Africa	623 Boston House, Cape Town
Mexico	Calzada de Melchor Ocampo 71, Mexico, D. F.
Brazil	Caixa Postal 1319, Rio de Janeiro
Argentina	Calle Honduras 5646-48, Buenos Aires

Entered as second-class matter at Brooklyn, N. Y., under the Act of March 3, 1879.

# Notanda

## Taming the Head-Hunters

◆ Ernie Pyle, war correspondent, tells of a conversation he had with a cartoonist about the time of the first great battle in the Solomon islands. The cartoonist said to him:

Isn't it ironic? For years both our countries have been sending missionaries to such places as those to tame the head-hunters. And now the head-hunters have to take to the jungle for safety, while we civilized people fight it out on their beaches.

That is only part of the problems confronting the head-hunters. They had almost as much reason to flee from the missionaries as from the machine guns. The former came to tell them that their ancestors are all in a blazing hell; the latter, to show them on the beaches what the missionaries think hell is like.

## The Ford Bombers B-24-E

◆ The Ford bombers B-24-E, now being produced at the alleged rate of one an hour, weigh 30 tons each, carry four tons of bombs, and can travel 3,000 miles at a speed of 300 miles an hour. It is a military secret how many employees are engaged in this work, but the preliminary estimates are that about 85,000 men and 25,000 women would be needed. The factory producing them was built in 13½ months and cost \$58,000,000. It is 3,200 feet long and 1,280 feet wide. These facts are gleaned from information published in the New York *World-Telegram* and the New York *Times* recently.

## Corn Belt vs. Meatless Days

◆ When farmers in America's corn belt heard talk about this country's having meatless days, they could not understand it. They thought that, with the most meat animals in history on their farms, and the crops the biggest and best, and 16 percent more cattle and hogs sent to the market in the first six months of 1942 than the year previous, there just must be a mistake somewhere.

CONSOLATION

# CONSOLATION

"And in His name shall the nations hope."—Matthew 12:21, A. R. V.

Volume XXIV

Brooklyn, N. Y., Wednesday, May 26, 1943

Number 618

## Returning to American Fundamentals

THE fundamental principle upon which the American system of government, a "democracy", rests is "the rule of the people". Abraham Lincoln stated it to be "that government of the people, by the people, and for the people". That means that *the people* of the United States are the *sovereign* power or rulers of this nation—not the Congress, not the president, not the judiciary, not the various state governments, and not the municipal governments of the land. The framers of the Constitution recognized the sovereign power or rulers of the nation to be the people in these words: "We, the people of the United States, in order to form a more perfect Union, establish justice, insure domestic tranquillity, provide for the common defence, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our posterity, do ordain and establish this Constitution for the United States of America." Before a skeptical world groaning under the oppressive heels of tyrants, monarchs, czars and emperors these men declared that the people, and not dictators, were the proper ones to rule. It was regarded by such skeptics as an experiment that would soon fail. Although the youngest of the great governments of the world, it has survived many bloody assaults from without and internal upheavals during the past 150 years, and it now faces the greatest struggle in all history to determine whether the "experiment" will remain in the earth until God's kingdom or government of righteousness is in all the earth.

Pitched in battle against all nations composing "the king of the south" is "the king of the north", or the Axis powers that stand for dictatorship, and both systems are now struggling for world domination. Dictatorship stands for absolute control of the community by the will of a single ruler or hierarchy. The people are not the sovereign power under such system, but are the "beasts of burden" to sustain the corporate state in its scheme to regiment all mankind. Such governments are saddled upon the people and rule through fear and dread of sudden punishment or death decrees in secret chambers from which there is no appeal or relief. This theory of government originated in ancient Babylon under Nimrod, who was the first dictator, and has extended down through the centuries of mankind's history in one form or another. The system has always advocated the "divine right of kings" theory and the people are forced to subscribe to the doctrine that "the king can do no harm" regardless of tyranny.

It is very manifest that the officers of the government of the United States do not exercise their various powers and functions by virtue of any "divine right of kings" theory, but that they are servants of the people and can be discharged at the will of the people. The nation is a democracy, and not a Theocracy; which means that the people have the controlling voice in the government. The founding fathers of this nation loved Almighty God and did not intend to establish this government as a substitute for or as a means to fight against God's

kingdom or the establishment thereof. The framers of the Constitution intended the government to be a haven or place of refuge for all oppressed peoples and those who desire liberty and the right to worship Almighty God according to the dictates of conscience. They believed in the Lord's prayer 'Thy kingdom come on earth as in heaven' (Matthew 6:10), and in the words of Daniel: "And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever."—Daniel 2:44.

### ***They Believed God***

These men believed in the word and promises of Almighty God and anxiously looked forward to the time when the battle of Armageddon would completely break the yoke of the oppressor and when the sovereignty of all governments would be removed from man and transferred to the duly constituted "King of kings, and Lord of lords", Christ Jesus, in whom God will vest authority and power to rule over the people. The covenant servants of Jehovah, His witnesses, see the circumstantial evidence of the presence of the time when this authority has been transferred from man to Christ Jesus. They now proclaim liberty throughout the land and in many nations that the people may give their allegiance to Jehovah God and His King Christ Jesus, who now rules from His heavenly throne over The Theocratic Government. — Isaiah 9:6,7; Daniel 7:13,14; Psalm 110:2.

### ***Breaking the Bands of Religious Fear***

This message of the kingdom or rulership of Christ Jesus as the sovereign power in The Theocracy is proclaimed by Jehovah's witnesses to all people of good-will toward God that they may escape the great destructive tribulation at Armageddon, which is very near. This

enlightening message breaks the bands of superstition and religious fear that have kept the people in blindness concerning God's purposes. The people become aware that the religious clergy have held back such life-giving message from them through fraud, deception, and the precepts of man, and they are fast abandoning religion for the new world, God's kingdom of righteousness. This turning away from religion dries up the pastures of the hypocritical clergy who conspire with the enemies of God's kingdom, and who are enemies of democracy, to stop Jehovah's witnesses. In order to stop Jehovah's witnesses it is necessary for these enemy conspirators to destroy democracy itself. While the terrible war rages for world domination the clergy conspirators, "home-grown enemies" of the Bill of Rights, take advantage of the emergency and cause laws to be enacted or misapplied to cause the arrest, prosecution and conviction of such faithful servants of Jehovah God. These laws are enforced contrary to the Constitution, and powerful influence, political and religious pressure and prejudice, is brought to bear upon the judicial officers to sustain them without regard to the destructive effect upon the Bill of Rights, the liberty shield of all men, regardless of color, station in life, or creed.

Under such great break-down pressure the United States Supreme Court gave way and allowed abridgment of the people's rights when it approved the compulsory flag salute forced upon children of Jehovah's witnesses in public schools of the nation and when it sustained laws requiring the payment of money for a license from local authorities as a condition precedent to preaching the gospel of God's kingdom in such cities.

These two decisions directly affect the people of the United States, who are the sovereign power of the nation. The decisions directly impair the fundamental liberties of all citizens and persons in

the land, which the Bill of Rights declared could not be permitted. The decisions and impairment are based upon the theory that the government is the sovereign power, and not the people. It ignores the fact that the government is the servant of the people and was created to protect, not impair, the rights of freedom of conscience and freedom of the press and freedom to worship Almighty God. The sovereign people of the United States are entitled to be enlightened concerning the effect and fallacies of the holdings of the high court sustaining the abridgments and impairment of these liberties. The sovereign people cannot enjoy and exercise their sovereignty under a democracy unless they are enlightened. The purpose of this article is to educate the people as to their rights and the devastating effect of the Supreme Court decisions above mentioned.

### ***The Servants of the People***

Concerning the American government, it is very manifest that the officers of the government, the judicial, legislative, and executive officers, in the exercise of their various functions, do not hold power by virtue of a "divine right of kings" theory. Here the governors are solely the servants of the people. At any time that the government fails to operate properly or proves inadequate to the changing conditions of the people, they, as the sovereign power, have the right to change the form of government by legal and peaceable constitutional means. They have the right to make the change especially if there is an invasion or abridgment of the fundamental rights of the people, those precious heritages of free speech and free press and freedom to worship Almighty God. The primary purpose of the creation and establishment of the government was for the protection and perpetuation of these precious rights. It was conceived and dedicated for this protective purpose. The Constitution was not fully ratified by all thirteen of the colonies until the Bill of

Rights was proposed as a part thereof. Once the fundamental freedoms are impaired there immediately disappears the purpose stated by the forefathers for the maintenance of a government. The only binding tie and reason for the creation of the government was to maintain these blessings for "our posterity".

The wise men who wrote the constitution foresaw and forewarned that troublous times would come upon the nation and the people: that those in positions of authority in the government in turbulent seasons would become restive and, through stress of emergency, depression, war and other perils, would usurp their powers as servants of the people and assume the authority of dictatorial tyrants so as to take away, abridge and deny the fundamental liberties. It was against these times and seasons that the Bill of Rights was created. It was not a peacetime document, but a wartime document, having been passed in the wake of a terrible conflict that spilled much blood. These men recognized that these fundamental rights are inherent and abide with men regardless of the vicissitudes of life and changing international and internal conditions.

### ***Can the Bill of Rights Be Abrogated?***

Among certain elements of the population of the land who believe that the Bill of Rights can be abrogated during time of war, there is a feeling that on the outbreak of hostilities or upon declaration of war a victory cannot be gained with a full and free exercise of the fundamental rights secured by the document. There is thus a growing feeling that the inherent rights of speech, press and worship can be shelved or iced away for the duration of the war. No more pernicious or alien doctrine has ever been invented by the mind of man than this: That any of the provisions of the Bill of Rights can be suspended during a great national emergency or war. Once lost they cannot be regained except by blood-spilling and struggle; hence, all



the more important is it that these rights should be more fully exercised in time of war than in time of peace. The Constitution of the people clearly and specifically defines what the government shall and can do in time of war. There cannot be found one word that says, or from which it can be implied, that any person can be denied the exercise of these fundamental rights; but, of course, confidential matters of the government itself, particularly with reference to the military and naval forces, must not and can not be publicly or privately circulated. These things, in time of war, must, because of their very nature, be kept confidential, lest comfort and aid be given the enemy of this government. Since a Christian is concerned only with preaching the gospel of God's kingdom, he will not be concerned in giving military advice or secrets and will not exceed his fundamental personal rights along that line. But that does not mean that he should not and can not exercise these fundamental rights to advertise and show the need of God's kingdom.

### ***The People the Sovereign Power***

The strength of a nation in times of war lies in the unhindered and unrestricted exercise of the rights of freedom of speech, of press, and of worship of Almighty God by the people, who are themselves the sovereign power of the nation. The men at the battle fronts are fighting, not to keep individuals in office, but, according to the president and the Office of War Information, to preserve the *four freedoms* and the American way of life which finds its basis in these cherished freedoms. The removal or impairment of any of these freedoms takes away the power, strength, courage and vision which spurs on the people to victory. Without these freedoms they would become blind and an easy prey to the enemy. The clear vision and free exercise of these rights on the home front keeps before the nation the issues over which the fight is being fought. The

principle of upholding civilian morale and military strength through the exercise rather than the suspension of any of these rights can best be illustrated in the conditions existing in the *South* and the *North* during the Civil War. In the North absolute freedom of expression publicly and privately in writing and orally was allowed on all subjects, even in some combat zones. Washington, D.C., was a very few miles from the battle front, but freedom was nevertheless allowed there.

In the South the conditions were much different—the reverse. There the education of the people, particularly the plantation owners and persons of wealth and influence, had been largely left in the hands of the Roman Catholic Jesuits, who had stealthily instilled their ideas of slave and master classes between the peoples. The evil effects of such training had made itself manifest in the course of action taken by officials of the Confederacy. They had been taught the Jesuit and Roman Catholic Hierarchy policy to keep the people in ignorance of what was going on and to set the governors and rulers up beyond point of criticism and scrutiny by the people. This Hierarchy doctrine smacks of the “divine right of kings” and of clergy from which the people rebelled. The people of the Confederacy were denied their rights of sovereignty. Sessions of the Confederate Congress were held in absolute secrecy and the public press was under the direct supervision of the military censors. No person was allowed to criticize the conduct of the war or any other governmental measure. This condition, contrasting with liberty in the North, had as much to do with the defeat of the South as did the strength of the military forces of the North. Suppression of free speech and other liberties suppressed the morale of the people of the Confederacy from which the army received its support. These factors are mentioned here to emphasize the importance of maintaining at all times the fundamental free-

doms in times of the darkest hour and most perilous times in war or in peace.

### **God's Law Changes Not**

Jehovah God states: "For I am the LORD, I change not." (Malachi 3:6) His law governing the conduct of creatures in a covenant to serve Him as His witnesses also *changes not*. There are no seasons of obedience to Jehovah God's law and His Theocratic government. His commandments must be obeyed at all times. They change not in time of peace nor in time of war. His rule of conduct prescribed in the Bible to maintain integrity and preach the gospel is not affected by the action of men and nations. Jehovah makes no allowance for any change in the rules of preaching the gospel by His ambassadors in times of war nor in times of peace. Christ Jesus, in His prophecy concerning the time of the end of the world, declared: "And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: *see that ye be not troubled: . . .* For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. . . . Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. . . . But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. *And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.*" The founding fathers of this nation did not purpose that the preaching of this gospel should be stopped in the land, and the modern-day persecutors of followers of Christ are acting contrary to the express word of the writers of the Constitution. To protect the people the writers of the Constitution wisely made provision for a place of recourse, the judiciary the Supreme Court of the United States, *the people's court*.

In establishing the national government the people realized that there must be some instrumentality to settle dis-

putes between the sovereign people and their agents and servants, the government and officials thereof. That the constitutional arrangement might operate properly and smoothly and that the government and officials be kept in their proper field and not allowed to infringe upon the rights of the sovereign people of the United States, provision was made for the said people's court, the Supreme Court of the United States, the last bulwark of Americanism and constitutional rights. Its duty is to hold the constitution inviolate. Mr. Chief Justice Marshall said: "We must never forget it is a *constitution* we are expounding."

### **A Delicate and Difficult Task**

When totalitarianism is threatening to engulf the entire world it is more important in wartime than in peacetime or any other time that the court maintain its absolute independence from clamor and national policy and strictly adhere to naked principles of righteousness enunciated in the Bill of Rights, because this is the only hope of preserving the American way of life—the preservation of these freedoms. The United States Supreme Court has the definite duty and delicate and difficult task of correcting fundamental errors striking at the very heart of the Bill of Rights in the cases sustaining the license tax and compulsory flag salute. It can regain its balance and proper position in the constitutional life of the government by "returning to American fundamentals" of sovereignty of the people to choose their own speech and their own writings and worship God in a manner acceptable to the dictates of conscience and as directed by Almighty God. The Supreme Court does not have the right to intrude itself into the field of opinion of Jehovah's witnesses by sustaining laws making compulsory the participation in a religious-political ceremony contrary to their conscience, nor does it have the right to abridge the right of millions of American citizens to receive Jehovah's wit-

nesses at their doors and into their homes by declaring legal a license-tax law to burden and prohibit such apostolic preaching.

### ***Fifty-five Million "Churched"***

In the United States of America there are upward of 135,000,000 people, of whom only 55,000,000 belong to the recognized great religious sects and cults. There are great numbers of the millions of church members who do not attend regularly. Therefore there are approximately 80,000,000 who have absolutely no means of receiving spiritual comfort and Bible instruction except that someone volunteers to take it to such persons in their homes. Among these millions of persons Jehovah's witnesses have volunteered and come to the "front" and have carried and are now carrying to the people at their homes the vital, life-giving message of the Kingdom contained in the Bible. The many millions thus present a great emergency and urgent public need for Bible instruction in the home. These eighty million people are taxed for the support of the government in behalf of the maintenance of the Bill of Rights; and if the government in behalf of the fifty-five million "religionists" sanctions the promotion of religious activities and proclaiming "We need more religion" and safeguards religion from curtailment in the exercise of their ceremonies in the edifices of the land and provides for the religious organizations exemptions from taxation, then by *great force of reason* the majority of the people, approximately eighty million non-religious people, have a right to demand that the government allow and safeguard the Christian activity of Jehovah's witnesses, belonging to no recognized religion, but who are Christians and have volunteered to bring the message of the New World of Christ's kingdom to the people at their homes in a manner as did the Lord Jesus Christ and His apostles. These many, many millions of people who belong to no reli-

gion pay taxes, which works advantageously to the protection and maintenance of the religious institutions serving the other fifty-five million people; therefore the majority, or eighty million people, who are not served by the religious clergy, are entitled to be reached and benefited at their homes by the non-religious Christians, Jehovah's witnesses, who desire to educate the people in the Word of God. The sovereign people of which this vast majority consist have a legal right to be thus reached by such an educational campaign carried on now by Jehovah's witnesses through the WATCHTOWER SOCIETY. The right to this liberty is guaranteed by the Bill of Rights protecting the sovereign people.

### ***Jehovah's witnesses Have Rights***

Jehovah's witnesses are taxpayers and a part of the sovereign people or power of the nation. This fact cannot be denied even though they may not avail themselves of their political privileges nor actively participate in the affairs of this world. They have a liberty to abstain from such according to their understanding of the Bible, which shows God's commandments requires them to devote all of their time and energies to preaching the gospel, a higher calling above all the strifes, political, religious and social. They cannot turn aside from this tremendous task and emergency of serving the many millions of people in the land with the truths of life in the kingdom of Almighty God. They must therefore remain entirely neutral and remain separate and apart from the worldly affairs so that all their time can be devoted to this great job of preaching the gospel. Amidst war, famine, pestilence, earthquakes, peace, prosperity, and depression the preaching of the gospel of God's kingdom must go on unabated unto the end of the world at Armageddon.

Although the members of the judiciary may not agree with Jehovah's witnesses as to what the Bible teaches, as it is

their right before Almighty God, the judiciary are bound by their oath of office to agree with Jehovah's witnesses that the Bill of Rights gives the right to disagree on what the Bible teaches.

### ***The Right to Disagree***

Jesus recognized this principle of freedom to disagree, when He said: "Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch." (Matthew 15: 12-14) This illustrates that the real unity of the people of the nation does not rest upon unity of religious thought and opinion but upon unity as to what are the fundamental rights for which the nation is now avowedly fighting the Axis powers. The judiciary and the government cannot settle differences of opinion between the people as to what the Bible teaches—indeed that is beyond the authority of the judiciary. Mr. Thomas Jefferson said: "... that to suffer the civil magistrate to intrude his powers into the field of opinion, and to restrain the propagation of principles on supposition of their ill tendency, is a dangerous fallacy, which at once destroys all religious liberty . . . truth is great and will prevail, if left to herself; that she is proper and sufficient antagonist to error, and has nothing to fear from the conflict, unless by human interposition disarmed of her natural weapons, free argument and debate; errors ceasing to be dangerous when it is permitted freely to contradict them."—*Virginia Statute for Religious Freedom*.

In ruling against Jehovah's witnesses the Supreme Court has permitted itself to become entangled in precedent from which there is only one way of escape, to wit, cutting away and returning to fundamentals. The founding fathers of the court and nation did not wait until a theory had become entangled in precedent before they abandoned it as error: they immediately avoided the disastrous consequences by immediately denying the principle. The fundamental rights

guaranteed by the Bill of Rights cannot be taxed, because, as Chief Justice Marshall said, in *McCulloch v. Maryland*, 4 Wheat. 113, "The power to tax is the power to destroy." If an activity can be taxed, then a law can be passed prohibiting it. No law can be passed prohibiting "religion" or abridging the free exercise thereof. Many un-American officials have branded Jehovah's witnesses as "peddlers", "canvassers," "hawkers," and other odious names, for the purpose of justifying their illegal imposition of the license tax. When they sober up long enough to realize what they are doing they will discover that Jehovah's witnesses, when disrobed of such popularly conferred "garments", are true, law-abiding American citizens, a part of the sovereign power of the United States, exercising fundamental, inherent rights guaranteed by the Bill of Rights, which cannot be abridged by taxation or license. The Supreme Court has held that the *federal government* created by the Constitution to protect the fundamental freedoms cannot be taxed by the state nor can any agency of the government be taxed by the state. By similar token and double force of reason the "fundamental rights" guaranteed by the First Amendment and secured by the Fourteenth against abridgment by the state cannot be taxed. If the freedoms can be taxed, then the federal government created to protect the freedoms can be taxed and thus all of such creatures of the Constitution be destroyed.

### ***Constitutional Rights Inviolable***

A minister of the gospel cannot be denied his constitutional rights because he engages in some secular work during the week to maintain himself and family and avoids being a burden upon the people he serves with God's Word, neither does he have to be a graduate of some seminary or parochial school. The apostles were fishermen, tentmakers, etc., and even Christ Jesus was a carpenter, but this did not disqualify them



for preaching the gospel. They were declared to be "unlearned and ignorant men", yet they confounded the mighty, the noble and the wise with their knowledge of the commandments of Almighty God.—Acts 4:13.

### ***To Err Is Human***

It is not impossible for members of the Supreme Court to commit mistakes in deciding the cases before them. They are but men, nine imperfect men, who are human. It is often said it is human to err but divine to forgive. The members of that august body have frequently acknowledged that they were previously in error and have changed their decision to correct their mistake. Their mistakes in decisions acknowledged by them to be error are too numerous to mention. In June, 1942, three members of the court publicly confessed that they were in error in deciding against Jehovah's witnesses in the *Gobitis* flag case. A more unstatesmanlike decision cannot be found unless it be the *Dred Scott* case, in which the Supreme Court refused to liberate a Negro slave prior to the Civil War. This decision was the match applied to the dynamite that blew the nation to pieces in the Civil War. The *Gobitis* case also was like a match applied to dried grass. It set the nation aflame with violence against Jehovah's witnesses. Ever after such decision Jehovah's witnesses were constantly thrown into the fiery furnace of public opinion, scorched and singed by mob violence, hatred, death and destruction, in thousands of instances, in hundreds of communities, and in every state of the Union.

The decision and its effect were a test upon Jehovah's witnesses, but they did not break in their integrity during the three years of "civil war" prosecuted against them in all the states of the Union. God miraculously delivered them and gave them strength to push on in the battle to again present to the United States Supreme Court the identical problem involved in the *Gobitis* case, that it

might clean its records and redeem itself. The experiences that Jehovah's witnesses have had in the fiery furnace of mob violence forcibly reminds one of the almighty power of Jehovah God demonstrated in behalf of the faithful Hebrew Jehovah's witnesses Shadrach, Meshach and Abed-nego in the furnace of Babylon for their failure to bow down to the golden image representing the state.

The simple issues, fundamentals, involved in the flag salute case and the license tax case should have been decided unanimously by the high court in favor of liberty, thus contributing to national unity. The failure of the court to rule in favor of liberty has thus split the court; righteous judges on the court dissented in favor of Jehovah's witnesses' rights; and the court's throwing Jehovah's witnesses to the lions of public opinion, misrepresented by the press, has resulted in splitting the nation on the burning issue of right of conscience. These decisions have contributed greatly to disunity of the nation. How can there be national unity on more complicated matters pertaining to the war being fought for the "four freedoms" among the people when the most trusted and most highly honored of all men charged with the preservation of the greatest human document of liberty, the Bill of Rights, cannot agree among themselves as to measures to be taken on the court to preserve such simple, plain and fundamental liberties? The decisions against liberty have not been followed unanimously. On the contrary, many lower courts of the various state judicial systems have refused to extend the principles of the *Gobitis* decision and the opinion in the license tax cases. Many courts have flatly refused to follow the Supreme Court, and have ruled contrary to that high court; thus such lower courts have preferred to be found in contempt of the United States Supreme Court rather than to violate their oath of office and their own conscience by approving the

violation of the conscience of Jehovah's witnesses.

### ***Glad to Obey the Law***

In reference to the laws of the land, Jehovah's witnesses are willingly and joyfully obedient to and do not refuse to obey any law unless it directly violates the law of Almighty God and their conscientious allegiance to Him. They obey the laws of the land not because such laws have penalties and prescribe punishment—they do not obey to avoid punishment—but they obey the laws of the land because it is right and just. All laws for the good of humanity derive their authority from Almighty God. So states the famous Justice Blackstone of England and Judge Cooley of the United States, authorities for Anglo-American courts the world over. Jehovah's witnesses rightly divide the word of truth and render allegiance to whom allegiance is due. They follow the rule, "Render to Caesar the things which are Caesar's, and to God the things which are God's." This is the rule stated and followed by Christ Jesus, as shown in His consistent course of action. Jehovah's witnesses refuse to change from such rule. They will not render unto the state that which properly and solely belongs to Jehovah God. School boards, mobs and lower courts of the nations have advocated that Jehovah's witnesses 'render to Caesar the things which be Caesar's and to Caesar the things which be God's'.

### ***Special Privileges for Clergy***

Throughout the land the nation takes steps to protect and confer special privileges upon the clergy of recognized religions, above that of the ordinary citizen, and also protects them and members of their flocks in the freedom to exercise their religion. Comparatively speaking, the members of the recognized religions are a minority compared with the vast majority of the population who are non-religious and which population depend upon Jehovah's witnesses for Bible edu-

cation. Why cannot this majority of the sovereign power with the small minority of Jehovah's witnesses together have the protection of their constitutional rights to give and receive Bible education at the homes of the people without interference in the exercise of this right by the local police? The Congress of the United States has gone on record in a codification of the rules of respect to the flag so as to allow the flag of the Roman Catholic Church to fly above the Stars and Stripes during Catholic church services on the ships of the Navy of the United States. This was done in recognition of the supremacy of conscience in matters of religion and worship over the political obligation to the state. Why cannot Jehovah's witnesses, who have no banner or flag and who show respect to the flag and the things it stands for, be permitted to put their allegiance to Almighty God ahead of the demands of the state and thus be permitted to exercise freedom of conscience in worship of Jehovah?

### ***Timely Counsel***

The granting of these two liberties, that is, liberty of conscience and liberty to preach, to this small minority will do much to prove to all nations that this country remains a democracy as originally designed by its founders, with sovereignty with the people and a free exercise of the freedom to worship Almighty God. The manner of treatment given Jehovah's witnesses on these issues determines the fate of the nation, that is, whether it goes entirely totalitarian in its effort to defeat the Axis powers or remains a democracy. Above this issue is the much higher issue stated by Judge Gamaliel centuries ago: "And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsel or this work be of men, it will come to nought: but if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found even to fight against God."—Acts 5: 38, 39.

## Steps in the Depopulation of Norway

IT IS difficult to measure the supreme viciousness with which Hitler made the following statement accredited to him in Rauschning's *Gespräch mit Hitler*:

It is our duty to depopulate. We shall have to develop a technique of depopulation. What do you mean—depopulation—you were going to ask? Did I intend to exterminate whole nations? Yes, that is probably what it will amount to. Nature is cruel, so we may be cruel as well. Should I not have the right to exterminate an inferior race that increases like vermin? After a lot of nonsense has been talked about the protection of the poor and miserable for centuries, it is about time to stand up for the protection of the strong against the inferior. The natural instinct of every living thing demands not only that it should conquer but also exterminate its enemy. In former times it was considered the right of the victor to exterminate entire tribes, entire nations.

Carried away with this effort of Adolf Schicklgruber to think of himself as occupying the place of Almighty God, two of Hitlers henchmen, a few years back, walked into the office of the American newspaper *New Yorker Staats-Zeitung und Herold* and told the proprietors that they had come to assume control of the German language press in the United States, and, among other interesting things, told them (producing certain documents meanwhile), "From now on, you will no longer be allowed to publish your pro-Jewish articles in your paper." Thereupon one of the proprietors, Bernard Ridder, addressing the German spokesman, Spanknoebel, replied, "All I can tell you, Spanknoebel, is to get the h— out and stay out." Spanknoebel accepted the advice. His "depopulation" scheme for the paper died right there.

### ***Cruelty and Conceit***

The actors in the foregoing betray at once both their cruelty and their conceit.

And they betray it elsewhere. One of these places is Norway, and there the Jews are being obliterated as they are elsewhere. This goes hard with the liberty-loving Norwegians. Sixty brave men protested to President Quisling (probably signing their death warrants as they did so):

For 91 years Jews have had the legal right to reside and earn a livelihood in our country. Now they are being deprived of their property without warning, and thereafter the men are being arrested and thus prevented from providing for their propertyless wives and children. These Jews have not been charged with any transgression of the country's laws, much less convicted of such transgressions by judicial procedure. Nevertheless they are being punished as severely as the worst criminals are punished. They are being punished because of their racial background, wholly and solely because they are Jews.

A supplementary report mentions a list of 795 Norwegian Jews that were forced to surrender all their property to the Nazis. This isn't exactly murder, but it is on the edge of it. The same "men" that take all a man's property and leave him and his wife and children without anything, would not hesitate in the least to kill them all. And they have done so, elsewhere.

### ***Exterminating Others Also***

As a matter of fact there have been actual shootings of prisoners in Norway, and on a large scale, though mostly of Serbians and Russians. In midsummer of 1942 900 Serbian prisoners arrived at Narvik, Norway, and, though many were ill, they were all forced to march fifteen miles over mountain roads. Some died of exhaustion on arrival. A month later typhus broke out and all prisoners suffering from the disease were shot—said to be 300.

So that they might be fed at the expense of the Norwegians, the Nazis are interning some of their Russian

CONSOLATION

prisoners in Norway. A few escaped into Sweden, whereupon it was decided to ship 400 of the prisoners to Germany for greater safety. They were accordingly locked in boxcars and at length were ferried to Germany. There it was decided to send them back to Norway, which was finally reached after a total time for the round trip of fourteen days. In that time, food was thrown into the cars four times. When the cars were opened in Norway, 337 of the 400 Soviet prisoners were found dead. This information comes from the American Friends of Czechoslovakia, 8 West 40th Street, New York.

Two Russian doctors escaped from Etterstad prison camp near Oslo, Norway. One was captured and sentenced to 200 whiplashes, but died at the 60th stroke, whereupon bullets were poured into his corpse. All the 300 prisoners in the camp were forced to stand at rigid attention while the whipping was in progress.

Among the Russian prisoners in Norway are some boys of 10 to 12 years of age; so says a telephonic dispatch from Sweden to the *New York Times*, two months after the boxcar tale. Manifestly, there is a great shift of populations going on in Europe. Those that can at once be made into slaves will be made into slaves; those that can not will be destroyed.

At Trondheim, Norway, 10 hostages were forced to listen to broadcasts of their own executions, which did not take place until two days later. After the broadcasts they were kept standing at attention for a whole day, were given no food, and were not allowed to talk to one another. In the evening they were forced to listen again to reports that they had been executed. They were then subjected to severe questioning, and on the next morning were led to the execution place, then stripped naked, and shot, October 7, 1942.—From *News of Norway*, December 18, 1942.

### **Other "New Order" Bestialities**

At Hovedya six Norwegians caught trying to flee the country died before a German firing squad. Many similar deaths have occurred. The death penalty is also inflicted for assisting others to escape. At Bergen a man was executed for failing to turn in his radio. Thirty fathers and brothers of Norwegians serving in England were sent to the Eastern Front, and there incorporated in Nazi work battalions.

When teachers, 10,500 in number, were ordered to bring the classroom instruction into line with the Devil's "New Order", 9,000 protested in writing, and at length 670 were selected for punishment. In bitter weather they were taken for a 14-hour ride in open coal cars, landing at a railroad station at midnight, after which they were marched ten miles to the military camp at Joerstadmoen. At the latter place one of the "exercises" required was to creep on their stomachs through ice water, snow and slush, while keeping their hands upon their backs. Under the horrors of the camp twenty of the teachers broke down and agreed thenceforth to be good quislings. 150 became seriously ill and were sent back to another concentration camp for further "treatment".

The 500 remaining teachers were loaded into a dirty old coastal steamer, the Skjerstad, the maximum capacity of which boat was supposed to be but 250. There were but two closets for all. The ship was taken to the far north. Congestion was so terrible that when any of these teachers collapsed from fatigue, they fell on top of one another or sprawled among the feet of those still able to stand.

These 500 teachers earned for themselves great fame among the people of Norway. Their offense was that they told little Norsemen that they would never ask them to do anything wrong, nor would they teach them anything that they believed to be not in accordance with the truth. For this they were



kicked, beaten, and repeatedly jabbed with gun butts. Often they were without food for twenty-four hours. Some were forced to crawl through the slush of latrines. At last accounts many of these teachers in their prison camp, far beyond the North cape, were suffering with pneumonia, ulcers, asthma, and bronchitis. Perhaps by now they have all been exterminated. These cruelties make one swallow hard.

At Oslo, Norway's former capital, 100,000 German civilians were "located", by the simple process of turning that many Norwegian citizens out of their homes, to make places for them. The excuse was that the Germans had been bombed out of their homes by the British, and those friendly to the British must pay the penalty.

One young housewife of this number was forced to stand at attention for eight hours. She was then placed in a closet, where she lost consciousness. She was then carried to an office, stripped of her clothing and beaten until five teeth were knocked out. An American was forced to make 300 knee-bends in succession.

### ***Norsemen Take It Bitterly***

The Norwegians, instead of being dismayed and submissive to their conquerors, show great bitterness, as illustrated in a paragraph from a private letter, published in *News of Norway*, January 8, 1943:

Private civilians from Germany are pouring into the country by the tens of thousands. Norwegians are simply ordered out of their own homes on a day or two of notice. And you can only take with you what you can carry. Your furniture and household goods, beds, supplies, etc., are all to be left for the "guests". You think this Poland? No, sir. This happens in Norway every day. My home has been registered for requisitioning when required. What can I do? Nothing. We have no laws, no justice. I can burn it. But then they shoot me and my family. . . . The food situation is precarious. The Germans eat like pigs and

take everything they need from us. The (German) soldiers drink the good milk. They are good and fat. I have many friends who have lost 40 pounds and more in weight in the last 12 months.

The following is the standard eviction notice to which reference is made in the above:

1. You have to give up your house to the homeless. By 9 o'clock tomorrow morning you must have left your house.
2. All rooms in your house must by then be in habitable condition.
3. Male and female servants must remain.
4. Fuel, like wood, coal, etc., must remain in house.
5. You may take with you personal laundry, clothes, toilet necessities and jewelry; food only for immediate consumption, but no hoarded food.
6. All expenses on house must also in future be paid by owner.
7. You must compile inventory lists in three copies and hand over all keys.
8. In case you do not obey these instructions you must reckon with punishment from Security Police.

### ***The Hirdmen of Selbu***

The village of Selbu, in Trondelag, Norway, came into notice of the Quisling storm troopers, owing to the fact that less than 1 percent of the 4,500 population had affiliated themselves with the Nasjonal Samling, which is Quisling's party. Accordingly, a day was chosen for a raid at a Selbu farmhouse, rightly suspected as being a sort of center for liberty-lovers. Four large automobiles loaded with Hirdmen (Norwegian name for the Gestapo) drove up and told the owner they intended to stay for a few days. They sent out and gathered in 40 hostages, ranging in age from young boys to men of 60, all known to be liberty-lovers. These were kept without food for 24 hours, were forced to sleep on bare floors, and then were forced to crawl long distances on their stomachs, while the Hirdmen hovered menacingly above them calling them "swine" and "idiots". Subsequently, 15 of the hostages were compelled to march long distances, calling out constantly "Order, Justice, and

Peace". The Hirdmen accompanied them in automobiles. Citizens who did not get out of the way were struck with clubs as the cars passed. Restaurants were closed and the patrons chased away. Several citizens were locked up in pigpens and later were chased back and forth on the roadways. The entire object of the whole visit by the Hirdmen was terrorization. Anybody who thinks to gain permanent benefits to himself or to anybody else by such procedures is as big a fool as the one who said in his heart, "I will be like the Most High."

The Norwegians are in a tight spot. There is not much that they can do to show their independence, but they do what they can. Thus, when Quisling ordered all persons in industry to join trade unions, and all professional men to join professional organizations (the motive being to better control the workers through their leaders), the labor leaders, representing 350,000 workers and members of the Norwegian employers' association, asked their membership to resign en masse, which they did.

Again, when 65 workers were ordered to leave Oslo for Germany, and were instructed to be at the railway station in time to catch a certain train, only 3 of the 65 showed up; the others vanished.

Incidentally, one of the things that makes Hitler grind his teeth is that more than 80 percent of the Norwegian merchant fleet are now operated in the Allied cause, and though in the first year of the war 200 of the Norwegian ships went down, taking 1,300 Norse seamen to watery graves, yet 30,000 of their old comrades continue to sail on.

An American view of Hitler's concentration camps in Norway was afforded by Dr. Frank Nelson (born in the United States), who chanced to spend some time at one of them. In an address at Cleveland he stated that he had "once a week a mush that tasted like a low-grade wallpaper paste gone bad".

At the concentration camp at Grini, Norway, Bibles are prohibited, and per-

haps this may eventually be the Nazi rule everywhere. Now is the hour of the 'prince of darkness', but he and his whole devilish outfit are headed for the sewer.

### *Mental and Physical Escapes*

The mental escape from tyranny is the greatest of all. At Bergen, Norway, the children of the city were ordered to attend a Hitler youth exhibition. They marched past the door singing the Norwegian national anthem and shouting "Long live the king!" Thereupon they were arrested. In these arrests one six-year-old was overlooked, but he ran up to one of the Hirdmen and shouted, "Long live the king! I want to be arrested too!"

At Oslo, Norway, Sverre Riisnaes, a Quislingite, called in one of the leading lawyers of the city and said to him in a solemn voice, "It is my duty to inform you that your license to practice law has been revoked for life." The attorney looked him coldly in the eyes and inquired, "Whose life?"

There are some remarkable physical escapes too. On a lonely forest roadway near Finnskogene a 23-year-old Norwegian girl was pedaling her bicycle, intent on escaping to Sweden. She met one of the Hirdmen, also on a wheel. He threatened to shoot her if she tried to cross the border, not far away. They rode silently for a few moments. Suddenly the girl made a burst of speed across the border, and the Hirdman, not realizing what he was doing, also crossed the border and, jabbing the muzzle of a revolver into her back, ordered her to return to Norway. She only laughed at him; and when the Swedish officials arrested him and told him he would not be permitted to return to Norway, he burst into tears. The Swedes gave the girl her liberty and gave the Hirdman four months in prison.

The young men of Norway, energetic, intelligent, capable, are trying by every means in their power to escape to Britain, or, failing that, to make their way

to Sweden. In a single week in the latter part of 1942 no less than 30 Norwegian seamen, serving aboard German-controlled boats plying between Norway and Germany, jumped overboard as their ships passed the Swedish coast, staking their all on their ability to swim ashore. Only two of them drowned. On the first day of the week following, 15 reached Sweden and safety in a single day.

Still more like the Vikings of old, six young Norwegians seized a coast steamer, the Galtesund, plying between Oslo and Bergen, and took the entire ship, the captain, the crew, the passengers and the freight across the North sea and landed safe and sound in Britain.

Returning to their homeland to get information, many young Norwegians have been put to death, with all their relatives, and with many others who had nothing whatever to do with their exploits. Two of them landed at the fishing village of Tellevaag on Sotra island. The Hirdmen were informed. They came and shot one of them, but the other one killed two of the Hirdmen before

he himself was fatally shot. Thereupon the entire village of Tellevaag was obliterated, or, as Hitler would put it, "depopulated." All of the fifty or sixty houses were burned to the ground. One of the prisoners taken by the Hirdmen was an infant four days old.

What will be the end of this depopulating process which "the king of the north" is carrying out all over Europe? The Scriptures show what will follow this accursed time. Armageddon! The thing that will follow, after Armageddon has done its cleansing work, will be that Satan will be chained: the demons that worked with him will be destroyed; the Hirdmen and the Gestapo will be silent in the Bible hell, along with all the other accursed nuisances which have made this beautiful earth an inferno. Righteousness will enter. Peace will be there. Everlasting life will be at hand. Sickness will be gone. Health, vitality, love, music, sweetness, wisdom, justice, will be everywhere apparent. The old world will be for ever gone, and in its place grateful humanity will have the desire of all nations, the New World.

---

## Tyrants Can't Take It

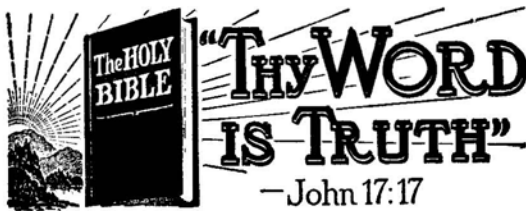
A TYRANT can't take ridicule. It burns him up. The Danes have found that out and are tormenting their tormentors. The British blew to smithereens a munitions factory at Skive. The Germans published a fact that a cow had been hit; whereon the *Skive Journal* kept within the law and caused tittering all over Denmark by publishing the statement, "A cow has been hit, and the cow burned for four days." The paper was suspended for fourteen days.

A fish hawk in Copenhagen went through the streets shouting, "Lovely fat mackerel, beautiful fat mackerel, as fat as Goering himself." Thereupon he was jailed for two weeks; and when he came out he shouted, "Lovely fat mackerel, beautiful fat mackerel, just as fat

as a fortnight ago," and nobody could stop him. Moreover he probably sold enough more fish to pay for all the time he lost behind bars.

## *Tyrants Are Always Cowards*

Tyrants are always cowards, and so it was but natural that a German court at The Hague should fine a young Netherlander forty guilders for wearing in his buttonhole a small orange-colored lion. The orange color, it was said in court, stands for the House of Orange (and thus for Protestantism) and therefore it is not permissible to wear it. Probably it is now unsafe in The Netherlands to buy or eat an orange, wear an orange-colored tie or scarf, or look at an orange sunset.



## Race Degeneracy, Why?

**T**HE most precious thing possessed by any creature is life. Without life everything else would be useless and could not be enjoyed. Even now we observe that a man with but a small spark of life clings to that with desperation. It is only when a creature is perfect and enjoying complete life and the right to it that he can properly glorify his great Creator. For thousands of years man's Creator has been working out His purpose to rescue humankind from race degeneracy and annihilation. God's great arrangement must ultimately bring glory to His name.

God created Adam, the first man, in His own image and likeness. He created him perfect; for all the works of Jehovah God are perfect, as the prophet Moses testifies, at Deuteronomy 32:4. God gave to man life and the right to life. Life means any conscious existence. Right to life means the full authority to maintain existence. Adam and his wife, who was made after him, were perfect in their bodies, without pain, without sorrow; and were the most beautiful creatures in Eden's garden. They had not a scar nor a mark upon them anywhere. They enjoyed life and all the blessings incident to that life. Their home was perfect; and even all the animals and birds of Eden were subject to them, and they had absolute dominion and control. God gave them all these privileges to enjoy eternally, upon one expressed condition, namely, that they be obedient to His law and thereby honor Him. He informed man that a violation of this law would bring upon him loss of

life, loss of his right to life and loss of all the blessings incident to it.

Satan then appeared and induced Eve to believe that God was keeping back something from them, and Satan, by deceiving Eve, induced her to violate God's law. There was no real wrong in the forbidden fruit which Eve ate. The wrong was in disobeying the Lord. When Adam found she had violated God's law, he, knowing that she must die, preferred to be with her in death rather than to be separated from her. So he also became a party to the transgression by voluntarily and willingly violating God's law. Jehovah God, in the exercise of His perfect justice, sentenced man to death. This sentence deprived Adam and Eve of the right to life. They were driven out of Eden and in due time lost life itself. For 930 years they were compelled to go about in the earth and earn their bread by digging in the soil and partaking of such food as they produced, which was imperfect and deficient in life-sustaining qualities. In this manner they were put to death.

This sentence of death passed upon Adam had an indirect effect upon his offspring. Before he was driven from Eden he and Eve had not exercised the power given to them by Jehovah God to beget and bring forth children on the earth. This they did exercise after being driven from Eden. Being now under the sentence of death and undergoing that death penalty, it was impossible for their children, born under such conditions, to come into existence perfect. It would follow, then, that when the children were born they were degenerate. While they would have a measure of life and the rights incident to that measure of life and which their fellow creatures had no authority to violate, yet they would have no right to live at all from God's standpoint. Adam having now no right to life could not bring children into the earth who would have greater right than he had



Any human creature that exists on earth possesses equally with others the right to food, air, light, and certain privileges in human society. These are called "life rights"; that is to say, they are incident to animation as humans, privileges belonging to creatures that live in any measure. On the other hand, the right to live, then, means a just right of existence which cannot properly be taken away without sanction from God.

Because humankind's parents possessed no right to life, every child born into the world from then until now has been born imperfect, unrighteous, a sinner, disapproved in God's sight, under condemnation, and therefore with no right to life. The life that any of us has lived has been merely by divine permission; and all who have died have died justly; for nothing but a perfect creature is entitled to life. For this reason the king of Israel wrote: "Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me." (Psalm 51:5) Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ, under inspiration expressed the same truth, saying: "By one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned."—Romans 5:12.

All the human race, then, from Adam till now, having been born degenerate or imperfect, it follows that if any ever get full life and the right to life they must get it through the loving Life-giver, Jehovah God. Unless God had made some provision for the redemption of man from death and the lifting up of him again to the condition of perfect life, the time would come when there would be none of the present human race upon earth. We remember that Adam lived 930 years; and now a man scarcely lives to be half a century old. The race has been degenerating for centuries, growing weaker and weaker, and ultimately all would come to that condition in which they would be unable to transmit even the spark of life, and

the earth would be depopulated of degenerate creature man. Hence we see our utter dependence upon God; and when we find that the great Jehovah God has made a provision for obedient men to live, that fills us with gratitude; and as we examine the features of His wondrous purpose it fills our hearts with boundless love for Him.

At the time that Jehovah entered the judgment or sentence against man He prophesied of a time coming when descendants of Adam might be released from the condemnation due to Adam's sin. Satan, one of whose names is "the Old Serpent", was the first inducing cause of sin. And God at that time said to him: "I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head." (Genesis 3:15) This foreshadowed that ultimately Satan should be destroyed and that the same would result as a blessing to men of good-will toward Jehovah God.

The judgment of God entered against Adam and Eve must always stand. It could not be reversed or set aside or annulled, for the reason that Jehovah cannot deny himself. Nor could any of His creatures have faith in Him if He changed His mind. It is equally true that God could make a consistent provision for buying back or redeeming the right to life which Adam forfeited for his offspring, and this redemption could be accomplished by one who would be the equal of Adam in his perfection in Eden. And this is exactly what we find the Scriptures to disclose that Jehovah did.

It is evident that Jehovah desires that man should understand the necessity and reason for His providing of redemption, in order that when man does understand it he would rejoice in the loving-kindness manifested by God toward humankind.

"For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many."—Romans 5:15.

## To Seattle's City Council

**I**N PROTEST against the Nazi tactics of the Seattle officials (see report in *Consolation* No. 617) W. H. Frey, of Helena, addressed the following to the council of that city:

Helena, Montana  
March 21, 1943

City Council,  
Seattle, Washington.

My dear Sirs:

I just read in our local paper where you denied use of the Civic Auditorium to Jehovah's witnesses for a meeting to "help win the war on the home front". Knowing those people as I do, let me say, even though I am an outsider to your community, that discrimination is being shown.

The denial of freedom in *this* country is so contrary to our American standards, and being a believer in liberty and justice for all, particularly here where they are always bragging about those things, I couldn't help but write to say I think such actions as yours are inconsistent with our ideals.

Doctrines must be heard to be judged, and the suppression of them before they are even heard just does not fit in with our land, to which our forebears fled to endure the hardships of starting life anew for the sole purpose of worshipping God according to their own consciences, and escape suppression, rather than suffer the religious persecution of early Europe; and now to think that we as the present inhabitants of the land of those liberty-loving ancestors must see religious persecution rearing its head in this, the same land that once offered a haven for the freedom of worship.

In time there was set up a fundamental law, the United States Constitution, intended to guarantee people the freedom from aggression to their rights. Is it possible that public officials, sworn into office to uphold the Constitution and Bill of Rights, may have forgotten these cherished laws of our country? Apparently so.

Apparently "The Four Freedoms" we have heard so much about lately have been disregarded for the moment. It seems very

obvious that the Constitution and Bill of Rights were overlooked. Perhaps they are recalled, now that I have mentioned them, and that in this "land of the free", they permit without slighting anyone the "freedom of speech", the "freedom of the press", and the "freedom of worship", and the right to assemble. *You*, as a body of public-spirited citizens, enjoy *all* these freedoms, but deny them to others. Why?

It isn't natural in this country for *real* Americans to deny someone else the freedoms guaranteed to them. It just seems as though there is some outside "pressure" or "influence", subversive in itself, that would make public officials deviate so glaringly from protecting the Constitutional rights of people they are sworn to uphold, and which rights were so earnestly set forth by the men who framed them so long ago and who desired above everything a peaceful, harmonious, righteous way of government. Did these men labor in vain, and are the Constitution and Bill of Rights being slyly undermined by convenient, local ordinances? Perhaps you acted in sincere good faith, but let us not be too hasty or panicky in our enthusiasm in times like these by applying one rule to every case.

Your 1938 ordinance intended to safeguard against meetings that would "tend to engender religious or racial antagonism" can very appropriately be applied to meetings of the German Bund or any other lawless group such as they; but a few years ago even they were accorded the privilege of "freedom of speech" and to assemble in public meetings; and they were a very subversive group whose weapons were antagonistic to races, and sabotage to our way of life, but the laws of our country very generously permitted them to express themselves at the time. Now, if the German Bund was permitted to hold public meetings, and newspapers today carry full-page advertisements for the Communist Party, surely there should be no discrimination shown against a small, sincere, harmless minority of Bible teachers who have for their only weapon the Word of God, the Bible. If so much pressure is continually being brought

to bear in denying them "freedom of speech", you can see it will only tend to arouse curiosity in the public's mind, and the public will wonder: "What are public officials trying to hide by denying voice to Jehovah's witnesses?" And the public will clamor for a showdown.

Jehovah's witnesses are not merely a local body, nor just a new fad, or religion, as some might say. They are all over the world and discriminated against wherever they are. In Germany, where they are cruelly suppressed in a way only Nazism can torture a person, they refuse to bow to Hitler, acknowledging only the supremacy of God. Are they not to be commended for that? Hitler, placing himself on a pedestal, despises these humble Bible teachers and prohibits their activities too, but the Scriptures teach that "whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted". And so it goes all over the world wherever Jehovah's witnesses are; but we don't want to follow Hitler's example, do we, in anything? It is the least of things that turn out to be jewels. Likewise, it will be a small minority that will be the source from which people least expected to hear the truth, but who, for the time being, are trampled on by all those enjoying a little worldly power.

On the home front, let's have less of petty rulings, and more adherence to our guaranteed liberties, for which our soldiers are fighting on other fronts. Wouldn't they be disheartened to know that while they were fighting for "liberty" and "freedom" on foreign soils, the Constitution and Bill of Rights were being tampered with, or scrapped, back home, the front they were relying on so much for support?

So it would seem to me the subject of Jehovah's witnesses, "winning the war on the home front," would be a very timely and interesting topic, because when they as citizens of the United States are being denied the privilege of "freedom of speech" and assembly in this land that stands for such things, the fight for liberty very obviously must begin on the home front! Let's not have flag-draped rulings bluntly shut off expressions which haven't even been given a chance to voice themselves. Let's not show favoritism. Let's be fair and permit others the right to life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness.

Thanking you kindly for your time, I am,

Respectfully yours,

[Signed] W. H. FREY

---

## "Universal Super-Government Advocated"

**"UNIVERSAL** Super-Government Advocated." So reads the title of an article that recently appeared in the *Indianapolis Star*.

The article says that Amos K. Peaslee, international lawyer, appeared before the Earlham Institute of Foreign Affairs, at Richmond, Indiana, and advocated that very thing. This is just to tell Mr. Peaslee and all others that just such a super-government has already been arranged. It will not be, as he hopes, "a united universal society of nations, recognized as a super-national sovereignty," but will be the real thing. Over and over again the Scriptures declare that God would (and He has already done so) place His Son upon the throne of

earthly rulership; that to Him every knee shall bow; that He will break in pieces and consume every earthly kingdom and government; that of the increase of His government and of peace there shall be no end; that all the nations that forget God shall for ever pass away; that Jehovah shall be King over all the earth in that day; that the faithful men of old shall then be princely governors in all the earth; that this is the kingdom prepared for the "other sheep" from the foundation of the world (these sheep are now actually being gathered); that it is an everlasting kingdom; that it is the desire of all nations; that it is now ruling in the midst of its enemies; and the nations refuse to hear.

## Is Mary the First of All Saints?

**A**T HAND is a copy of *The Register*, a Roman Catholic paper published in West Virginia, December 20, 1942, and containing a scarehead three columns wide reading, "Mother of God is First in Ranks of all Saints." That would be interesting if true, but as it seems to have the approval of the Hierarchy, it can be set down as error.

If Mary is to be classified as the Hierarchy's theologians have tried to convey, then God would have used her as His mouthpiece, thus contradicting the inspired teaching of the chief of all the apostles, "I suffer not a woman to teach." As a matter of fact, when, on one occasion, Mary undertook to do something of the sort, Jesus rebuked her with the query, "Woman, what have I to do with thee?" This was as much as to say to her, "You are my earthly mother, all right, but when you undertake to teach me God's will you are outside your proper sphere."

The Scriptures are perfectly plain that Mary was not born without imperfections:

"All we like sheep have gone astray."  
—Isaiah 53: 6.

"There is none righteous, no, not one."  
—Romans 3: 10.

"By the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation."—Romans 5: 18.

### **How Plain and Beautiful!**

How plain it all is, and how beautiful it is! And how it shows the wisdom, justice, love and power of Jehovah God, that He not only is able to save sinners, but was able to use the human organism of a noble woman to bring into the world the Savior provided, and that despite the fact that this good woman was, like others, touched with some imperfections!

The following is quoted from the story in *The Register*:

MARY, AGED THREE. Faithful to the vow they had made before the birth of their only child, Joachim and Anne presented Mary in the

temple when she was three years old. On that occasion, some historians assert, the child herself mounted the temple steps and made her vow of virginity. Mary remained in the temple after her presentation to be educated with the other Jewish children. There she enjoyed ecstatic visions and daily visits of the holy angels. When she was fourteen years old, the high priest wished to send her home for marriage, but Mary reminded him of her vow of virginity.

Not only is there not the slightest hint of any of these statements in God's Word, but just stop and think how perfectly silly it is to claim that a child of three years of age could make a vow of perpetual virginity. At that age she would not have the least inkling of God's arrangement for perpetuating the human family or of the astonishing provision in her own body for the fulfillment of motherhood.

The work of the demons can be clearly seen in these statements quoted from *The Register*. It is certain that until He had been anointed and begotten of God's holy spirit, at the age of thirty, Jesus did not enjoy "ecstatic visions and daily visits of the holy angels". He was not demonized, as was Mohammed, nor was his mother demonized, as was Mohammed's mother. This transplantation of certain facts of Mohammedanism into the story of Mary is the work of devils.

Joan of Arc, and many other of the Roman Catholic "saints", heard voices and saw ecstatic visions, as also does Adolf Hitler. But all the voices these have heard are the voices of fallen angels, demons, devils. And all the visions these deceived Catholics have seen were impositions upon their minds by the same wicked creatures that infested the atmosphere of the earth in the days of Jesus and the apostles, and that still infest it. God's provision for directing and instructing His people is His Word, now that it is complete and all-sufficient.



## "Never but One Shadow"

IN HIS famous words to C. Chiniquy (fifty years a Catholic priest) Abraham Lincoln (who for many years made his home in Springfield, Illinois) made the following observation:

I do not pretend to be a prophet. But though not a prophet, I see a very dark cloud on our horizon. And that dark cloud is coming from Rome. It is filled with tears of blood. It will rise and increase, till its flanks will be torn by a flash of lightning, followed by a fearful peal of thunder. Then a cyclone such as the world has never seen will pass over this country, spreading ruin and desolation from north to south. After it is over, there will be long days of peace and prosperity: for Popery, with its Jesuits and merciless Inquisition, will have been for ever swept away from our country.

With that definition and analysis of what is the one dark cloud ahead of America, what do you suppose could have been in the mind of the "Most Reverend Father" Archbishop (how come so few titles?) Samuel A. Stritch of Chicago, who, when he visited Springfield on May 6, 1942, said, "There shall never be but one shadow to fall upon the Stars and Stripes and that shall be the shadow of the cross." It is a safe bet that he went to Springfield to make that taunt so that he could laugh about it afterwards among his fellow members of the Hierarchy.

Probably it was with a similar idea in mind that at Lincoln Presbyterian college, Lincoln, Illinois (named after President Lincoln), an arrangement was brazenly suggested by which the "Very Reverend Father" W. P. White and the "Reverend Father" Leo P. Henkel and the "Reverend Father" H. F. Prendergast should give Roman Catholic lectures in the Presbyterian college. And they put the idea across, because there were a few boys of Catholic birth in the Presbyterian institution.

How many Protestant clergymen do you suppose would have the brass to

call at any Roman Catholic educational institution and propose that they give lectures on theology to the students? And if such could be found, where on earth is one single Roman Catholic doghouse that would permit them to give such lectures? The Hierarchy would sooner blow the institution to smithereens, or burn it down and collect the insurance (more likely this latter plan), than to do such a thing.

But this thing gave these Roman Catholic priests in Lincoln a chance to take one more fling at President Lincoln for telling Chiniquy what he did.

### The Celebrated Guibord Case

♦ It seems that the Guibord case in Montreal (1869) has not yet been forgotten, and also that Rome does not change—for the better. Guibord had been reading books which the bishop of Montreal did not approve, having listed them among prohibited books. When Guibord died the bishop saw his opportunity for revenge. He would not permit Guibord to be buried in the Montreal cemetery, although Guibord had paid for a grave there. "Holy" Roman Catholic mobs stoned the hearse and filled up the grave on the day of the funeral. Guibord's wife took the case to court, losing it in both French-Canadian courts. It was then appealed to the Privy Council, which ruled that the grave was Guibord's own real estate, as he had paid for it. So the body, which had lain in the Protestant cemetery vault for six years (while the case was being decided), was removed to the Catholic cemetery. Two thousand troops and police had to line the streets to the cemetery and the coffin was buried in cement and scrap iron to prevent desecration at the hands of the "Holy" Hierarchy's instruments. No, this is not ancient history. Rome remains the same and will do the same things as before wherever it gets the chance.

## If Hitler Should Disappear

**H**ITLER may join a monastery and disappear. If so, that would help forward the revival of the "Holy Roman Empire", coming.

Adolf Hitler, practical Catholic, admirer of the Hierarchy, is just such a man as the Jesuits and the Devil would choose to do the job he has done. The aim of all of these is power in this life.

The suggestion is being made that Otto of Austria, now in America (where the money and the power are), would fain be ruler of the projected empire. Bishop Boyle, of Pittsburgh, and other Catholic "great ones", view his ambitions benevolently. Meantime, suppose Hitler should conveniently disappear?

With these thoughts in mind, the reader will find unusual interest in the following remarks of Drew Pearson, Washington columnist, in his story of December 7, 1942. Incidentally, it is claimed that Otto is one of the heirs to the throne of Spain and that this may possibly be included in the Hierarchy's ambitions for him.

WASHINGTON—Ever since the War department's announcement that Crown Prince Otto of Austria would head an Austrian legion recruited in the U. S. A., officials have been buck-passing as to who okayed this idea.

Unquestionably it was a sour one. Now nobody wants to take responsibility. The Yugoslavs are up in arms over having the heir to the throne of the Hapsburgs promoted by the U. S. government. The Czechs also are in a dither.

And although Prince Otto is sincere, hard-working and personally likable, there are not many Austrians or Hungarians in the United States who want to go into battle under the banner of the old Hapsburg empire.

Inside fact regarding the scheme is that canny Cordell Hull was sour on it from the first. Mr. Hull does not believe much in kings or emperors, also has a shrewd faculty for feeling the pulse of American public opinion. He turned thumbs down.

Several of his State department advisers

also were opposed. But not Brain Truster Adolf Berle, whose brain child the plan largely was.

However, the man who really put it across was FDR himself. He overruled Hull and decreed that Otto should have his chance to recruit an Austrian Legion.

### DISCUSSIONS AT VATICAN

Since then the diplomatic corps has been buzzing with reports regarding the recent conference between the Pope and Myron Taylor, U. S. ambassador to the Vatican.

This conference was followed by the emphatic statement by the Catholic archbishops and bishops of the United States calling for unlimited support of the war. Issued by 102 members of the American hierarchy, it was one of the most sweeping indorsements of Roosevelt's war policies so far given by the Catholic church. Ambassador Taylor's visit to the Vatican is generally linked with the bishops' letter.

The result of Taylor's discussions has never been divulged. But in diplomatic circles it is reported he brought back to the President the Vatican's concern for protection of the Church in Spain in case Spain should be a battleground between the American and German armies; also the hope that the Catholic monarchs of Europe might not be barred if the people of Europe wanted to reinstate them after the war.

NOTE: Prince Otto is scion of one of the foremost Catholic royal families.

---

### Drownings in Dutch Canals

◆ The Netherlands are crisscrossed with canals. The big cities are almost like Venice, there are so many. In the first three months of 1941 there were 139 drownings in the canals of Amsterdam, as against 42 in the first three months of the year previous. Most of those drowned were either Germans or Dutch Nazis, and it looks suspiciously as if some of the Dutch thought they could get along without them.

## From Cyprus, "The Corner of the World"

**W**HETHER this will be believed or not, modern-day Pauls are those Christians known as Jehovah's witnesses, who in spite of all sorts of persecution, particularly in Germany and other totalitarian countries, continue to preach with unsurpassed zeal that these are the last days of the present evil world and that the kingdom of God, under Christ as King, is very near at hand.

Here in Cyprus, "the corner of the world," as it is called, Jehovah's witnesses suffer little or no persecution at the hands of religion practitioners, owing to the liberal constitution of Great Britain affording each person the valuable privilege to worship and preach God according to his conscience. It is with much regret, however, that it has to be mentioned, according to information given by the local agent of the

Watchtower Bible and Tract Society, New York, that the Censorship Department has been withholding books and magazines belonging to these modern-day Pauls for nearly two years now.

These books pursue no other than an educational campaign among peoples of the whole globe, and perhaps it would be worth mentioning that, during peacetime, they were awarded, at the Paris International Exhibition, gold medals not only for their appearance but also for the philanthropic message they contain. It would, therefore, be expected that such books deserve a better treatment in a country which is not Italy or Germany, particularly during these evil days when hearts of men need to be turned toward God.—P. E. Gabrielidi, in the Nicosia, Cyprus, *Post*, February 26, 1942.

---

### 'I and My House'

**"A**S FOR me and my house, we will serve Jehovah." These were the words with which Joshua, Moses' successor, took his stand unequivocally for Jehovah God. Jehovah's witnesses who have families strive to follow this example. Many of them, in their activities on behalf of God's kingdom, The Theocracy, have the wholehearted co-operation and sympathy of their near and dear ones. The opposite page gives some interesting examples. (1) The father of this family at Hayne, North Carolina, is also a Kingdom publisher. (2) Here is the Krochmal family of pioneer witnesses, Kentucky. (3) A. J. Clemons of Houston, Texas, and his family of seven, all of whom are Theocracy publishers. (4) Three sets of Los Angeles, California, twins, serving the King. (5) G. L. and Jerome Fields, father and son, witnessing in Greensboro, North Carolina. (6) The Kellys, all one in the work of The Theocracy. (7) Another three

sets of twins, busy in Oregon. Those in the back row are pioneers. (8) Four generations of Kingdom publishers. The youngest is five, and the great-grandmother is 78. Both are active in magazine witnessing in downtown St. Louis. (9) The Mitchell family, Red Bank, New Jersey. All are Theocratic publishers, including Tomy, not quite five, in the picture. All the children were expelled from school and denied education because they love God in the state in which Hague 'is the law'. (10) Three Coffey brothers of Knoxville, Tennessee, active as pioneer witnesses. (11) (12) (13) Three families at Glen Allen, Virginia, who through the home Bible study arrangement have been helped to take their stand as did Joshua. (14) Baptism of family of five at Medford, Oregon, dedicating themselves to Jehovah's service, taking their united stand unequivocally for the Lord and His Kingdom.—Joshua 24:15, *Am. Rev. Ver.*



"We will serve Jehovah"



## “Blameless in the Day of the Lord”

**H**ERE is a very interesting experience I had while in the door-to-door work in Chorley. This experience shows how united Jehovah's witnesses are in their stand for The Theocracy, whether free or behind prison bars. I was just leaving a house after witnessing, when a young lady (in nurse's uniform) came riding up to me on a bicycle. She pulled up beside the curb and stopped me. "What are those bags for, and what does the Theocratic Government mean?" she asked me. "I have seen those bags in various places I have been to, and often wondered what you are connected with." I told her without hesitation that I was one of Jehovah's witnesses, explaining our work and telling her about The Theocracy, and that Jehovah's witnesses were real friends of the people; that they stood for God's kingdom, and rendered to Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's and to God those things that are His.

She said that she had a friend who had just been released from Wakefield prison and who said that Jehovah's witnesses there were the "finest set of boys he had ever met". They were united and entirely separate from all the other prisoners. Their unity and binding

friendship to each other were remarkable. They were indeed a people set apart.

I told her that Jehovah's witnesses were united the world over because they have one thing in mind, and that is the vindication of Jehovah's name.

"Yes," she said, "I admire the courage and brave stand of Jehovah's witnesses, and I shall certainly tell my friend all about what you have told me." She took literature, stating that she hoped to see me again, and went away looking very happy indeed.

This experience shows that people in the world are bound to notice and remark on the unity of Jehovah's witnesses and how they stand for righteousness. That girl is probably one of the "other sheep". We can see that many who are now tied up in the Devil's systems are going to have the veil removed from their eyes and see the Truth. I was certainly thrilled that Jehovah gave me the privilege of witnessing to her. We rejoice to know that the boys who are restrained and deprived of their liberty are bearing the name of Jehovah worthily and are proving themselves "blameless in the day of our Lord".—Mrs. H., Britain.

---

## The Assembly at Johannesburg

**A**T HAND (belatedly) a nicely gotten up "Report of the Jehovah's witnesses Assembly at Johannesburg, South Africa, in 1942". It was confidently anticipated that 1,200 witnesses would attend the convention, and they did. Moreover, one-third of this number, 400, were immersed at this convention; a most extraordinary proportion. On Sunday morning, the last day of the convention, the European section showed 821 in attendance and the African section 846; a grand total of 1,667, of whom 340 were children between the ages of 5 and 18.

The conventioners were from over

all South Africa. One came from the farthestmost border of Portuguese East Africa, one from the copperbelt of Northern Rhodesia, and one from Nyasaland. They were drawn from all walks of life—businessmen, miners, artisans, and farmers—and they came by every kind of conveyance. The report said:

Brethren all, they wore one thing in common, happy Kingdom smiles and the confident, purposeful air which in these days of distress and perplexity is peculiar to those whose hearts and minds are stayed on the great Theocrat and His Kingdom and whose faculties are given to its service.

One who is not of them remarked concerning them: "Coming amongst these people is like coming from a muddy pool into clean water." And that, we think, puts it as nicely as it can be put.

Considering the phenomenon of this multitude, drawn from every section of the community, gathered together with one consent in one place with one purpose, one could not help but muse over the puniness of man's endeavor. For 32 years some of the nobler-minded politicians of this country have been striving for racial unity. Today the fires of racial intolerance burn as fiercely as ever and religion feeds the flames. But Jehovah's truth breaks down all barriers and unites men, not by ties of blood, but by the fellowship of Christ. And so at the Theocratic Assembly Rooinek and Boer sat down together, brethren in Theocratic service. Not always understanding each other's language perfectly, they yet managed to get along. Many were the conversations carried on with the one speaking English and the other Afrikaans. In a field they united in giving tongue to the "pure language" which the Lord has turned unto his people in these last days.—Zephaniah 3:8, 9.

Jehovah's people all love the little folks. How could they help it? The deft chronicler of the food consumed during the convention could not forbear to say of the cafeteria arrangements:

Many of the helpers were children, and it was a revelation to see the enthusiasm and efficiency of these youngsters.

The food consumed was as follows:

240 lbs. beef	3 cases lettuce
200 lbs. brawn	1 large cheese
19 lbs. sausages	6 lbs. meat spread
425 lbs. potatoes	60 doz. eggs
12 lbs. cooked beans	68 gal. milk
70 lbs. green beans	36 lbs. onions
100 bu. carrots	35 bottles and tins
100 bu. beets	preserved fruit
250 lbs. butter	350 lbs. jam
100 lbs. grapes	300 lbs. sugar
300 loaves bread	45 lbs. coffee
45 fowls	30 lbs. tea
1000 meat pies	70 lbs. cakes
2 sheep	100 lbs. biscuits
1 bag cabbages	26 pockets oranges
2 bags peanuts	13 gal. ice cream
2 bags pumpkins	114 doz. ice cream
2 bags cucumbers	166 doz. cool drinks

The discourses were given in two languages, English and Afrikaans. The Devil made a desperate effort to prevent the public meeting from being a great success, and miserably failed. The convention programs and leaflets advertising the meeting had been seized by the censor, but were released on Saturday, and the way those leaflets went over Johannesburg is something that only Jehovah's witnesses can fully understand. If one's heart is warm toward God one can stand it even if one's feet do get tired.

Good use was made of hundreds of posters, and the public meeting was a great success. After the public meeting the witnesses went forth on the streets and—

Within a few minutes every corner of the downtown section of Johannesburg had its magazine publisher with magazines in hand and bag proudly slung across the shoulder. They were well received and an excellent witness was given. For many it was their first experience in the street work and they were surprised to find how easy and interesting it can be. (A good time was had by all.) The story is told of a young lady who has only recently come to a knowledge of the truth going with a party of experienced magazine publishers and asking rather dubiously what she should "say" to the people. She soon discovered that it really wasn't necessary to say very much at all, and ended up by being "top-scorer" for the party.

The public meeting was held on Saturday, the same as at the St. Louis Convention August 6-10, 1941, and the special meeting for the children was booked for the next morning:

At 10:00 a. m. the main hall was cleared. Children between 5 and 18 to the number of 340 had been registered for the great occasion of "Children's Day". Prior to the Johannesburg gathering letters went from Jehovah's organization calling the people, old and young and children, and as in days of old, 'even to the registering of all the little ones . . . their sons and daughters.'—2 Chronicles 31:14-18. There was an atmosphere of great expectancy

regarding this event. It was a sight which touched all present, and especially those of the parents whose children were directly involved, when the youngsters were gathered in the front part of the hall between 10 and 11 a. m.

During the convention week-end 1,066 publishers engaged in the field service, spending 5,237 hours in the witness work. In all, 687 volumes, 8,190 booklets and 2,919 magazines were placed. Back-calls numbered 632; and model studies held, 154. New subscriptions totaled 6; and sound attendance, 3,170. Surely a mighty witness to the incoming Theocratic Government.

Jehovah knows how to care for His sheep. Two of the pioneers, Frank and Christine Taylor, wrote to the Johannesburg convention committee a fine letter, in which they said, in part:

For the past twenty-odd years we have been regularly attending conventions, most of

which have been in Europe, but never before have we experienced such unspeakable joy, such encouragement and so clear a vision as at this Theocratic Convention in Johannesburg.

Paul quoting from Isaiah 64:4 wrote: "Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him." Surely these words have a very apt application now and had a very literal fulfillment at this thrilling convention. Words cannot express our deep gratitude for this feast of fat things which we have all so much enjoyed. Your labor of love and forethought for the encouragement of your brethren has certainly not been in vain, for we are happily returning to our assigned positions on the Theocratic battle front, invigorated, refreshed, fully contented to each bear his own burden and determined indeed to fight and march right through with you to victory.

## Is Liberty Being Maintained on the Home Front?

All persons who cherish the prospect of LIBERTY after this global war owe it to themselves to read the new publication—

### FIGHTING FOR LIBERTY ON THE HOME FRONT

This booklet boldly and reliably announces the truth on activities behind the home front which pertain to the maintaining of LIBERTY. Send for your copy at once and read the astounding facts about the fight for LIBERTY. Don't forget that your friends need this valuable information also. Obtain additional copies for them. Your copies will be sent to you postpaid upon your contribution of 5c each; or 7 for 25c.



32 pages  
12,000,000 copies  
First Edition

**WATCHTOWER**

**117 Adams St.**

**Brooklyn, N. Y.**

I enclose herewith ☐ 5c contribution for 1 copy ☐ 25c contribution for 7 copies of the new publication *Fighting for Liberty on the Home Front*.

Name ..... Street .....

City ..... State .....

## Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"

### History of the Bible

THE historic human events related in the Bible cover a period of about 4,128 years. The prophetic events therein described, which are history written in advance, extend for about 2,900 years beyond that, or about one thousand years into the future from our day.

In the second epistle of the Christian ambassador Paul to Timothy, chapter four, verse thirteen, he wrote: "The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, and the books, but especially the parchments." Or, to transliterate his words: "the biblia, but especially the membranes." By the word *biblia* the apostle meant the then written books of the Bible, and it is from that word that we get our English word *Bible*. The apostle used those *biblia* in presenting "this gospel of the kingdom", quoting therefrom continually in his speeches and writings, and for like reason Christians today use the Bible in presenting the Kingdom gospel.

In the Bible itself the first five books of the Bible are called "the book of Moses", and doubtless they were originally just one book. Their division into five parts was due to the material's being too much to include in one scroll or roll or volume. Each of those five parts was not called by the present name in English or by the equivalent of it in the original tongue, but was designated by the opening words of the division. For instance, Genesis was designated by its opening words, "In the beginning" (or *B'reshith*); Exodus was designated by its introductory words, "Now these are the names" (or *V'eleh sh'moth*); and so on. Jesus Christ, who is the best authority on the subject, ascribed the authorship of those writings to the prophet Moses, as His recorded statements prove. (Matthew 8:4; 19:7, 8; Mark 7:10; 12:26; Luke 2:22-24; 20:37) Moses' writings were called "the law of Moses". —Luke 24:44; John 7:23.

Moses, being reared in the royal household of Egypt's Pharaoh, was versed in all the learning of the Egyptians, including their method of writing. However, when he was inspired to write down the things that Jehovah God brought to his attention from the beginning of the earth, he did not choose to write down the record in the language of the greatest world power of his day. His record was not meant for the Egyptians of his day. He wrote, and his God directed him to write, in the tongue or language of the "fewest of all people", the Hebrew language. The Hebrews, or Israelites, were the people whom Jehovah God chose to establish over them His typical Theocracy, and to bring them into covenant relationship with Him. His inspired record was meant for the covenant people, the people of the Theocracy. Hence, at the very beginning of this Divine Book, the Bible, its great Author showed it was written primarily for those in covenant relationship with him, from that day to this. The choice of language that God made with Moses' writings was the lead-off that was followed for a thousand years, resulting in the canon or genuine inspired collection of the Hebrew Scriptures, from Genesis to Malachi. Only parts thereof, namely, in the books of Daniel and Ezra, were written in the Chaldee, which is, strictly speaking, Syriac or Aramaic, a language related to and not far different from Hebrew.

Whether Moses got all the material for the history in the book of Genesis, which was before his time, from earlier written records is not shown. Nor was it necessary. From Adam to Moses there were at most ten men whose great length of years caused their lives to overlap, so that it was very easy for them to hand down the record by tradition from generation to generation, each adding thereto the new facts of his own generation. Since the Bible's Almighty and Truthful



Author was making up the record, He would safeguard it from error, and that by the power of inspiration from Moses forward. In proof of this the Christian ambassador Peter writes: "For never did any prophecy come by human will, but men sent by God spoke as they were impelled by the holy spirit." (2 Peter 1:21, *Weymouth*) This establishes the authorship of the Bible as God's and puts down men as only His penmen or 'stylus-pushers'.

After Moses the writing of the Divine Record went forward. God raised up prophets and chroniclers or historians whom He inspired to write, guiding them by His invisible power for accuracy of recording. Not only were the original autographs of the writers themselves produced, but in time copies of their autographs were made, so that if the original autograph were lost or worn out the copies thereof would preserve the record. For example, a copy of the book of the law of Moses was commanded to be made for the king of Israel, and the priests and Levites being commanded to teach the law likewise needed copies thereof. (Deuteronomy 17:18; Malachi 2:7) Therefore copies were kept in the tabernacle and the temple; and it was in the temple that a copy of the book of Moses was discovered after a period of neglect of the Word of God.—2 Chronicles 34:14-19.

When wicked King Jehoiakim commanded that a book written by Jeremiah be burnt, the prophet promptly wrote another copy. (Jeremiah 36:1-32) In Jeremiah's days the seventy years' desolation of the land of Judah and Jerusalem came and the Jews were transported to Babylon. But the written Word of God was preserved through that, and the Lord even raised up scribes in the land of the Jewish captivity, notably the scribe Ezra. When he visited the Jews after their restoration to their native land, Ezra led in the reading and education of the people there in the Bible. (Nehemiah 8:1-18) The Jews had now

been dispersed among all nations, and from Ezra's time, in particular, there was a making of many copies of the then books of the Bible for the use and instruction of those Jews in the lands of their dispersion. For instance, when the apostle Paul came to the Jews in the city of Berea in Greece they had a copy or copies of the Hebrew Bible and they "searched the scriptures daily, whether those things [told by Paul] were so".—Acts 17:11.

The Hebrew Scriptures finally came to be known as or comprehended in the expression "the book of Moses, the book of the prophets, and the book of the Psalms". (Mark 12:26; Luke 20:42; Acts 1:20; 7:42) But these were all an expression of the divine law, as is shown by the fact that Jesus referred to the book of the Psalms as the "law" of God given to His covenant people. (John 10:34; Psalm 82:6) But before Jesus' time even the faithful remnant of Jehovah's chosen people of old had the complete Hebrew Bible. This is proved by the fact that about 280 years before Christ a translation of the Hebrew Bible into the Greek was begun at Alexandria, Egypt, in behalf of the Greek-speaking Jews there. Legend claims it was completed by seventy Jewish elders in seventy days; but this Greek Version, which is still used by the Greek Orthodox or Eastern Church today, was in reality completed about the beginning of the so-called "Christian era".

There was a break in the inspired Scriptures between the last of the ancient prophets and inspired writers and the coming of Jesus Christ, and lasting for several hundred years. During that time Greek had become the universal language of the habitable earth. Jesus Christ did no writing of the things He said and did, but His apostles and disciples did. After the day of Pentecost following His resurrection and ascension to heaven, the holy spirit, or righteous-working power of God, brought to their remembrance the things Jesus had said and done, as

He had promised. (John 14:26) These witnesses of His resurrection, and their companions or fellow disciples such as Mark and Luke, were inspired to make a record concerning Jesus and His apostles and their acts and teachings. Now the language chosen was the medium common to the civilized world, namely, popular Greek. None of their original autograph writings are extant today, but very early copies thereof were made and were included together with the Hebrew Scriptures (particularly with the Greek Septuagint) to make up the complete Bible. That all the books of our present Bible were collected together during the century following the death of the last apostle, John, and that thus the Bible was complete with all its inspired books, there is proof from the writings of men who were genuinely interested in Christianity during that second century, yes, proof even from enemy writings challenging the teachings of the Christians.

The Christian churches or congregations in the various lands desired copies of these Scriptures, and many copies were made, not merely in the original language thereof, however. Christian churches were formed among many peoples not speaking Greek, in Egypt, in Ethiopia, in Syria, in Persia, in Armenia, in Italy, and elsewhere. Hence translations were made of the Scriptures into those languages. These translations are called "versions". Very early copies of such versions are in existence today. Counting these and the early copies of the Scriptures in the original Greek, there exist and are known to exist today more than ten thousand manuscript copies of the so-called "New Testament" Scriptures. No two copies of these, however, are exactly alike; and hence, particularly since the Protestant Reformation of the sixteenth century, there has been much textual criticism in order to establish or to arrive at as close as possible what was the genuine original reading of these Greek Scriptures as the apostles and their inspired fellows

put them down at first. The oldest and most authoritative Greek text is that known as the Vatican Manuscript No. 1209, written and put up in codex form in the fourth century, in Egypt, and which the Vatican published in photographic facsimile form in 1889-90.

The first English translation of the Bible was that made by John Wycliffe and his assistants from and after 1382, and which was translated from the Latin version known as the "Vulgate". The first English version of the complete Bible produced on a printing press was that of Myles Coverdale, in 1535, who availed himself of the previous work of William Tyndale, then in prison facing death. In 1611, under the sponsorship of King James I of England, came the popular Authorized Version, or King James Version, translated from the original Hebrew and what late-date Greek manuscripts were then available. This Version has continued as a favorite to this day, and it is the unaltered text of this version, together with student helps, that is contained in the Watchtower Edition of the Bible, published in 1942.

---

### Cargoes by Air

◆ Cargoes by air are certainly coming; in fact, they are already here. A single plane carried not only military personnel but oil and gasoline supplies between Brazil and Africa, making ten flights in six days. A Pacific round trip totaling 21,000 miles, with cargo as well as officers, was completed in five days. Less than thirty cargo aircraft hauled 900,000 pounds in a single week.

The matter of cost enters in. The calculations are that 180 cargo airships can transport 450,000 tons of freight in a year, while if the same cargo goes by water it requires 30 merchant ships, 1 battleship, 2 aircraft carriers, 4 cruisers and 16 destroyers or other escort vessels, besides several hundred submarine chasers for the protection of the convoys as they depart from port.

# Theocratic Outlook on World Events

Have you read this magazine and noted  
the courageous, unprejudiced and instruc-  
tive way it relates facts on world events?

This is due to anchoring the proof of all  
articles in the Word of God, who is the  
Builder and Ruler of the Kingdom, His  
righteous, Theocratic government. Why  
rely on man's opinion and guidance, when  
you have the Bible, the SURE Word of  
God? Seek His way, which leads to joy,  
peace and liberty in Kingdom glory. To  
do so you need to read, regularly, informa-  
tion based on Scriptural light as in *CON-*  
*SOLATION* magazine. Do not stop with  
reading this one issue. Be enlightened  
further on Theocratic or Kingdom news,  
by *subscribing* for *CONSOLATION* maga-  
zine and having it come to you, by mail,  
every other week for one year. This you  
may do by filling out the coupon and send-  
ing it, together with a \$1.00 contribution,  
to the Watchtower address below.

***ACT NOW and profit from this magazine of fact, hope and courage.***

---

**WATCHTOWER, 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y.**

Please place my name on the subscription list for *Consolation* magazine for the com-  
ing year, for which I enclose contribution of \$1.00.

Name ..... Street .....

City ..... State .....



# CONSOLATION

JOURNAL OF FACT, HOPE AND COURAGE

## Supreme Court Reversal Sustains Free Worship

Momentous issues involved in 5-4 decision for Jehovah's witnesses

## Balanced Government of U.S.A.

The American system of checks and balances safeguards liberties

## Foregleams of Deliverance

Who will survive to see the new world and live therein?

## Slave-Driver Hitler and His 'God'

Who is the one-eyed, foxy, cruel and merciless god of Hitler?

## Doorstep Presentation of Gospel

Good news brought to the homes of the people in unique manner

Five Cents a Copy  
One Dollar a Year

Vol. XXIV No. 619  
June 9, 1943

\* \$1.25 in Canada and  
\* Foreign Countries

Published Every  
Other Wednesday



# Contents

Supreme Court Reverses Itself to Sustain Free Worship	3
Freedom for a Price	4
Jackson's Sermon	5
Nature of Message Irrelevant	6
Doorbells to Be Used	7
Modern-Day Gamaliel	8
Constitution Outmoded?	8
Precarious State of Liberty	12
The Limited, Balanced, Government of the U. S. A.	13
Helicopters	15
"Thy Word Is Truth"	
Foregleams of Deliverance	16
Hitler, the Slave-Driver, and His "God"	18
Hooking Up with the God Odin	18
The Father of Lies	20
The Crusaders' Idea	21
A Cunning and Merciless One	22
A Slave-driving Program	23
A Murderous, Hateful Anti-God	24
The Mimic God Is Back of Hitler	25
Doorstep Setup Presentation of "Good News"	26
What They Teach at Oberlin	28
Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"	
Need for Argumentation	29
Water and Health	31

Published every other Wednesday by  
**WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, INC.**  
 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

## OFFICERS

President	N. H. Knorr
Secretary	W. E. Van Amburgh
Editor	Clayton J. Woodworth

## Five Cents a Copy

\$1 a year in the United States  
 \$1.25 to Canada and all other countries

## NOTICE TO SUBSCRIBERS

**Remittances:** For your own safety, remit by postal or express money order. When coin or currency is lost in the ordinary mails, there is no redress. Remittances from countries other than those named below may be made to the Brooklyn office, but only by international postal money order.

Receipt of a new or renewal subscription will be acknowledged only when requested. **Notice of Expiration** is sent with the journal one month before subscription expires. Please renew promptly to avoid loss of copies.

Send change of address direct to us rather than to the post office. Your request should reach us at least two weeks before the date of issue with which it is to take effect. Send your old as well as the new address. Copies will not be forwarded by the post office to your new address unless extra postage is provided by you.

Published also in Greek, Portuguese, Spanish, and Ukrainian.

## OFFICES FOR OTHER COUNTRIES

England	34 Craven Terrace, London, W. 2
Australia	7 Beresford Road, Strathfield, N. S. W.
South Africa	623 Boston House, Cape Town
Mexico	Calzada de Melchor Ocampo 71, Mexico, D. F.
Brazil	Caixa Postal 1319, Rio de Janeiro
Argentina	Calle Honduras 5646-48, Buenos Aires

Entered as second-class matter at Brooklyn, N. Y., under the Act of March 3, 1879.

# Notandum

## Still There Is Tolerance in Places

♦ Editor, *News-Press*: Concerning the recent controversy in which four children were expelled from school because of their religious differences, I might say that there are still those of us in the good old U.S.A. who still believe tolerance is an essential factor in holding together democracy.

Naturally, preceding every conflict, we find flag-waving, soapbox orators, bands playing stirring marches, etc. People who ordinarily are sensible individuals are found to be swayed by propaganda. They forget the principles upon which democracy was founded. Political and religious ideas that are different from their own become dark and foreboding in their minds. Thus we find such an example in this case of the Jehovah's witnesses. Perhaps some of us do not understand their beliefs. But does that entitle us to thrust them out of our society? If we believe in the Almighty ourselves, we should not disregard His teachings of tolerance.

A love of God and a love of our country is not measured by the amount of flag-waving we participate in, nor how much of a hypocrite we can be, but rather is measured by how well we treat our fellow man. Although I believe most heartily in saluting the flag, there is no reason for anyone to be compelled to do so. This only defeats the purpose that "Old Glory" stands for. Let us remember that from those who put patriotism above all else come our Fascists and Communists, and not from those who put [God] first in their minds.—Herb Fredlund, in the Santa Barbara (Calif.) *News-Press*.

Those who chisel away the guaranties of the constitutional rights undermine their own liberties.—Selected.

He who knows only his own side of the case knows little of that.—John Stuart Mill.

# CONSOLATION

“And in His name shall the nations hope.”—Matthew 12:21, A. R. V.

Volume XXIV

Brooklyn, N. Y., Wednesday, June 9, 1943

Number 619

## Supreme Court Reverses Itself to Sustain Free Worship

AS MILITARY battles rage on distant shores, the fight for liberty on the home front continues unabated. A signal victory, after long battle, was won on this vital front when the Supreme Court of the United States handed down a decision upholding the most precious of all freedoms—the right to worship God according to the dictates of your own conscience. To do so it was necessary for the court to take the rare action of reversing itself. On June 8, 1942, the court ruled that cities could rightfully tax the distribution of religious literature. Approximately eleven months later, on May 3, 1943, the high court vacated that erroneous decision and restored to its high, constitutional plane the liberty to worship God freely. That day will go down in history as one of triumph for constitutional rights.

This timely victory was made possible by the unflagging zeal and integrity of Jehovah's witnesses, who, though an unpopular minority, are the foremost sentinels of freedom on the home front. When ruled against a year ago they did not give up the fight. Man-made laws that conflict with God's law are not obeyed by them, for God's law is perfect and right, and obedience thereto results in harm to no one. They believe, in such cases, as did the apostles, “We ought to obey God rather than men.” (Acts 5:29) Their steadfastness, despite fierce persecution, to that divinely given instruction made possible the revival of the license-tax issue in the Supreme Court and the subsequent victory of May 3. The right-

ness of that Godly principle to which they strictly adhered regardless of the erroneous judgment of men has now been vindicated before all by the high court's reversal and pushing back of encroachments against freedom. The death of the pernicious license tax on freedom to worship the Almighty is a God-given victory for His witnesses. All freedom-lovers will reap its benefits.

### *Judgments Reversed*

Eleven cases involving this issue were before the Supreme Court: the three original ones from Arkansas, Arizona and Alabama, which were up for rehearing, and eight new ones from the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania. Chief Justice Stone handed down the decision on the three wherein the court reversed itself, and assigned the reason therefor as being the same as that expressed in the court's opinion killing the Pennsylvania ordinances. Justice Douglas wrote that 5-4 majority opinion of the court, and said, in part:

The hand distribution of religious tracts is an age-old form of missionary evangelism—as old as the history of printing presses. . . . It is more than preaching; it is more than distribution of religious literature. It is a combination of both. Its purpose is as evangelical as the revival meeting. This form of religious activity occupies the same high estate under the First Amendment as do the worship in the churches and preaching from the pulpits. It has the same claim to protection as the more orthodox and conventional exercises of religion. It also has the same claim

as the others to the guarantees of freedom of speech and freedom of the press. . . . The way of the religious dissenter has long been hard. But if the formula of this type of ordinance is approved, a new device for the suppression of religious minorities will have been found. This method of disseminating religious beliefs can be crushed and closed out by the sheer weight of the toll or tribute which is exacted town by town, village by village. The spread of religious ideas through personal visitations by the literature ministry of numerous religious groups would be stopped. . . . The judgment in *Jones v. Opelika* [the Alabama license-tax case] has this day been vacated. Freed from that controlling precedent, we can restore to their high, constitutional position the liberties of itinerant evangelists who disseminate their religious beliefs and the tenets of their faith through distribution of literature. The judgments are reversed.

This straightforward and unbiased reasoning can be clearly understood by every American, and it has his approval. In sharp contrast thereto are the virulent and bitterly phrased dissenting opinions of Justices Reed, Frankfurter and Jackson. Their reasoning is vague, their expounding of the constitutional principles involved is unsound, and the arguments they advance betray religious prejudice and discrimination against petitioners.

### ***The Worship That Is Free***

Justice Reed, the writer of the court's erroneous opinion of 1942, which is now reversed, dissents, and once more the outstanding characteristic of his argument is "words, words, words". The substance thereof is found in his statement, "The simple answer is that if there had been any purpose of Congress to prohibit any kind of taxes on the press its knowledge of the abominated English taxes would have led it to ban them unequivocally." In other words, he argues that if taxes were to be banned they would have been specifically named in the First Amendment, and, not being named, the court therefore may not hold

them to be burdensome and an abridgment of freedom. He would require the amendment to definitely name every danger, and hence his reasoning becomes more absurd than ever. The phraseology of the amendment is sweeping and all-inclusive in its prohibitions against abridgment of these freedoms and was intended to have construction broad and general in scope placed upon its words that protection from any and all unforeseen, future dangers might be assured.

Justice Reed's personal and arbitrary definition of what constitutes the religion to be protected by the amendment is as follows: "The rites which are protected by the First Amendment are in essence spiritual—prayer, mass, sermons, sacrament—not sales of religious goods." Prayer, including the repetitious mumbling of them over beads, that Jesus condemned (Matthew 6:7), mass, high or low depending upon the sum of money paid, sermons, oral ones from a pulpit, and sacrament, including the drinking of wine by only a priest and eating of wafers by the laity, these "spiritual" things are what Mr. Reed would have the amendment protect, and not the house-to-house preaching of the gospel as was done by Christ Jesus and His apostles. In contending that the distribution of printed sermons does not come under constitutional protection, he would overrule the worship of God in spirit and in truth by Christians by their obedience to Christ's command, at Mark 13:10: "The gospel must first be PUBLISHED among all nations." In thus setting up his own definition of what constitutes religious worship Justice Reed intrudes himself upon the individual's conscience. Following the standards he sets up for ministers would be disastrous to Jehovah's witnesses, for those standards are not nearly high enough to meet the righteous requirements of Jehovah God.

### ***Freedom for a Price***

Justice Frankfurter dissents in typical professor-of-science fashion and walks

a mental "tightrope" that no one can follow without becoming unbalanced. He can see no difference in the dissemination of printed matter from selling goods, wares and merchandise. In his opinion he stated: "It cannot be said that the petitioners are constitutionally exempt from taxation merely because they may be engaged in religious activities or because such activities may constitute an exercise of a constitutional right." In other words, he held that one could properly be forced to pay for the inalienable right of freedom to worship, and if not able to pay that right must be surrendered. The incomprehensible argument of Frankfurter was that if "recognized" clergymen paid income taxes or taxes on their cars and telephones, then Jehovah's witnesses should pay to distribute printed sermons. The Supreme Court's majority opinion strikes down this insipidity by the common-sense statement: "It is one thing to impose a tax on the income or property of a preacher. It is quite another thing to exact a tax from him for the privilege of delivering a sermon. . . . The power to tax the exercise of a privilege is the power to control or suppress its enjoyment."

Mr. Frankfurter takes the attitude that the rights under the Constitution are granted by the government, and that the state has "given something for which it can ask a return". He says, in effect, that if the state can grant a right, the state can also tax it. This is an amazing ideology brought forward by Mr. Frankfurter. Schoolboys know that the right to freely worship God in accord with one's conscience is an inalienable and inherent right, granted by Jehovah God, and that the government was created to protect and guarantee its free exercise. Furthermore, the forefathers did not intend that the government be supported by the taxation of the privileges safeguarded by the Bill of Rights. To sustain such a tax is like shackling these cherished freedoms and abandoning them in

the path of the totalitarian monstrosity.

### ***Jackson's Sermon***

The dissenting opinion of Justice Jackson could not be distributed in the heretofore "license tax" towns without paying \$1.50 per day to do so, for it was a printed "sermon" on religion. His "text" was a new, strange, fantastic doctrine, namely, the "right to be let alone". He contends this "freedom" is equally as sacred as the freedom to preach. Like the proverbial ostrich, he wants to keep his head in the sand. Jesus told His followers to "let them alone", meaning the religious "goats", but the "sheep" do not wish to be "let alone" by God's ministers. It is necessary to call on all persons to determine who are the "sheep" and who are the goatish ones. The "goats" would pass laws to cause the "other sheep" of the Lord to be 'let alone' without proper spiritual food and force them to feed on religious husks. This is 'framing mischief by law' and 'fighting against God'.—Matthew 15:14; John 10:16, 26-29; Psalm 94:20; Acts 5:38, 39.

Mr. Jackson crusaded in the field of private religious opinion and betrayed much religious prejudice and discrimination against Jehovah's witnesses. He complained of the orderly and systematic manner in which the witnesses worked, and their going "by twos and threes", just as Christ Jesus sent out His apostles. (Mark 6:7) He was greatly disturbed by the message itself, and the resulting exposé of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. He quotes at length from the phonograph recording "Snare and Racket" and the books *Religion* and *Enemies* to show how the poor Hierarchy monster is "abused" by having the truth told about it. As these excerpts were read many in the packed court chambers smiled and nodded in agreement with the message read. Obviously the statements fitted the pestilential and political Hierarchy. Jackson would protect this "sacred cow" that drove the founding fathers to this country to escape its totalitarian besti-



ality. He then shows discrimination in its baldest form, stating: "To put them [Jehovah's witnesses and their activity] on the same constitutional plane [with 'recognized' churches] seems to me to have a dangerous tendency towards discrediting religious freedom."

If the courts are permitted to say that a particular practice is not religious, nor an act of worship, because it does not harmonize with the orthodox religions, then that would be a permanent limitation upon free worship. The court is supposed to be neutral in the field of religious doctrines and tenets of faith.

He frets because the Watchtower Society offers no balance sheet of financial matters to prove it is charitable. The fact that handsomely bound books of 384 pages are left with the people on a *maximum* contribution, not a minimum price, of 25c, to partially defray publishing and distributing costs, and that annually millions of copies of books and booklets are given FREE, does not prove to Justice Jackson its charitable nature. Doubtless he is convinced, without seeing a balance sheet of the fabulously wealthy Roman Catholic Hierarchy, that the sale of "blessed" medals and other trinkets turned out in mass production for a fraction of a cent to a few cents at most, and then these images sold for a sum of dollars under false representations of "spiritual" benefits, is not commercialism, but beautiful "charity". The Supreme Court has previously ruled that the setting of a price on literature does not disqualify it for inclusion under the freedom of speech and of press clauses of the Constitution. It is a ridiculous stalemate to hold that one must "go bankrupt" by forced "free" distribution to enjoy constitutional rights.

Mr. Jackson states: "The First Amendment grew out of an experience which taught that society cannot trust the conscience of a majority to keep its religious zeal within the limits that a free society can tolerate." He infers that the Witness-

es, by exercising the right of freedom of worship, do not keep their zeal within the limits that a "free" society can tolerate. His inference misconstrues the purpose of the First Amendment and would defeat the object of the amendment. The ones who made it had fresh in mind the suppression and physical tortures and restrictions placed by the majority Hierarchy on helpless minorities that would not bow to the pope's autocratic rule. It was this Hierarchy "religious zeal" as evidenced by the Inquisition that was to be limited and forbidden if a free society were to exist. Jehovah's witnesses do not deny others their rights, but favor freedom of speech and worship for all. It would be incongruous to call any other kind of society a "free" one. The victories relating to civil liberties won by Jehovah's witnesses are equally beneficial to all. Mr. Justice Jackson opposes obedience to God and the witnesses' fight for freedom, saying that the Watchtower publications advocate "obedience to the law of God instead of the law of man, and an interpretation of the law of God as they see it". How else should they believe in a country where democratic principles still hold and there is freedom of worship? As he sees it? or as the Roman Catholic Hierarchy 'sees it'? If Jehovah's witnesses had not continued obeying God's law to preach, but rather closed down because of the prohibitive unrighteous license-tax law made by man, as sustained by the Supreme Court a year ago (1942), this latest victory for freedom would never have been won.

### ***Nature of Message Irrelevant***

The clear-visioned decision of the court, written by Justice Douglas, strikes down completely the unsound doctrine of Justice Jackson as to the message contained in the literature, and the objection that it was "sold" as raised by all the dissenters.

The mere fact that the religious literature is "sold" by itinerant preachers rather than

"donated" does not transform evangelism into a commercial enterprise. If it did, then the passing of the collection plate in church would make the church service a commercial project. The constitutional rights of those spreading their religious beliefs through the spoken and printed word are not to be gauged by standards governing retailers or wholesalers of books. The right to use the press for expressing one's views is not to be measured by the protection afforded commercial handbills. It should be remembered that the pamphlets of Thomas Paine were not distributed free of charge. It is plain that a religious organization needs funds to remain a going concern. But an itinerant evangelist, however misguided or intolerant he may be, does not become a mere book agent by selling the Bible or religious tracts to help defray his expenses or to sustain him. Freedom of speech, freedom of the press, freedom of religion are available to all, not merely to those who can pay their own way. . . .

Considerable emphasis is placed on the kind of literature which petitioners were distributing—its provocative, abusive, and ill-mannered character and the assault which it makes on our established churches and the cherished faiths of many of us. . . . But those considerations are no justification for the license tax which the ordinance imposes. Plainly a community may not suppress, or the state tax, the dissemination of views because they are unpopular, annoying or distasteful. If that device were ever sanctioned, there would have been forged a ready instrument for the suppression of the faith which any minority cherishes but which does not happen to be in favor. That would be a complete repudiation of the Bill of Rights.

### ***Doorbells to Be Used***

This victory in eleven cases involving the license tax was not the only one on May 3. A twelfth case, in which Jehovah's witnesses also figured, was decided in favor of liberty. The city of Struthers, Ohio, had an ordinance that made it unlawful to ring a doorbell or knock on doors by persons distributing literature. Appellant, one of Jehovah's witnesses,

contended that the law abridged freedom of worship as applied against the distribution of Bible literature, and that on its face and as applied it destroyed free speech and press by denying the right of distribution from house to house. According to this law a minister could not call at a home and knock to leave literature with one of his church members; the postman could not ring the doorbell to leave printed matter he thought should be delivered direct to the householder.

The same division of justices existed in the disposition of this case as in those involving the license tax: Justices Stone, Murphy, Douglas, Black and Rutledge Jr. forming the majority which killed the unconstitutional ordinance; Reed, Roberts, Frankfurter and Jackson making up the dissenter ranks. Justice Black wrote the opinion of the court. In that decision the following logic was presented:

For centuries it has been a common practice in this and other countries for persons not specifically invited to go from home to home and knock on doors or ring doorbells to communicate ideas to the occupants or to invite them to political, religious, or other kinds of public meetings. Whether such visiting shall be permitted has in general been deemed to depend upon the will of the individual master of each household, and not upon the determination of the community. In the instant case, the City of Struthers, Ohio, has attempted to make this decision for all its inhabitants. . . .

We are faced in the instant case with the necessity of weighing the conflicting interests of the appellant in the civil rights she claims, as well as the right of the individual householder to determine whether he is willing to receive her message, against the interest of the community which by this ordinance offers to protect the interests of all of its citizens, whether particular citizens want that protection or not. The ordinance does not control anything but the distribution of literature, and in that respect it substitutes the judg-

ment of the community for the judgment of the individual householder. It submits the distributor to criminal punishment for annoying the person on whom he calls, even though the recipient of the literature distributed is in fact glad to receive it. . . .

The federal government, in its current war bond selling campaign, encourages groups of citizens to distribute advertisements and circulars from house to house. Of course, as every person acquainted with political life knows, door to door campaigning is one of the most accepted techniques of seeking popular support, while the circulation of nomination papers would be greatly handicapped if they could not be taken to the citizens in their homes. . . .

Freedom to distribute information to every citizen wherever he desires to receive it is so clearly vital to the preservation of a free society that, putting aside reasonable police and health regulations of time and manner of distribution, it must be fully preserved.

### ***Modern-Day Gamaliel***

As shown by this cogent argument, such a law allows the municipal officials to set up their rule as a total state, to control the minds of the people by saying who may and who may not call on its citizens and disseminate opinion. Justice Murphy, in a splendid concurring opinion, reminds one of the wise Gamaliel of apostolic times. (Acts 5: 29-40) He stated:

I believe that nothing enjoys a higher estate in our society than the right given by the First and Fourteenth Amendments freely to practice and proclaim one's religious convictions. The right extends to the aggressive and disputatious as well as to the meek and acquiescent. The lesson of experience is that—with the passage of time and the interchange of ideas—organizations, once turbulent, perfervid and intolerant in their origin, mellow into tolerance and acceptance by the community, or else sink into oblivion. . . . If a religious belief has substance, it can survive criticism, heated and abusive though it may be, with the aid of truth and reason alone. By the same method those who follow

false prophets are exposed. Repression has no place in this country. It is our proud achievement to have demonstrated that unity and strength are best accomplished, not by enforced orthodoxy of views, but by diversity of opinion through the fullest possible measure of freedom of conscience and thought. . . .

The primary concern is with the act of canvassing as a source of inconvenience and annoyance to householders. But if the city can prohibit canvassing for the purpose of distributing religious pamphlets, it can also outlaw the door to door solicitations of religious charities. . . . Freedom of religion has a higher dignity under the Constitution than municipal or personal convenience. In these days free men have no loftier responsibility than the preservation of that freedom. A nation dedicated to that ideal will not suffer but will prosper in its observance.

### ***Constitution Outmoded?***

All the dissenters start out with professions of the need for freedom and the necessity to guard against abridgment thereof, and then proceed to laboriously pick their way through a vague line of reasoning to justify their abridgment of those freedoms in the case at bar. Americans find it impossible to follow. Mr. Justice Frankfurter dissented by saying in effect that the Constitution is an antiquated document and needed to be revamped by the modern-day construction and understanding of things as viewed by him. He said:

The habits and security of life in sparsely settled rural communities, or even in those few cities which a hundred and fifty years ago had a population of a few thousand, cannot be made the basis of judgment for determining the area of allowable self-protection by present-day industrial communities. The lack of privacy and the hazards to peace of mind and body caused by people living not in individual houses but crowded together in large human beehives, as they so widely do, are facts of modern living which cannot be ignored.

Justice Reed fell into the same snare of reasoning, saying, "Changing condi-

CONSOLATION

tions have begotten modification by law of many practices once deemed a part of the individual's liberty." In this dissent Reed was joined by Jackson and Roberts. They all must feel the Constitution to be out of date. Reed speaks of this unconstitutional ordinance of the city of Struthers as a "trivial police regulation". A violation of the fundamental rights guaranteed by the state and federal constitutions cannot be regarded as of trivial consequence. Each case of denial of rights to an individual or to a small minority may seem to be relatively unimportant, but the real fighters for liberty know that callousness and disregard for the rights of such minorities is merely the opening wedge that will eventually split wide open the defense of cherished freedoms and lead to their complete destruction unless checked at the very outset, trivial though that beginning may seem to be.

Let the people of this nation consider the profound expression made by Mr. Justice Sutherland, dissenting, in *Associated Press v. N.L.R.B.*, 301 U.S. 103, 141: "Do the people of this land—in the providence of God, favored, as they sometimes boast, above all others in the plenitude of their liberties—desire to preserve those so carefully protected by the First Amendment: liberty of religious worship . . . ? If so, let them withstand all *beginnings* of encroachment. For the saddest epitaph which can be carved in memory of a vanished liberty is that it was lost because its possessors failed to stretch forth a saving hand while yet there was time." Jehovah's witnesses may be an unpopular minority; the Lord's servants always have been. But remember, if you permit and wink at the building of legal "gallows" for the 'stringing up' of Jehovah's witnesses, in the end you will find yourselves swinging from that very scaffold. It has happened before.—Esther 7:9, 10.

### **Public Reaction**

In these decisions, disposing of eleven

cases involving either the issue of license tax or of anti-doorbell ringing, the Supreme Court was sharply divided, and, from the tenor of the dissenting opinions, debate must have been very heated. Not so, however, was public reaction, as reflected in the press. In 1942 the press was almost unanimous in its condemnation of the court decision authorizing a license tax on literature; now it is unanimous in acclaiming the reversal of that pernicious "stamp tax". The four dissenters stand alone in their favoring of constitutional liberties for a price. You will read with interest the following editorial comments made in various papers from widely separated parts of the country. It is a representative cross-section of the nation's reaction.

The New York Times, May 4:

It is a gross understatement to say that Jehovah's witnesses are not popular in this country. Their beliefs are their own concern, but their methods of urging them upon other people are annoying. Almost everywhere they have gone they have stirred up antagonism. Hence the local ordinances intended to drive them out or at least discourage them. But their case is just another illustration of the old truism that moderate and popular groups seldom have to fight for free speech. It is always the extremists who get themselves kicked around and raise the issue. Yet if we permit extremists of an unpleasant sort to be deprived of their rights it is hard to tell where the line can be drawn and who is to be deemed secure. We think the rights of all Americans are a little safer because Jehovah's witnesses have had their second day in court.

The Washington Post, May 5:

The question of whether the guarantees of religious freedom embodied in the First Amendment—and, incidentally, incorporated into our war aims—are absolute or limited has been raised several times within the past few years by the behavior of members of the sect called Jehovah's witnesses. Both the tenets and the evangelical practices of the Witnesses are distinctly unpopular with many



Americans in many sections of the country. The question, however, is not whether the Witnesses have invited persecution but whether religious liberty can be said to exist where the suppression of any sect, however fanatical, is given a legal sanction. . . . Last Monday's action by the Court is of tremendous historical importance. It not only reaffirms the traditional American concept of the relationship of church and state but it is counter to the tendency of all modern states to extend their control over all human activity, physical and spiritual.

*New York World-Telegram*, May 7:

We welcome this reversal. Religious tolerance means nothing if it is limited to popular doctrines. The sincerity with which we fight for freedom is tested by our willingness to extend to those with whom we disagree, and whose teachings we may even detest, the same rights we claim for ourselves.

*The Baltimore Sun*, May 4:

The almost chaotic state which has characterized the law on the civil liberties of certain aggressively evangelistic religious groups like Jehovah's witnesses is illustrated by two decisions of the Supreme Court yesterday. Happily, these decisions in themselves go far to restore order in this field and on a basis which will appeal to laymen interested in the widest maintenance of religious freedom. . . . Certainly these are times in which religious liberty must be granted every protection fairly suggested in the Constitution.

*The Kansas City Star*, May 4:

This seems a sensible view, entirely in accord with American tradition. Probably the vast majority of Americans do not agree with several of the fundamental tenets of the faith to which the Jehovah's witnesses subscribe. Moreover, their method of propagating that faith may at times annoy a good many of us. But the Constitution is clear. Neither Congress nor any other legislative body may enact a law "respecting an establishment of religion or prohibiting the free exercise thereof". These local ordinances did so by subterfuge. If they were allowed to stand, a precedent would have been set equally applicable in the future to other churches and other faiths.

Samuel Grafton, writing in the *Philadelphia Record*, May 5:

Last year the Court ruled that Fort Smith, Ark. (and other communities), had the right to impose a tax on the sale of pamphlets. The tax in Fort Smith happened to be \$10, which meant that if you had only \$9.99 to spend you did not have the right of free press, but that if you had one penny more, the Constitution would be allowed to protect you.

That decision (with Mr. Justice Frankfurter, shockingly, on the majority side) would have allowed each local community to set up a kind of juridical Sears, Roebuck catalogue, so much money needed to enjoy free press, so many dollars for free speech, and so on. The doctrine would have had the Constitution reserve its favors for those with the price, a very immoral thing.

Now there has been a reversal. (With Mr. Frankfurter still on the wrong side.) It makes me proud of my profession to note that the American Newspaper Publishers Association, practically every member of which has \$10, nonetheless joined in fighting this curious concept, that you have the right of free press so long as you are sound asleep in bed, but if you want to get up and use the right, it will cost you money. The implications of the reversal are vast. Isn't the poll-tax the same kind of business, a local fee set on the exercise of a basic right? So we had this sudden, liberal turn this week.

*St. Louis Star-Times*, May 4:

When the constitutional history of the present era is written, not the least important chapter may tell how, despite the strains and stresses of war, the people's civil liberties were saved, and in that chapter this second Opelika decision may be deemed a decisive turning point. . . . It [the license tax] was the very antithesis of the great doctrine of the late Justice Holmes—"freedom for the thought you hate." . . . The propaganda scattered by Jehovah's witnesses is, as all justices have agreed, frequently 'provocative, abusive and ill-tempered.' We are at war, when emotions run high and tensions are severe. It is in such a situation that our constitutional liberties often are subject to

strain—but it is just such a situation which they are designed to meet. That is the whole meaning of the right of minorities to freedom from majority suppression. . . . The reversal of the high court's 1942 judgment is a notable victory for the people's bill of rights.

St. Louis *Post-Dispatch*, May 5:

The first two of President Roosevelt's four freedoms—freedom of speech and freedom of religion—have been staunchly bulwarked in the United States by the Supreme Court in the reversal of its sorely mistaken *Opelika* decision of last June 8 [1942]. . . . The plain fact is that this reversal is made possible only by the substitution of the Rutledge vote for religious freedom in the place of the Byrnes vote against it. The lineup is still 5 to 4. Justices Roberts, Reed, Frankfurter and Jackson stand where they stood last year. Justice Rutledge has tipped the scales on the side of the cherished freedoms of the Bill of Rights. In his first few weeks on the court, the former dean of the Washington University Law School has enabled the final tribunal to clear its conscience and to make judicial history. . . . The country can only regret that, having become established in nationally recognized error, Justices Roberts, Reed, Frankfurter and Jackson are unchangeable. . . . Be that as it may, *Opelika* is vacated after a life of less than eleven months. May this striking record shine out as a warning signal if the Supreme Court is again tempted to whittle away the Bill of Rights.

The Chicago *Sun*, May 6:

The majority position is simple. It is that a tax laid upon the exercise of a right restrains the right and can be used to destroy it; also that the religious activities of Jehovah's witnesses do not lose constitutional protection merely because they are unusual and, to many, distasteful.

Indeed, the guarantee of religious freedom in its origin was partially intended to protect certain unpopular minorities of the 18th century, including the Methodists and Baptists, who certainly are not unpopular today. It is the most elementary principle of liberty

that the rights of all are most surely lost when taken away from an unpopular minority. These latest decisions of the Supreme Court are therefore ground for rejoicing by all believers in liberty, however repugnant certain ideas of minority groups may be to them.

The Arizona *Daily Star*, May 7:

Just because some activity is bothersome to some people is no reason why it can be forbidden or taxed out of existence. Part of the price of freedom constitutes what many of us consider annoyances or nuisances. What we must learn as a principle of government is to tolerate such nuisances rather than establish legal precedents which can at a later time be used to curb the freedom we expect for ourselves. . . . Indeed, if the views of those so-called "liberal" justices, Frankfurter, Reed, Jackson and Roberts, had been upheld, municipalities would have had nearly the same power to restrict religious liberty that the officials of Palestine had back in the days of Christ. Christ, it might be remembered, was quite a nuisance to some of the people of His time.

The Norfolk *Virginian-Pilot*, May 5:

By a 5 to 4 decision which, in our opinion, deserved to be unanimous, the United States Supreme Court Monday vacated its 5 to 4 decision of June 8, 1942, which upheld three municipal ordinances under which the taxing power was used to obstruct or lay heavy burdens on the distribution of religious literature by the Jehovah's witnesses sect. . . . The *Virginian-Pilot*, which regarded this whole series of restrictive Supreme Court decisions, since and including the *Gobitis* decision [compulsory flag saluting], as they are now regarded by the Court which is reversing them one by one, welcomes this return to the principles of the Bill of Rights. The decisions now in the process of accelerated junking encouraged an obnoxious authoritarian effort to arm the ruling majority with the power to trespass on minority rights of religious self-determination. When the Court vacates the *Gobitis* decision—a reversal now clearly foreshadowed—we shall be back on the solid ground of the Bill of Rights after spending three unpleasant years in a wilder-

ness of our own legislative and judicial making.

*Frauds* magazine, La Crescenta, Calif., under the very fair headlines "Jehovah's witnesses Win Freedom for You", states:

Say what you will about the followers of Jehovah's witnesses, but individually and collectively they have done more for freedom of the press and freedom of worship than any other group. They have been beaten, robbed, attacked, framed, and jailed in hundreds of cities. They have undergone the same treatment that the Nazis render to the Jews. Yet these religious fanatics, stalwarts or whatever you wish to call them have caused the U. S. Supreme Court to finally decide that America shall have free speech, free religion, and free press, regardless of narrow, bigoted, flag-waving and religious nuts of other sects. And the "fanatics" among other sects (Catholics, Protestants, Jews) are more guilty of movements to destroy the things for which the nation is fighting. If you are an honest individual you'll salute the true Jehovah witness for obtaining guarantees for three of the four freedoms—and they obtained these freedoms by fighting!

It is truly heart-warming to Jehovah's faithful servants to see that at least one publication has the fairness and honesty and courage to express its appreciation for the liberties won by Jehovah's witnesses to the benefit of all. Most papers, while agreeing with the rightness of the decision, make it a special point to disclaim any sympathy toward the Witnesses, and never express appreciation of the fight they wage, fearing what others may think of them. This last write-up, from *Frauds* magazine, is as a refreshing cup of cold water to Christ's followers in the heat of battle, for, be it known, the fight for liberty on the home front must continue on. During the month of April Jehovah's witnesses began a distribution of upward of 12,000,000 booklets entitled *Fighting for Liberty on the Home Front*. The pamphlet details the battle being waged for freedom by Jehovah's witnesses. It recounts victories won. Now, one month

later, new triumphs are added to the list, and this only after a long and hard uphill fight. The faithful witnesses in the field who call at your door are the ones that made possible the raising of these issues in the high court, and their God Jehovah gave them the victory in reward for their integrity and steadfastness in His service under enemy fire.

### ***Precarious State of Liberty***

Reflect, the decision was 5-4. Just one man could have turned victory into defeat, and lost religious freedom for the entire nation. This should rouse everyone to the sinister peril hovering over democracy right here on the home front. The fight must be pushed with unrelenting vigilance. On this very point the *Chicago Daily Tribune*, May 5, expresses its deep concern:

The court upheld this and like holdings by a five to four vote. The narrow margin is a matter for apprehension. The case of the Jehovah's witnesses was a hard one for local authorities to meet. The sect is a cantankerous one whose members, in promulgation of their own beliefs, have indulged in vicious attacks on other groups of Christians. With laymen who passed local ordinances these circumstances, no doubt, bore weight, but their extraneous character should have been apparent to judges trained in the law and familiar with the necessity of protecting minorities, even tho they be unpopular. It is not comforting to find so close a vote on such vital questions of liberty in a court seven of whose nine members have been the appointees and the expounders of the philosophy of an administration that pretends to make human liberty its first concern.

Informed persons who have followed the history of the persecutions of Jehovah's witnesses are aware of the fact that their enemies who engineer such persecution are also "home-grown" enemies of the Bill of Rights. Those persecutors are the enemies of every person who cherishes liberty. While mechanized armies lock in deadly battle to determine if these liberties stand or

fall, there continues to be a persistent internal aggression against the four freedoms on the home front. Whether the prosecutors of such internal sabotage realize it or not, they are blindly attempting to "pull the house down" upon Jehovah's witnesses, in utter disregard of the fact that in so doing they are destroying the whole structure of democracy. Justice Brandeis very aptly states: "The greatest dangers to liberty lurk in insidious encroachment by men of zeal, well meaning, but without understanding."

This nation claims to be Christian. "Where the spirit of the Lord is, there

is liberty." (2 Corinthians 3:17) Let the physical facts prove the claim true. The people should rally and safeguard their liberties. The judges of courts should deal wisely with Jehovah's witnesses, and stand firm for freedom. (Psalm 2:10-12) As for Jehovah's people, they will continue to 'stand fast in the liberty to freely worship that Christ has given, and not be entangled with the yoke of bondage'. (Galatians 5:1) They will fight for freedom, not only for themselves, but will continue to diligently "proclaim liberty throughout all the land unto all the inhabitants thereof". —Leviticus 25:10; Isaiah 61:1, 2.

## The Limited, Balanced, Government of the U. S. A.

**I**N WHAT ways is the power of our government limited?

FIRST, it is limited as to *purposes*. SECOND, as to *the ways* by which it fulfills these purposes. THIRD, by the *spheres* of liberty which are reserved to individuals. FOURTH, by its *dependence on the people*, on the voters. FIFTH, by the fact that *each set of governing authorities is held in check* by the powers and ambitions of other sets. This is the American system of checks and balances.

The Constitution gives federal authorities the power to tax, to raise and support armed forces, to wage war, to regulate foreign and interstate commerce, and to do many other things in the interest of the Union. Undoubtedly these are great powers. But they are not the limitless powers of despotism. When war is raging, freedom of press may be abridged; freedom of speech may be curtailed, but it cannot be blotted out. The Constitution forbids this; and as long as enough people are devoted to the theory and practice of limited government, such suppression cannot happen here.

Besides being restricted in purpose, government in the United States must follow pre-established ways of fulfilling these purposes. No branch of govern-

ment—federal, state, or local—can do just as it pleases.

For example, all legislatures have the power to tax, but none of them can single out individuals, Jew or Gentile, and impose higher taxes on them than on others. The power of Congress is unlimited as to the *amount* of money to be raised by taxation. This is necessary in the national interest, for the amount of money needed to defeat enemies is not within the control of Congress or the people. But the *way* in which taxes are imposed and collected is decidedly limited. Taxes, for instance, must be *uniform* throughout the United States. Congress cannot tax the same brand of cigarettes at five cents a package in Maine and ten cents a package in Missouri. The \$5,000 salary of one person cannot be taxed at \$500 a year and the \$5,000 salary of another person at \$2,000 a year.

Again, Congress can pass acts imposing penalties for crimes, but it cannot provide that persons accused of non-military crimes shall be tried secretly. They must be tried openly in courts of law, and the accused is protected by a long list of rules designed to assure him a fair hearing.

On the power of Congress and of all



states and local legislatures are imposed two special restraints that are precious to human liberty.

No legislature can pass a "bill of attainder". That is, no American legislature can charge any person with a crime and condemn him to fine, prison, or death. In ages past the British Parliament sometimes resorted to bills of attainder and, amid tumults of passion and debate, condemned individuals to death. No such thing can be done in the United States.

No legislature can pass an *ex post facto* law. That is a law which makes a crime out of an act that was not criminal when it was committed. Owing to this restraint, every citizen can feel sure that what he does today lawfully and innocently will not be made a crime tomorrow by a legislature.

Moreover, there are reserved to the people great spheres of liberty. People have the right to choose their own religion or none at all and to be wholly free from the dictates of any established church. Congress can make no law "respecting the establishment of religion".

Once police officials felt free to break into anybody's house at will and do about as they pleased. The Fourth Amendment preserves the right of the people to be secure in their persons, houses, papers, and effects against unreasonable searches and seizures. No search warrants shall be issued except when supported by oath or affirmation, and particularly describing the place to be searched, and the persons or things to be seized by federal officers. Similar rules restrain state officers.

In the United States no one can be secretly thrown into prison and kept there indefinitely. The humblest of the accused is entitled to the writ of *habeas corpus*, which gives him a quick hearing before a judge, testing whether there are just grounds for holding him for trial. At his trial, which must be public, he is entitled to have counsel, to compel the attendance of witnesses on his behalf,

to confront his accusers, to be heard in his own defense, and to receive impartial treatment at the hands of the presiding judge. Unnumbered millions in other countries sigh for such privileges.

The quartering of soldiers in private homes was among the grievances which led to the American Revolution. The Third Amendment to our Constitution provides that no soldier shall, in time of peace, be quartered in any house without the consent of the owner; nor in time of war except in a manner prescribed by law.

Government is power. The holders of power—executive, legislative, and judicial—*might*, theoretically, combine against the people from whom they derive their power. The framers of the Constitution knew and feared that possibility. Indeed they believed that it would come to pass unless restraints were devised to prevent it.

Consequently they pitted the powers of office and the ambitions of men in office against one another, while allowing for the co-operation of public authorities in the discharge of their duties. If men were angels, it is written in *The Federalist*, there would be no need of government; this may be "a reflection on human nature. . . . But what is government itself but the greatest of all reflections on human nature?" Election by the people is "the primary control" over the arrogance of officials, but "experience has taught mankind the necessity of auxiliary precautions". Here is a list of the chief precautions that appear in the Constitution:

The legislative, executive, and judicial powers are vested in three distinct departments so interconnected that they act as checks on one another.

The president has the power of veto over acts of Congress. Although he is the chief executive, he cannot execute anything until Congress has provided the money. The president is independently elected, but Congress, by the process of impeachment, may remove him

CONSOLATION

or any of his administrative agents.

Federal judges are nominated by the president. The Senate, however, passes upon his nominations and may approve or reject them. These judges are "independent", but Congress, by the impeachment process, may remove them, too. Congress has the legislative power, but the federal courts may set aside acts of Congress as contrary to the Constitution.

While Congress is set against the executive and the judiciary, it is also divided against itself. The members of the House are elected for two years and the senators for six years. All members of the House, unless re-elected, lose their office at the end of the two-year period. Only one-third of the senators are retired biennially.

It may be said that the people, in whom all power is vested, may in a great

passion and uproar one day resort to a tyranny. Many despotisms in history have sprung from popular unrest and have been swept into power by popular approval. That of the first Napoleon did. So did the tyranny of the third Napoleon, and of Hitler.

So long as the Constitution prevails, this cannot happen in the United States. Under the Constitution the voters at no single election can, by a mere majority or plurality vote, choose all executive, legislative, and judicial authorities and thus force the enactment of any law they please, either in the states or throughout the Union. Only in making amendments to the Constitution of the United States is the power of the voters limitless, and for this high act special processes and extraordinary majorities are necessary.—Charles A. Beard, in *Liberty*, February 6, 1943.

---

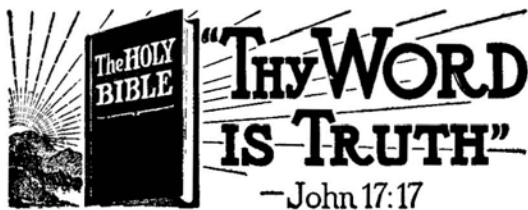
## Helicopters

THE helicopter is a kind of air machine that does not require the use of air fields, runways or catapults. It can land slowly and vertically without injury on any chosen point—field, street, housetop, ship deck, body of water—and ascend with the same ease. It has proved to be a practical plane, as shown in this account by Henry Hazlitt, in *The Nation*:

This type of machine is not a mere inventor's dream. It is not a mere set of engineer's blueprints. It exists. It exists in the helicopter, impressive flights of which were made in April a year ago by the noted airplane designer, Igor Sikorsky. Mr. Sikorsky has been constantly improving his machine. You do not have to take his word regarding what it can do. He has shown colored motion pictures of its remarkable feats. In these you can see him rise vertically from land, water, and marsh. You can see him rise a foot or two above the water, skim over it at this level, or hover stationary at the same level, and alight like a feather, without even a splash. You can see him circle around a lake, come to a dead stop in front of a dock, hover in the

air at the height of a man's shoulder while a man on the dock hangs a suitcase on the helicopter; then you can see Mr. Sikorsky circle around the lake a few times with the suitcase hanging on, and stop dead again (in the air) in front of the dock, while the man lifts his suitcase off. You can see Sikorsky's helicopter come to a sudden stop in midair from a high speed. You can see the helicopter stop in midair at the height of a man's shoulder, while an assistant takes hold of one of the wheels and pulls the machine with him, which is made to follow docilely by the man at the controls like a great floating camel.

Sikorsky also explains that the helicopter is extremely easy to fly. You can learn to fly it indoors, in a moderate-sized auditorium. It seems to be at least as easy to master as an automobile. A striking comparison suggests itself here. Suppose one had to start learning to drive an automobile at a minimum speed of sixty miles an hour? How many people would learn to drive automobiles? Yet this is the situation with regard to the airplane. But with a helicopter you can start as slowly as you like.



## Foregleams of Deliverance

**T**O FORESHADOW the coming deliverance of those who will enjoy life everlasting in the new world of righteousness, the great Builder of the new world caused certain types or prophetic patterns to be made by His chosen people.

For about a century the Hebrews, the children of Israel, had been subjected to slavery in ancient Egypt. On the night that Jehovah their God led them out of the land of Egypt He caused a lamb to be slain and its blood to be sprinkled upon the doorposts of their houses and His people to eat that lamb. He arranged that at midnight the death angel should pass through all Egypt and smite the firstborn of every house where the blood did not appear upon the doorposts. Israel's firstborn, who were passed over and spared, pictured the "church of the firstborn" under Christ Jesus their Head and who are saved first before the divine blessing comes to men of good-will in general. (Hebrews 12:23) The lamb pictured that One who should be the ransom or redeemer of humankind, namely, Christ Jesus, and the lamb's blood pictured His life poured out to provide a redemptive price.—Exodus 12:3-17.

When Jesus appeared in Palestine, at the age of thirty years, John the Baptist, pointing to Him, said: "Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world." (John 1:29) And we read concerning Jesus, at Revelation 13:8, that he is "the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world". These scriptures and others show that the sacrifice of the passover lamb foreshadowed the sacrifice of the great One who should

become the redeemer of humankind and take away the sin of those gaining life in the new world.

A few days after this passover in Egypt, the Israelites were completely delivered from the Egyptians when God commanded Moses to smite the waters of the Red sea and they passed over on dry land; and when the Egyptians attempted to follow by the way through the sea they were swallowed up in its waters and drowned. The deliverance of Israel here pictured the deliverance from the great enemy, Satan and his organization, of Jehovah's covenant people and His "men of good-will" at this end of the world.

After the children of Israel were on the other side of the Red sea, they marched on in the desert; and when they came to Mount Sinai God confirmed with them the covenant which had been made operative by the blood of the passover lamb. In connection with this law covenant animals were sacrificed. This covenant was instituted at the hands of Moses as a mediator between Jehovah God and Israel. Moses here was a type of Christ Jesus, who in due time inaugurated the new covenant on behalf of spiritual Israel.

In connection with the law given to the Israelites at this time, God instructed Moses to erect in the wilderness a tabernacle, which was to be used by the Israelites in connection with their ceremonies of sacrifice. One day of each year was known as the "atonement day". What was done on that day particularly foreshadowed the great sin-offering to be made on behalf of humankind.

The tabernacle was constructed of two parts. It was 45 feet long, 15 feet wide, and 15 feet high, built of boards and then covered over with a tent of three thicknesses of material. The first division of the tabernacle was called the Holy. It was 15 feet wide and 30 feet long. The second, or rear compartment, was known as the Most Holy, and was 15 feet long, 15 feet wide, and 15 feet high, an exact

cube. The tabernacle was situated inside of a court, or yard, which court was 75 feet wide and 150 feet in length. The fence enclosing this court was made of linen curtains, suspended from hooks which were fastened on wooden posts, the posts being set in copper sockets at the base.

On the atonement day the high priest took a bullock, which must be without spot or blemish. Inside of the court he killed the bullock, took its blood in a vessel, went from the court into the Holy and from there into the Most Holy, and, after burning the incense in a golden censer, he sprinkled the blood before the Mercy Seat of the ark, which was in the Most Holy. Then he went back and slew a male goat, which likewise must be without defect, and did the same thing with its blood. These two constituted the atonement sacrifice. After them a scapegoat, over whose head the sins of all the children of Israel were confessed, was let go into the wilderness as a sin-bearer. The atonement offering for sin foreshadowed the great sin-offering for the sin of the world.

The apostle Paul plainly tells us that the things there done foreshadowed "good things to come", better things. (Hebrews 10:1) God required in the law covenant that the Jews should keep this day of atonement and offer these sacrifices through the high priest once each year. You will remember that God had promised the patriarch Abraham: 'In thy seed shall all families of the earth be blessed.' (Genesis 12:3; 22:18) So the apostle Paul says that the law was added thereto 430 years later; why? "Because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith." (Galatians 3:19, 24) In other

words, Jehovah was teaching the children of Israel concerning the great sin-offering that must be made on behalf of humankind for their redemption, and He was using the Israelites to make living pictures in accordance with their law covenant with God. The inspired record of the events concerning the Israelites has enabled all students of the Bible since to see how Jehovah foreshadowed the redemption and deliverance of mankind from the bondage of sin and death. To foreshadow means to foretell the outline of something coming. This shows how important the great ransom and, particularly, God's Theocratic Government of the new world are for mankind's deliverance, inasmuch as God took so much time and went into so much detail to teach the people by such ancient living pictures. Hence this should encourage us to study the subject earnestly, that we might see, understand, and appreciate it.

The Lord God has anointed His Son Christ Jesus to be the High Priest who makes atonement that obedient men may live in the new world and never die. The foundation of that new world has been laid. The establishment of that world of righteousness is sure, and it shall be a "world without end". What the scheming builders of a "new order founded on moral principles" may try to set up on earth beyond this total war will not rest upon the only Foundation that Jehovah God had laid. Their "new order" structure will be no part of the new world for which Jehovah's High Priest has made atonement. Hence such man-made arrangement will fail and be suddenly destroyed in the coming world disaster of the battle of Armageddon. Only those who align themselves alongside Jehovah's Theocracy and who seek the atonement through its High Priest will survive to see the new world and live happily therein.

*Whosoever shall call on the name of JEHOVAH shall be delivered; for in mount Zion and in Jerusalem there shall be those that escape, as Jehovah hath said, and among the remnant those whom Jehovah doth call.—Joel 2:32, A.R.V.*



## Hitler, the Slave-Driver, and His "God"

STRANGE and deplorable as it may seem, it is nevertheless true that men in all ages and in all lands have called upon "God" to back up their course of action, regardless of how far from justice such course may have strayed. They have sought to demonstrate that "God" was or is on their side, and have made claims to that effect, and have not rather sought to determine whether *they* were on the side of the eternal God, whose name alone is Jehovah.

Hitler, whose entire course of action belies his claims, does not hesitate to dramatize himself as an instrument of a "God" whose chief concern seems to be to aggrandize Hitler and the German race, while enslaving and degrading every other race and people. While Jehovah, the God of the Bible, holds forth the promise of using *His* Servant, that in Him 'all the families, nations and kindreds of the earth shall be blessed', Hitler's backer, of sinister purpose, shows an opposite spirit altogether. Those who serve that invisible one have his spirit, and by their fruits show what *he* is. Like him, they *pride* themselves in their wickedness and boast of their unholy power to inflict pain and suffering upon untold numbers of afflicted humanity.

In an address to the Reichstag (bereft of its powers) Hitler, in April, 1942, made the following blasphemous claim:

It is my sole *pride* that Providence has chosen me at so great a time to lead the German people. I will bind my name and my life unconditionally with the fate of the German people. I have no more requests to make to the Almighty than that he should watch over us in the future as he has done in the past, and that I may live as long as is necessary in his eyes for the fateful struggle of the German people.

In another address, a little prior to the one just mentioned, he was making a war speech, containing threats as to what he would do to Britain, when he interjected

the expression, "God help me." Of course, as far as the one and only true Almighty God (the personification of wisdom, justice, love, and power) is concerned, He would have no ear for the impious prayers of such a one as Hitler, the demonized. Those prayers must therefore go to another "god".

In a third address, styled a "Memorial Day speech", that man of blood made this further attempt to identify himself with God:

May God give us all strength to continue to carry out what duty demands from us. With this prayer we bow our heads in reverence before the great heroes and their sorrowing relatives and all other victims of this war.

And finally, in a fourth statement (and he has doubtless made many others), Hitler said, "God Almighty will not deny victory to His bravest soldiers." He can leave the Almighty out of it. God Almighty does not listen to the prayers of a willful murderer. "Even his prayer shall be abomination."—Proverbs 28:9.

### *Hooking Up with the God Odin*

It will be conceded that the "god" worshiped by Hitler is the one that is being advertised over the Berlin radio. This instrument of the Nazis has declared that the Japanese are real Aryans, the same as the Germans, and that this comes about through the god Odin, or Woden, the god of battle and agriculture. This "Woden", or "Odin", or his finish, is memorialized in the name of the fourth day of the week in the English, Swedish and Hollandish calendars. He is described as tall, lean, one-eyed, foxy, lecherous, cruel, merciless, conceited, and reprobate. Also, he is in close cahoots with the demons, of whom he is, in fact, one. The Berlin radio identified this "god" with the Japanese god of the sun and the winds, and claims that he is watching over the military spirit of both countries. As no man can serve two gods, and Hitler's course as well as his propa-

CONSOLATION

ganda identifies him with the demon Woden, evidently the god he serves is the Devil, referred to in the Scriptures as 'the god of this world [who] hath blinded the minds of them that believe not'.—2 Corinthians 4:4.

This fact is further shown by the prelude to the "new order" which Hitler sponsors, and of which the well-known General Smuts, of South Africa, in his address to Parliament said:

In spite of the specious promises of a "New Order" and the alluring appeals to the idealism of youth, actual events have in the last three years revealed the true nature of the Nazi ideology. We now know beyond all doubt what Hitler's "New Order" means. Persecution, domination, suppression, enslavement of the free spirit of man, aye, extermination: these are the dominant features of the new creed as practiced in the occupied countries. It is written in the blood and tears and nameless suffering of vast numbers of innocent men and women of all ages and conditions . . . this foul obsession, now resuscitated from the underworld of the past.

True it is that Hitler has called up and put into effect all that was worst in the past history of Europe, as will be shown in what follows. Everything he and his minions have done and the spirit they have shown and do show prove that Hitler's "God" is not the God of the Bible; and that is certain, in spite of the alleged fact that officials of the German concentration camps have permitted 150,000

Bibles to be distributed to Russian soldiers in those camps. Christians in the Nazi concentration camps in Germany itself are, on the other hand, deprived of their Bibles.

People in general seem not to realize that when the Scriptures say "Thou shalt have no other gods before me" (Exodus 20:3) they plainly imply that there are other gods; or that when the people are warned that all gods except the true

One will be a snare unto God's people, the warning is pregnant with meaning (Deuteronomy 7:16); or that there is such a thing as going "a whoring after other gods" (Judges 2:17); or that when it says that "the gods of the nations are idols" it means just that. —Psalm 96:5.

Bastardy was so much discouraged among God's typical people that of the bastard it said, "Even to his tenth generation shall he not enter into the congregation of the

Lord." (Deuteronomy 23:2) Yet in Hitler's 'New Order' unmarried girls are encouraged to become pregnant, even by men whose names they do not know. Concerning this devilish destruction of German womanhood, Archibald MacLeish, librarian of Congress, in an address at Northampton, Massachusetts, said:

Other nations have used the captured women of their enemies for the purposes the Nazis use their own. But never before in history has any nation made its girls the brides, the indiscriminate and indiscriminating brides of the state itself. And never before



in history has any nation made a virtue of the necessity of denying to any woman, of its own or of another race, the central, the essential woman's right to be mistress of herself.

Much of Jesus' work on earth was the healing of the mentally sick; yet up to June, 1941, the Euthanasia Commission had destroyed 37,000 persons in Germany, and it was then planned that in twenty years there would be no further need of insane asylums, as the mentally defective would be gradually murdered off instead of being healed.

One of the ten commandments of Almighty God is "Thou shalt not steal" (Exodus 20:15), and it means what it says; but every German soldier in Belgium is charged to that poor country at \$4,000 a year; and what is that but stealing on a most tremendous scale? and who but Hitler is responsible for it? And it is so all over Europe.

When they raced over Europe the Nazis took out of it almost every fine thing there was in it. For instance, Rommel's men in Africa had, among other things, immaculate clothing, superb footwear, silk and wool underwear, face powder, face cream, scented soap, mattresses covered with fine French linen, one-piece tents with asbestos stoves in one end, etc., etc.

The way in which the stealing is done is perfectly understood, but nothing can be done about it. The money with which everything is bought is commonly called 'monkey money'. The technical name is "occupation marks". The storekeeper has to part with everything he has for worthless printing-press money. One of the most recent countries to be taken to the cleaners by this subterfuge is Denmark.

### ***The Father of Lies***

Christ Jesus referred to "the god of this world" (2 Corinthians 4:4) as "a liar, and the father of it". (John 8:44) In other words, the Devil was the first liar. His children, among whom are to be listed the big politicians, big financiers,

and big religionists, have done their very best to improve on his initial lie to mother Eve, but Hitler has put all the others to shame with the efficiency he has shown in making use of falsehoods. In one of his presidential messages President Roosevelt touched on this:

Every move up and down and across Europe, and into Asia and into Africa has been conducted according to a time schedule utilizing in every case an overwhelming superiority not only in material but in trained men as well. Each campaign has been based on a preliminary assurance of safety or non-aggression to the intended victim. Each campaign has been based on disarming fear and gaining time until the German government was fully ready to throw treaties and pacts to the winds and simultaneously to launch an attack in overwhelming force.

Hitler makes it plain in *Mein Kampf* that he is no small-time liar. He is a big one. He should have boasted that he is Jesuit-trained, and then those initiated into the fast-disappearing records of history would know how he came to be so expert.

The men that are with him show the same expert misuse of the truth and of the properties and workmen that in by-gone years made Germany such a great workshop. Thus Hermann Goering, but a little while ago a small-time gangster, now has in the various Hermann Goering works, scattered throughout the Reich, more than a million men on the pay rolls, and in four years the capitalization has been jumped from 5,000,000 reichsmarks to (hold your breath) eight hundred times that amount, as country after country and business after business has been swallowed up by the Jesuit monster: Goering is now one of the earth's wealthiest men.

Do you remember who it was that took Jesus up into a high mountain and showed Him everything in the world that was worth while, and then assured Him that if He would fall down and worship him He could have the whole works? Well, that is Goering's god.

It is a vicious, malicious god that caused Greece to be cleaned out so thoroughly that bread sold at \$22.40 a loaf and eggs sold at \$27 a dozen. Some other prices paid in the winter of 1942-1943 were \$34 for a pound of round steak, \$22.50 for a pound of sugar, \$14.25 for five pounds of potatoes, \$14 for a pound of rice, \$37.50 for a pound of macaroni, and \$11 for a cake of soap. At these prices, children starved to death, as a matter of course.

In the *News from Belgium* (published in New York) is the account of a happening at Charleroi. Four children were playing near a railroad crossing which was guarded by German soldiers. One of the soldiers kicked a little girl of 5. A boy of 10 protested. The soldiers grabbed him, put him against a tree, and, without bothering to bandage his eyes, shot and killed him. At that time (March, 1942) the hospitals were filling up with people dying of hunger. Sometimes, after admission, they lived but a day or two. Begging was increasing, and in Antwerp and Brussels child beggars abounded. The bread, made of mixtures of wheat, rye and potato flour, was indigestible. Fish and meat were unobtainable. Seven hours after the seizure of Antwerp everything edible or of value to industry was loaded on trucks and started for Germany. At Liege a Belgian was executed in the presence of his wife and child, who had been summoned to the place of execution on the promise that the prisoner would be freed.

The same publication tells that at the Breendonck concentration camp, near Mechelen, Belgium, the ill-fed and (often) aged prisoners sometimes fall from fatigue. They are given exactly three minutes to rise; if they cannot, they are dragged to a corner and set to work breaking stones; if really ill, they must care for themselves, as there are no doctors or infirmary in the camp. Sometimes men are set to work pounding futilely on an iron rail with a heavy hammer. Prisoners are not allowed to

change into dry clothes on rainy days, but must work their thirteen hours with the damp clothing clinging to their emaciated bodies. After fifteen days a prisoner is allowed a spoonful of marmalade every four days. One day a prisoner waved to his wife, who had approached the camp fence to catch a glimpse of her husband. The poor man was immediately shot, and the prisoners were compelled to file past his body as an act of discipline.

### *The Crusaders' Idea*

There was never a more vicious lot of more ignorant fanatics loose in the world than there were during the Crusades. They committed every kind of crime known to the human family. No woman was safe, no man was safe, no property was safe; nothing was safe. Cannibalism in the most revolting forms was common, with other crimes too horrible to mention. But the Jesuit crusaders into Russia (Hitler's armies) are a close match to those of the thirteenth century.

A Soviet soldier named Yezersky, who escaped from a German concentration camp in the occupied area of the Ukraine, known by the soldiers under the name "Uman Hole", rejoined his regiment in Russia. Describing the Hole, he stated that it is a vast pit in a clay quarry; that when names are called out to line up to Wall No. 2 all the men so lined up are shot without pretext; that men are shot faster than graves can be dug for their bodies; and that, for amusement, the Nazis at times lower savage dogs into the pit and set them upon the prisoners. This story was published in *PM*.

The Russian government has formally protested to the Allied Nations that in some cases Red army prisoners have been tortured with red-hot irons, their eyes have been poked out, and their fingers, ears and noses cut off; their stomachs have been ripped open and they have been tied to tanks and crushed.



In one Ukrainian village four Russians were found nailed by the hands and legs to a beam, and their bodies branded with the swastika. In one village a Red army soldier was burned at the stake. Some prisoners were forced at the point of the bayonet to drive munition transports. Some wounded soldiers were stripped of their warm clothing. Seventeen wounded men were tied to telegraph poles. Women doctors and nurses were assaulted. In one German prison camp (unnamed) the sick and wounded were kept outdoors day and night in the cold, and in the early morning were roused by blows with sticks and clubs. "In one day in the Chernuskhinsk camp in the Ukraine ninety-five prisoners were shot." The German high command and food ministry had ordered that Soviet prisoners should be given worse and less food than the prisoners of other countries. When protest was made at a camp in Byelo-Russia (by writing to the commandant) five were shot on the spot.

### ***A Cunning and Merciless One***

The Devil is cunning, and he is merciless; and so is Hitler. In his initial campaign for forming an army of 2,000,000 men in the countries he has overrun, Hitler showed great cunning. He wanted to use 2,000 Netherlands army officers; so he first had them all arrested. Then they were ordered to assemble in the barrack square for registration. When all had arrived the gates were closed behind them, and redoubled guards, armed with hand grenades, surrounded the place. The Hollanders were the same day marched to the railroad station and transported to Nuremburg, Germany.

The methods by which Hitler ruins a country are now well known. They are summarized as follows by Paul I. Wellman, in the *Kansas City Times*:

The collapse and annihilation of a European country is usually preceded by a movie. The German ambassador invites the members of the government to which he is accredited to a private showing of either "Baptism of Fire"

or "Victory in the West", documentary films intended to impress the audience with Germany's invincibility. They are blueprints in effect. The steam roller follows, or did follow until Hitler met Russia. And the plans of Hitler for Europe are now clear.

Nazism plans to create three categories of European peoples: first, the fighting slaves; second, the toiling slaves; third, the doomed nations destined to extinction. The German technique of occupation follows a well-tried pattern, with three unvarying principles: first, the people get immediate reassurances that their national independence will be respected. Second, the new masters get hold of strong bargaining weapons—the classic example being the retention of 1,800,000 French prisoners in German camps, to use in blackmail for collaboration and for discouraging resistance. Third, the disintegration of the people's spirit is promoted by stirring up every latent hatred between sections. But always, where these things work, there stalks the great three-tined fork of German horror, the Gestapo, the concentration camps, and the hostage system. The terroristic practices of Germany are not haphazard. In no war in the history of humanity have torture, fear and despair been used so ruthlessly and so cunningly and so universally as in this war.

Belgian workers, hired to work in a German factory, found the conditions so intolerable that they did as they would have done in their own country: they went on strike. Promptly they were marched off to a forced labor camp, where they had to work from dawn to dusk, with hardly any food, and were constantly beaten. You can imagine what feelings are smoldering in the bosoms of those men, and how, if they get the chance, they will repay it all with interest. Such is humanity.

The decision was made to swallow Luxemburg. An opportunity was given the citizens to say whether they were French, Italian, or German, but 96 percent in the towns and 99 percent in the country stated that they were "Luxembourg", though no opportunity to thus vote had been presented to them. Ger-

CONSOLATION

many then grabbed the country anyway, and the men were conscripted into the German army. There was a general strike in protest, but the leaders of the strike were killed and the men were hustled off into the army as if they had voted to do so.

In the summer of 1942 there were 170,000 Netherlands working in Germany; but they were not enthusiastic. In a single factory at Schweinfurths, out of 180 workers, 100 were sent back to Holland, 50 were imprisoned for sabotage, and only 30 were retained for work. Factors in the dissatisfaction of workers have been the razing of Dutch buildings, where houses and churches have been torn down all over the country to get materials to restore bombed buildings in Berlin. Also, when Queen Wilhelmina's palace was seized (to be used as a hospital), the furnishings were treated as loot and sent to Germany.

Another example of Nazi ruthlessness is the shooting of all the workers in one department of the great Skoda arms factory in Czechoslovakia, together with their families.

Alfred Rosenberg, German spokesman, says that the citizens of occupied countries have ill-rewarded "the magnanimity" of the Germans and have not taken their share in the "common European war effort", the Hitler crusade.

The Netherlands are in a bad way. The Gestapo claim that one-third of them must move to Occupied Russia, and some 30,000 have already had to leave their homes, out of a total population of 8,728,569. At last reports tea was selling in the Netherlands at \$31 a pound, coffee at \$16 per pound, and oatmeal at \$6.25 per pound. Experiments are being made with shoes at \$4 to \$5 per pair that have rush soles an inch thick. The soles wear poorly, as the rush frays. At Rotterdam is a store where children's shoes may be exchanged. Parents go to this store again and again, hoping to find shoes that their children may be able to use.

In one week after the seizure of the Netherlands, Germany had nine-tenths of her butter stock, and quickly thereafter seized woolen and fur goods, leather, coal, gasoline, rolling stock, barges, and even fire engines. On one occasion, in Amsterdam, 680 young Jews were rounded up and sent to work in the mines, and within nine months over 400 of them were dead. Mass deportations of Jews to Poland and Russia are under way; and disobedience means sudden death.

### ***A Slave-driving Program***

In Germany today all the men from 16 to 65 and all the women from 17 to 45 must render compulsory labor service; and what is that but slavery? To get more men for the army, some 120,000 stores have recently been closed, besides the unknown number previously discontinued.

Besides the German slaves in Germany there are estimated to be 6,000,000 aliens, one-half of them prisoners of war, one-third of the remainder Poles, and the rest mostly Czechoslovakians, Netherlands, Belgians, and Danes. It is almost impossible for any of these to get away. Without a labor passport none can get a job, and without a meal card he can get no food. If he gets back home he must register at his home labor office in order to get work, and is then liable to be shipped right back to Germany.

The workers in the factories do their work under the muzzles of machine guns. Their wages are taxed 15 percent. The news gets around and discontent spreads. Current headlines are "Hitler Demands Million Slaves" (from the occupied countries), and "French Shanghaied by Germans for Work in Reich War Factories". Seizures of the French factory workers are made while they are at work, and sometimes as many as 35 percent of the workers in a factory are grabbed and rushed off to Germany at one time.

Saving is made compulsory. No one may throw away a button, a piece of string, a piece of paper, or a can. More than 1,000 metal articles, from mouse-traps to casket hardware, are forbidden. All dishwater is salvaged for the fats. Vegetables are often distributed in untinned cans made of lacquered iron plates and marked with notices of how soon they must be used or will spoil.

Owing to poor bandaging material and limited quantities of disinfectants, most abdominal wounds of German soldiers are fatal. Amputations of limbs are increasing, as the surgeons dare not risk long treatments. Ersatz stockings are atrocious. One woman declares that she wore out two dozen pairs in six weeks; every time she bent her knee a thread broke.

The Russians found that German engines of war are lubricated with olive oil, thus showing that reserves of lubricating oil are dwindling. Some vehicles are run on street gas; they carry huge bags on top, with enough gas to run twenty miles. There are six types of bottled gas on the market, sold by fifty filling stations. Six other types of gas used for driving trucks or cars are made respectively from acetylene, garbage, artichokes, sewage, ammonia, and hydrogen.

Communal kitchens are in full blast; they are efficient in the handling of food, and save the time of cooks and waiters. These are set up in fields and factories; eating at them is compulsory, and nothing is wasted.

Every householder is required to make ready for bombing. He must equip his stairway with a stirrup pump, two buckets, fire-beaters, chemical dampers, shovel, axes, a ladder, water-filled basins, a sandbox or fifteen sandbags. The morning after a bombing window-pane setters remove and replace all broken glass, and carpenters, masons and plumbers get at their jobs as soon as possible. Areas are roped off or boarded up, and in jig time most traces

of the air raids are removed. Bombing repairs take precedence over all others.

### ***A Murderous, Hateful Anti-God***

Alfred Rosenberg, German spokesman, is now saying that this war that was started by Hitler and Pacelli may become another Thirty Years' War. See what this war has done to Poland. The Nazis executed 145,000 of them, murdered or tortured to death other 760,000, and drove 2,000,000 from their homes. How many of Germany's 17,000,000 men under arms have been slain, wounded or captured is unknown, but must be appalling.

Even though it may have been the Lithuanian police (as now claimed) that shot the 60,000 Jews at Vilna, yet such would not have been possible without the war to give the murderers a chance to do their evil deeds. Just now the Negroes are being registered in Germany, and this doubtless means that they are marked for destruction. In September, 1942, the exiled governments in London had an authentic record of 207,373 Nazi executions, but this is only a portion of those known to have certainly taken place.

The treatment accorded the Jews is horrible beyond words. Imagine having always to wear (even when in your own yard) a yellow and black star bearing the word "Jude" so that you might be the more easily maltreated by thugs. Imagine Jewish women compelled to do the most degrading work in the armament factories, and forbidden to speak to or associate with other workers. Hitler has openly stated that it is his intention to see that the Jews of Europe are exterminated. The story of the extermination of 3,000 Jews at Chelmno (near Zagarov) is too horrible to be published. Killed with gas in airtight trucks, the corpses were robbed of rings, lockets and teeth and were then laid head to feet in alternate rows so that they would occupy the least possible room in the common grave dug for them. The full story was

CONSOLATION

published in the *CIO News* of August 10, 1942.

In the Warsaw ghetto half a million Jews were jammed into a space occupied by half that population before the war. They average  $3\frac{1}{2}$  persons to each window. Deaths are nine times as numerous as births. But nobody likes to die, and those poor ghetto unfortunates, in the hot weather of 1942, grew vegetables and flowers in courtyards and window boxes to increase their food and to sweeten the air of their vast prison-house.

### ***A Boastful One, in Mortal Terror***

Every Nazi, from Hitler down, is making money by the barrel, and is living in mortal terror of what will happen when the jig is up. Goebbels recently tried to revive the Bolshevik scare which was worked by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy for decades. When Goebbels talks it has happened that a voice over what appears to be his radio says, "In one minute you will hear Herr Goebbels' lying news; we point out to our listeners beforehand that the figures given by the high command are all lies." Imagine how Goebbels must feel to receive such an introduction and not to know how to locate the speaker.

The underground newspapers make life a torment for these gangsters. Most famous is *La Libre Belgique*, which the kaiser tried to suppress for four years. Editor after editor was shot, but out came the paper as it comes out now. On one occasion, after months of effort, the entire staff of *La Libre Belgique* was arrested and condemned to death. The governor of Brussels watched the executions, stepped back into his office, and found neatly folded on a corner of his desk a new issue of *La Libre Belgique*. The agents had missed the editor's wife. This was too much for the governor, and he had a mental breakdown. Tyrants the world over are scared to death at the activities of Jehovah's witnesses, the most harmless and most courageous truth-tellers in the whole world. They

are first to be arrested, everywhere, by the dirty cowards that depend on gangster methods.

The German people have been induced to believe that Hitler is a demigod. Thus Goering, in one of his addresses, said of him:

In Germany everything is subordinate to the Fuehrer. Every gun, tank and ship is submitted to him, and every order given by him. There is only one Fuehrer. I have seen the Fuehrer explaining to his generals in the Reich Chancellery all the plans for the campaign in the west down to every detail, and then I saw and witnessed this campaign and saw how every detail that had been arranged weeks ago was fulfilled in practice.

Hitler's chauffeur carried a revolver in each of his seven pockets and was insanely devoted to his leader. Contracting an abscessed jaw, on a day when he was scheduled to drive his chief from Berlin to Munich, instead of going to a hospital he went into the garage, took a screw driver from his tool case, gouged and scraped the infected tooth, broke open an abscess covering four teeth (amidst horrible pain), tried to pull the worst tooth with a pair of pliers, started to Munich with a temperature of over 100, delivered his boss where he wished to be taken, and then himself died of the infection.

### ***The Mimic God Is Back of Hitler***

Though some are now bitter at the idolatry of which Hitler is the center, and which has ruined Germany, yet for the most part the people still do as idolaters have always done: they go along with whatever plans the Devil may have in mind for them. The general feeling, expressed by one of the Dresden newspapers, is that in Germany none may weep for the dead whom Hitler, by his insane course, has caused to be slain in battle. Indeed, the government has forbidden the wearing of mourning habiliments.

Yes, a god is back of Hitler. But what a god! What a fraud! This is the god



of whom the apostle wrote when he said:

"The god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them."—2 Corinthians 4: 4.

It is the god of whom Jesus spoke when He said:

"The prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me."—John 14: 30.

He mentioned him again when He referred to the great truth impending today with even greater force:

"Now shall the prince of this world be cast out."—John 12: 31.

There are millions in the world who think they are worshiping Almighty God, when, as a matter of fact, like Hitler, they are worshiping the Devil himself. Have you never read that 'the whole

world lieth in the wicked one, and they are taken captive by him at his will'? It is the truth. That is why mankind needs the New World, and its Ruler, Christ Jesus. How plain it all is, the thing that is the matter with Hitler and with almost all humanity! But there are some who are of good-will toward The Theocracy and hate all this Devil's stuff like the poison that it is. Hence, says the apostle:

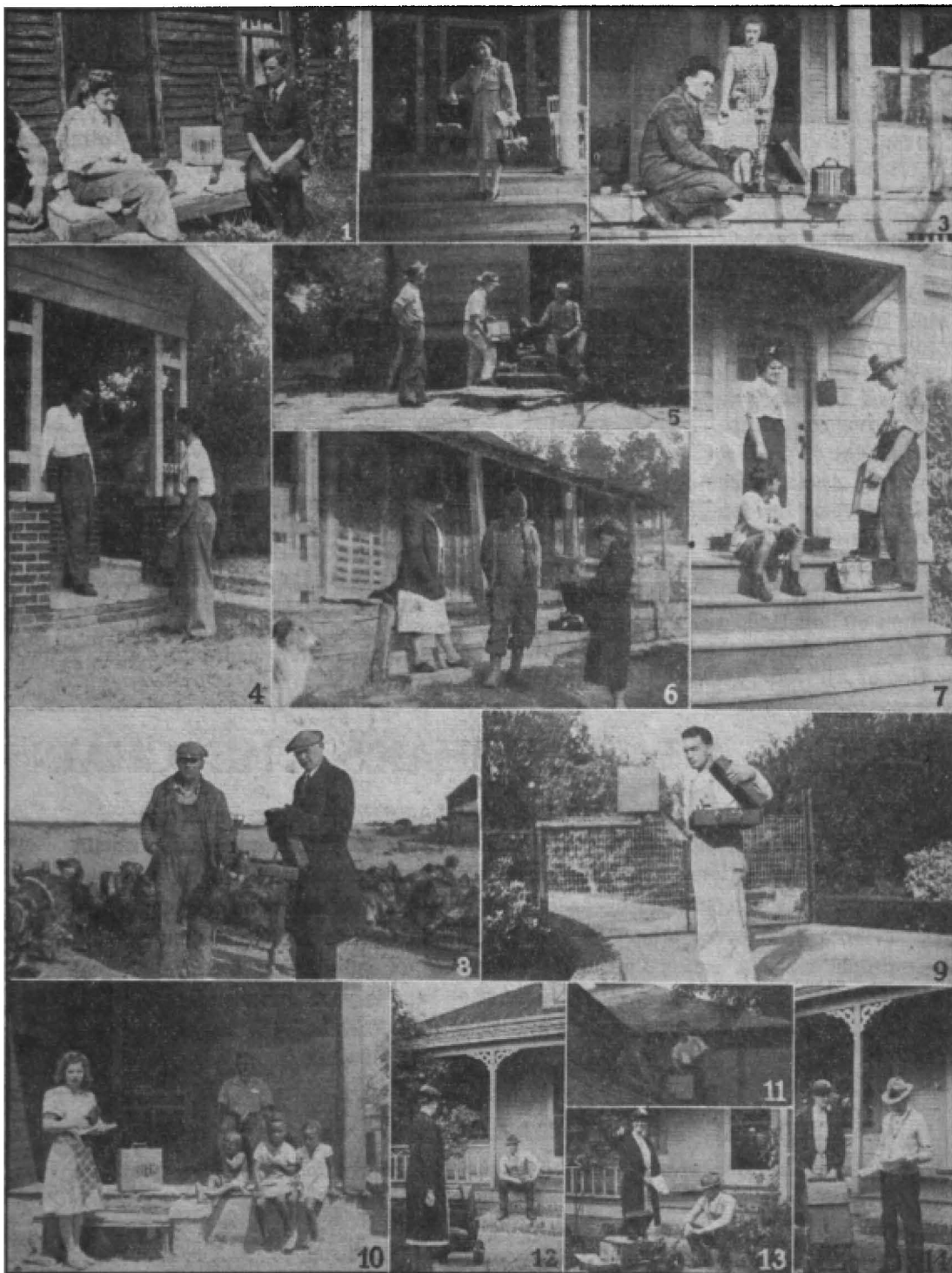
"And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air [the Devil], the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: among whom also WE ALL had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others."—Ephesians 2: 1-3.

---

## Doorstep Setup Presentation of "Good News"

**W**ELL, why shouldn't someone come to your door and ask you politely to listen to an important message, important enough to be carefully presented by way of recording and the portable phonograph? Anyway, that is being done, everywhere, anywhere, the world over. And the people listen, too, with the attention that is due a message of such importance and comfort as is that presented by Jehovah's witnesses in this manner. Witness the picture page herewith. (1) Listening attentively to the "good news" of the Kingdom in Wisconsin. (2) All ready for the presentation of the Theocratic message, in Springfield, Massachusetts. (3) Three months before this Pekin, Illinois, Theocracy publisher sat for this picture he had no knowledge of the work of Jehovah's witnesses. (4) Noel Hendrix, 16, of Plano, Texas, lets the portable automatically operated phonograph deliver an introduction to knowledge and understanding. (5) A call at this Georgia cabin resulted in a subscription for *The*

*Watchtower* and *Consolation*, and an arrangement for a regular Bible study. (6) Delivering the Kingdom message at a cattle ranch in the Black Hills, South Dakota, and (7) in a picturesque section of Stratford, Connecticut; also (8) on a turkey farm in Wyoming, and (9) through a gate telephone in California. The guardian of the estate came out and obtained some literature for further consideration. (10) Witnessing to the oppressed at Venice, Illinois. The man in the background has just obtained the booklet *Hope*. (11) No, your eyes do not deceive you. This witness is proclaiming the message on the housetop. The man who was repairing the roof did "not come down" in this case. The witness came up instead. That's the way they do things in Big Timber, Montana, sometimes. (12-14) A Sunnyvale, California, witness arrives, publishes the Kingdom message by phonograph, leaves the printed message with one of good-will, and departs with her unique conveyance.



JUNE 9, 1943

Doorstep setup presentation of "good news"

27

## What They Teach at Oberlin

**O**BERLIN COLLEGE, Oberlin, Ohio, is one of America's most famous institutions of religious education. It is a sample of other institutions, similarly intended for the training of preachers and missionaries. *Time* magazine, in its issue of January 13, 1941, gives a remarkable insight into the blasphemies there taught, in total disregard of the Bible, but under the guise of religion. *Time* makes the following statement, which speaks for itself. Needless to say, it is a direct contradiction of the evident truths of the Scriptures, which anyone may prove for himself. *Time* says:

Highlight of a colloquium on *The Idea of God in the Ancient Near East* was the assertion by Herbert Gordon May of Oberlin that the religion of the Hebrew patriarchs differed widely from that of Moses, and that Moses himself probably changed Gods during the Children of Israel's 40 years of wandering in the wilderness during the Exodus. In Genesis the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob is regu-

larly referred to as El, and Professor May thinks he was akin to the Canaanite Ba'al. With Moses the Hebrew Bible begins referring to God as Yahweh (Jehovah) more often than as El, and when the Jews invaded Palestine with Yahweh as their God they undertook to exterminate the Canaanites among whom Abraham, worshiping El, had spent his life in peace.

"We must reckon with the possibility," said Dr. May, "that the exodus from Egypt was under the aegis of the snake deity of the Levite tribe, Nehushtan." Moses' rod turned into a serpent when God told him to cast it down (a miracle later performed by Aaron before Pharaoh) and the snake rod was later used by Moses to bring the ten plagues on Egypt. "The people led by Moses from Egypt were led directly to Kadesh Barnea, where under Moses' instigation a union of tribes under Yahweh, the deity of the Judean tribes, was consummated. . . . Yahwism was made the sole official cultus. . . . Nowhere is it affirmed that Moses maintained that Yahweh alone existed."

---

## LOSING A LINK BREAKS THE CHAIN

**D**ON'T let missing an issue of *CONSOLATION* magazine break the chain of thought and instruction that it conveys to you. Contrariwise, obtain and read every issue, for it is priceless light and truth in this dark, confused world. This you may do by having *CONSOLATION* magazine coming to you in your mail every other Wednesday as a subscriber for this journal. Many people make a serious mistake in putting off subscribing for this factual magazine during these perilous times. But here is your opportunity to secure this aid: use the coupon below and obtain *CONSOLATION* magazine for a year upon a contribution of \$1.00.

**WATCHTOWER**

**117 Adams St.**

**Brooklyn, N. Y.**

Yes, I want to receive *Consolation* magazine regularly for the coming year, for which I am enclosing my contribution of \$1.00.

Name ..... Street .....  
City ..... State .....

## Presenting "This Gospel of the Kingdom"

### Need for Argumentation

IN THE life of every thinking person there comes a time when, for his own welfare, it is necessary for him to present clearly the result of cogent thinking so as to cause others to act as he wishes or recommends. Herein is found the need of argumentation for all men. Jehovah's witnesses, in the carrying out of their covenant 'to preach this gospel in all the world for a witness', have a much greater need for training in the principles of argumentation, because of the controversial nature of their message. The Lord commands, 'Speak the truth though it make all men liars.'—Romans 3:4.

Argumentation is the practice of attempting to produce in the mind of another the acceptance of the ideas held true by the persuader, and of the necessity of acting on such. It is not wrangling, face-to-face calling of names, or arbitrary contention. Many have misunderstood argumentation to mean arousing contention and unrest among the people, such as the rabble-rousing, prejudicial rantings of the partisan speaker often heard in the legislative halls, in the courts, and in the common stump speech.

All such the Christian will avoid in presenting the gospel of the Kingdom. Remember the words of Jesus, to wit, "Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you."—Matthew 7:6.

No good discourse is effective without argumentation. Without it the presentation falls flat, inducing sleep instead of inspiring attention and action. The delivery of effective argument requires of one the ability to think on his feet, a frank, unembarrassed manner, preparation, faith, and belief in and a knowledge of the subject matter. One must show confidence in announcing his convictions and have a sincere desire to persuade

others of their trueness and the necessity of acting in harmony therewith. As it is in speaking, so in writing, if it is prose, it must contain argumentation to be effective.

Argumentation is as old as the human race. The Bible, containing the history of man from the time of his creation, contains the finest argumentation. The apostles argued daily in favor of the Kingdom. It is written: "Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market [places] daily with them that met with him." (Acts 17:17) Paul persuaded others in things concerning the Kingdom. (Acts 19:18) Argumentation gets its best use where there is freedom of speech, a necessity in order that the listener may have an opportunity to choose intelligently and act accordingly.

The essential purpose of argumentation is that it offers to the hearer or reader an explanation of facts, theory or policy that is more rational, more thorough, or more for his personal advantage than that which the listener or somebody else has maintained. Argument is based on persuasion that aims to prepare the way for a process of conviction and to produce agreement and action. It involves the element of establishing certain facts by a process of analysis of proof, and reaching a definite conclusion. The best expert on the subject stated it much simpler and in another way, to wit: "Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD." (Isaiah 1:18) Jeremiah said, "Let me reason the case with thee."—Jeremiah 12:1, *margin*.

An argument has three divisions: (1) the introduction, (2) the argument proper, and (3) the summary or recapitulation. The introduction should get over to the listener or reader the heart of the case or contention. It should state clearly the question or questions in dispute. In other words, a short, simple, impressionistic sketch of the case or sub-



ject should be given as soon as possible. The argument proper consists in giving evidence or proof connected with persuasion by appeal to reason, common sense, interests of the listeners, and sometimes their prejudices.

The argument can proceed on the above matters of proof in terms of facts, analysis of contentions and issues, admissions, definitions, citations, analysis of fact, and other forms of proof and persuasion. It is important to avoid at all times the elaborate, intricate and stumbling statement of facts, long quotations and the use of terms or facts understood only by an expert. At all times speak the language of the common people, using terms familiar to them.

The summary or recapitulation should bring the argument to a full and complete stop at the appropriate point and time. Knowing when and where to stop is essential to a mastery of argumentation. Not knowing when to stop results from ignorance of correct principles of argumentation or of the subject matter, also from following wrong principles or from self-absorption, as is often the case. When the height of the main point aimed at or climax is reached don't forget to apply the brakes without skidding the tires. This can be done in the form of a fast summary of the points proved and the action recommended that the hearer take and its results.

Some fundamentals that should never be forgotten are: (1) Tie all minor argument points or proofs onto an admitted or irrefutable fact, if possible, so as to start an agreement of the minds. This is necessary before persuasion begins. (2) Do not begin argument proper with a discussion of things on which you differ, but cite as many things as possible on which you agree. In other words, stalk the prey into an inescapable trap before striking. (3) Strike to make an "instant sure kill" on your subject, and retreat to a stopping place as soon as possible. (4) The nature of the audience, whether hostile, friendly or neutral,

should be determined in advance, if possible, and plan of attack outlined accordingly.

In formal speeches or written argument it is possible to follow throughout a prearranged outline, but in the majority of cases wherein Jehovah's witnesses need to apply the principles of argumentation detailed previous preparation will not be possible, nor could a rigid outline be strictly adhered to if constructed. In preaching the gospel from door to door and at back-calls, and in testifying before boards or courts, it would not be possible to follow through to the letter a previously prepared outline, although one should be arranged for general guidance. In such instances one cannot foreknow the questions that may confront him, yet he must be prepared to answer those that do arise. For this reason the minister must thoroughly understand not only his side of the argument on the proposition at issue, but must also know his adversary's side of the case. The outline of his arguments must be elastic and adaptable, so that he can turn aside to answer questions or objections that may be raised in the course of his presentation, and then make an understandable comeback to the point of departure from his outline. Questions arising in the course of field witnessing that are out of order need not even be answered. Before courts and boards, however, they must usually be met.

This type of argumentation, which cannot be rigidly outlined in advance, is the most difficult, and, it being the kind most often used by ministers of the gospel, the importance of their acquaintance with the principles of argumentation is doubly great. The first requisite is that they know their subject thoroughly. This calls to mind the exhortation, given hundreds of times in recent years, to study continually and meditate day and night on God's Word, to regularly attend the studies arranged by the Lord God for His people and be prepared to participate therein. In this manner each

one equips himself to make a proper presentation of the issues of The Theocracy to the people, and thus discharges his responsibility as one of Jehovah's witnesses. Almighty God gives the increase as His servants proclaim His new

world, and each creature is forced to take his stand for one side or the other on the greatest subject of argumentation ever known, The Theocracy. "Choose you this day whom ye will serve." —Joshua 24: 15.

## Water and Health

**W**ATER is an internal ingredient in every organic fluid in all living structures, animal and vegetable.

About three-quarters of the human body is water. It is just about the most important substance concerned in the vitality of the body.

Have you ever stopped to think that the only difference between a smooth and firm peach and a small, wrinkled, dried peach is that the dried peach has had most of its water content removed by dehydration? Young people have more water in their systems than older people, and while water drinking in increased quantities will not keep one eternally young, it is nevertheless worthy of consideration if one desires to postpone the wrinkled appearance of old age as long as possible.

Water is the great carrier that conveys nutrient material from digestive organs to every tissue of the body.

In the blood water holds in suspension red globule, the fiber, the albumen, and the other organic substances, out of which all tissues are formed.

Water also bears away waste matter of the system.

Water is the leading factor of all the changes that take place in the process of nutrition and decay. When used freely water causes an increased action of the kidneys and other depurating organs, thus aiding in the expulsion of effete matter from the entire system.

Water, by perspiration and evaporation, tends to equalize the temperature of the body.

Water is one of the most important "foods" in existence. Without it one

could not live. If one does not care for a particular food, there are others that may be substituted. There is, however, no substitute for water.

Water is vitally necessary in maintaining the health of all the organs as well as the beauty of the body. One cannot have a clear, fresh skin without it. One cannot expect to have the radiance that comes with good health without water.

Poor digestion and assimilation may come about through lack of sufficient drinking of water. Waste matter is not efficiently removed, the blood stream becomes sluggish and the complexion dull, and a general shrinkage of the body, with its attendant wrinkling of the skin, sets in.

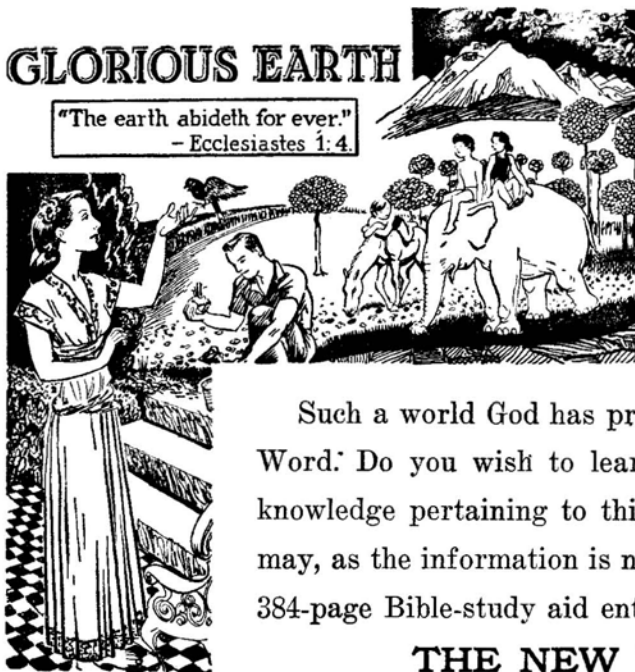
Some persons believe that the water they drink in various beverages, coupled with the water content of foods, is sufficient for their needs; but this is not the case. Considering the fact that three-fourths of the body itself is water and that all of the excretory organs are constantly eliminating water from the system, it is of vital importance to replenish the supply adequately. Several quarts of water a day are said to be necessary to do this, and where the apartment in which one lives is overheated and dry, as is often the case, this does not seem an exaggeration. Water fills out the tissues and consequently prevents that shrinkage which is evidenced in wrinkles and dry skin. Doubtless people generally do not drink enough water and would be benefited by giving attention to increasing the amount they use. The result is improved health, better looks, and more vitality.—Selected.

# WHO WILL MAKE ALL THINGS NEW?

Peace-loving people now in the grasp of the turmoil of this world desire and look for a righteous, glorious new world, wherein all things will be made new.—

## GLORIOUS EARTH

"The earth abideth for ever."  
— Ecclesiastes 1:4.



Such a world God has promised in His infallible Word. Do you wish to learn of and gain further knowledge pertaining to this NEW WORLD? You may, as the information is now available in the new 384-page Bible-study aid entitled

## THE NEW WORLD

Obtain and read this informative book. You will do so with great profit. It will be mailed to you postpaid upon receipt of a 25c contribution.

With your copy of *THE NEW WORLD* you will receive free, as a premium, the new and timely 32-page booklet *FIGHTING FOR LIBERTY ON THE HOME FRONT*, which sets forth facts as to who are actually fighting for this new world of liberty and peace.

## WATCHTOWER, 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y.

Enclosed is my contribution of 25c for which please mail to me the book *The New World* and the booklet *Fighting for Liberty on the Home Front*.

Name ..... Street .....

City ..... State .....